Chapter 2101: Dimensional Annihilation

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation **Editor:** EndlessFantasy Translation

In the dark tunnel, Starlight Saint Chariot fell to the ground. Its surface was full of cracks, and its luster had completely dimmed.

Not far from Starlight Saint Chariot, Zhang Ruochen was leaning against the stone wall. His aura had become very weak, and his body was covered in blood.

The last attack from the divine-force monsters was really terrifying. Although he had used all kinds of techniques to defend, he had still suffered serious injuries.

If Zhang Ruochen took off the Armor of the Fire God, one would see that he was covered in wounds. The forces of the Four Paths of the Ancients were eroding his body.

If it were anyone else, they wouldn't be able to hold on. They wouldn't even be able to save their physical bodies. Even their Saint Souls would die.

Zhang Ruochen was different. He had practiced three Paths of the Ancients: Time, Dimension, and Truth. He also had cultivated a Five-element Chaotic Body. His resistance was extremely strong.

Creak.

With the help of his power from the three Paths of the Ancients, Zhang Ruochen quickly got rid of the terrible forces that invaded his body.

Although the divine sun formed by 'Sunleaf' of the Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi would constantly release essence Qi to heal the injured body, Zhang Ruochen still swallowed a sacred healing pill to speed up his recovery.

After killing many powerful enemies, Zhang Ruochen had gained many treasures, including all kinds of high-grade sacred medicine and Heaven-Grade Sacred Pills.

While Zhang Ruochen was healing himself, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars walked out of Starlight Saint Chariot. Although she was also injured, she was obviously not as severely injured as Zhang Ruochen.

Starlight Saint Chariot managed to withstand most of the attacks at the last moment, even though it was half-destroyed.

Swoosh.
Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes and fixed his gaze on the Maiden of Thousand Stars. There was a hint of vigilance in his eyes.

“Zhang Ruochen, how is your state?” The Maiden of a Thousand Stars approached and asked.

Zhang Ruochen slowly stood up and coughed lightly. “Luckily, I’m not dead!”

“It seems that our luck is not too bad. We have avoided those monsters for the time being. I don’t know what exactly is inside that can make those monsters not dare to come in.” The Maiden of a Thousand Stars’ eyes were full of doubt.

Upon hearing this, Zhang Ruochen didn’t show any joy. Instead, his eyes became solemn. The tunnel they were in was probably not a good place because even the monsters didn’t dare to come close.

But under the circumstances, if they did not enter the tunnel, the hundreds of monsters would have torn them to pieces.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Although they didn’t come in, we still haven’t got out of trouble. This tunnel is our shelter only for temporary. When there are massive divine forces pouring in from the outside, we might not be able to resist it.”

“Does that mean that no matter how we struggle, we’ll die in the end?” said the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were resolute. “While we are still safe, it’s best to improve our cultivation as much as possible. With every increase in our strength, our chances of survival and escaping danger will be higher. I won’t give up hope at any time.”

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen took out many sacred pills and sacred medicine. They were all of high quality, and each of them would make a Saint King envious.

Finally, he took out the Wuyuan Royal Flower. There was only one flower left. In fact, this large number of sacred pills and medicine before him were to prepare him for the Wuyuan Royal Flower’s refinement.

Zhang Ruochen was left with no choice. There were too few precepts of minor paths in his body. If he added another five million precepts of major

and Supreme-Saint paths, the precepts of the Minor Paths wouldn't even make up 20 percent of the total. At that time, Heavenly Stream would definitely collapse.

These sacred pills and medicine basically added precepts of minor paths and a minimal number of precepts of Major Paths. In the past, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't have wanted to. Focusing on cultivating precepts of Minor Paths from the start would seriously affect his cultivation speed and affect his future achievements.

But now, the situation was different. Zhang Ruochen urgently needed to add some precepts of Minor Paths. Otherwise, he couldn't improve his cultivation base.

"My cultivation has been stuck at the peak of Precept Domain realm for some time. I have to find a way to break through. Otherwise, the gap between me and this guy will only grow bigger and bigger. I can't lose to him."

Under the influence of Zhang Ruochen's never-give-in nature, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars also took out a bunch of sacred pills and medicine to improve her cultivation base.

As the Maiden of a Thousand Stars, she naturally didn't lack valuable items to improve her cultivation.

She didn't use them in the past because she had some concerns, but now that it was a matter of life and death, how could she hold them?

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the Maiden of a Thousand Stars and took out Sundial. This was a useful artifact that had been supporting his cultivation. Now was undoubtedly the time for it to work.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars looked at the patterns on Sundial and noticed the energy of the ancients on it. She was suspicious. Then her beautiful eyes widened as she thought of something. "Huh? This is the legendary… Sundial?"

Zhang Ruochen wasn't surprised that the Maiden of a Thousand Stars could recognize Sundial. After all, Saint Monk Xumi had a close relationship with Thousand-Star Civilization. They must at least keep the images of Sundial even if they didn't come up with its replica.

The next moment, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars was enlightened; she chuckled. "No wonder your cultivation has improved so much since you

returned to Kunlun. You actually have Sundial. How dare you reveal such valuable artifact in front of me? Aren't you afraid that I'll snatch it away from you?"

"Then why don't you think about how long you can live? If I kill you here, even if the cultivation base of Thousand-Star Civilization's ruler is high, he won't be able to figure out that I'm the one who did it, right?" Zhang Ruochen said coldly.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars' face turned pale instantly. However, the next moment she smiled again. "If you wanted to kill me, why did you save me earlier?

"Are You in love with me? Are you too embarrassed to admit it?

"I've been wondering why you forced me to write the marriage contract. Do you want to marry me? It's not easy to say, so you used such a dirty trick?"

"You're too narcissistic! I might not even have a slightest interest in any beauties in Portrait of the Nine Beauties," said Zhang Ruochen.

When she heard him, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars got offended and said, "What do you mean? Why do I feel like you're implying something else? Am I not as good as them? Zhang Ruochen, you'd better make your words clear. In terms of beauty, cultivation, status, and intelligence, in what aspect they outrun me?"

"You're being unreasonable." Zhang Ruochen didn't bother to continue the argument. Experience told him that arguing with a woman was just a waste of time. He inserted a divine stone into Sundial and activated the power of Time in the artifact.

Then, he didn't waste any more time. He grabbed a handful of Earth Grade Sacred Pills and put them in his mouth as if he was eating candies.

As she saw it, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars couldn't help but widen her eyes. She had never seen anyone swallow pills and medicine like Zhang Ruochen. Those were all Earth Grade Sacred Pills. As their medicinal power was strong, refining them wasn't easy.

"What a monster." As the Maiden of a Thousand Stars muttered softly, she also took a sacred pill. Her body wasn't as strong as Zhang Ruochen's. She could only refine and absorb progressively.

Sundial covered a 2000-meter radius. Needless to say, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars also received support from its power of Time. Zhang Ruochen only wanted to increase his strength as soon as possible, so he didn't bother that she took advantage of him.

The tunnel was very quiet. There was no divine force pouring in from the outside for the time being. It served as an excellent cultivation training environment for Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

As Zhang Ruochen performed the Empyrean Emperor Ming's Scripture, he could quickly refine the pills one successively. Most of the powerful medicinal power merged with Heavenly Stream, giving rise to the precepts. A small portion of it merged with his flesh and bones, strengthening his physical body.

To meet the Wuyuan Royal Flower's refinement requirements, Zhang Ruochen absorbed hundreds of Earth Grade and Heaven Grade Sacred Pills and a bunch of high-level sacred medicine.

As a result, the precepts of Minor Paths in Heavenly Stream increased by more than 600,000, totaling more than seven million.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Ruochen put all five petals of the Wuyuan Royal Flower into his mouth.

Compared to the high quantity of sacred pills and medicine refined earlier, refining the Wuyuan Royal Flower was easier. There was no risk.

Poor Saint King Wuyuan, there was not a single flower left. She reverted to her original state. If she did not have any great, fortuitous encounter, it would take her hundreds or even thousands of years to restore her cultivation base to her prime.

Zhang Ruochen did not feel any pity for her. He was kind enough for refining only the petals instead of her.

Rumble.
A powerful Blood Qi rushed out of Zhang Ruochen's body. It was a stunning sight.

As his cultivation base increased, his injuries healed. His essence, Qi, and spirit reached a new peak.

Heavenly Stream expanded further. It contained 35.7 million precepts. Every single of them was extremely solid; they were like chains in order.

Zhang Ruochen could clearly feel that his strength had improved a lot.

In terms of quantity, his precepts were still not on par with of many top powerhouses at Path's Anterior realm. But in terms of the quality, there weren't many cultivators' precepts greater than his.

More than 28 million precepts had been cultivated from insights on Major Paths, Paths of Supreme Saint, and Paths of the Ancients. It was an astonishing number that many top cultivators—who had a total of 60 to 70 million precepts—could not achieve.

After all, the further a cultivator's progress in cultivation was, the greater the proportion of Minor Paths precepts. The proportion would rarely be less than 50 percent.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen felt a powerful aura explode beside him. He instinctively opened his eyes and turned to look at the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

"It seems that this encounter has been very beneficial to her. Her state of mind has improved a lot. She can break through the bottleneck in one go."

Zhang Ruochen stared at the Maiden of Thousand Stars' face, which was as smooth as jade. Every inch of her skin was like immortal crystals and divine stones. Her facial features were exquisite and beautiful, and no flaws could be found.

One must say that she was indeed qualified to compete with the nine Maidens on the Portrait of the Nine Beauties. In addition, as the Master of the origin, she was superior to those Maidens.

Unfortunately, the flaw in her state of mind would be her biggest challenge.

Inadvertently, he thought of their marriage contract. Zhang Ruochen suddenly felt what he had done was not proper. He should not have threatened her in this way.

After giving a deeper thought, he realized that there were no other feuds between him and the Maiden of Thousand Stars except one unsolvable conflict—they were holders of Canon of Truth. What's more, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars had helped him on many occasions.

Under tremendous pressure, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars finally broke through to Heaven's Reach. She could absorb the vital energy of heaven and earth to pave the way for forging an immortal saint body.

It didn’t take long for the Maiden of a Thousand Stars to consolidate her cultivation base.

Zhang Ruochen smiled faintly. “Congratulations on your attainment of Heaven’s Reach.”

On any other occasion, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars would have been very happy. But now, she couldn’t smile at all. She rolled her eyes and said, “So what if I attain Heaven’s Reach? We still can’t defeat those monsters.”

“Be optimistic. At least we’re still alive, right?” Zhang Ruochen comforted her.

When she heard him, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars could not help but try to size up Zhang Ruochen. In many occasions, she really felt that she could not see through Zhang Ruochen at all.

She did not know why, but when she heard Zhang Ruochen’s words, her heart became much calmer, and she felt an inexplicable sense of security.

‘Yu Chenjing, what are you thinking? If it weren’t for this annoying guy, you wouldn’t be in such a miserable state. Yes, it’s all his fault,’ the Maiden of a Thousand Stars thought to herself.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Let’s continue our cultivation training. Since we are safe for now, we can refine the divine force crystals we’ve collected.”

The divine force crystals had a deep connection with this place. Refining them might yield unexpected gains.

A brilliant light flashed through the Maiden of a Thousand Stars’ eyes. She immediately reacted. She had nearly 200 divine force crystals of Origin on her.

If she refined them all, her cultivation level in Path of Origin would definitely advance. And when her insights on Path of Origin got deeper, she might be able to find a way out. Whether it would work or not, she had to give it a try.

Immediately, the two took out the divine force crystals and began to refine them.

Zhang Ruochen had relatively fewer divine force crystals, but he had a very special one. He had obtained it by killing a divine-force monster, so it should yield a better result.

Refinement of divine force crystals was actually not too difficult. The key was to extract the essence of Paths of the Ancients, but this was not an easy thing.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars were masters of Paths of the Ancients, and they both held portions of Canon of Truth in them. This gave them a huge advantage.

As time passed, their insights on Paths of the Ancients gradually deepened, and they both cultivated more precepts of Paths of the Ancients.

Zhang Ruochen could clearly feel that the divine force crystals were more effective than the divine power left by Saint Monk Xumi—in the Secret Tome of Time and Space—in helping him deepen insights on the Path of Dimension.

The reason was that the divine power left by Saint Monk Xumi included forces of both Path of Time and Path of Dimension, which made it complicated. On the contrary, a divine force crystal only contained a single force—the force of Path of Dimension, which was much simpler.

Nevertheless, a divine force crystal was exhaustible. In other words, there would be one piece lesser when one piece was exhausted.

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen had only gained divine force crystal of Dimension. He didn't get any divine force crystals of Time. Hence, he couldn't improve cultivation in both Paths of the Ancients at the same time.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes. His eyes focused, and he said, "The space vibration is getting stronger. There should be massive divine forces pouring in from the outside soon."

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars immediately opened her eyes and said in a low voice, "If all the remnants of divine forces outside can be sucked into the pit, maybe the seal here will be removed automatically, and we will have a chance to escape."

"That's a good idea, but we have to be able to withstand the divine force impact again and again. There are indeed no monsters in this tunnel, but it is the one with the most divine forces passing through. We need to be ready to take the impact head-on." Zhang Ruochen's eyes became more and more serious.

There were two choices now—take the divine force impact head-on or go out and fight with those monsters again.

Although their cultivations and strength had significantly increased, things might end badly if they really went out.

“You are the master of Time and Space, while I am the master of Origin. We already have three of the divine power attributes of this place. The only one left was the divine force of Darkness. If you and I work together, we might be able to resist the impact,” said the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

In this situation, they could only join hands sincerely to survive.

Zhang Ruochen waved his hand and tucked away Sundial. At the same time, he took out the Secret Tome of Time and Space and Zangshan Demonic Mirror.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars took out Origin Bead. It could be used for both defense and attack. Its function was similar to the Secret Tome of Time and Space.

The vibration of the space became more violent. The two instinctively got close to the wall and stood inside a multi-dimensional space.

Rumble.
The divine forces outside began to rush in. Like what had happened before, more than half of the forces stormed into the tunnel where Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars were.

Zhang Ruochen was responsible for using techniques of Time and Dimension to guide the divine forces of Time and Dimension.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars, on the other hand, used the secret technique of Origin to repel the divine force of Origin.

As for the divine force of Darkness, it required the two of them to work together. There was no way to evade it.

“Origin Strip!”

Thousand Stars Heavenly Maiden pointed out with her finger. An invisible force of Origin surged out and seeped into a large cloud of Dark divine force.

BUZZ.
The cloud of Dark divine force immediately trembled and instantly disintegrated into dozens of small clouds of Dark divine force.

After all, this divine force of Darkness was just a remnant left during War of Gods 100,000 years ago. It had no agility, and its power had already been reduced to less than ten percent. As long as one could see through its foundation, there was a way to break it.

Apparently, after refining a large number of divine force crystals of Origin, the Maiden of Thousand Stars' attainment in Path of Origin had become more and more profound. Even her Divine Eye of Origin had become more mysterious, allowing her to probe the Origins of all things.

"Dimensional Annihilation!" Zhang Ruochen reached out with one hand and suddenly clenched it.

Rumble.
The space within dozens of feet shattered and then completely disappeared, turning into a void.

Even the dozens of streaks of Dark divine force—that the Maiden of a Thousand Stars had broken—were also annihilated. There was not a single trace left.

Dimensional Annihilation was an extremely profound and mysterious secret technique of Dimension. Usually, only the cultivator of Path of Dimension at the Supreme-Saint realm could successfully pull it off. There were three levels. Although Zhang Ruochen had only just attained the first level, the power he could unleash was terrifying.

There was a strong dimensional suppression here, so the effect was not that great. If he used this method outside this place, he could easily destroy the space within a hundred miles, turning everything into ashes. Top powerhouses like Mosheng and Zhou Yu would definitely suffer severe injuries if they got hit.

Time was too short. Zhang Ruochen had only refined more than 20 pieces of divine force crystals, but the fruit he gained was great. He had more than 10,000 more precepts of Dimension. More importantly, he held deep insights into Path of Dimension. Or else, he couldn't have successfully attained the first level of Dimensional Annihilation so fast.

If he could refine more divine force crystals, his insights on Path of Dimension could be even deeper. He might be able to cultivate the first level of Dimensional Annihilation to grand completion. When the time came, if he used it, even the powerhouses of the first tier below the Supreme-Saint level could suffer.

Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars were both very intelligent cultivators. Their powers increased as their moves complemented each other. As time passed, their coordination became more in sync. They didn't need to speak to know each other's intentions. It was as if they could communicate telepathically.

Even they themselves felt that it was strange. After all, they were not friends but enemies, yet, somehow they could fully trust each other. They worked well together.

If they took out the marriage contract and showed it to a cultivator who didn't know them, that cultivator would definitely not question their relationship.

With their well-coordinated cooperation, the two avoided the impacts from terrifying divine forces again and again, and they could ease their minds a little.

'Perhaps we really do have a chance to walk out of here alive,' this thought suddenly came into the mind of the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

She inadvertently turned to look at the outstanding figure next to her. That guy was still calm and composed, like an unparalleled grandmaster. Somehow, there was an unwavering, domineering aura on him. He seemed to possess the will of an emperor.

'Zhang Ruochen has really become stronger in his cultivation base, state of mind and will. Perhaps only a man like him can be called indomitable.'

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars thought of what Zhang Ruochen had done since his return to Kunlun. It seemed that he had fought everywhere and killed countless enemies, but who knew how dangerous it was? He was trying his best to defend this macroworld that was bound to be destroyed, fighting against fate. If this wasn't indomitable, then what was?

"What are you looking at?" Zhang Ruochen turned his gaze and met her eyes.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars' heart beat faster for no reason. She avoided his eyes and quickly adjusted her emotions.

RAAAWRRR!
At this moment, a loud roar came from the depths of the tunnel.

“Oh no, there are monsters here too!” The expressions of Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars changed.

The next moment a terrifying suction force emerged from the depths of the tunnel and pulled them directly. The force was so strong that they could not resist it at all. They flew into the depths of the tunnel involuntarily.

Not only Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of Thousand Stars, but some divine-force monsters guarding outside the tunnel were also in trouble. In the blink of an eye, more than ten divine-force monsters were sucked into the tunnel. No matter how they struggled, it was futile.

Chapter 2102: One of the Five Overlords?

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation **Editor:** EndlessFantasy Translation

In the face of the terrifying suction force, the defense that Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars had built together was as fragile as paper; it collapsed in an instant. The two of them could not keep their posture stable and eventually got dragged into the depths of the tunnel involuntarily.

“Is this destined to be my doom? I have tried my best, but I still can’t get through it.” A strong sense of powerlessness emerged in the Maiden of a Thousand Stars’ heart.

It was not easy for her to break through to Heaven’s Reach. Her attainment in the Path of Origin had improved greatly, but she still couldn’t resist the impact.

Clasp!

Just as the Maiden of a Thousand Stars sighed, one of her hands was suddenly pulled, and her body froze in midair.

Looking up, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars saw the person holding her hand. Who else could it be other than Zhang Ruochen?

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen’s other hand was gripping the hilt of Ancient Abyssal Blade, which was deeply plunged into the stone wall.

At the same time, Moyin, the Saint Devourer, came out from Zhang Ruochen’s spine and stretched out many tensile vines, embedding them deep into the stone wall.

However, the suction force from the tunnel was too strong. Ancient Abyssal Blade couldn't hold the force. The blade moved slowly and plowed a long ravine on the wall as it was being pulled.

Even the vines that Moyin had stretched out were breaking. They could not withstand such a fearsome pulling force.

Initially, Zhang Ruochen had wanted to send the Maiden of a Thousand Stars into the Secret Tome of Time and Space. However, he was upset and shocked to find that he could not open the Secret Tome of Time and Space. He could not even use dimensional artifacts, including Exquisite Dimensional Orb.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars looked at Zhang Ruochen in a daze. She could not understand why this fellow would save her despite being in such a critical moment?

If it were anyone else, they would be thinking about how to protect themselves.

"Why don't you let go? Do you want to die together?"

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars stared at him. She could tell that Zhang Ruochen, who had to grab her at the same time, could not go all out to save himself. She had always been prideful, but at this moment, she felt that she was a burden.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars sighed and let go of Zhang Ruochen's hand. She wanted to submit herself to the suction force. At this moment, her state of mind experienced a quantum leap as she had finally learned to be selfless to help others, willing to sacrifice herself.

Or perhaps, there were other feelings within her.

In short, she didn't want to encumber Zhang Ruochen.

However, things did not act according to her will. Zhang Ruochen didn't let go of her hand. Instead, he gripped it even tighter.

"Zhang Ruochen—" the Maiden of a Thousand Stars could not hold back to call his name.

"Shut up."

Zhang Ruochen only uttered two words coldly. He mobilized even more powerful Saint Qi and fused it into Ancient Abyssal Blade. Suddenly, the blade's entirety became wider and wider.

However, the blade still could not resist the pulling force. As he held the blade tightly, saint blood was oozing out of his fissured skin on his fingers and dripping.

Letting her drift into the depths of the tunnel despite being able to grab her hand was not something he could afford to do.

"D*mn you, do you have to be this bossy?" The Maiden of a Thousand Stars was annoyed, but there was also a hint of inexplicable joy within her.

Although they were falling into the depths of the tunnel, her heart had calmed down for some reason. She let Zhang Ruochen grab her hand and began to think of countermeasures.

Whether she admitted it or not, deep down, she felt that she should learn from Zhang Ruochen.

He would go for something despite knowing it was impossible and go all out no matter how difficult it was.

It seemed that his action had conquered the prideful Maiden's heart.

"Master, I-I-I can't hold on anymore—" said Moyin in a weak voice.

Crack!
A breaking sound was heard; Moyin's strongest vine broke.

As a result, the suction force pulled Ancient Abyssal Blade out of the wall. It was too late for Zhang Ruochen to plunge it back.

The force in the tunnel became more and more violent. It pulled Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars tightly, sending them flying straight into the depths of the tunnel.

When they were sent flying, Zhang Ruochen held the Maiden of a Thousand Stars' hand tight so they did not get separated.

If they really encountered another crisis, their chances of survival would undoubtedly be greater when they joined hands.

In a moment, the two arrived at the end of the tunnel. The space in front of them suddenly became clear.

Unfortunately, it was not a way out but an abyss. It was pitch-black below with malignant Qi of earth surging wildly.

Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars could not control the direction they went. They plunged into the pitch-black abyss at high speed.

After falling for thousands of feet, they finally saw the source of the suction force.

It was a huge monster that could not be seen clearly. At this moment, it was opening its bloody mouth and devouring everything crazily.

Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars' eyes froze. They did not expect that there was such a huge divine-force monster entrenched in the depths of the tunnel.

Just as he was about to fall into the monster's mouth, Zhang Ruochen caught a hint of mockery in the monster's cold eyes.

"What's going on? Could it be that this divine-force monster has developed spiritual intelligence?" Zhang Ruochen was shocked.

The over 100 divine-force monsters he had faced previously were powerful, but they only knew how to kill. There was no spiritual intelligence in them at all.

Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden couldn't have successfully escaped into this tunnel if those monsters had spiritual intelligence.

"A monster that can swallow four kinds of divine forces and has spiritual intelligence, this—"

Zhang Ruochen's mind was in turmoil. He didn't dare to think further.

He even suspected that this divine-force monster was one of the five overlords that short skinny old guy had mentioned.

But according to that skinny old man, the five overlords should be staying in Dragon Temple's main building instead of somewhere outside the temple.

Of course, now was not the time to think about these things. They were about to fall into the mouth of the divine-force monster.

“Charge.”

Zhang Ruochen shouted in a low voice and immediately used all his strength to shoot out Zangshan Demonic Mirror.

The dimensional suppression here was too strong, so any dimensional techniques would not yield much effect.

Over a million Supreme Inscriptions appeared on the surface of Zangshan Demonic Mirror. Even though the mirror’s power was under restraint by strong suppression, it could still release several streaks of supreme force.

The Thousand Stars Heavenly Maiden took out an ancient talisman. This was her only remaining talisman, and it was also the most powerful one.

A terrifying force of Origin surged out from the talisman. The force was unstoppable, going to break everything down into most rudimentary particles.

A glint of disdain appeared in the monster’s eyes. As it opened and closed its bloody mouth, four types of divine forces emerged at the same time, condensing into a terrifying vortex of divine forces.

The divine-force vortex instantly swallowed both supreme and Origin forces from the talisman. They did do any damage to the monster.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars were both sucked into the divine-force vortex. They didn’t have time to struggle before the divine-force monster swallowed them.

After the divine-force monster swallowed them, it slowly closed its bloody mouth and its eyes. The abyss then returned to a peaceful state.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars were sucked into a dark space by the divine-force vortex. The space was so wide that it felt like it could accommodate a small star.

“It turns out that this tunnel is not free of divine-force monsters at all. It was occupied by the most menacing one. Hence, the instinctive fear of other divine-force monsters forbids them to come near the tunnel,” said the Maiden of a Thousand Stars with a serious expression.

Zhang Ruochen stabilized his posture and let go of her hand.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars glanced at him and somehow felt a sense of disappointment.

Looking around, Zhang Ruochen saw more than a dozen divine-force monsters that had been swallowed before them. They were all struggling in pain.

The reason was that there were four-colored divine lights wrapped around their bodies.

Zhang Ruochen could tell at a glance that the four-colored divine lights were a combination of the forces of Time, Dimension, Origin, and Darkness. They were terrifying.

In the blink of an eye, the dozen divine-force monsters stopped moving. Their furious wills, which are their fundamentals, had disappeared, and they turned into huge divine force crystals.

When Zhang Ruochen saw this, his eyes became grim. The four-colored divine lights were truly terrifying.

Looking at the dozens of divine force crystals, Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars felt tempted. They wanted to take them immediately.

But in the end, they didn’t dare to make a move because they were afraid of the four-colored divine lights. They feared that they might get themselves into trouble if they took the divine force crystals.

Just as they were staring at the divine force crystals, strands of four-colored divine lights suddenly gathered toward them from all directions.

Upon seeing this, their expressions changed. They realized that something bad was about to happen.

“Let’s charge together. We can’t let this divine lights get close to us,” Zhang Ruochen said in a deep voice.

They had witnessed the power of the four-colored divine lights. These divine lights could easily smelt and refine divine-force monsters. If they got hit, they would suffer an unimaginable consequence.

Immediately, Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars made their moves together. They executed the power of Time, Dimension, Origin, and Truth to build a stable defensive shield.

The four-colored divine lights quickly gathered and attached to the defensive shield.

Screech.
An ear-piercing sound was heard; the defensive shield was eroded.

In an instant, the defensive shield was damaged. Strands of four-colored divine lights seeped into the tiny holes.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars's pupils constricted. "What a terrifying erosive force. It's many times more terrifying than the impact of divine forces alone."

Without hesitation, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars activated Origin Bead and released many rays of Origin divine light, trying to break down the four-colored divine lights.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Secret Tome of Time and Space and fused Saint Qi into it, trying to build a multi-dimensional space.

What he didn't expect was that the multi-dimensional space formed by the Secret Tome of Time and Space was so tiny that it couldn't contain him and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

Needless to say, it had something to do with that divine-force monster. Both powers of Time and Dimension were under great suppression.

Kaboom!
As more and more four-colored divine lights gathered, the defensive shield finally collapsed.

The four-colored divine lights instantly covered Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars. No matter what they did, they couldn't block the lights.

This meant both of them were in big trouble. The four-colored divine lights infiltrated their bodies relentlessly, eroding their flesh, blood, Saint Qi, and even their Saint Souls.

"My lifespan…"

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars's expression changed drastically.

The erosive force of Time was the most harmful to her. As it drained her lifeforce rapidly, her long dark hair began to turn gray.

Contrary, Zhang Ruochen, who was the master of Time, was highly immune to the erosive force of Time. However, the erosive force of Origin was very harmful to him.

His Five-element Chaotic Body was very solid, but at this moment, it showed signs of collapsing. His flesh and blood turned into countless tiny particles.

In addition, the two of them encountered the same problem. Their skin was turning dark as if they were poisoned, which was the result of the erosive force of Darkness.

After all, neither of them had cultivated Path of Darkness.

“Join palms,” Zhang Ruochen said.

As if they had a telepathic connection, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars immediately understood what he meant. She pressed her palm toward his.

Zhang Ruochen also stretched out his palm to join hers. He transferred his power of Time and Dimension to her continuously.

Suddenly, the crisis faced by the Maiden of a Thousand Stars was alleviated, and the draining of her lifeforce slowed down significantly.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars calmed herself down and quickly transferred her power of Origin into Zhang Ruochen’s body to help him resist the erosive force of Origin.

Of course, even though they had strong immunity to the erosive forces of Time, Dimension, and Origin, they could not completely neutralize the erosion, so the crisis was still far from being solved.

“If this goes on, we won’t be able to hold on for long. What else can we do?” The Maiden of a Thousand Stars frowned deeply.

If they could not resist erosion from the four-colored divine lights, they would both die, and it would be a very painful death.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were calm, his mind unwavering. The direr the threat, the calmer he appeared to be, because panic would not solve anything.

Only by thinking of countermeasures would there be hope to survive.

After contemplating for a while, Zhang Ruochen said, “These four-colored divine lights are indeed very potent. They can erode almost anything. Even a Supreme Artifact cannot withstand them. The only way now is to try executing the Paths of Ancients’ precepts.

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen had started mobilizing the precepts of Time, Dimension, and Truth within him. The precepts rushed out of Heavenly Stream like chains in order, twining around the four-colored divine lights that had infiltrated his body.

His words struck the Maiden of a Thousand Stars. She started to mobilize her precepts of Origin and Truth to counter the four-colored divine lights too.

Although Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars had only attained Saint Kinghood, their precepts of the Paths of the Ancients were with eternally indestructible nature. Even the four-colored divine lights couldn’t destroy them.

Soon, the precepts of Paths of the Ancients that they’d cultivated merged. They interweaved, forming an endless stream of precepts that flowed in their bodies.

At the same time, the Secret Tome of Time and Space and Origin Bead were placed in the stream of precepts. They released streaks of strange forces. As a result, the two were enveloped by a layer of dim Saint light.

After consuming a lot of power, most of the four-colored divine lights were finally expelled from their bodies and blocked by the dim Saint light.

“Phew.”

Both Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars let out a long sigh of relief. The situation was finally getting better.

“There will be more and more four-colored divine lights coming. We can’t block all of them. We must find a way to improve our attainments in the Paths of the Ancients,” Zhang Ruochen said solemnly.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars nodded and said, “We still have some divine-force crystals that we can use.”

Cultivation in the Paths of the Ancients was tremendously difficult. The only shortcut was to refine the divine-force crystals.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the dozens of divine-force crystals being refined by the four-colored divine lights and said, “We need more divine-force crystals.”

Upon hearing this, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars immediately understood that those divine-force crystals left behind by the monsters after their death would yield better effect for cultivation.

Immediately, the two joined hands and quickly rushed toward the dozens of divine-force crystals.

If they were a little later, the divine-force crystals might have all been refined.

With the help of Saint Light formed from the stream of precepts, the two snatched 14 divine force crystals and removed the four-colored divine lights wrapping around them.

Among them, five were divine force crystals of Time, four were divine force crystals of Dimension, three divine force crystals of Origin, and the remaining two were divine force crystals of Darkness.

“Let’s begin.”

Zhang Ruochen waved his hand and took out Sundial. What they lacked the most at the moment was time.

As their eyes met, they saw the determination in each other. They didn’t hesitate any longer and immediately began to refine the divine force crystals, trying to improve their attainments in the Paths of the Ancients so that they could escape the fate of being refined by the four-colored divine lights.

Chapter 2103: Son of Darkness, The Dying Prodigy

The two of them flung themselves into self-cultivation for more than a year with the help of Sundial. They had refined all the divine force crystals that they had obtained, except for—of course—the two divine force crystals of Darkness.

The outcome of self-cultivation this time was fruitful. Zhang Ruochen had a total of 340,000 precepts of Dimension and 260,000 precepts of Time. More importantly, his insights on the Path of Time and the Path of Dimension had significantly deepened. As a result, he had gained enlightenment about many crucial things.

Now, Zhang Ruochen had cultivated the first level of the secret technique—Dimensional Annihilation—to grand completion. The destructive power of the technique had doubled. With this technique, he should be strong enough to fight a top cultivator at first-tier below the Supreme-Saint level. It could be his trump card.

“Divine force crystals are indeed good. It’s a pity that after refining too many pieces of them, the effect will become less significant gradually. They cannot increase the precepts as many as they were at the beginning,” the Maiden of a Thousand Stars sighed slightly.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “Don’t be too greedy. The outcome is considered good enough. At the very least, it will help us get through the crisis for temporarily.”

Actually, their biggest gain was not the growth of precepts but their comprehension and understanding of the Paths of the Ancients. It was the key to enable them to resist the erosion from the four-colored divine lights.

“You’re right. The lifespan I lost has been replenished. Sundial is indeed a legendary treasure of the world,” the Maiden of a Thousand Stars looked up at Sundial with joy in her eyes.

The erosive divine force of Time had drained the Maiden’s lifeforce until her long black hair turned gray.

But now, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars was glowing. Her long hair had turned black again. There were no longer any signs of aging on her.

The reason was that when they were deepening their insights on the Paths of the Ancients, they had somehow triggered the more profound power of Sundial. Many light spots of Time Mark flew out of Sundial and merged with Zhang Ruochen’s precepts of Time. It was like when Zhang Ruochen first came into contact with Sundial.

Supposedly, It should have only increased Zhang Ruochen’s lifespan. The Maiden of a Thousand Stars also benefited because the stream of precepts under the Paths of the Ancients was flowing in them. Her lifespan, which was depleting previously, was almost completely restored.

With a wave of his hand, Zhang Ruochen tucked away Sundial.

“We are trapped in a divine-force monster’s stomach. It isn’t safe. We have to find a way out as soon as possible,” Zhang Ruochen said with a serious expression.

They were indeed no longer afraid of the four-colored divine lights. However, if the monster used other means to deal with them, it would be difficult to tell what would happen.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars nodded thoughtfully and said, “The space within the monster is very big. Let’s explore it first. Maybe we will find something.”

Immediately, the two stood up and walked hand in hand.

As they needed to maintain the flowing stream of precepts in each other’s bodies, it was essential for them to maintain physical contact.

The space was extremely large. Its radius was over thousands of miles, but, unfortunately, it was empty and dead silent.

This was normal. A monster this powerful could not possibly allow anything to reside inside its body safe and sound.

The four-colored divine lights were so fearsome that they could even refine a regal weapon after a long period.

Suddenly, a heaven-shaking roar was heard.

Zhang Ruochen stopped walking. He seemed to have sensed something.

His profound attainment in the Path of Dimension enabled him to sense the subtle dimensional fluctuations within a radius of hundreds of feet. He could predict danger and some other things ahead of time.

There was no other way. In this space, his spiritual power was no longer useful, and his vision was limited. Hence, he could only resort to other means when he wanted to probe the surroundings.

“What’s wrong?” asked the Maiden of a Thousand Stars curiously.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I think there was someone else hundreds a feet ahead.”

When she heard him, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars’ face looked surprised. Even they could barely survive inside the body of the menacing divine-force monster, so how could someone else possibly stay alive here?

If Zhang Ruochen’s perception was correct, the person in front was definitely not an ordinary person.

They instinctively exerted their best efforts to conceal their presence and cautiously moved forward.

“Someone is there for real.” the Maiden of a Thousand Stars’ eyes focused at a point.

With Divine Eye of Origin, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars could clearly see a person sitting cross-legged 300 meters ahead.

Fortunately, her cultivation level in the Path of Origin had improved greatly, so Divine Eye of Origin had become more amazing. Otherwise, she could not even see anything 30 meters away from her clearly under such an environment.

There were many four-colored divine lights around that person’s body, and they almost flooded him.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars could tell that this person was not dead, but his condition was horrible.

As he had been eroded by the force of Time, he became emaciated, his hair turning gray and his body emitting a rotten aura. From the looks of it, he was dying.

At the same time, as the force of Origin had eroded him, his physical body was on the verge of collapse. He was about to disintegrate into countless tiny particles that couldn’t be seen with the naked eye.

“What a strange dark aura. Could he be…” The Maiden of a Thousand Stars’s expression suddenly changed.

She had a very deep impression of this dark aura.

There were many cultivators from Infernal Court practicing the Path of Darkness. Among them, Son of Darkness was the most outstanding. Rumors said he had entered Abyss of Darkness and fused with a mutated power of Darkness.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression was solemn, “It’s Son of Darkness’ aura. I didn’t expect him to be in the monster’s stomach. If I’m not mistaken, he was swallowed by the monster earlier than us. To be able to survive until now despite being eroded by the four-colored divine lights, he is no doubt capable. He lives up to his reputation as someone with threat level of ‘Ultraten’.”

The information of many Infernal Court's Saint-King-level powerhouses was recorded in The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans. In general, there were 10 levels based on how dangerous they are, with Level 10 the most dangerous. The cultivator of this threat level was with top strength of Path's Anterior.

However, in reality, top powerhouses like Yan Wushen and Son of Darkness were not listed in The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans because they were too powerful. Instead, they were classified as Ultraten-level threats.

Rumors said that every Ultraten-level powerhouse was tremendously powerful enough to kill an ordinary Neverwither Supreme Saint. Their strength was truly at the pinnacle of the Saint Kinghood.

Nevertheless, even within the Infernal Court, there were very few powerhouses with the threat level of Ultraten.

"Son of Darkness is indeed very strong, but he is already on the verge of death. Who would have thought that the rare prodigy of Fane of Darkness would die in the stomach of a divine-force monster?" Maiden of a Thousand Stars shook her head and sighed.

Son of Darkness was so talented that many bigwigs of the Fane of Darkness thought that he would ascend to godhood in the future. But now, he was going to die early. The world was so unpredictable.

Zhang Ruochen looked calm and indifferent. The death of Son of Darkness would only benefit Kunlun. It would not cause any losses to Kunlun.

If possible, he actually wanted to kill all powerhouses of Infernal Court who had come to True Dragon Island. He believed that it would be a big blow to Infernal Court.

At this moment, Son of Darkness was very weak. It was an excellent opportunity to kill him. However, Zhang Ruochen didn't do anything after giving some thoughts.

The reason was simple. Son of Darkness was profoundly mysterious. If Zhang Ruochen made a move rashly, he could get himself into trouble when this dying fellow retaliated with last strength before death. Anyway, those four-colored divine lights would completely refine this fellow soon. Hence, there was no need to take such a risk.

When Zhang Ruochen was thinking, Son of Darkness suddenly looked up. On his wrinkled face, his pair of eyes slowly opened. He looked straight at where the two were standing.

“We are busted. He is highly vigilant despite his fragile state.” A hint of surprise flashed in the Maiden of a Thousand Stars’ eyes.

Now that their presence was known, Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars no longer hid. They continued moving forward.

Finally, they stopped 100 feet away from Son of Darkness.

Son of Darkness’ eyes were calm, his mind tranquil. His peerless luster no longer remained. He looked like an old man who had seen through vicissitudes in the world.

He stared at Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars without any hostility. It was as if he was looking at two ordinary mortals. He spoke dully, “I didn’t expect to meet you at the end of my life. Perhaps this is the wondrous of life. We never know what’s coming in the future and the next moment.”

Zhang Ruochen snorted, “Infernal Court always seeks destruction, longing for the death of the entire universe. Don’t you think it’s ironic for you to talk about ‘life’?”

Son of Darkness was a proud scion who rarely deemed others worthy. He would not give a d*mn to any ordinary cultivators. Never would he speak a single word to them. However, in his eyes, Zhang Ruochen was apparently an outstanding cultivator. Therefore, he considered Zhang Ruochen qualified enough to talk to him or, more precisely, discuss Dao with him—the Dao of the end of life.

Son of Darkness’ withered face did not have the luster a young cultivator should have in the slightest. Yet, he forced a smile. “Aren’t there any killings in Celestial Court? Aren’t there any beings in Celestial Court who pursue death and destruction? If so, why can’t someone from Infernal Court pursue life?”

“If you pursue life, why did you come to Kunlun?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Son of Darkness said, “What I’ve been seeking is endless evolution of life to achieve transcendence, sainthood, and even godhood. The fight between Celestial Court and Infernal Court is meaningless to me. I only

want to seek a greater breakthrough in cultivation, so I can go further on my path as a powerful cultivator.”

“Kunlun is different from ordinary macroworlds. It is eternal and indestructible, and has given rise to countless marvels. There were too many outstanding figures born in its history—Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations, Saint Monk Xumi, Dragon Lord Jiwang and many more. All of them were the altitude of life I yearn for. Hence, I must come here and follow in their footsteps, perfecting my Dao. ”

As soon as Son of Darkness finished his words, his eyes shone with a brilliant luster.

At this moment, from the looks of it, Son of Darkness has seen through vicissitudes of life. It was as if he had let go of everything—conflicts, interests, Celestial Court, and Infernal Court—and become nothing else but a cultivator.

“What a pity. Your life is about to come to an end, and you no longer have the chance to pursue anything. Fate always plays tricks on people.”.

As far as she knew, Son of Darkness had never appeared on any Battlefield of Merits. He had always stayed at Infernal Court to self-cultivate, so many neglected his existence. Perhaps, he was indeed devoted to the Dao.

However, whether he was right or not, it didn’t really matter because his life was about to end.

Son of Darkness said, “I never believe in fate. Never have I been to the Fane of Destiny worshipped by all cultivators in Infernal Court.

“In fact, every course of events is man-made. From the moment a cultivator embarks on the path of cultivation, they are already defying destiny. The weak are at the mercy of fate, while the strong control fate. I meet my doom simply because I’m not strong enough.”

His words struck Zhang Ruochen. Many cultivators had lofty aspirations. They believed that their fate was in their hands. Nevertheless, how many of them could really hold onto this belief?

When they were in a desperate situation, most people would choose to accept their fate. They did not have the courage to fight anymore.

Buzz.

Suddenly, the space shook violently. An extremely intimidating aura enveloped Zhang Ruochen, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars and Son of Darkness.

Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars looked up. Their eyes turned grim. A clear, visible River of Time emerged. Countless fragments of Time flew, causing chaos to the time and space here.

Zhang Ruochen could also summon the shadow of River of Time, but its power was far inferior to this one.

Just as they were about to attack, they saw Son of Darkness extend his withered arm and draw on the ground with his fingers. He quickly drew many profound inscriptions.

Countless light spots immediately appeared in the sky like billions of stars, showing grand momentum, making people feel like they were really in the universe.

Then, these light spots revolved like galaxy, causing the entire time and space to distort.

Even the terrifying River of Time was distorted. It shifted its direction and didn't charge at Zhang Ruochen and the other two. It quickly disappeared into the darkness.

After doing this, Son of Darkness' body became even more withered, and his aura was extremely weak.

A hint of surprise flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes. He gave Son of Darkness a long gaze. 'He could perform such a countermove. It seemed that he knew the tricks of the monster very well.'

"This isn't good. This monster has many tricks up its sleeves. If we can't find a way out quickly, we might get refined in the end." Maiden of a Thousand Stars' expression became solemn.

Son of Darkness said, "This monster has a very high level of intelligence. Although it can give us a quick death, it deliberately choose not to do so. It wants to torture us slowly and let us die in despair and fear. But this will give us a chance to escape."

"Chance to escape?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Son of Darkness said, “Everyone has a weakness. I believe this monster is no exception. As long as we find its weakness, we might be able to escape.”

“Its weakness?” The Maiden of a Thousand Stars was deep in her thought.

They were currently in the monster’s body, and there were many things that they could not figure out. Therefore, even if the monster really had a weakness, they might not be able to identify it.

Son of Darkness said, “This monster is formed from the combination of four types of divine forces. It is completely different from the other monsters outside. Its essence has already undergone a mutation. Perhaps it can be considered as a real life form.”

The eyes of the Maiden of a Thousand Stars suddenly lit up, and she said, “These four kinds of divine forces are very powerful. Moreover, they belonged to different deities. So, it is challenging to combine them perfectly. Perhaps, it is not even possible to do so. Hence, I think this monster has only kept the four kinds of divine forces in a balance instead of combining them.

“If we can break this balance, we may be able to severely injure it and get a chance to escape.”

Upon hearing her words, Zhang Ruochen had a deep thought for a moment. He said, “This may indeed be the monster’s weakness, but how can we break the balance between the divine forces?”

It’s not enough to merely identify the weakness. The key was to think of a feasible way.

“I have vaguely seen a very special divine-force vortex at the top of this space. It showed four different colors. The divine forces from the outside seemed to have gathered in that vortex,” Son of Darkness suddenly spoke.

Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat. He quickly asked, “Where is the divine-force vortex?”

Son of Darkness didn’t say anything. Instead, he used his finger to draw on the ground again.

Whoosh!
A streak of dark light shot into the sky. It broke through many obstacles and revealed something that was hidden very deeply.

Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars looked up. Without any obstacles, they could see the sky from thousands of feet away.

Just as Son of Darkness had said, there was a huge divine-force vortex there. It spun slowly. They could vaguely feel the ominous aura emanated from it. It was so powerful that it could destroy everything.

After a short moment, the inscriptions on the ground dimmed. The dark light disappeared, and the divine-force vortex was out of sight.

Son of Darkness coughed intensely, his face ashen. He was on the verge of death.

Chapter 2104: A Sea of Treasures

“The source of the monster’s power should be that divine-force vortex. The balance of the four divine forces will crumble once it is destroyed. At that point, the monster will be weakened and it is our chance to escape,” said the Maiden of a Thousand Stars with a serious expression on her face.

With the aid from the Divine Eye of Origin, she could peek at the origins of all matters of things.

However, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars frowned and said, “The power condensed by the divine-force vortex is mighty.

“Ordinary attacks will crush us as soon as we get close to it. It’s impossible to destroy it.

“On top of that, the divine-force vortex is located in a special, distorted space, and any attacks are useless against it. If the attack fails, the monster will be alarmed. Therefore, we have only one chance.”

Apparently, although they had found the monster’s weakness, it was not easy to escape through it.

‘There’s not much time left for me. But I would like to fight for one last time, no matter what,’ the look in the eyes of the Son of the Darkness was gloom. His pitch-black eyes shone with determination again. It could be that the appearance of Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars had given him hope to escape.

Who would wish to die if there were chances to live?

Besides that, he knew that Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars were no fools. They could foresee that the chances of destroying the divine-force vortex were very slim.

Nevertheless, there's only one chance.

By combining the strength of the trio, the chances to succeed would be higher.

"Look at us, one from the Kunlun Realm, one from the Ancient Civilization, and one from the Infernal Court. We were supposed to be enemies and now we have to work together to survive. What say you?"

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars stared at Zhang Ruochen. She wished to know if he was willing to put aside his prejudice and join forces for once.

Zhang Ruochen, on the other hand, was deeply in his thoughts like an old monk meditating.

The chances to succeed would be much higher if the Son of Darkness joined forces too.

Although the Son of Darkness was in his frail state, Zhang Ruochen didn't underestimate him. It could be terrifying if he made a sudden move.

Although Zhang Ruochen was not very happy about it, he did not have other choices at the moment.

"I know you despise the Infernal Court and did not wish to join forces with me, Zhang Ruochen. Fret not! Once we got out of this, we can still be arch-enemies, and I will fight you in a one-on-one battle. Our downfall shall depend on our strength. " The Son of Darkness and his encouraging aura outshone Zhang Ruochen's indecisiveness.

Zhang Ruochen was turning over in his mind and made a decision. After all, the Son of Darkness was not in his best state, and he himself could not hold on much longer.

"Let's work together and fight with all our strength," said Zhang Ruochen.

The Son of Darkness lifted his head and looked into Zhang Ruochen's eyes upon hearing about it. He nodded and said, "Alright! Let's work together and break the shackles of fate."

The trio began to discuss the details right away. There was only one chance. They dare not be careless with it. They had to consider everything thoroughly.

Not before long, the trio was ready. The Son of Darkness began his drawing on the ground once again.

The engravings he drew this time were much more complicated than the ones before. They were densely packed and infused with a tremendous amount of dark energy at the same time.

The Zangshan Demonic Mirror was hanging above Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars. They poured their Saint Qi into the mirror and continues to unleash its strongest power.

Concurrently, a black Saint Bell burst out of the Son of Darkness's body. It gave off an ancient and majestic aura.

There was no doubt that the bell was an ancient divine artifact, which belonged to the gods who practice the Path of Darkness.

CRASH!
The engravings on the ground were activated. They burst out a deep dark brilliance. It soared into the sky, breaking through all the obstacles in the sky just like before.

The huge divine-force vortex appeared again in front of Zhang Ruochen and the other two.

"Attack!"

Without any hesitation, the three immediately launched a powerful attack.

The Zangshan Demonic Mirror and the black Saint Bell were shot out simultaneously and released the Supreme Power along with the Dark Divine Power. They were like two black dragons trying to break out of the cage, wanted to soar into the nine heavens.

Under their deliberate control, the Supreme Power and the Dark Divine Power converged. Like a volcanic eruption, they banged straight into the divine power-vortex.

BOOM!
The divine-force vortex shook violently. Layers of barriers were all shattered in an instant.

Seconds later, the divine-force vortex was torn apart. An enormous amount of divine power surged and spread in all directions, causing the entire space to shake violently and become unstable.

A dazzling brilliance flew out of the torn vortex of divine power. Zhang Ruochen saw clearly that there was a huge number of treasures in each brilliance.

Fist-sized divine pill, an overwhelming ancient bronze weapon, and a crystal clear Saint source.

“This monster is one of the five overlords indeed,” Zhang Ruochen thought.

According to the short skinny old man, there were numerous treasures scattered in the ruins of the Dragon God Temple. But basically, they were all taken away by the five overlords who occupied the Dragon God Shrine.

Zhang Ruochen had suspected it before. If such a terrifying monster couldn’t be named as one of the five overlords, just how powerful would the five overlords be?

ROAR!
The divine-force monster released an angry roar. Its voice reverberated through the inner world inside its body, making Zhang Ruochen and the other two spit out saint blood. Their Saint Souls seemed to be on the verge of shattering.

The shattered vortex began to formed itself slowly.

“We must break the body of the divine-force monster and escape this place right now. Otherwise, when the vortex condenses again, we’ll be dead for sure.”

The black Saint Bell controlled by the Son of Darkness attacked the void space as he said this.

BANG!
The bell rang and shook the void space, but it could not break the body of the divine-force monster.

It could not break through at all.

The vortex continued to agglomerate rapidly and became stronger and stronger.

“I will break it. You go and collect the treasures. We shouldn’t leave empty-handed since we are here,” said Zhang Ruochen to the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

Zhang Ruochen focused on his energy and released the Percepts of Dimension. He grabbed a streak of the divine force of Dimension, controlled the power, and slashed it out like a divine blade.

BOOM!
The monster’s body was torn through a huge crack.

Standing inside the monster’s inner world, they looked out. The crack was dozens of meters long. It looked like a one-line sky of the gorge. This crack was the only way for them to survive.

Although Zhang Ruochen had refined a large number of the divine crystals of Dimension and had the power to utilize the divine force of Dimension, it was still a heavy load for him to maintain. “I can only hold on for three breaths at most. You guys go ahead,” he roared.

At this moment, a strange occurrence happened.

In an instance, the Son of Darkness’ body was releasing a much stronger aura than before. He took the black Saint Bell, releasing a powerful suction force. It absorbed all the divine light enveloping the treasure from the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

“You two idiots. You’ve lost your value. Now Die!”

The Son of Darkness carried the Black Saint Bell and rushed to the edge of the crack, exuding a terrifying murderous aura, and two dark chains burst out from his body.

The chains carried along with monstrous killing intent. They were like two ruthless black dragons, charging at Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

The chains releasing a terrifying power could even kill the Neverwither Supreme Saint.

Who would have thought that the extremely weak Son of Darkness would suddenly attack them?

The current Son of Darkness was completely different from before. His eyes were cold and merciless, and his body with all kinds of evil power

surging. He stared at Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars as if he was looking at two idiots.

However, just when he thought that they were dead for sure…

The space around Zhang Ruochen rippled slightly, slowing down the two chains as if they had fallen into a quagmire.

“Do you think that I have let my guard down on you?” Zhang Ruochen said lightly.

The Son of Darkness’s eyes narrowed. “Weren’t you doing your best to support the escape route? How could you possibly still have the strength to block my attack?”

“If I didn’t say that, how could you have given yourself away?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars had already stood behind Zhang Ruochen. The Saint Qi in her body condensed into a ray of Divine Light of Origin. Her eyes flashed coldly. “Son of Darkness, I underestimated you and your cunningness. I’ve almost been fooled by you before.”

With nothing to say, Zhang Ruochen shifted the Precepts of Dimension. He reached out and pressed forward, causing a large area of space around the Son of Darkness to collapse quickly.

The divine power vortex was destroyed. The various restrictions in this space had weakened. It no longer affected Zhang Ruochen’s ability to use dimensional techniques.

Even if he was as superior as Yan Wushen, Zhang Ruochen still had the confidence to fight him.

With his current cultivation base and his attainment in the Path of Dimension and the Path of Time, he might be able to fight against a top-notch cultivator below the First-Tier of Supreme Sainthood.

“It seems that I underestimated you. I can’t even plot against the likes of you.” The Son of Darkness didn’t get panic due to the collapsing space.

His calmness made Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars felt a sense of danger.

The Son of Darkness was a great enemy that they had never encountered before, both in terms of cultivation and wisdom. It was hard to find the second one in the entire world.

“Rip!”

The Son of Darkness’s body was swallowed by the shattered space and shattered into pieces.

“Is it really over for the Son of Darkness? Or was it our imagination?” said the Maiden of a Thousand Stars. However, she was still anxious as she felt that everything was not over yet.

At this moment, an extremely shocking scene appeared.

A black dot of light rapidly escaped from the shattered space. It spun crazily and kept on expanding until it turned into a black hole.

A slender figure walked out from the black hole. Like an emperor descending upon the world, he gazed at his surrounding.

He was none other than the Son of Darkness.

This Son of Darkness was fully rejuvenated. He became young and handsome, and his body emitted a powerful life force. He did not look weak at all.

Seeing this, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars’s face turned pale. “This is… the secret technique of the Fane of Darkness.”

“Oh? So you knew about the Divine Embryo of Darkness technique? The Thousand-Star Civilization was knowledgable about the Infernal Court.” Surprise flashed in the eyes of the Son of Darkness.

Zhang Ruochen was confused. He knew very little about the Fane of Darkness.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars explained, “The Divine Embryo of Darkness technique is a forbidden technique of the Fane of Darkness. Only a few were taught of it. It’s very difficult to be attained. But, if you are able to attain it. You can transform and have the best physique.”

“As long as you can nurture a divine embryo and shed your old body, your lifespan will be doubled. It’s like a chance of rebirth.”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. “There’s such a secret technique in the world. If you can nurture the divine embryo endlessly, wouldn’t that mean you can live forever?”

“Theoretically, it’s true.

“But it’s already difficult to nurture a divine embryo. It’s filled with death and danger. It requires extraordinary talent and many fortuitous encounters.

“In history, the most powerful person has undergone a total of five transformations. In the end, he cultivated a supreme divine body and became a figure of the authority of the Fane of Darkness.” The Maiden of a Thousand Stars shook her head.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but look solemn. The nine fanes had existed for countless years, and they all had extraordinary heritage. The collection of all kinds of rare secret arts was enough to tempt even deities.

The Son of Darkness moved his palm, and the black Saint Bell appeared in his hand, “This divine-force monster has collected so many treasures, more than 100 million of them. Each of them is a rare treasure. The Dragon God Shrine is indeed one of the three great shrines of Kunlun’s realm. It really didn’t disappoint me.”

“With them, the harvest of True Dragon Island trip has far exceeded my expectations.

“It’s enough to increase the strength of the entire Infernal Court. In the future, we’ll use these treasures to train the Infernal Cultivator and squash Kunlun.

“Of course, I should be gratitude towards both of you.”

It was obvious that the Son of Darkness had long discovered the existence of many treasures in the mysterious vortex. He had deliberately faked himself to lure them into cooperation with him. He wanted to escape from the monster’s body and also to get these treasures.

Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars were also using the Son of Darkness.

However, they didn’t expect the Son of Darkness to have practiced the Divine Embryo of Darkness technique and saved his own life.

Hearing the Son of Darkness's words, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars was so angry that she gritted her teeth.

"Those treasures don't belong to you. You can't take any of them."

Zhang Ruochen poured his Saint Qi into the Zangshan Demonic Mirror.

Ripples appeared on the surface of the mirror. Like water waves, it absorbed all the power of Darkness.

At the same time, a huge amount of demonic Qi surged out of the mirror. It condensed into majestic immemorial demon mountains and pressed down on the Son of Darkness.

Murderous aura wafted out from Maiden of the Thousand Star. "Son of Darkness, I shall see how strong are you after cultivating a new body."

Maiden of a Thousand Stars's brows lit up. A crimson ring flew out and released boundless the divine force of Origin. It vibrated at a high frequency. The surrounding space became unstable and was on the verge of collapse.

It was an ancient divine artifact left behind by a deity who cultivated the Path of Origin. If it hadn't been for the great improvement in the Path of Origin, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars wouldn't have been able to activate it.

"Zhang Ruochen's growth is too fast. He's only just reached the Path's Interior realm, and he's already practiced the Path of Time and the Path of Dimension to such a profound level. If I continue to let him grow, he'll definitely become my greatest enemy." The Son of Darkness couldn't help but frown.

The Son of Darkness didn't resist their attacks. He rushed out of the monster's body from the crack. In the process, the Supreme Power and Origin power hit him, severely wounded him.

The Son of Darkness turned around and looked at Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars, who were rushing toward the crack. He laughed. "My friends, you don't have to come and see me off. When I break through to the realm of the Supreme Saint, I'll kill this monster and avenge you."

The Son of Darkness put his hands together. Tens of millions of black lines appeared and interweaved into a bigger and bigger black millstone. It attacked Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

BOOM
The black millstone rushed into the crack and collided with the power of Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars. It stopped them.

In this short moment, the crack closed again and trapped them inside the monster.

The next moment.

The vortex in the divine-force monster's body condensed again and recovered its energy. It let out an angry roar that shook the area of thousands of miles around True Dragon Island.

After spitting out a mouthful of blood, the Son of Darkness fled quickly.

Although he had paid a huge price this time, he had already made a huge profit by getting rid of Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars—the two enemies—and gained a large number of treasures that would make even the deities drool.

As the divine-force monster was enraged and powerful. It would be strange if Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars—who were trapped in its body—were not refined to death.

Chapter 2105: A Blessing in Disguise
The moment the divine-force vortex was condensed, Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars involuntarily fell from the sky. The dimension suppression that had disappeared for a short time reappeared and was stronger than before.

CRASH!
The entire dimension shooked violently. A vast amount of fierce divine force surged out of the divine-force vortex, turning into turbulent tides and waves.

"Die."

A furious will emerged, as furious as if it wanted to destroy the world.

Previously, the monster had regarded Zhang Ruochen, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars, and the Son of Darkness like ants. It did not pay too much

attention to them. It had thought that they could not have done anything noteworthy once they had entered its stomach.

Never had it expected that these ants in its eyes would destroy the source of its power, causing it a lot of damage. How could it not be angry?

A large area of dimension was shattered, followed by endless darkness. The Divine Light of Origin was faintly visible, and a huge River of Time and Space appeared. The inexplicable phenomena occurred as if the world had come to its end.

Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars had serious looks in their eyes for a moment. They felt an enormous threat; their hair stood on end.

“D*mn the Son of Darkness! If I could get out of here, I’ll bloody swing for him,” said the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

The Son of Darkness had undoubtedly infuriated her this time. She won’t easily get rid of her hatred if she didn’t teach him a lesson.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Ruochen immediately poured his Saint Qi into Zangshan Demonic Mirror. He tried his best to activate the powerful forces contained in it.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars bit the tip of her tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood on Origin Divine Ring. The ring emitted a bright divine light, and many strange patterns emerged from it.

BANG!
The vast divine power crushed down crazily. It instantly destroyed the power released by Zangshan Demonic Mirror and Origin Divine Ring and sent them flying. Their powers weren’t on the same level.

Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars’ minds were in sync. They quickly joined palms with each other, gathered all the precepts from the Paths of the Ancients, and formed a powerful stream of precepts that flowed in each other’s bodies.

Suddenly, a tough Saint Light of Protection appeared outside their bodies. It seemed to be invulnerable to all magic.

CRACK!

The divine force hit Zhang Ruochen, and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars like a raging wave. It shattered the tough Saint Light of Protection and flew them out.

Although the Saint Light of Protection had blocked most of the impact, they were still badly injured. Blood spurted out of their mouths.

“No, we can’t withstand it with our current cultivation. This monster is too strong. It can easily kill a Neverwither Supreme Saint,” the Maiden of a Thousand Stars said in a deep voice.

In the face of absolute power, no matter how many ingenious methods they had, it was useless, especially they were now in the monster’s inner world. There was no way to escape. The situation was even worse.

Zhang Ruochen thought quickly. A fierce light suddenly flashed in his eyes. He thought to himself, “Now I have no choice but use it!”

Seeing all kinds of terrifying divine power sweeping over, Zhang Ruochen no longer hesitated to wave his hand and struck out an object.

It was an ancient remnant tablet. It looked ordinary and had many ancient characters on it. He didn’t know what era it belonged to.

It was the God-Defiance Stele that Zhang Ruochen had obtained in Luoshui. It had a great history and unforeseeable power—also, his strongest trump card.

Of course, he couldn’t use it easily. If he exposed it, it might bring him disaster.

As soon as the God-Defiance Stele appeared, the surging tide of divine forces retreated quickly. To be precise, it dissipated on its own.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars had a surprised look on her face, “What’s going on? What have you done?”

Zhang Ruochen did not answer. He moved and followed closely behind the stele. At the same time, he set up layers of Time and Space barriers to prevent the Maiden of a Thousand Starts from spying on him.

It was his biggest secret. The fewer people know, the better.

Only a few people knew the existence of the God-Defiance Stele, yet none of them knew what powers it held.

The God-Defiance Stele had broken through layers of barriers and crashed directly into the newly repaired divine-force vortex in a blink.

The divine-force vortex shook violently and then began to disperse.

It was the source of the monster's power and also the place where its Saint Soul resided.

Those monsters outside had only furious wills, but this monster had a powerful Saint Soul. It could have developed spiritual intelligence.

Zhang Ruochen put one hand on the God-Defiance Stele and mobilized the precepts in his body. He injected them into the ancient characters, trying to raise the power of the God-Defiance Stele and defeat the monster in one fell swoop.

Tens of millions of precepts entered the God-Defiance Stele, causing the divine-power vortex to dissipate faster.

The monster resisted with all its might. Countless chains of precepts interweaved into a net and wrapped around the God-Defiance Stele.

However, as soon as the chains approached the stele, their glow dimmed instantly. The power they held vanished.

"This is my chance." Zhang Ruochen's eyes lit up as he locked onto the dimmed chains of precepts.

The surging Divine Purification Flame rushed out of his body and turned into a flaming dragon. It wrapped around the dimmed chains and forcefully pulled them out of the divine-force vortex into his body.

These chains were the foundation of a monster's strength. If they could be refined, there would be many benefits.

Under normal circumstances, it would be impossible to extract powers from the chains of precepts. However, with the suppression from the God-Defiance Stele, the monster couldn't resist.

RAAAWRRR!
The monster roared furiously. It seemed extremely angry but also panicked.

A broken stele without any energy fluctuations could completely suppress the monster's power and disintegrate it bit by bit. If this goes on, the situation could turn against it.

The monster had four kinds of divine forces: Time, Dimension, Darkness, and Origin. Each of them was marvelous, but now they played no part at all.

"Halt, humans. I can let you out." The monster's low voice came from the divine-force vortex.

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen acted as if he did not hear it. He continued to operate the God-Defiance Stele with all his strength, and at the same time, he did his best to plunder the monster's chains of precepts.

The monster roared again. "Human, Stop! Do you wish to die along with me?"

"Were you able to do that?" Zhang Ruochen snorted.

With the suppression of the God-Defiance Stele, he wasn't afraid of what the monster could do.

As the saying went, the wheel of fortune changes constantly. Before, the monster had toyed with them and tortured them slowly. Now, it was his turn to make a move, and it's payback time.

Some chains plundered directly dissipated and turned into strange power that merged into his body; some entered his Heavenly Stream and derived a number of powerful precepts.

Zhang Ruochen knew that the dissipating chains were formed from the forces of the Paths of Origin and Darkness. They were not the paths of cultivation that he practiced, so naturally, they could not increase his precepts.

As time passed, the monster's divine-force vortex became smaller and smaller. More than half of its divine force dissipated, and the chains of precepts suffered heavy losses. Its foundation was affected.

The monster finally revealed his fear. It felt that its death was approaching.

"There's a chance for you. I could let you live if you let go of your Saint Soul. Don't resist and let me engrave the servant seal," Zhang Ruochen said coldly.

Hearing this, the monster became agitated and roared, “I am an overlord of the True Dragon Island, human. How dare you try to enslave me? Dream all you can.”

“Is that so? Then you shall die.” Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were cold and emotionless.

He thought that the monster was very powerful and could be a great help. That was why he wanted to subdue it. However, since it didn’t want to bow to him, he didn’t care. Refining it completely would improve his cultivation.

Gradually, the monster became weaker and weaker, and its huge body began to show signs of crumbling.

It had already used all of its means and tried its best, but they were futile. Its life was about to come to an end.

“I submit, please don’t kill me.” Under the shadow of death, the monster’s heart was filled with fear and despair. In the end, it chose to submit.

Without any hesitation, the monster revealed its Saint Soul.

The shape of its Saint Soul was very special. It looked like a demonic wolf, but it had a huge dragon head, wings on its ribs, a body covered with black scales, and four tails of different colors.

This was probably its true form.

In the face of the God-Defiance Stele, the monster’s Saint Soul couldn’t help but tremble. It didn’t resist anymore and obediently lowered its head.

“A wise choice.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately formed the seal and used the secret technique of the Sect of the Blood God. He condensed the Blood God’s Curse Seal and imprinted it directly on the monster’s Saint Soul.

The monster didn’t resist. The Blood God’s Curse Seal entered smoothly.

Now, its life and death were all in Zhang Ruochen’s hands.

“Master.”

The monster’s Saint Soul knelt on the ground. It seemed extremely respectful.

Zhang Ruochen nodded slightly, showing a satisfied smile on his face. He waved his hand and put away the God-Defiance Stele.

He had gained a lot this time. Refining the chains he had plundered from the monster gave him a deeper insight into the Path of Time and the Path of Dimension. It was as if he had been enlightened.

Meanwhile, his body strength had been greatly improved. The Heavenly Stream had expanded further and reached more than 45 million precepts, which increased by 10 million. All of them belonged to the Time and the Spatial Domain, covering the Paths of the Ancients, the Paths of Supreme Saint, the Major Paths, and the Minor Paths. The outcome was more splendid than refining the Wuyuan Royal Flower.

Among these precepts, the precepts of Time and Dimension had each increased by 100,000, reaching 360,000 and 440,000, respectively. He had finally attained a high level in the cultivation of these two paths.

After all, it was extremely difficult to cultivate the Path of the Ancients. It would take plenty of time to cultivate every single precept of these paths.

The sum of precepts of these two paths had reached 200,000. The achievement was unimaginable.

Zhang Ruochen had no shortcomings in terms of his precepts. If he wanted, he could easily cultivate a lot of precepts of the Minor Paths in a short time.

Zhang Ruochen performed Great Dimensional Shift and emerged out of thin air right beside the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

“What did you do? How did you calm the monster?” The Maiden of a Thousand Stars asked curiously.

Zhang Ruochen replied, “I just used a little trick to subdue the monster. Now we can go out and settle the score with the Son of Darkness.”

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars did not question further as she knew that Zhang Ruochen did not wish to disclose what had happened. It was normal that everyone had their tricks in their sleeves.

“That sinister Son of Darkness. How dare he plotted against me. We can not let him get away,” said the Maiden of a Thousand Stars angrily.

They were undoubtedly on the same page when it came to dealing with the Son of Darkness. After all, neither of them was willing to be taken advantage of.

Just then, the dimension began to distort. A wave of dimensional energy enveloped Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

After that, the two had left the inner world of the monster and landed on the monster's head.

The monster's body rose into the air and flew out of the dark abyss into a wide tunnel.

ROAR!

With a growl, the other divine-force monsters instantly rushed out from the various tunnels.

Although the tamed divine-force monster had been wounded and weakened by the God-Defiance Stele and was not as ferocious as before, it was still the king amongst the rest.

Zhang Ruochen was considering eliminating all the divine-force monsters and obtain their divine-force crystals. However, he had given up the idea of doing so.

With the aid of the monster king, he could control the army of divine-force monsters. It would be a great force and possibly play a huge role on True Dragon Island.

After all, these divine-force monsters had the power comparable to that of Neverwither Supreme Saint. Although they did not have any intelligence nor their methods were clever enough, they were still immortals. As long as their furious wills were not destroyed, they could be regenerated even if their bodies were shattered into pieces.

The outcome of the battle would be delightful using the army of divine-force monsters to attack the army of the Infernal Court.

The monster king flapped its wings, carrying Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars on its back. It flew out of the dark pit at the speed of light.

"We're out!"

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars was uneasy about what had happened.

She had a lot to process in such a short time. She had fallen into desperate situations over and over. She had thought that she would die, but in the end, they managed to survive and see the light of day again. As if it was all just a dream.

After what she had been through, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars felt her spirit lifted. She felt braver and no longer being the timid Maiden. Her cultivation would be deeply impacted from now on.

There were still massive divine forces in the outside world in a sealed-off dimension. Nevertheless, with the monster king on their side, it would not be difficult for them to leave this place.

Zhang Ruochen released his spiritual power to keep an eye on the surroundings, but no traces of the Son of Darkness could be found. Maybe he had left for quite some time.

He stood on top of the monster king's head. He looked at the sky with disdain and shouted, "Son of Darkness, stop hiding and come fight me. A fight to the death. Hide any longer, I will kill every single cultivator in Infernal Court. Not a single soul can walk out of True Dragon Island alive."

At this moment, he was furious. His killing intent soared to the sky. His voice traveled tens of thousands of miles and shook the entire ruins of Dragon Temple.

His calmness was disturbed by the Son of Darkness completely this time.

Right now, he only had a single thought, and that was to find the Son of Darkness and take revenge. His heart would not be able to calm down if he did not vent this anger.

"No matter where you hide, I will seek you out," said the Maiden of a Thousand Stars with a deep voice.

The maiden swiftly deployed the Communication Talisman that she had engraved earlier. She wanted to gather all the powerhouses of Thousand-Star Civilization, Wushen Civilization, and Beiduo Civilization to aid in the search for the traces of the Son of Darkness.

After doing this, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars was ready to leave and meet up with the powerhouses.

While she was leaving, something came to her mind. She wanted to reveal something but hesitated to do so.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars let go of her hesitation and said, “Zhang Ruochen, I think I might know where the key to the World Gate is.”

Hearing the words “*The key to the World Gate*“, the anger in Zhang Ruochen’s heart suddenly subsided a lot. He got back his sense and asked her, “How do you know?”
The Maiden of a Thousand Stars replied, “Have you ever wondered why I would risk following you? The reason is simple. I discovered that the short skinny old man had the aura of Kunlun.”

“You mean, the key to the World Gate is on the old man?” A light flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars shook her head slightly and said, “I’m not sure about this. However, if he didn’t get the key to the World Gate, he must have come in contact with the key and held an important clue.”

Her Divine Eye of Origin could see the origins of all, except for the short skinny old man. There seemed to be a layer of mist cloaked his body. Perhaps it had something to do with him came in contact with the Key to the World Gate.

Initially, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars didn’t want to say anything about the Key of the World Gate. She had it all arranged to take the key by herself.

For some reason, after the Maiden had some thoughts about the importance of the Key to the World Gate to Kunlun Realm and Zhang Ruochen, she gave in to her feelings and told him about it.

Chapter 2106: A Challenge Written in Blood

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation **Editor:** EndlessFantasy Translation
Zhang Ruochen was in his thought for a moment and looked at the Maiden of a Thousand Stars again. He asked, “Why are you telling me this?”

The key to the World Gate was of great importance. Many top cultivators had been mobilized for it. Anyone who knew the secret would have kept it to themselves and had no reason to tell others.

“Consider it as returning the favor. Since you have saved my life before, wouldn’t want you to annoy me with that in the future. Besides, it’s not an

easy task to get the key to the World Gate. That old man is cunning. We'll see who will get it first," the Maiden of a Thousand Stars said casually.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but look at the Maiden of a Thousand Stars deeply. Was the reason as simple as she said? The so-called favor might not be comparable with the key of the World Gate.

Especially that the Maiden of a Thousand Stars attained the Path of Origin. She should be thirsting for the Qi of Origin from Kunlun Realm, and she shouldn't tell others about the clues of the key of the World Gate even more so.

Thinking of this, Zhang Ruochen realized that he understands the maiden's motive, and his mood couldn't help but fluctuate.

After a moment of silence, Zhang Ruochen said in a low voice, "Thank you."

"It's rare to hear these two words from you, Zhang Ruochen. I'm going to meet up with the top cultivators of the Thousand-Star Civilization first. If there's any news about the Son of Darkness, I'll let you know."

Without further delay, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars didn't stay any longer. She shifted into a phantom and disappeared into the ruins.

Zhang Ruochen stood on top of the monster king's head and watched the Maiden of a Thousand Stars left, with mixed feelings.

Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars had been through the life and death situation together. Even if they both had the canon of truth, they are enemies no more.

Else, what should they be?

Shaking his head hard, Zhang Ruochen put aside all his distracting thoughts. He thought about how to deal with the Son of Darkness and how to find the short and skinny old man. These were the two most important things to do at the moment.

I'll settle the score with the Son of Darkness First. Maybe I can lure that old man out later.' Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen guessed that the short and skinny old man would like to join in the fun. The old man had been drawn out by the battle before. If he

could do something drastic enough, the old man would probably be unable to resist himself and resurfaced.

No matter what, Zhang Ruochen had to seek revenge on the Son of Darkness. He just couldn't let go of his grudge.

Zhang Ruochen didn't plan to sit here and wait. He wanted to take the initiative and force the Son of Darkness to fight him.

…

Five thousand miles away, in a hidden cave, the Jinyang Twin Kings, who were in seclusion, opened their eyes at the same time.

"Has Zhang Ruochen gone mad? He wishes to fight with the Son of Darkness. Is he tired of living?" King Xiaoyang was in doubt.

In his point of view, Zhang Ruochen wasn't weak, but his capability was still far from the Son of Darkness. They weren't on the same level technically speaking.

King Dayang's eyes were cold. He said in a low voice, "Zhang Ruochen wishes to die, but we can't let him die at the hands of the Son of Darkness. We must be the one that ends him."

The Sunshine Civilization had suffered a great defeat at Zhang Ruochen's hands. If they could not get back at him, they would always be a laughing stock. This was their only chance to redeem themselves.

"But brother, it'll take some time for your vitality to recover." King Xiaoyang said with a little hesitation.

King Dayang stood up. A fierce and domineering aura was emitting from his body. Looking down towards his brother, he said, "It doesn't matter. You need not recover to your peak state to deal with the likes of Zhang Ruochen."

Last time, King Dayang was being too cautious. In the end, he was tricked by Zhang Ruochen. This time, he would crush Zhang Ruochen mercilessly with all his power.

King Xiaoyang stood up as well. Terrifying killing intent appeared in his eyes. The two of them had been invincible since their debut. They had made a name for themselves in both the Celestial Court and the Infernal Court. Together, they had been able to fight against a top cultivator of First-

Tier below the Supreme Sainthood, but they had been defeated by Zhang Ruochen instead. It was a great humiliation.

This humiliation could only be washed away using Zhang Ruochen's blood.

Without further delay, the Jinyang Twin Kings flew out of the cave where they were in seclusion and headed straight for the direction where the howl came from.

Meanwhile, all the top cultivators heard of Zhang Ruochen's ruthless words. It was like a storm that quickly swept through the ruins of Dragon God Shrine and attracted the attention of all parties.

"Who does Zhang Ruochen think he is? He dares to challenge the Son of Darkness. He must be overestimating himself. If the Son of Darkness attacks, he can easily suppress him with a single hand.

"No one dares to threaten the Infernal Court. Zhang Ruochen, you're courting death.

"He's just an immature Scion of Time and Space. Does he think he's become a figure? Does he think he's the second Saint Monk Xumi? Anyone who makes an enemy of the Infernal Court must die."

…

The whole Infernal Court was furious and agitated. They felt very disdain for Zhang Ruochen.

In the Sword Vault Palace battle and Xianji Mountain battle, a large number of powerful cultivators of the Infernal Court had died at the hands of Zhang Ruochen. He had long angered the Infernal Court. Countless top cultivators of the Infernal Court wished they could grind his bones into dust.

The Son of Darkness, who was the main character of the Infernal Court, appeared to be calm. He had yet to respond. It was as if he had already left the True Dragon Island.

After all, the Son of Darkness had obtained hundreds of millions of years' worth of treasures in the monster's body. It can be said that he gained the treasures beyond imagination, overloaded his capacity.

But in truth, the Son of Darkness was still in the ruins. He hadn't returned to the Infernal Court with the treasures.

First of all, with his caliber, he had no fear of anyone. He still wished to obtain more treasures.

Second, the Son of Darkness was the leader of the Fane of Darkness. He was in charge of leading the Infernal Court's army into the True Dragon Island and seize the key to the World Gate. His mission had yet to complete, so how could he leave?

…

Pfft
Zhang Ruochen swung his sword and chopped off the head of a powerhouse from the Nether Clan. With the terrifying sword form, he killed the Saint Soul of the powerhouse.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen felt like he was in an Infernal Ashuran. The corpses were piled up as high as a mountain, the blood of the fallen flows like a river, even the heaven and earth were painted crimson red.

Not long ago, Zhang Ruochen had found an army of one hundred Netherkin warriors here. They were the flag guards of the Nether Clan Army and were responsible for guarding the Nether Clan's war flag.

The Nether Clan Army advanced towards the direction of the war flag. All the powerhouses of the Nether Clan were scattered around the territories of the war flag.

If anything happened, the Nether Clan Army could gather around swiftly.

The flag guards were slain by Zhang Ruochen with ease. At the same time, he cut off the Nether Clan's war flag and stuck it aside.

Many of the Nether Clan powerhouses wanted to take back the war flag. They came from all directions. In the end, they were all vanquished by Zhang Ruochen's sword.

The mountain of corpses in front of Zhang Ruochen was formed by thousands of fallen powerhouses of the Nether Clan. Their resentment was overwhelming.

Zhang Ruochen moved and appeared on top of the mountain of corpses. He looked down at the lake of blood filled by the blood from the powerhouses of the Nether Clan.

They were all top cultivators of the Saint King Realm after all. Their blood was exuberant. The blood flowing out was comparable to that of millions of ordinary creatures.

After a moment of silence, Zhang Ruochen reached out his hands and suddenly raised them. The blood rose high as if they were boiling and filled the entire sky. A terrifying phenomenon appeared as if the end of the world has arrived.

Then, Zhang Ruochen pointed to the sky with his finger, used the sky as a book, and the blood as ink to began writing.

‘Son of Darkness, I’m at the top of the mountain of corpses of the Netherkins. I’m waiting for you to fight to the death — Zhang Ruochen.’

Three lines of words filled with killing intent appeared in the sky. They could be seen even from tens of thousands of miles away.

Compared to the words he had said through the air, these three lines of words were no doubt the true letter of challenge.

Only Zhang Ruochen was daring enough to write a letter of challenge, using the blood of more than 1,000 powerhouses of the Nether Clan.

All the cultivators in the ruins looked up to the sky and they all fixed their sight at the three lines of blood.

Zhang Ruochen has done the unexpected. Just how many powerhouses of the Nether clan did he kill to achieve such enormous Blood Qi?’

Many of the cultivators were shocked.

Everyone could sense that a storm is coming. The Infernal Court would never let this getaway. Even if the Son of Darkness didn’t attack, the other top cultivators would come and for Zhang Ruochen’s head.

After writing the letter of challenge, Zhang Ruochen did nothing but sit cross-legged on a rock mountain. Waiting for more powerhouses of the Infernal Court to come. Since he had already started the fight, he would kill to his heart’s content.

Half a day later, Zhang Ruochen sensed that someone had arrived. He opened his eyes wide to see who were they.

Hundreds of miles away, a man and a woman were walking side by side.

The man was an extraordinary young man with long golden hair, golden eyes, and a pair of golden dragon horns on his forehead, which looked like they were made of divine gold. His body was surrounded by a vigorous golden blood qi, which looked like a vast divine sea.

The woman was flawless and stunningly beautiful. She was different from other women who were petite and lovely. She was tall and dressed in golden mail as if she was a goddess of war. It was an unforgettable sight.

Even though they were distanced, Zhang Ruochen could feel an extremely noble aura coming from them. They did not attain such a state, but they were born with it.

“Ao Xukong, Fairy Linglong.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes flashed with full spirit.

Zhang Ruochen was familiar with the man and the woman. After all, both of them are very well-known. No one had not heard of them.

Ao Xukong was the top cultivator below the Supreme Sainthood of the Celestial Dragon Realm. His physical strength and power were incredible and invincible.

Fairy Linglong was a fairy from the Portrait of the Nine Beauties. Her beauty was well-known throughout the world, countless people would be wild of her.

However, Zhang Ruochen did not have any contact with them, so he was unsure of the reason they had come.

Ao Xinyan had once said that the forbidden figure in the Ying Yang Sea seemed to have gone to the Celestial Dragon Realm and that the realm was involved in this matter. This makes Zhang Ruochen connect the dots between the incidents that happened.

The Celestial Dragon Realm was ranked second in the Southern Universe, second only to The Demon God Realm, which ruled the world in the south. It had a strong foundation. It was on par with the Kunlun Realm and the Western Buddha Realm a hundred thousand years ago. But now, it was even more unfathomable. It was now the most powerful realm amongst all.

Even if one could not get on good terms with such a powerful realm, one must not get on bad terms with it as well.

With quick thinking, Zhang Ruochen could not help but stood up and took the initiative to greet them. He cupped his hands and said, “Brother Ao, Fairy Linglong, it’s a pleasure to meet you.”

“You know who I am?”A look of surprise flashed in Ao Xukong’s eyes.

Zhang Ruochen said, “How could I not recognize you? Brother Ao, you are the infamous genius from the Celestial Dragon Realm. Your name traveled throughout the heavens.”

“If we are talking about fame, I’m afraid there aren’t many people in the younger generation who can compare to you. I have longed to meet you too, The Scion of Time and Space who is highly regarded by the Yueshen,” Ao Xukong said.

Hearing the name “Yueshen”, Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat. Could it be that Yueshen had something to do with the Celestial Dragon Realm?

Looking at the mountain of corpses in front of her, Fairy Linglong couldn’t help but shake her head slightly with a worried look, she said, “Brother Zhang, you might have been a little overdoing it. If this continues, I’m afraid that the Infernal Court will seek revenge upon you. Other than the Son of Darkness, there are also The Seven Top Killers of the Nether Temple and the Three Emperors and Twelve Reverends from the Bone Clan. All of them are top cultivators and it won’t be an easy task to deal with them.”

“I rarely admire anyone, but brother Zhang, the things you have done for the Kunlun Realm have made me admire you. The battle between the Kunlun Realm and the Infernal Court has just begun. There is no need for you to charge against the Infernal Court now.

“With your potential, it won’t take long for you to become the top cultivator below the Supreme Sainthood and even stand shoulder to shoulder with Yan Wushen. At that time, there won’t be anyone from the Infernal Court to challenge you.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen’s eyes couldn’t help but change slightly. He didn’t expect that Fairy Linglong would say such a thing to him.

Ao Xukong nodded. “She’s is right. Brother Zhang, you are The Scion of Time and Space and have received the inheritance of Saint Monk Xumi. In time, you might be able to reach the level that Saint Monk Xumi had attained in the past. There’s no need to fight with the Son of Darkness now.”

“If the Son of Darkness provoked you and forced you to fight, I can fight on your behalf and make him pay for his crime.” As he spoke, Ao Xukong exuded a strong fighting spirit. It seemed that he had been looking forward to such a battle.

Just as the rumors said, Ao Xukong was indeed a battle-frenzied dragon. He had hoped to meet all kinds of powerful opponents to improve his strength through fighting.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Ao Xukong and Fairy Linglong deeply. He could feel that they were sincerely trying to persuade him to give up the idea of fighting with the Son of Darkness.

For them to come to persuade him in person, it must be because the Celestial Dragon Realm saw his potential, just like the taoists. Maybe it was because of Yueshen and Saint Monk Xumi.

Of course, there was a significant reason. Both Ao Xukong and Fairy Linglong felt that Zhang Ruochen was still not strong enough and had not accepted the fact that there was a large gap between him and the Son of Darkness. They thought that he was acting on impulse.

It was normal since before entering the True Dragon Island, his best battle result was the battle with the Mosheng. It had only been a short while. No one would believe that he had the top-notch strength of the First-Tier below the Supreme Sainthood.

He exhaled lightly, Zhang Ruochen said solemnly, “Thank you, Brother Ao and Fairy Linglong, for your kindness. But my grudge with the Son of Darkness must be resolved by my own hands. Besides that, I have already issued a challenge to him. How can I turn my back on it now? If did that, I would be causing my own misery.”

“Although the Son of Darkness is very tough, he is not invincible. I will know who is stronger and who is weaker after a real battle,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Hearing this, Ao Xukong’s face showed a strange look. He did not expect Zhang Ruochen to be so confident. After all, even he was not fully confident of himself that he could defeat the Son of Darkness.

The battle of life and death was not a joke.

“It seems that I can’t persuade you. In that case, you should be more careful.” Ao Xukong felt very helpless. Then he added, “With your current

status, your life and death do not only matter to you. You must be rational and think it over."

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, "I know what I'm doing."

Ao Xukong and Fairy Linglong chatted with Zhang Ruochen for a little while more. Seeing that they couldn't change Zhang Ruochen's mind, they left helplessly.

Well, they didn't exactly leave. They just stayed nearby and watched from afar.

"I don't know what happened that causes Zhang Ruochen to lose his mind," Fairy Linglong sighed.

A different look flashed through Ao Xukong's eyes. "I hope he didn't act on impulse."

After watching Ao Xukong and Fairy Linglong left, Zhang Ruochen returned to the mountain of corpses. He was extremely calm. Their persuasion didn't shake his resolve and confidence in fighting against the Son of Darkness.

More people came around after Ao Xukong and Fairy Linglong left. They didn't come close, just watched from afar.

Zhang Ruochen had noticed these people, but he didn't care much about them. As long as they didn't provoke him, he Wouldnt care what they want.

Swoosh
A red light flashed from the sky and Blackie appeared out of nowhere.

"I've finally found you. Didn't you go after that sly old man? Why are you fighting with the Son of Darkness Again?" Blackie questioned Zhang Ruochen with all the doubts in his mind.

Zhang Ruochen didn't hide anything from Blackie. He briefly disclosed everything that had happened to Blackie.

After listening to Zhang Ruochen's story, Blackie was furious. "The Son of Darkness is so sinister. You're right. We must kill him. We can't let him bring the treasures of Kunlun Realm back to the Infernal Court."

It was pretty obvious that Blackie's was aiming at the hundreds of millions of treasures. The others were secondary.

“By the way, that sly old man probably knows where the key to the World Gate is. If he ever shows up again, we must catch him,” Zhang Ruochen said suddenly.

This was of utmost importance. He had to focus on dealing with the Son of Darkness. Even if the short and skinny old man appeared, he wouldn’t have time to care. Blackie had just come at the right time.

Hearing this, Blackie’s eyes widened and asked Zhang Ruochen. “Are you sure?”

“He has the Origin Aura of Kunlun Realm. So he must have come into contact with the key of the World Gate,” Zhang Ruochen confirmed.

Blackie’s eyes flashed. “Finally, a clue to the key of the World Gate. Don’t worry, leave this to me. As long as that old gramps appears, he won’t be able to get away.”

Blackie became very serious when it is about the key to the World Gate. He was already thinking about how to deal with the short and skinny old man.

As for Zhang Ruochen’s challenge to the Son of Darkness, Blackie wasn’t worried about it at all.

Blackie knew very well that Zhang Ruochen would never do anything that he had no confidence in.

Chapter 2107: Twin Kings’ Arrival

On the barren hill, dozens of elites from Thousand-Star Civilization gathered here. The one in the lead was none other than the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

Five cultivators, including males and females, were found lying in front of the Maiden of a Thousand Stars. From the outside, they looked fine. However, they no longer showed any signs of life. Their eyes were wide open, filled with resentment and fear.

These five cultivators were the top elites of Thousand-Star Civilization. Although their cultivation was above the realm of Nine-step Saint King, and their strength was powerful, they eventually got slaughtered easily and did not even have the chance to fight back. It was because their opponent was Son of Darkness.

Not long ago, when the Maiden of a Thousand Stars had escaped from the underground, she immediately sent a message to the elites of Thousand-Star Civilization, telling them to search for Son of Darkness.

These five elites had accidentally discovered Son of Darkness' whereabouts. Unfortunately, before they could send out the message, they were busted and mercilessly killed by the Son of Darkness.

After that, Son of Darkness had sent these five corpses back to show them to the Maiden of a Thousand Stars. He ignored Thousand-Star Civilization's threat and deliberately humiliated them.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars' eyes were filled with anger. She inadvertently clenched her fists tightly, her body faintly emitting terrifying killing intent.

"Son of Darkness is going too far. Does he think that Thousand-Star Civilization has no one to hold him accountable for his doing?" An elder growled.

Another elder said in a deep voice, "Whoever dare to kill them Thousand-Star Civilization's elites, they must pay a heavy price for this. Scion Number One, Three and Six are already on their way. They join hands to hunt Son of Darkness. There is no way he can escape."

Thousand-Star Civilization had a powerful foundation. They had nurtured the Thousand-Star Scions. Every single one of them was extraordinary. The scions ranked top ten were extremely powerful. They were very famous throughout the universe. They had the potential to become top Supreme Saints and even deities.

Scion Number One was distinctively outstanding. He was the strongest scion that Thousand-Star Civilization had nurtured over the past ten thousand years.

Although Scion Number One was not the master of any Paths of the Ancients, he had a power that could contend with the power of the Ancients. It was the power of Stargod that Thousand-Star Civilization had passed down for generations. Nevertheless, only a very few people could master it since ancient times.

"Look at the sky over there!" An elder suddenly exclaimed.

When they heard him, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars and the elites of Thousand-Star Civilization looked up at the sky in the distance. They saw three lines of a bloody message clearly.

‘Dear Son of Darkness,

I’ll be waiting for a duel to the death with you on the top of a mountain of Nether Clan corpses.

Zhang Ruochen.’

The eyes of the Maiden of a Thousand Stars turned grim. Never had she expected Zhang Ruochen, who had just parted ways with her, to cause such a big commotion.

It was apparent that Zhang Ruochen had chosen a completely different method from her. Instead of looking for Son of Darkness, Zhang Ruochen wanted him to show himself.

All Nether Clan cultivators would get enraged upon seeing this letter of challenge written with the blood of Nether Clan elites. They would hate Zhang Ruochen to the core. None of them could sit still, including Son of Darkness and The Seven Top Killers from Nether Hall.

In other words, that mountain of corpses would become a gathering spot, drawing all the elites’ attention.

With a wave of her hand, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars put away the bodies of the five elites. She looked into the distance and said, “Let’s go find Zhang Ruochen. As soon as Son of Darkness shows up, we will not let him get away.”

When the powerful elites of Thousand-Star Civilization heard her, they didn’t hesitate. Immediately, They followed the Maiden of a Thousand Stars and set off.

Like the Maiden of a Thousand Stars and the others, the powerhouses from all parties had started moving swiftly. They all rushed toward the mountain of corpses, which was filled with resentful energy. They didn’t want to miss this significant event.

Jinyang Twin Kings, who were on their way, inadvertently stopped moving and looked at the distant horizon.

“Zhang Ruochen is indeed a madman,” King Dayang said in a deep voice. “He is audacious and insolent. Not only did he slaughter so many elites of Nether Clan, he provoked Son of Darkness. He won’t survive. We have to hurry, or we’ll lose the chance to kill him.”

In his eyes, Zhang Ruochen was already dead. The key was who would kill him. If Son of Darkness attacked first, they wouldn’t get their chance to work off their shame.

King Xiaoyang nodded. “We can’t delay any longer. Zhang Ruochen’s actions will definitely anger all the powerful elites of Nether Clan. Even if Son of Darkness doesn’t attack, the Seven Top Killers from Nether Hall will kill him. The Bone clan will probably get involved.”

Immediately, Jinyang twin kings turned around and accelerated to their maximum speed. They were racing against time, trying to take Zhang Ruochen’s life before Nether Clan and Bone clan did.

As time passed, more and more people arrived near the mountain of corpses.

A streak of silver light flashed, and Ao Xinyan appeared on the mountain of corpses.

Ao Xinyan said, “Captain, why did you suddenly issue a challenge to Son of Darkness? What happened?”

“I hold some grudges against Son of Darkness that I need resolve. You came at the right time. There is something I need you and the Re-Awakeners to help me with,” Zhang Ruochen said calmly.

Ao Xinyan asked, “Is it about dealing with Son of Darkness?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “No, no one needs to interfere in my battle with Son of Darkness. I want you to capture someone who has clues about the key to the World Gate.”

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen used his spiritual power to pass the basic information about the short skinny old man and showed Ao Xinyan the old man’s appearance.

There was a glint of surprise, then followed by joy in Ao Xinyan’s eyes. They would definitely have a better chance of finding the key to the World Gate with these clues.

However, the next moment, Ao Xinyan had a worried look in her eyes. She said, “Son of Darkness is a threat of Ultraten level. His strength is unfathomable. Are you really going to fight him alone, Captain?”

“The letter of challenge has been issued. I can’t back down,” Zhang Ruochen said firmly.

Ao Xinyan lowered her head. After a moment of silence, she looked up and said, “Don’t forget that you haven’t fulfilled your promise to me.”

“Don’t worry. I won’t lose this battle,” Zhang Ruochen said.

When Ao Xinyan sensed Zhang Ruochen’s indomitable momentum, she felt a little relieved. She then left the mountain of corpses for the time being.

The short skinny old man was very sly. If they wanted to catch him, they would need joint efforts from the Re-awakeners, Elder Patriarch Death Zen, and Corpse Emperor Tianming.

To accomplish their goal, they had to make some preparations in advance to ensure that nothing went wrong.

“Zhang Ruochen, die.”

As a loud shout was heard, a golden light suddenly emerged, shooting toward Zhang Ruochen like a meteor.

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes and glanced at the golden light. Without moving his body, he reached out a hand and pressed it forward gently.

Kaboom!

A large area of space collapsed. The violent power of Dimension blocked the golden light.

The golden light revealed its true form. It was an ancient golden cauldron with a Three-legged Crow carved on it. The crow was lifelike.

The ancient cauldron turned around and fell into the hands of a valiant man in golden armor. It was none other than King Xiaoyang.

King Xiaoyang’s arrival immediately attracted many people’s attention. It was no secret that there was a feud between Sunshine Civilization and Zhang Ruochen.

But could King Xiaoyang defeat Zhang Ruochen alone?

Zhang Ruochen looked at King Xiaoyang and said indifferently, “I didn’t go find you, but you came to me.”

When seeing King Xiaoyang appear, Fairy Linglong and Ao Xukong frowned. The battle between Zhang Ruochen and Son of Darkness was imminent. Both parties had to preserve their Saint Qi and physical strength to be in their prime condition.

As a member of Celestial Court, no matter how big his grudge was, King Xiaoyang should have put it aside. After all, Infernal Court was their biggest, deadly enemy.

‘Is King Xiaoyang here to exhaust Zhang Ruochen’s energy on purpose?’

“Of course I came, because you will die at my hands,” King Xiaoyang said coldly, not concealing his killing intent at all.

As he spoke, he struck out Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron again, activating powerful Supreme Power, wanting to crush Zhang Ruochen into ashes.

Zhang Ruochen did not let his guard down. He immediately took out Zangshan Demonic Mirror to counter Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron’s strike.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen activated the Precepts of the Palm and blasted a palm strike across the air.

Accompanied by the earth-shaking roar of dragons and elephants, a dragon and an elephant flew out of his palms, carrying vast saint power, charging at King Xiaoyang.

With his current cultivation and strength, the power of his Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike had undoubtedly greatly improved. It truly displayed the power of a high-level saint technique.

King Xiaoyang’s eyes were icy cold. He formed a seal with incredible speed, mobilized his majestic Saint Qi, and condensed it into the form of a huge golden hand that was hundreds of meters long. He struck out fiercely.

BANG!

The dragon and elephant exploded. The huge golden hand was also shattered.

At this moment, another huge golden hand appeared behind Zhang Ruochen. Apparently, its owner was trying to seize the best opportunity to attack.

The giant golden hand came with a terrifying power. It was so menacing and overbearing that even a star could be shattered before it.

BOOM!

Zhang Ruochen was hit by the giant golden hand. His body exploded, but there was no blood or flesh sent flying.

It turned out it was not Zhang Ruochen's real body but only his afterimage.

'It's a pity that such an accurate attack could not kill Zhang Ruochen. He could even perform dimensional techniques on True Dragon Island." King Xiaoyang sighed.

The dimensional suppression on True Dragon Island was so strong that even cultivators could not fly, let alone perform dimensional techniques.

This could only mean that Zhang Ruochen's attainments in the Path of Dimension had reached an astonishing level. His movements were not restricted as much as others under the special environment of True Dragon Island.

Zhang Ruochen appeared on a giant rock out of thin air. He looked in the direction of the giant golden hand. A valiant figure in golden armor entered his sight.

His pupils constricted when he saw this person clearly. It was King Dayang.

He was certain that he did not see it wrongly. This person was King Dayang, who had blown up his saint source. Now, he reappeared in front of him alive.

"What's going on? King Dayang is still alive."

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars' eyes were filled with surprise.

She had witnessed King Dayang's self-detonation with her own eyes. In that situation, King Dayang couldn't possibly have left anything behind. How could he remain unscathed?

The same went to the powerhouses of Thousand-Star Civilization. They were also stunned in bewilderment.

King Dayang walked over from the horizon like a slowly rising blazing sun. “Why? Are you surprised to see me?”

The lethal blow was King Dayang’s attack.

Zhang Ruochen’s gaze moved between King Xiaoyang and King Dayang, and he figured out something. “I’m really surprised that a person who was supposed to stay dead has reappeared in front of me.

“If I’m not wrong, you must have practiced some kind of secret techniques.

“Your lives were bonded together—you can live and die together. No wonder King Xiaoyang escaped alone.”

Zhang Ruochen had sensed King Xiaoyang’s aura from King Dayang. The two seemed to be indistinguishable.

King Dayang said, “Cut the crap. We will settle a score with you, new and old feuds together.”

Almost at the same time, the bodies of King Dayang and King Xiaoyang shone with bright golden light. They turned into two golden suns and flew into the sky.

The two suns soared into the sky and immediately released majestic golden saint power. It was extremely so hot that it could melt everything.

Driven by the golden saint power, Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron immediately released a vast and terrifying aura. It was like an ancient golden crow waking up from a deep slumber.

In the blink of an eye, Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron became huge. The mouth of the cauldron was facing down towards Zhang Ruochen.

Under the suppression of Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron, the space within a hundred miles was frozen. It was as if the space was isolated from the world. Before Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron landed, the surging golden flames of the sun poured down relentlessly, going to melt and refining everything.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes turned grim. He immediately fused Saint Qi into Zangshan Demonic Mirror. He activated powerful Supreme Power to block the falling ancient Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron.

"Zhang Ruochen, you will not be able to block it," King Dayang growled.

The two brothers had used up their vital Qi to activate the Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron's strongest power. They wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen as quickly as possible to avoid any unforeseen circumstances.

They thought that no matter how many tricks Zhang Ruochen had, he couldn't block the absolute attack force.

Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron had even refined deities to death before it was damaged. The two brothers didn't believe that Zhang Ruochen could overturn the situation.

Zhang Ruochen didn't say a word. He mobilized the precepts of Dimension, generated a large amount of dimensional force, and fused it into Zangshan Demonic Mirror.

Buzz

Suddenly, Zangshan Demonic Mirror shook violently, and an extremely dense demonic Qi surged out.

Zangshan Demonic Mirror contained an inner world with earth and heaven. It was considered a valuable dimensional artifact. Only by using the dimensional power, could one unleash its strongest force.

A vast realm appeared from Zangshan Demonic Mirror and crashed into Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron.

BOOM!

Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron shook violently and was sent flying. Jinyang Twin Kings were also hit.

The golden light dissipated, and Jinyang Twin Kings returned to their human forms. They spat out blood, and their auras became weak.

"How can he be so powerful?"

Jinyang Twin Kings stared at Zhang Ruochen, their eyes filled with shocks.

They were confident that the former Zhang Ruochen they had encountered on two previous occasions was not as powerful as he was now. The difference in strength was like heaven and earth.

They just couldn't understand how Zhang Ruochen's strength could rise so quickly. The Wuyuan Royal Flower couldn't have brought him such an effect.

"Zhang Ruochen must have met a great fortuitous encounter on True Dragon Island. His current strength is definitely at the first tier below Supreme Sainthood."

Jinyang Twin Kings had met one of the Four Heavenly Kings. With Zhang Ruochen's current strength, he was no weaker than that Heavenly King.

No wonder Zhang Ruochen dared to challenge Son of Darkness.

Without any hesitation, Jinyang Twin Kings chose to escape. They were no longer Zhang Ruochen's match. If they continued the fight, they would probably die.

"Do you think you can run?" Zhang Ruochen's eyes were cold. He activated Zangshan Demonic Mirror and subdued Jinyang Twin Kings.

At this moment, a silver mace suddenly appeared and blocked Zangshan Demonic Mirror.

BOOM!

Because of the hard collision between the silver mace and Zangshan Demonic Mirror, the ground sank and formed a huge crater, as if a meteorite had hit it.

Then, a burly figure appeared on the battlefield. He grabbed the silver mace and stopped Zhang Ruochen from chasing after Jinyang Twin Kings.

"Let them go. There's no need to kill them off," the burly man said in a deep voice.

His tone was calm but with an air of absolute authority.

Chapter 2108: Darkness Descending

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation **Editor:** EndlessFantasy Translation

The man holding the silver mace was tall and burly. He was nearly 2.5 meters tall and had dark skin. He stood on the ground like an iron tower, blocking Zhang Ruochen's path.

Boundless silver Blood Qi emanated from this man's body. Filled with a wild aura, it condensed into the shape of a fierce tiger behind him. His blood-red eyes contained terrifying killing intent. It seemed like he would break free from the void at any moment.

Had it been anyone else, they would have collapsed to the ground in front of this burly man.

A cold light flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes, "You didn't stop them when they attacked me. Now, you want me to let them go. Am I that easy to bully?"

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen's body shook. Strong five-colored saint light burst out from his body and created a hazy realm behind him. It was filled with a large amount of chaotic energy.

This was a phenomenon after the completion of the Five-element Chaotic Body. It had all sorts of miraculous uses.

As soon as this realm was formed, the space within hundreds of miles became completely sealed. The people inside were all greatly affected.

Just when Jinyang Twin Kings escaped a hundred miles away, they felt like they were stuck in the mud. Their movements became unusually slow.

As the burly man sensed that the space was locked down, a flash of anger appeared in his eyes. He said in a deep voice, "Zhang Ruochen, do you really want to fight with me?"

The burly man thought since he had already made an appearance, Zhang Ruochen should stop and let the Jinyang Twin Kings leave. This would be the best for everyone.

However, he did not expect Zhang Ruochen to be so ungrateful. He did not even give him face. This was outrageous.

"If you want to fight," Zhang Ruochen replied aggressively, "I'll play along."

If the burly man wanted to use his power to suppress others, he had undoubtedly picked the wrong target. Zhang Ruochen had never been afraid of anyone.

The space rippled slightly, and Zhang Ruochen disappeared into thin air. When he reappeared, he was already in front of Jinyang Twin Kings.

Since he was the one who set up the Dimensional Lockdown, he wouldn't be affected by it. Instead, he was more like a fish in water.

"Let's fight it out with him."

Jinyang Twin Kings joined hands together to shoot out the Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were cold. He reached out with one hand, and hundreds of thousands of Precepts of Dimension appeared. Like chains, they wrapped around the Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron and stopped it in mid-air.

Then, Zangshan Demonic Mirror flew out. It glowed and released a powerful suction force as if it were a black hole. It shrouded the Jinyang Twin Kings.

"Stop!"

Seeing this, the burly man couldn't help but shout.

At the same time, he shook his hand and shot out the silver mace.

The silver mace shone with bright saint light. A large number of Supreme Inscriptions appeared, releasing an extremely menacing aura. It was like an awakening peerless beast.

As the menacing aura became stronger and stronger, the silver mace transformed into a silver-white tiger. It roared and pounced at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen turned around suddenly and pressed his hand forward. The Great Power of Dimensions surged out of his body.

Boom.
The space within the radius of a few hundred meters shattered instantly and then disappeared. A pitch-black void space appeared as if it was going to swallow everything in the world.

The fierce silver tiger emitted a terrifying divine power, but it was still blocked by the power of the Dimensional Annihilation. It couldn't get close to Zhang Ruochen.

With a slight delay, Jinyang Twin Kings were both sucked into Zangshan Demonic Mirror. They were hardly suppressed and couldn't do anything else.

Without the control of Jinyang Twin Kings, the Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron fell silent. No matter how powerful it was, it was damaged now. The implement spirit was in a state of slumber. Even if it used its vital energy, it could only revive temporarily and would fall into a deeper sleep after that.

Zhang Ruochen didn't look at the Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron. He waved his hand and suppressed it into the inner world of Zangshan Demonic Mirror to prevent any problems.

After doing all this, Zhang Ruochen looked at the burly man again. His eyes were calm and unperturbed.

Seeing Jinyang Twin Kings being suppressed, the burly man frowned. Since his debut, no one had ever dared to disrespect him like this.

The burly man couldn't help but emit an even more ferocious aura. The ferocious tiger vision behind him became more and more solid. The terrifying aura caused the surrounding space to distort faintly.

"Minghu, let's end it here."

At this moment, there was a loud shout.

Ao Xukong walked out from the darkness with a grave expression. Majestic dragon's aura soared into the sky, transforming into a golden divine dragon that soared into the nine heavens.

Seeing Ao Xukong, the burly man could not help but frown slightly. A hint of fear flashed in his eyes.

Zhang Ruochen withdrew his power at the right time and released the lockdown on the surrounding few hundreds of miles of space to let Ao Xukong come closer.

The burly man's voice was slightly low, "Ao Xukong, are you trying to t to stop me?"

Ao Xukong nodded slightly at Zhang Ruochen. Then, he looked at the burly man and said, "Minghu, although Beidou Civilization belongs to the ancient civilizations, we also belong to the same side as the Celestial Court. We

should be fighting against the the same enemy together, not fighting against each other here.”

“Jinyang Twin Kings knew that Zhang Ruochen was going to fight the Son of Darkness, but they still chose to attack him at this time, trying to drain Zhang Ruochen’s essence, Qi, and spirit. They were basically supporting the enemy, so they reap what they have sown.”

Upon hearing this, the Burly Man’s turned grim. Ao Xukong had already put it that way, so if he were to attack Zhang Ruochen again, it would probably lead to a terrible outcome.

Moreover, he could also tell that Ao Xukong wouldn’t just stand by and watch if he attacked.

Now that Jinyang Twin Kings had been subdued, there was no longer a need to fight with Ao Xukong.

The burly man looked deeply at Zhang Ruochen. “Don’t go too far,” he said icily. “Otherwise, it won’t end well.”

After saying this, the burly man put away the silver mace and left.

“Immortal Minghu is known for taking revenge even for the smallest grievance,” Ao Xukong reminded him seriously. “You have disgraced him this time, so you should be careful in the future.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “Thank you for your reminder, Brother Ao,” he said. ” Although I don’t like to cause trouble, I am also not a person who is afraid of trouble.”

“I believe that,” Ao Xukong said. “You must be careful when you fight with the Son of Darkness. There is a world of difference between him and Jinyang Twin Kings.”

Even though he could see that Zhang Ruochen’s current strength had probably reached the first tier below Supreme Sainthood, still he couldn’t be careless if he were to fight with the Son of Darkness in a life-and-death battle.

There was still a big difference in strength among those in the first tier below Supreme Sainthood. For example, Jingyang Twin Kings could be comparable to this level, but they were the weakest. That was why Zhang Ruochen could defeat them.

Ao Xukong didn’t stay for long. After saying those words, he didn’t disturb Zhang Ruochen anymore and retreated to a distance again.

Even though he could see that Zhang Ruochen’s current strength had probably reached the first tier below the Supreme-Saint realm, still he couldn’t be careless if he were to fight with the Son of Darkness in a life-and-death battle.

Zhang Ruochen returned to the top of the mountain of corpses.

On the other side, the burly man returned to Beidou Civilization camp. His facial expression was graver than ever.

Who was he? He was the second strongest person of Beidou Civilization, just under the Supreme-Saint level. He had received the title of Immortal Minghu and wielded the killing weapon—the White Tiger Mace. Who would possibly dare to defy his will?

In Beidou Civilization, ‘Immortal’ was a highly prestigious title. Only the ten strongest people below Supreme Sainthood could be awarded the title. Although they had yet to become Supreme Saints, their status was no lower than that of a Neverwither Supreme Saint. In fact, their status was even higher than that.

This was because the ten who could obtain the title of ‘Immortals’ had great potential. In the future, they could become a Supreme Saint or even a deity.

“You think you can do whatever you want just because you have some strength? You really don’t know how high the sky and how deep the earth is,” Terrifying coldness sparkled in Immortal Minghu’s eyes. “I’d like to see how you can defeat the Son of Darkness.”

In his opinion, even if Zhang Ruochen could suppress Jinyang Twin Kings, he still did not stand a chance of winning against the Son of Darkness. He was looking forward to seeing Zhang Ruochen lose miserably.

The powerhouses from different places who gathered there were shocked to see Zhang Ruochen easily defeat Jinyang Twin Kings. No one had expected that Zhang Ruochen’s strength had improved to such a high level in such a short time.

The Son of Darkness was indeed unfathomable, but Zhang Ruochen also gave people an unfathomable feeling. The battle between the two of them would undoubtedly be very exciting.

The powerhouses of the Thousand-Star Civilization gathered on a bleak mountain top. Almost all of them were surprised, especially the six Elders responsible for protecting the Maiden of a Thousand Stars. It was hard for them to calm down.

Not long ago, they had seen Zhang Ruochen and another three fighting with thousands of powerhouses of the Sunshine Civilization. At that time, Zhang Ruochen was not weak either, but compared to what he had become now, the gap was huge.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars looked at Zhang Ruochen from afar with a smile in her eyes.

“Zhang Ruochen was cool-headed enough not to kill Jinyang Twin Kings,” She said softly. “Otherwise, things would be more troublesome than killing the Sunshine Tianzi.”

The identity of Jinyang Twin Kings was very special in Sunshine Civilization. They carried a huge secret, which was why Sunshine Civilization had spent so many resources cultivating them.

As long as they were not killed, there was room to mitigate the conflicts between Zhang Ruochen and Sunshine Civilization. Otherwise, they would have to fight to the death.

Not many people could bear the anger of an ancient civilization.

“Why hasn’t the Son of Darkness arrived yet? is he planning to avoid the fight?”

After waiting for a long time, the Son of Darkness was still nowhere to be seen. Many people could not help but feel impatient.

They had come to the ruins of the Dragon Temple to look for opportunities. No one wanted to waste their time here.

“Maybe the Son of Darkness doesn’t even want to fight Zhang Ruochen. He thinks the gap between them is too big.”

Suddenly, a voice filled with contempt sounded.

The voice seemed drifting from nowhere. No one could be sure who said it.

But anyone could tell that it was belittling Zhang Ruochen, with a hint of hostility.

Rumble.
At this moment, the earth suddenly shook violently, and everyone's attention was diverted.

A majestic dark power emerged from the horizon. It was massive as if it would blanket all the light in the world.

"Is it the Son of Darkness?"

Many people widened their eyes as they stared at the surging dark energy.

As the darkness got closer and closer, three huge figures were faintly revealed. They were not beings with flesh and blood but three skeletons.

On the left was a skeletal dragon. Its bones were emerald in color. Although it was in the darkness, it was not tainted by it at all. Its body was emitting a very scared saint light.

On the right was a skeletal phoenix. Its body was wrapped in pitch-black flames. Every bone was as pitch-black as ink. It released an immensely intense dark power as if it were the source of the darkness.

In the middle was a human-shaped skeleton that was thirty meters tall. All the bones were dark gold in color. They seemed to be made of divine gold and were indestructible.

"It's not the Son of Darkness. It's the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan."

Many people were shocked when they saw the three massive skeletons.

The Three Emperors of the Bone Clan were infamous in both the Infernal and Celestial Courts. They had once dominated the battlefields of many worlds. Countless powerhouses of the Celestial Court had died at their hands.

"Are the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan going to fight Zhang Ruochen in place of the Son of Darkness to the death?" Speculations rose within many cultivators.

Not many people were unafraid of the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan. Not only were they powerful, but they also had the Supreme Saint skeletons. Typical methods couldn't hurt them at all.

When fighting, the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan would attack opponents crazily. They wouldn't even defend themselves l. This was their innate advantage.

When they were 500 miles away from the mountain of corpses, the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan stopped. They didn't move forward, nor did they have any intention of attacking Zhang Ruochen.

Following the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan, ten more powerful reverends of the Bone Clan rushed over. They were ten of the Twelve Reverends of the Bone Clan.

It wasn't that the twelve reverends didn't want to come, but the other two had already died at Blackie's hands. Even the bones of these two Supreme Saints were completely shattered.

Not long after, the majestic power of darkness emerged from the horizon.

A huge Nether Lotus Flower floated in the darkness. Every petal was engraved with profound Nether inscriptions. There were also countless curse runes surrounding it, giving off a terrifying aura.

"Nether Hall's Seven Top Killers."

Upon seeing the Nether Lotus Flower, everyone immediately knew the identity of the newcomers.

Nether Hall's Seven Top Killers controlled the mysterious Seven Killer formation, which could greatly increase one's battle strength. If they joined forces, even Yan Wushen would have to avoid them. They were also not much weaker than the Four Heavenly Kings of the Celestial Palace.

Like the powerhouses of the Bone Clan, Nether Hall's Seven Top Killers didn't enter the 500-mile range around the mountain of corpses.

Seeing the powerhouses of the Bone Clan and the Nether Clan coming one after another, Ao Xukong's eyes flashed. "The powerhouses of the Bone Clan and the Dark Clan are both here," He whispered. "It seems that the Son of Darkness has arrived."

The Three Emperors and Ten Reverends of the Bone Clan and the Nether Hall's Seven Top Killers came one after another, but they stopped 500 miles away from the mountain of corpses. Obviously, they were here to support the Son of Darkness and not let anyone interfere with the final battle between him and Zhang Ruochen.

“Why is the sky getting darker and darker?” One of the powerhouses looked surprised.

For some reason, the entire world began to turn dark. In a moment, it was completely engulfed in darkness.

This kind of darkness was very unusual. It seemed to swallow everything. It caused people to tremble and their blood freeze.

Even the powerhouses of the Saint-King realm couldn’t help but feel their hairs stand on end. They felt a strange power trying to pull their souls out of their bodies.

Whoosh.
On the mountain of corpses, Zhang Ruochen suddenly opened his eyes and looked straight ahead.

The world had apparently fallen into darkness, but his eyes could still see a demon-like figure clearly. It had completely merged with the darkness. Like an emissary of darkness, it was walking step by step from the horizon.

Chapter 2109: Hadean Curse
Son of Darkness had arrived and even made a high-profile entrance. His terrifying dark aura intimidated many Saint-King elites, making them hard to breathe.

“He’s too formidable.”

Their hearts trembled as cold sweat dripped down their backs.

They felt that they were not facing a Saint King but a mighty Supreme Saint.

Ao Xukong’s eyes narrowed, he said in a deep voice, “The aura of Son of Darkness is stronger than before he came to True Dragon Island. Previously, three parts of his body were in Neverwilt state. But now, his heart is the only remaining body part that is yet to achieve Neverwilt state. Moreover, I feel that his current state is very different than before.”

He did not know that Son of Darkness had practiced the Divine Embryo of Darkness technique and undergone a complete transformation. Therefore, he was only aware that something about Son of Darkness had changed, but he couldn’t determine the cause.

‘I did not expect he could enhance his body parts to Neverwilt state despite being in Saint Kinghood. Son of Darkness’ mastery in power is terrifying.’ Fairy Linglong’s eyes looked shocked and aghast.

Cultivators could enhance parts of their physical body to Neverwilt state after they reached Path’s Anterior. It was not something difficult to achieve. There were many talented cultivators who could do it.

However, once their body parts were in Neverwilt state, they would face difficulty controlling their strength and power. They could accidentally break through to Neverwilther Supreme Sainthood when the transformation began.

Even a top genius would find it difficult to control his own power and suppress his cultivation to stay in Saint Kinghood when his body was partially in Neverwilt state.

Ao Xukong said, “I didn’t expect Son of Darkness to achieve such a big breakthrough in such a short time. It seems that he must have obtained a fortuitous encounter in Dragon Temple ruins. This situation is unfavorable to Zhang Ruochen.”

Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation had improved greatly. He was currently at the first tier below Supreme Sainthood. However, it was still hard to tell whether he could counter the threat from Son of Darkness now.

Ao Xukong looked at Zhang Ruochen who had already stood up. What surprised him was that Zhang Ruochen remained calm.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t panic at all, as if he didn’t feel any pressure at all.

On the other side of, Immortal Minghu looked at Zhang Ruochen and snorted. “You look calm. I’d like to see how long you can pretend.”

Zhang Ruochen had refused to give Immortal Minghu any face when he subdued Jinyang Twin Kings earlier on. So, apparently, Immortal Minghu had harbored grudges against him.

Of course, Immortal Minghu understood the situation well. He should be on the same side as Zhang Ruochen, fighting against the same enemy at this critical time. However, he got pissed off when he saw Zhang Ruochen’s calmness.

Immortal Minghu didn’t believe that Zhang Ruochen was as calm as he appeared. Instead, he thought that Zhang Ruochen was putting on an act.

After all, Son of Darkness's presence had also given Immortal Minghu immense pressure.

At the place where Thousand-Star Civilization elites gathered, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars' face darkened. Apparently, she knew how did Son of Darkness suddenly become this powerful. It must have something to do with the treasures he had taken from the monster king.

Among those hundreds of millions of treasures, there must be some items that had helped Son of Darkness improve his cultivation and strength. These items had enabled him to enhance his new physical body in a very short time.

'The new physical body that Son of Darkness has cultivated is more compatible with the variant force of Darkness he acquired. They form a perfect combination. D*mmit!' The Maiden of a Thousand Stars thought to herself. She felt distraught.

With Divine Eye of Origin, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars could see Son of Darkness more clearly than others. At the same time, she felt angry, regretting not killing him when they were in that monster king's body.

Now that Son of Darkness had improved his strength this much; it wasn't good news. She couldn't help but worry for Zhang Ruochen.

Most of the powerhouses from Nether Clan and Bone Clan had arrived. Once Zhang Ruochen and Son of Darkness started fighting, they probably would not allow anyone to interfere.

The three Emperors and ten reverends of Bone Clan and the Seven Top Killers from Nether Hall were no easy opponents. Even for many powerful figures in Celestial Court, they would not have the upper hand in the fight against these powerhouses.

It was a pity that Jinyang Twin Kings had failed to see the bigger picture. At such a critical moment, everybody should have stayed united to fight against Infernal Court. Now that Zhang Ruochen apprehended Jinyang Twin Kings, the absence of the twin kings in the battle would certainly affect Celestial Court force.

Just as the Maiden of a Thousand Stars was in deep thought, three striking starlight beams suddenly flew over from a distance. They arrived in an instant and turned into three handsome young men in starry robes.

The one in the lead had the most outstanding demeanor. Dozens of fist-size stars surrounded him, forming a profound sky of dazzling stars, making him look like the lord of stars. It was as if he could draw the star power of the universe with every move he made.

He was Scion Number One of Thousand-Star Civilization—Xing Wuji. He possessed the power of Stargod, which could contend with the nine great Paths of the Ancients. He was famous across all realms in the universe.

The rankings of the other scions would change from time to time. However, Xing Wuji had always been Scion Number One. For hundreds of years, no one could shake his position.

The two people behind Xing Wuji were Scion Number Three and Scion Number Six. They were both powerful too.

However, at this moment, the faces of Scion Number Three and Scion Number Six were a little pale. Apparently, they were injured.

“What happened?” Asked the Maiden of a Thousand Stars.

Scion Number Three smiled bitterly, “When we managed to track Son of Darkness down, we wanted to test him out. Who knew that we couldn’t withstand a single palm strike from him even when we joined hands. If Big Brother hadn’t arrived in time, we would end up in a worse condition.”

“Son of Darkness has become this strong,” the Maiden of a Thousand Stars’ brows furrowed slightly.

Xing Wuji nodded in agreement, “He is indeed very strong. After exchanging three palm strikes with him in the air, I still couldn’t gain the upper hand. If he continues to grow his strength, he might become the second Yan Wushen.”

Xing Wuji’s words struck the Maiden of a Thousand Stars. Even a prominent elite like Xing Wuji had rated Son of Darkness this way. It seemed that he must be stronger than she had expected.

Yan Wushen was already a headache for Celestial Court. If there were another Yan Wushen, it would be a huge problem.

“Zhang Ruochen has made a wise decision. It’s better to fight Son of Darkness right now than later because he will become a harder opponent once his cultivation base is stable,” said Xing Wuji in a low voice.

Of course, choosing the right time was one thing, but whether Zhang Ruochen was a match for Son of Darkness was another.

Although Zhang Ruochen had risen quickly and accomplished many striking achievements in battles, it was still hard to predict the result since his opponent was Son of Darkness.

Anyway, it was too late to say this. The battle was inevitable. No one could stop it, and Zhang Ruochen could not back down.

When Son of Darkness was hundreds of miles away from the mountain of corpses, he suddenly initiated an attack. He condensed potent power of Darkness into a huge black hand. It then charged at at Zhang Ruochen.

At the same time, a vast amount of Dark power turned into a dark ocean that swept toward the corpse mountain.

Anyone could feel Son of Darkness' contempt when he made such a casual attack. Apparently, he did not take Zhang Ruochen seriously at all.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the top of the corpse mountain and faced Son of Darkness from afar. With Ancient Abyssal Blade in hand, he slashed out casually. The Sword Qi traveled hundreds of miles and was invincible.

Whoosh!
Both the dark hand above and the dark ocean below were split open instantly. A long ravine emerged on the ground.

However, the dark ocean did not disappear. It fused back together instantly and continued to surge forward, flooding over the corpse mountain in an instant.

Countless profound dark curse runes emerged from the dark ocean and fused with the corpses of Netherkin powerhouses.

A large amount of resentful energy was released from each corpse. The energy gathered and soared into the sky, scattering the three lines of the bloody message in the sky.

The colors of heaven and earth changed. The resentful energy merged with the Blood Qi, forming a terrifying bloody vortex. It was as if doomsday were coming.

Being pulled by the bloody vortex, the resentful energy and sinister energy that filled True Dragon Island gathered quickly.

In the past, many elites had died in a great war on True Dragon Island. Hence, the resentful energy and sinister energy on the island were extremely potent, and all sorts of strange powers were triggered.

The bloody vortex became bigger and bigger, covering hundreds of miles. Bolts of blood-colored lightning appeared, tearing the sky apart.

With a strange and ominous aura, a rain of blood fell from the sky.

After Zhang Ruochen crushed a few corpses of Netherkin elites, the remaining corpses suddenly blew themselves up.

When each body exploded, a large amount of dark curse was released. All Netherkin elites were born with the power of curses—they were the carriers of curses. The stronger a Netherkin elite was, the greater the power of curses contained in their bodies.

How vast was the power of curses contained by thousands of Saint Kings from Nether Clan?

All the power of curses gathered quickly and turned into a 300-meter-tall strange altar branded with countless cursed runes.

With the altar as the center, a radius of hundreds of kilometers was filled with the terrifying power of curses. It turned into a huge cursed dimension that enveloped Zhang Ruochen.

The bloody vortex in the sky and the cursed altar on the ground were closely connected. They were trying to crush Zhang Ruochen ruthlessly.

When the elites at the scene saw Son of Darkness use this method, their expressions changed.

Even if they had not entered the area covered by the power of the curse, they could clearly feel how ominous it was, that even a Neverwither Supreme Saint would be in trouble when getting caught in it.

Now that Zhang Ruochen was enveloped in it, everyone felt downright anxious for him.

By using secret techniques, Son of Darkness was able to create the curse altar and bloody vortex from the curse power of over a thousand Netherkin bodies. He had indeed demonstrated a great talent in Nether Clan’s power of curse for being able to execute the techniques perfectly.

All this time, many people had only remembered that Son of Darkness was the leader of the Fane of Darkness. They had forgotten that he was also a Netherkin who was good at curses.

Even for someone who disliked Zhang Ruochen—Immortal Minghu—couldn't help but frown when he saw the downturn of the event, "Son of Darkness' methods are indeed strange and unpredictable. Zhang Ruochen has gone too far this time. He wanted to use the mountain of Netherkin powerhouses' corpses as a battlefield, but he ends up putting himself in danger.."

Son of Darkness might be powerful, but if it weren't for the mountain of corpses, he wouldn't have been able to use such terrifying methods. It was like Zhang Ruochen had created a great opportunity for him.

"Son of Darkness is really cunning. He didn't even let go of the corpses of his clan. No wonder Zhang Ruochen was at a disadvantage in their previous encounter," Blackie glared.

Ao Xinyan frowned. Her eyes were filled with worry. "Captain is in a bad situation. Should we help him?"

"Don't worry. Based on my understanding of Zhang Ruochen, he won't be defeated so easily. Moreover, if we launch an attack, Infernal Court powerhouses won't just stand by and watch. If things go wrong, it'll turn into a chaotic battle. Don't forget that we have more important things to do," Blackie comforted her.

Ao Xinyan nodded slightly. Although she was a little worried, she didn't lose her composure. She knew what she should do now.

The short skinny old man was elusive. Perhaps he had already reached somewhere nearby but concealed his presence. All they had to do was find him and capture him.

According to Blackie's arrangements, Elder Patriarch Death Zen, Corpse Emperor Tianming, and the Re-Awakeners were scattered around the battlefield. They secretly observed the surroundings but they hadn't found anything yet.

Zhang Ruochen was still very calm in the cursed dimension. He didn't panic. He mobilized Canon of Truth and activated Armor of the Fire God, unleashing divine flames to block the power of the curse.

However, there was a strange power that seeped into his body. Armor of the Fire God couldn't stop it from eroding his spiritual will.

'It's said that the curse from Nether Clan can kill people without a trace. So it's not a bluff at all," Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

He naturally wouldn't allow the invisible curse to enter his body. His yang Qi and blood surged like a dragon, extinguishing the evil power.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen mobilized the precepts of Dimension and condensed an inch-long silver light at the tip of his finger with powerful dimensional power. It was extremely sharp.

Whoosh.
With a wave of his hand, the silver light flew out with unstoppable momentum.

The space membrane wall constructed by the curse altar rippled like a swamp. It wasn't affected at all. The silver light couldn't cut through it. Instead, it was trapped inside.

When Zhang Ruochen saw this, his eyes narrowed. Even the Dimensional Slash had been blocked. The dimensional membrane was really tough. Son of Darkness had clearly calculated everything.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen's mind moved. He felt that the space around him had changed again. He couldn't help but lookup.

The bloody vortex spun faster and faster. The center kept shaking. It seemed to open a time and space tunnel, connecting to the distant past.

Under Zhang Ruochen's gaze, solidified curse runes flew out of the blood-red vortex. Each of them gave off an ancient aura as if they had traveled through endless time and space.

As soon as these curse runes appeared, Zhang Ruochen's hair stood on end. He had a bad feeling.

'That is….a Hadean Curse'

Seeing the ancient curse runes fly out of the bloody vortex, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars' expression changed.

Hadean Time was a very ancient period of time. It was filled with mystery. It had given birth to many powerful forces that could counter the Paths of the Ancients, such as the power of Anima mastered by Xuemo.

During Hadean Time, many cultivators practiced the Path of Curse. It wasn't limited to Nether Clan. They had created countless terrifying curses, which made people shocked.

However, with the change of the era, Hadean Curse had long disappeared in history.

It was obvious that Son of Darkness had used some secret technique to make Hadean Curse re-emerge in the world.

Xing Wuji said, "Legend has it that once Hadean Curse invades the body, it will be difficult to eradicate it regardless of any methods. The curse will slowly devour essence, Qi and spirit if the host."

Upon hearing this, the elites of Thousand-star Civilization couldn't help but feel their hair stand on end. They wanted to retreat further away to avoid being implicated immediately.

Without a doubt, if one was truly afflicted by Hadean Curse, only death awaited them. Moreover, they would die in extreme pain.

No one had expected that Son of Darkness would be able to use such an eerie means.

All of in sudden, many cultivators looked at Son of Darkness with fear in their eyes.

Chapter 2110: The Sword's Direction

The bloody vortex spun faster and faster under the influence of the Curse altar. Streaks of blood-colored lightning tore through the sky, vaguely illuminating an illusory passage, giving off the impression that the passage was connected to distant ancient times.

It seemed like something else other than Hadean Curses was emerging from this illusory passage.

Suddenly, a blood-coloured whirlwind blew, followed by a downpour of blood rain. The ominous aura grew more potent. The sight made one's blood freeze in their veins.

Celestial Court elites and even the Nether Clan elites—especially the Seven Top Killers from Nether Hall—were shocked. Never had they expected Son of Darkness to execute such an eerie technique.

The seven top killers were all staring at the Hadean Curse that emerged from the bloody vortex at this moment.

Never Die narrowed his eyes and said, “Big Brother, summoning a Hadean Curse is a secret method belonging to Nether Hall. Son of Darkness has long become the successor of the Fane of Darkness, but he still gets to learn the technique.”

Nether Hall was the most prominent fane to Nether Clan. It had a high status and kept many mysterious techniques. Only those who Nether Hall chose could have the chance to cultivate those techniques.

Ever since the seven of them had inherited Seven Killer formation and acquired the foundation to ascend to godhood, they had become the talents specially nurtured by Nether Hall. In other words, they were the leaders of Nether Hall’s younger generation.

“No need to be surprised. In fact, Son of Darkness is highly talented in cultivating Path of Curse. If he didn’t have the physical constitution of Darkness, our fane would have taken him in long ago. He could have become a true disciple under Nether Hall.”

“Very few people know that the vice lord of Nether Hall has taken Son of Darkness as his disciple. So, it’s normal that he is taught the secret technique to summon a Hadean Curse.”

Xuanming Wushang explained calmly.

Upon hearing this, the six of them, including Never Die and Bloody Ripples, had a look of realization. They sighed inwardly at Son of Darkness’ luck. The fact that he could cultivate strong points of both the Fane of Darkness and Nether Hall under the favor of those prominent figures in both fanes was something envied by most Netherkin.

Buzz
The sky shook slightly. The Hadean Curses broke free from the bloody vortex and flew directly toward Zhang Ruochen.

Although Zhang Ruochen didn’t know they were Hadean Curses, he could feel how terrifying they were. He could tell that once they entered his body,

he would suffer consequences worse than the time when some Curses had infiltrated his body.

In an instant, Zhang Ruochen entered the state of being one with the sword. He wielded Ancient Abyssal Blade slowly in an unusual trajectory of the Dao.

Invisible Sword Qi burst out and covered the space around him. They formed crystal flower buds that were only the size of a pinky finger.

“One flower, one world.”

Zhang Ruochen whispered. He drove all the flower buds with his swordwill to counter the Hadean Curses.

Each flower bud seemed to contain a realm within it. As soon as they got close to the Hadean Curses, they sucked them in.

In the blink of an eye, each Hadean Curse that had broken free from the bloody vortex was completely wrapped by a flower bud formed from Sword Qi of Spacetime.

However, these flower buds seemed unstable. They kept shaking and gave off an ominous aura. It was obvious that they couldn’t suppress the Hadean Curses for a long time.

“Blossoming Cadence, Time and Space Annihilation.”

With a thought, Zhang Ruochen made all the flower buds bloom in an instant.

Blossoms blooming in the sky was indeed a beautiful sight to see, but they would soon lead to destruction.

BOOM!
The Flowers of Sword Qi were destroyed. Upon their destruction, a terrifying force was released within a small area, forming small black holes.

As Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation level in Time and Space had improved, his Sword of Spacetime became more powerful. He could unleash varying moves.

The space within hundreds of miles was fully locked down; even Dimensional Slash couldn’t break it. However, Sword of Spacetime was used, it caused a lot of damage.

More importantly, the Hadean Curses had been completely destroyed. They returned to nothingness, not even leaving a single trace of ominous Qi.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the huge Curse altar. How could he not figure that the altar was the key to breaking the Curses?

Zhang Ruochen's eyes suddenly became sharp. He mobilized the Precepts of Time and Dimension, combined them with his swordwill, and threw a profound slash.

A translucent Sword Qi flew out like mist, enveloping the entire altar of Curse.

The altar of Curse seemed to have fallen into another spacetime. Its connection with the bloody vortex above was cut off.

The bloody vortex slowed down, and fewer Hadean Curses flew out. The illusory passage inside seemed to close.

"Destroy."

Zhang Ruochen let out a low shout.

BOOM!
The translucent Sword Qi shook. The spacetime inside began to collapse. The altar of Curse was no exception.

In an instant, the altar of Curse shattered and turned into a boundless force of Dark Curse. However, it didn't spread out. Instead, it was obliterated rapidly.

Along with the destruction of the altar of Curse, the bloody vortex stopped spinning completely. No more Hadean Curses flew out.

Whoosh.
Zhang Ruochen wielded Ancient Abyssal Blade. With a slash, he threw hundreds of meters long Sword Qi.

Whoosh.
The bloody vortex was split into two by the Sword Qi and then completely collapsed.

With the destruction of the altar of Curse and the bloody vortex, the space of Curse that covered hundreds of miles, needless to say, ceased to exist.

A powerful swordwill spread out from Zhang Ruochen's body and destroyed all the curse runes in the air.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen had broken Son of Darkness' Curse secret technique swiftly and decisively, the surrounding spectators were all amazed.

Xing Wuji's eyes shone with astonishment. He said, "I didn't expect Zhang Ruochen's attainments in the Path of Time and the Path of Dimension to have reached such an unfathomable level. He can even combine it with his swordsmanship. His talent in swordsmanship is really amazing."

Scion Number Three and Scion Number Six looked at each other. They saw awe in each other's eyes. They weren't sure if they could handle Zhang Ruochen's Sword of Spacetime.

Before this, they were aware that Zhang Ruochen was strong, but they had thought that he shouldn't have been strong enough to challenge Son of Darkness. They had assumed that he was just acting on impulse. But now, such a thought ceased to exist. They started to look forward to the exciting duel between Zhang Ruochen and Son of Darkness.

"It seems that he has gained more benefits from the monster's body than I expected. And yet, I have no idea how he subdued the monster," the Maiden of a Thousand Stars thought to herself.

She was actually very curious about the means Zhang Ruochen had used to deal with the monster king. How had he made the monster king submit so easily? But since Zhang Ruochen refused to tell her, she did not ask much.

However, she could roughly guess that such a method couldn't be used casually. Otherwise, they wouldn't have suffered so much in the monster king's body and fallen into Son of Darkness' scheme.

Immortal Minghu stared at Zhang Ruochen and whispered, "To be able to cultivate the Path of Time and the Path of Dimension to such an extent, he's worthy of being the successor of Saint Monk Xumi. He has earned his arrogance."

When Immortal Minghu witnessed Zhang Ruochen's performance, his attitude towards Zhang Ruochen inadvertently changed in some ways. At least, from now on, he found Zhang Ruochen pleasing to the eye.

After all, only a truly powerful elite was deemed worthy by Immortal Minghu.

“Hadean Curse was solved so easily. I can’t see through Zhang Ruochen at all now,” Fairy Linglong said in a low voice.

Ao Xukong said, “Son of Darkness was just trying to test Zhang Ruochen out with Hadean Curse. If Zhang Ruochen needed to spend a lot of effort to break it, this battle would be a very hard one. The actual battle between them will begin next.”

Even Ao Xukong could not predict the outcome of this battle from what he saw. After all, no one knew what kind of trump cards Zhang Ruochen and Son of Darkness were holding.

Holding Ancient Abyssal Blade, Zhang Ruochen faced Son of Darkness from a distance. He spoke in a clear voice, “Son of Darkness, your Curse is useless against me. Show me your true ability and fight with me.”

Son of Darkness walked forward slowly. A faint smile appeared on his face. He said, “Zhang Ruochen, I am indeed surprised that your strength has improved so much. It has finally aroused my interest. I hope you won’t disappoint me.”

BANG!
A terrifying dark power suddenly rushed out of the ground, shattering the place where Zhang Ruochen was standing.

However, Zhang Ruochen had already noticed it. He instantly dodged the dark force by moving hundreds of feet away.

“You’re still so cunning.” A glint of cold light flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes.

Son of Darkness behaved the same way like he had been when they were in the monster king’s body. One moment, he was on the same side with you, and the next moment, he would kill you in a scheme. He was cunning and extremely dangerous.

Zhang Ruochen had already experienced once, so how could he not be prepared?

Hiss.

The dark force that rushed out of the ground turned into a huge Nether Serpent. It was solid and lifelike, that even the scales of the snake were clearly visible.

The Nether Snake gave off a menacing aura. It opened its bloody mouth, revealing its sharp fangs, charging at Zhang Ruochen.

“Hmph.”

Zhang Ruochen snorted and casually swung his sword.

Puff.
The sharp Sword Qi flashed, cutting the Nether Snake in half.

BOOM!
The Nether Snake’s body exploded automatically. It turned into countless small Nether Snakes scattering around Zhang Ruochen.

In an instant, these small Nether Snakes released strange power. They formed a powerful formation and trapped Zhang Ruochen inside.

“Huh?”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed. He looked down at his body.

He was shocked to see those dozens of little Nether Snakes being able to coil around his body without him knowing.

These little Nether Snakes were something between the real and the virtual, like ghosts. They coiled around him, draining his Saint Qi in his body rapidly.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes narrowed. He released a powerful force, shattering all the little Nether Snakes coiling around him.

Even so, his Saint Qi didn’t stop flowing. Even his Blood Qi was shaking, showing signs of breaking out of his body.

Son of Darkness was approaching slowly with smiling eyes, “This Nether Snake formation has gathered 99,999 Nether Snake souls,” he said. “Including the nine Saint souls of Supreme-Saint level Nether Snake emperors. They’ve been fused into one. As long as you’re trapped in the formation, you will have your essence, Qi and spirit drained rapidly. Please enjoy it, Zhang Ruochen.”

This was the style of Son of Darkness. He had great strength, but he did not like to fight fair and square. His cunningness ran deep in his veins.

Now, Son of Darkness was using the Nether Snake formation in an attempt to exhaust Zhang Ruochen to death.

Even if Zhang Ruochen could escape, his vitality would take great damage. By that time, he would no longer be a match for Son of Darkness.

The Nether Snake was a very special creature born in Infernal Court. Although most of them were weak, their number was large. They had a terrifying ability—weakening a cultivator by devouring their essence, Qi, and spirits.

“Master, I can devour the souls of Nether Snakes.”

Moyin’s voice was heard in Zhang Ruochen’s mind. It sounded excited.

Zhang Ruochen was struck by Moyin’s words. If Moyin could devour all the souls of these Nether Snakes, not only could he break free from the Nether Snake formation, Moyin would also gain a great benefit.

Although Moyin’s cultivation base had already reached Path’s Anterior, it had difficulty advancing further. It needed a huge amount of nutrients.

Initially, Zhang Ruochen had planned to leave the thousands of corpses of Netherkin powerhouses to Moyin. Unfortunately, Son of Darkness had destroyed all of them.

With a thought, Zhang Ruochen took out Zangshan Demonic Mirror and activated it with the power of Dimension.

Many Supreme Inscriptions emerged on the surface of the mirror, creating strong dimensional ripples.

However, Zangshan Demonic Mirror did not launch an attack. Instead, it suppressed the Nether Snake formation with a supreme force.

At this moment, Moyin made its move. It extended countless roots piercing into the ground and reaching out to the sky.

The roots thrust the Nether Snake souls, forcefully snagging them away from the formation. They were quickly devoured and turned into nutrients for Moyin

Sensing the downturn in the Nether Snake formation, Son of Darkness' expression changed slightly. Never had he expected Zhang Ruochen's Saint Devourer could devour the souls of Nether Deities. Hence, he wanted to retrieve the Nether Snake formation immediately.

KABOOM!
Zhang Ruochen rushed out of the formation and slashed at Son of Darkness with his sword.

A rainbow of Sword Qi flew out of Ancient Abyssal Blade, leaving a streak of light in the sky like a comet. It was dazzling.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen activated his Precepts of Time. With a point of Zhang Ruochen's finger, a wide, endless illusory River of Time appeared out of thin air, pressing down on Son of Darkness.

Son of Darkness did not dare to let down his guard in the face of Zhang Ruochen's fierce attack. He did not have enough time to retrieve the Nether Snake formation. He formed seals with his hands at an incredible speed. Tens of millions of Dark inscriptions immediately appeared. They interweaved and formed a tough dark barrier covering a radius of 300 meters.

Then, Son of Darkness moved his hands. A solid Dark Millstone emerged. As it spun, the space was distorted severely.

BANG!
The barrier of Darkness lasted for a moment before it was sliced apart by the rainbow of Sword Qi. Under the pressure of the River of Time, it was completely shattered.

At this moment, Son of Darkness pushed the Dark Milestone out.

The millstone spun quickly and released a terrifying destructive power. In an instant, it crushed the Sword Qi rainbow.

Following that, the Dark Millstone collided with the illusory River of Time and distorted it.

BOOM!
The illusory River of Time was shattered; the Dark Millstone exploded into nothingness.

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Ruochen had arrived in front of Son of Darkness. He was only 300 meters away from Son of Darkness.

Potent pentacolored Saint light appeared behind Zhang Ruochen, condensing into a huge illusory image of a realm. The chaotic Qi inside surged, causing the surrounding space to tremble.

Buzz.
The space within hundreds of miles was locked down under the effect of Zhang Ruochen's Five-element Chaotic Body.

Zhang Ruochen displayed a strong fighting spirit. He pointed his sword at Son of Darkness, "This is a dead or alive battle. Let's settle our feud once and for all."

Chapter 2111: Spacetime Jumble
"Since you are so eager to die, how can I not fulfill your wish?"

Boundless Dark power rose unceasingly from Son of Darkness, surging at Zhang Ruochen like a tide.

Son of Darkness did not only target Zhang Ruochen; he was also aiming at Moyin that was devouring the souls of the Nether Snakes. It was not easy to create a Nether Snake formation. Son of Darkness had spent massive effort on it. Therefore, he could not afford to watch Moyin destroy it.

Zhang Ruochen stood still in the face of the surging dark tide. He mobilized the hundreds of thousands of Precepts of Dimension in his body and released powerful dimensional force that seeped into the space around him.

BOOM!

The space over 3000 meters exploded and then completely disappeared, revealing a large pitch-black void.

The power of Darkness emerging from Son of Darkness's body went out of control and disappeared in the pitch-black void. The void devoured everything in its absolute darkness.

With Zhang Ruochen's current attainments in Path of Dimension, his cultivation had surpassed the great completion for the first level of Dimensional Annihilation. He had reached its true perfection. Therefore, even a top Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact would also be turned into dust if he used all his strength.

The Path of Dimension was a Path of the Ancients, so very few cultivators had the talent to practice. However, there were still few from each

macroworld. Adding them all up gave a total of more than tens of thousands. Almost all of them practiced their cultivation under the Fane of Dimension. And, of course, some even became Masters of Dimension. One of them was Gong Ziyan, the former young-gen leader in the Fane of Dimension.

Unfortunately, although the Fane of Dimension had specially nurtured these talents, none could compare to Zhang Ruochen. It was undoubtedly ironic.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars said softly, “Perhaps, it is due to the fact that Zhang Ruochen has never practiced in the Fane of Dimension that he can achieve high attainments in his Path of Dimension. Having full control of his cultivation direction instead of rigidly following conventional practice has enabled him to advance further.”

After being on the same boat with Zhang Ruochen in the underground, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars had developed great insights on many things. It was her biggest gain in True Dragon Island trip. These insights would have a far-reaching impact on her future cultivation practice.

Son of Darkness’ eyes narrowed. As he retreated, he quickly formed nine profound seals.

Swoosh!

Nine dark lights flew out behind Son of Darkness and turned into nine sharp demonic sabers. They gave off a monstrous, murderous aura.

The demonic sabers were not the actual sacred artifacts. They were formed using Saint Technique. However, their attack power was almost comparable to a regal weapon.

When the spectators sensed the murderous aura from the demonic sabers, their blood froze. They felt that their physical bodies and Saint Souls were about to break.

They were certain that if they got implicated by the force of the nine demonic sabers, they would lose half their vitality even if they didn’t end up dead.

Whoosh.

The nine demonic sabers were unstoppable. Even Zhang Ruochen’s Spatial Domain could not stop them.

Zhang Ruochen let go of Abyss Ancient Sword and clenched his fists. He mobilized the Precepts of Water and Precepts of Fist he had cultivated and condensed a huge amount of Saint Qi. It became an illusory Celestial River descending from the sky.

Before he came to True Dragon Island, Zhang Ruochen had refined a top-tier aquatic divine item. Not only had he made his Five-element Chaotic Body stronger, but he had also developed deeper insights on the Path of Water and Luoshui Fist Technique.

Although it was the same move from the eleventh level of Luoshui Fist technique he had performed before, the current attack power he displayed was much stronger than before.

The Celestial River of Saint Qi turned upside down and swept toward the nine demonic sabers released by Son of Darkness. As a result, it drowned all their murderous aura.

There was a Chinese saying, “water flows faster when one tries to cut it with a sword”. It literally described the current situation. No matter how sharp the Saber Qi released by the nine demonic sabers was, they failed to cut the Celestial River of Saint Qi. On top of that, their energy was gradually drained by the river.

In a moment, the nine demonic sabers were completely obliterated, leaving nothing behind.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes turned grimmer, “Well, it would be rude to not reciprocate. Taste my sword too,” he shouted.

However, he did not use Ancient Abyssal Blade. Instead, he continued to perform Luoshui Fist Technique. The vast Celestial River of Saint Qi shook ceaselessly. Suddenly, a potent aura emerged and turned into a giant sword, charging at Son of Darkness.

Son of Darkness’ expression was indifferent. He extended a hand and formed a three-thousand-meter long, profound immortal light beam to counter Celestial River sword.

Although Son of Darkness had yet to build a true Neverwither Supreme Saint’s physical body, he was stronger than any ordinary Neverwither Supreme Saints. After all, he had refined the most powerful divine item.

BOOM!

Son of Darkness blocked Celestial River sword with his big hand and grabbed it, wanting to crush it.

When Zhang Ruochen saw that, his lips curled up slightly. With no delay, he mobilized the Precepts of Truth in his body and infused profound energy into Celestial River sword.

Immediately, the Celestial River sword shook and released an even more terrifying power. It was as if the actual Celestial River had fallen to the mortal world and were about to crush the universe.

“Eh?”

Son of Darkness’ expression changed faintly; his body shook violently.

Rumble.

With Son of Darkness as the center, the ground within a radius of several hundreds of miles collapsed instantly and then sank.

In the blink of an eye, a giant crater with a diameter of more than three hundred miles appeared, as if a meteorite had hit it. The central area was a thousand and five hundred meters deep, and Son of Darkness was standing within it.

He could resist the powerful attack with his strong body. However, his palm—one of his body parts in Neverwither state—was cut by an invisible sword edge. Dark red blood was flowing down his arm.

Upon this sight, many spectators could not help but widen their eyes. They were stunned.

They were now on True Dragon Island. Its environment was not ordinary, that it could withstand the war of gods. Hence, it was difficult to cause great damage to its environment. An ordinary Saint-King elite might not even be able to break a small mountain here.

But now, Zhang Ruochen had used a Saint Technique. Although Son of Darkness blocked the attack, it could still cause such great damage. Its power was too terrifying.

“Zhang Ruochen has increased his Saint Technique’s attack power by ninefold. This…” Fairy Linglong was shocked. She stared at Zhang Ruochen.

The maximum increment of an attack power when applying Path of Truth was tenfold. However, it was almost a legend since no one could achieve that in tens of thousands of years.

In fact, even the scions of gods trained by the Fane of Truth could only increase their attack power by six or seven times. Those who could increase their attack power by eightfold were rare.

As for the ninefold increment in attack power, among the ten scions of the Fane of Truth, there might be none who could pull that off.

The next moment, a glint of light flashed in Ao Xukong's eyes. He thought to himself, 'Zhang Ruochen must have obtained a portion of Canon of Truth.'

There was a small chance for those crossing Sea of truth to obtain a portion of the Canon of Truth successfully. It was not a secret. It was just that those who succeed would not let others know.

As the Scion of Time and Space, it was not surprising that Zhang Ruochen's attainments in Time and Dimensional techniques were outstanding. What drew speculations was his profound achievement in the Path of Truth.

Fairy Linglong pondered about it and said, "This may be the reason why Father asked us to observe Zhang Ruochen. He has great potential and is likely to become the next Saint Monk Xumi in the future."

On the battlefield, Zhang Ruochen appeared very calm. He did not show the slightest hint of complacency. Thanks to the hardships he had experienced in the monster king's body, he had passed an important obstacle and achieved a big breakthrough in his cultivation in the Path of Truth.

There were more than 560,000 Precepts of Truth in Zhang Ruochen's body. The number was beyond the imagination of a cultivator practicing the Path of Truth.

In order to reach the legendary tenfold increment in attack power, one must meet two conditions—succeed in condensing a Realm-frame of Truth and cultivating 880,000 Precepts of Truth.

For a scion of the Fane of Truth, condensing a Realm-frame of Truth was not too difficult. The Fane of Truth would pass them a special secret technique for it.

Zhang Ruochen, on the other hand, was not even a scion of the Fane of Truth. Given that he could only rely on himself to explore, he faced ten times harder than others.

BANG!

Under the pressure of the powerful force, the Celestial River sword shattered with a bang.

Son of Darkness licked a drop of his own blood with madness in his eyes. “Ninefold increment in attack power. Only a few cultivators in entire Celestial Court could cultivate the Path of Truth to such an extent. Very well, you are truly worthy to be my opponent.”

Before he finished his words, Son of Darkness had already turned into a ray of light and rushed out of the crater, heading straight for Zhang Ruochen.

“Good timing.”

Zhang Ruochen had no intention of dodging. He held Ancient Abyssal Blade in one hand and went straight to meet Son of Darkness.

The fierce battle broke out in an instant. Both sides attacked without holding back and used all kinds of powerful Saint Techniques.

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Ruochen and Son of Darkness had fought for thousands of rounds. The battle was inextricable. The land within a nearly three-thousand-meter radius sank for almost 10,000 feet.

The successive battles had fueled the fighting spirit of Zhang Ruochen and Son of Darkness. There was only one thought in their minds—kill their opponent.

BANG!

After another hard strike, Zhang Ruochen and Son of Darkness were separated.

Zhang Ruochen’s arm holding the sword was trembling. Bright red blood sighted dripping down the sword. The Qi and blood in his body surged violently and could not cool down.

Son of Darkness was no better. Although his body was almost completely in Neverwither state, Ancient Abyssal Blade managed to harm him,

inflicting many wounds on his body, especially his neck where blood was still flowing.

He had the physical advantage, but he couldn't gain the upper hand in a head-on fight with Zhang Ruochen. This made Son of Darkness distraught.

'He is even with Son of Darkness. What a terrifying speed of improvement.' Immortal Minghu thought to himself; he was stunned.

It seemed that he had made the right choice not to fight with Zhang Ruochen. Otherwise, he might have suffered a great loss from Zhang Ruochen's unpredictable moves.

Jinyang Twin Kings were foolish for wanting to settle a score with Zhang Ruochen.

Son of Darkness' glabella glowed. A bell engraved with countless inscriptions of Darkness flew out, making a deafening sound.

"It's time to end this," Son of Darkness whispered, with a fierce look in his eyes.

The power of Darkness activated the inscriptions of Darkness on the surface of the black sacred bell. The inscriptions became clear and kept changing their shapes and forms as though they were living beings.

A vast amount of Dark divine power was released. It turned into ripples of divine force surging toward Zhang Ruochen.

Wherever the divine-force ripples passed, the space collapsed. They were unstoppable.

Rumble.

The ground within hundreds of miles shattered completely and sank further.

Zhang Ruochen was prepared. With a wave of his hand, Zangshan Demonic Mirror flew out of the collapsed Nether Snake formation and released a monstrous Demonic Qi. It evolved into an endless demonic mountain. The demonic mountain suppressed and blocked the divine-force ripples.

At this moment, the Nether Snake formation had been fully destroyed. Moyin unleashed countless vines. They weaved into a net that caught all the souls of Nether Snakes, so Moyin could slowly refine them to evolve.

At the same time, Son of Darkness quickly formed complex and profound hand seals with both hands. A mutated power of Darkness rose within him unceasingly.

The mutated Dark force surged and instantly turned into a huge illusory dark abyss behind Son of Darkness.

“The Abyss of Darkness.”

Elites from Infernal Court could not help to exclaim in shock.

The illusory abyss that Son of Darkness created was exactly the same as Infernal Court’s forbidden place—the Abyss of Darkness.

Moreover, as it was evolved by Son of Darkness using the mutated dark power, it exuded the exact same aura.

The illusory abyss became more and more solid. It was as if Son of Darkness had summoned the actual Abyss of Darkness, wanting it to descend in Kunlun.

Upon this sight, Zhang Ruocheng’s expression was even grimmer. He immediately reached out with both hands. He gathered the Precepts of Time using his left hand while gathering the Precepts of Dimension using his right hand. The Saint Qi in his body flowed endlessly into his hands.

The Precepts of Time gave rise to countless Marks of Time. They formed a River of Time that surrounded him.

At the same time, a majestic force of Dimension surged out of Zhang Ruochen’s right hand. It condensed into streaks of sharp silver light, which could shatter the surrounding space with a slight motion.

BOOM!

As the force of Darkness surged, an extremely tall illusory figure emerged with half of its body came out from the Abyss of Darkness. The sky above its head released a terrifying pressure.

Although it was just half of its body, the size was tens of thousands of feet tall. On top of that, it had tens of thousands of arms.

The most peculiar attribute was that it had a human body but a huge snake head. It looked ferocious.

Son of Darkness' eyes turned blood-red as if he was under the influence of the illusory figure's murderous aura. His body emitted a strong murderous intent.

"Die!"

Son of Darkness let out an angry roar. The illusory figure behind him immediately stretched out its arms, shattering the void and trying to grab Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes became sharp suddenly when he saw it. He clenched his right hand and executed the first level of Dimensional Annihilation to its perfection.

KABOOM!

The arms of the illusory snake-headed monster were all destroyed.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen shot out streaks of silver light from the River of Time at Son of Darkness.

The illusory Abyss of Darkness behind Son of Darkness shook, releasing a terrifying suction force, wanting to forcefully suck both the River of Time and the silver light.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen refused to let Son of Darkness get what he wanted. With a thought, Zhang Ruochen disintegrated the River of Time and turned it into countless Marks of Time, trying to drown Son of Darkness with them.

The streaks of silver light also unleashed an invincible power. The Abyss of Darkness was slashed by one after another streak of silver light. It was torn apart with a crack formed on it.

In this situation, even though the illusory Abyss of Darkness had swallowed most of the Marks of Time, a small part got their ways into Son of Darkness.

Swoosh.

The huge monster stretched out its snake head and opened its bloody mouth, wanting to bite Zhang Ruochen.

A mysterious force appeared. It ignored Zhang Ruochen's various defensive mechanisms and directly seeped into his Saint Soul in attempt to forcefully extract Saint Soul from him.

With a determined look on his face, Zhang Ruochen suddenly joined his palms together, making the Precepts of Time and Precepts of Dimension interweave.

Perhaps it was because the collision was too intense. Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but grunt, blood trickling down the corner of his mouth.

Buzz.

The forces of Time and Dimension miraculously merged together and turned into a mysterious and unparalleled power of Spacetime.

"Spacetime Jumble."

As soon as the force of Spacetime was unleashed, the time and space within a radius of three hundred meters immediately jumbled. It was as if different times and spaces were overlapping.

BANG!

The impact of Spacetime Jumble shattered the huge illusory snake head.

Although the power of Spacetime had weakened, it was still charging at Son of Darkness. It disregarded the barriers of space and drowned Son of Darkness in an instant.

The result of the battle between two young-gen elites from Kunlun and Infernal Court was about to be unveiled. All the cultivators could not turn their eyes away; they almost held their breath.

Judging from the dangerous situation, if Son of Darkness didn't have any other trump cards, he could only resist Zhang Ruochen's attack when he broke through to Supreme Sainthood.

However, if he broke through to the realm, it would also mean he admitted his defeat to Zhang Ruochen in the fight within the same realm.

All cultivators of Celestial Court, including Ao Xukong, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars, Fairy Linglong, were nervous. They were thinking about how they should deal with Son of Darkness once he was forced to break through to the next realm.

After all, True Dragon Island was no ordinary place—it was not under the radar of Emissaries Vigilants.

Chapter 2112: It's Hard To Escape Death

The Son of Darkness was sent flying by the impact of the power of time and space. The Abyss of Darkness and the towering shadow behind him instantly exploded.

Pfft!

The Son of Darkness spat out large mouthfuls of blood. His skin was filled with cracks, and he was on the verge of collapse. Fresh blood gushed out from his body and he was completely covered in his own blood.

The Son of Darkness was heavily injured. If it wasn't for his incomplete immortal body, and a protective divine imprint engraved on it, he would have perished into thin air.

The time and space within a radius of hundreds of miles had become chaotic. Countless fragments of time and fragments of space floating in the air, the scenery was unimaginably shocking.

The Son of Darkness took out a dark golden sacred pill and swallowed it in front of all the top cultivators.

"That's… a King Grade Sacred Pill." said The Maiden of a Thousand Stars while her eyes were wide opened.

She could vaguely see a lifelike dragon pattern on the surface of the sacred pill. She was almost positive that it was the work of an Elixir Master from the Divine Dragon race and it was most certainly extracted from the monster king.

The medicinal effects of the King Grade Sacred Pill were stunning. The reaction of the sacred pill took effect instantly the moment Son of Darkness consumed it. The cracks on his body were healed at a speed of light to the naked eyes. Every inch of his skin emitted an immortal radiance.

ROAR!

The Son of Darkness lifted his head and released a roar. A vigorous Neverwither Aura burst out from within his body.

'The Son of Darkness has, sure enough, broke through to the realm of Neverwither Supreme Saint.' The heart of the cultivators from the Celestial Court sank when they felt the Neverwither Aura.

It had finally come true, the one thing that the cultivators wished to prevent.

The Son of Darkness's heart is the only part left that had not been made immortal. As long as he wished to, he could break through at any time and generate a powerful immortal Saint body.

The True Dragon Island was isolated from the rest of the world that even the Divine Will could not enter. So, there was nothing much to worry about to perform a breakthrough towards the Supreme Saint realm.

With the Son of Darkness' accumulation, his strength was not something that ordinary Supreme Saint could compare with after he broke through. It was not something that the realm of Saint King cultivator could fight against as well.

With an unspoken consensus, Ao Xukong, Xing Wuji, and the rest of the top cultivators attacked at the same time. They'd used powerful saint techniques and saint weapons targeting Son of Darkness.

They were no fools and waited to be swept away by the Son of Darkness like sitting ducks. Right now, the Son of Darkness was at his weakest and it was their only chance.

'Stop them.' The moment the top cultivators of the Celestial Court made a move, the top cultivators of the Infernal Court will charge in.
The Seven Top Killers of Nether Clan and the Three Emperors and Ten Reverends of Bone clan had moved together to stop Ao Xukong and the others. They were buying some time for the Son of Darkness to increase his strength.

As long as the Son of Darkness could convert part of his power into the power of a Supreme Saint, no one could stop him, even if he was heavily wounded.

The Son of Darkness stared at Zhang Ruochen with hatred filled in his eyes. He had lost in a battle of the same attaintment and was defeated so miserably. It was a great shame that he had no choice but to ascend his cultivation to save his own life.

Originally, he had planned to become the top cultivator below the Supreme Saint in the Infernal Court and then break through to the realm of Supreme Saint in his strongest state. But now, all his plans had come to naught.

"I have really underestimated you for you have already grasped the power of time and space. Given enough time, you might really become the second Saint Monk Xumi. Unfortunately, you no longer have the chance to do so, now die." said Son of Darkness.

The Son of Darkness in his ferocity extended his Hand of Darkness.

In an instant, he was able to gather a small amount of Supreme Sage power and he concentrated it all on the Hand of Darkness.

Rumble
The unstable dimension is shattering at the moment.

“Zhang Ruochen, be careful. Group leader, run!” Seeing the Son of Darkness launching his attacks, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars, Ao Xinyan, and the others could no longer hold on to themselves and yelled out.

Zhang Ruochen had already suffered serious injuries from using the time and space technique. Even if he was at his peak, he couldn’t resist the Son of Darkness who had already ascended to the Supreme Saint attainment.

However, Zhang Ruochen stood still and didn’t make a move as if he was being chained to the ground.

ROAR!
A giant beast suddenly appeared on the broken battlefield and roared toward the sky.

The beast had a body of a demonic wolf, but it had a large dragon head, wings on its ribs, and four tails of different colors. It gave off a monstrous murderous aura. It was the monster king that Zhang Ruochen had tamed earlier.

“Since you have chosen to ascend, your opponent is no longer me,” Zhang Ruochen said lowly.

The monster king had been hiding somewhere for some time and it would charge out at Zhang Ruochen’s command.

He had already defeated the Son of Darkness of the same ascension, using all his might in public. There was no need for him to be foolish enough to fight the Son of Darkness again after he had ascended.

The monster king opened his mouth and released a terrifying Dimensional Storm, bombarded the Hand of Darkness.

The Son of Darkness felt a sharp pain in his palm and quickly withdrew the Hand of Darkness.

“Did Zhang Ruochen tamed this monster?” The Son of Darkness was surprised.

He had been curious before about how Zhang Ruochen and the Maiden of a Thousand Stars had escaped from the monster’s body. After all that is happening, he had his answers for his curiosity.

But how did Zhang Ruochen subdue the monster with its strength?

The Son of Darkness couldn’t think too much now. As the monster king was ferocious and being hostile towards him.

If the Son of Darkness had succeeded in transforming his power and was in his best condition, he wouldn’t be afraid of the monster king. Be that as it may, he sensed a great threat from the monster currently.

‘This monster is overpowering. I shouldn’t fight it head-on for the time being. It won’t be too late to deal with it after my injuries are healed and my power has been completely transformed.’ The Son of Darkness thought of retreating.
The Son of Darkness wished to take back the black Saint Bell and retreat immediately.

However, he didn’t predict that the Zangshan Demonic Mirror would suppress the black Saint Bell and pausing it.

ROAR!
The monster king roared, like a dragon’s roar that shook the nine heavens.

Streams of powerful divine force burst out, condensing Dimensional Storm, Mark of Time, Divine Light of Origin, Tide of Darkness, and other terrifying attacks, all of which aimed at the Son of Darkness.

The Son of Darkness couldn’t retrieve the black Saint Bell. He had to defend with all his strength. An intense battle erupted once more.

“What’s going on? Where did this beast come from?” Seeing the monster king, the top cultivators on both sides were confused.

Only the Maiden of a Thousand Stars smiled and let out a sigh of relief. She had almost forgotten that Zhang Ruochen still had this powerful trump card.

The monster king was extremely malicious. It used the four types of divine force and completely suppressed the Son of Darkness.

Although the monster king had been badly damaged by the God-Defiance Stele, it had gained some benefits. It could control its own divine force better, and its Saint Soul had become much tougher.

AH!
After a hundred rounds, the Son of Darkness let out a scream. One of its arms was torn off, and blood splattered everywhere.

Then, the monster king's tail pierced through the Son of Darkness's chest like a spear, almost pulling his heart out.

'Run.' The Son of Darkness felt a trace of fear in his heart. He wished to run away regardless.
However, the surrounding dimension had long been bound by the monster king, and Son of Darkness's movements was greatly restricted.

In the blink of an eye, another bowl-sized hole appeared through the Son of Darkness' body. His newly formed immortal Saint Body was almost crippled.

The Son of Darkness stared at Zhang Ruochen in the distance. Suddenly, black flames appeared on his body. This allowed him to temporarily break free from the shackles of space. He dashed crazily towards Zhang Ruochen.

"You are coming along with me even if I die." The Son of Darkness's eyes were filled with madness.

Zhang Ruochen's expression changed slightly. He felt an extremely dangerous aura. The Son of Darkness wanted to perform kamikaze to destroy everything in the dimension.

If a Neverwither Supreme Sage exploded his own Sainthood source, not many around the radius could survive. There will be no exception for those from Celestial Court nor the Infernal Court.

'Retreat quickly.' Sensing the Son of Darkness's intentions, the top cultivators of the Celestial Court and the Infernal Court fall back immediately.
"D*mn it, is he really thinking of destroying us too?" Never Die was furious.

It would be such a waste for him to die under the Son of Darkness's kamikaze.

The monster king's body suddenly disintegrated and turned into four majestic divine forces. The forces were drawn out and drowned the Son of Darkness.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen used the Great Dimensional Shift technique and appeared hundreds of miles away. He held the Golden Sun of Destruction above his head and used all his strength to prepare the defense from the attack.

However, the air is still and there was no movement.

The four majestic divine forces surged and transformed back into the appearance of the monster king.

Zhang Ruochen was aware that the problem had been solved. From this day forth, the Son of Darkness had ceased to exist in this world.

The monster king was very smart. He used the divine force of time and dimension to confine the Son of Darkness. Then, he used the divine force of origin and darkness to infiltrate and destroy the Son of Darkness's Saint Source, preventing him from self-destructing.

It might sound simple, but it was actually very dangerous. One slightest mistake would cause another big problem.

"The Son of Darkness is dead. This…" The top cultivators on both sides had ceased their action. Everyone was expressing mixed feelings.

The gem that appeared only once every ten-thousand years of the Fane of darkness had just ascended to the Neverwither Supreme Saint realm, ended up in such sad state unexpectedly.

When the news spread out, it would cause a great stir in the Celestial Court and Infernal Court as well, Zhang Ruochen would once again be pushed into the eye of the storm.

"A new era has dawned, and it belongs to Zhang Ruochen." Many top cultivators thought.

With Zhang Ruochen's strength rose, he alone could alter the outcome of the battlefield of Kunlun Realm. He had now become the true Kunlun Realm's god of war.

Without the control of the Son of Darkness, the black Saint Bell immediately quieted down and was suppressed by the Zangshan Demonic Mirror.

Looking at the black Saint Bell, which was only the size of a fist, Zhang Ruochen whispered, “Maybe Han Qiu could refine the ancient relic which contains the dark divine force.”

It would not be an easy task to refine a powerful ancient artifact of the gods. One must have renowned skills to do so.

Zhang Ruochen could not use the two ancient artifacts of the gods he had obtained from Zhou Yu and Mosheng, but he can suppress them.

The divine-force monster opened its mouth and spat out a beam of saint light. It fell onto Zhang Ruochen’s palm and turned into an ancient Ring of Dimensions.

Zhang Ruochen examined the Ring of Dimensions with his spiritual power, and a smile appeared on his face.

As Zhang Ruochen had suspected, the Son of Darkness did not hand over the treasures for others to safe keep. Instead, he carried them all by himself. He had never thought that he would be defeated.

A sea of treasures was piled up into a mountain of treasures.

“Zhang Ruochen, I found the old man.” Blackie’s voice suddenly sounded.

Something struck Zhang Ruochen and he put away the black Saint Bell and the Ring of Dimension immediately. At the same time, he secretly communicated with Blackie using his spiritual power.

After confirming the short and skinny old man’s exact location, he didn’t act rashly to avoid alerting the old man.

Zhang Ruochen moved in a flash and appeared on the monster king’s head. He pointed his sword at the Seven Top Killers of Nether Clan and said coldly, “The Son of Darkness is dead. You can all stay.”

“Leave immediately,” Xuanming Wushang said in a deep voice.

Even the Son of Darkness, who broken through to the Neverwither Supreme Saint realm, had been killed by the monster king. Staying to fight with him was simply throwing your life away.

The Seven Top Killers of Nether Clan immediately formed a Seven Killer formation. With the cover of the Nether Lotus Flower, activated it in a flash.

Under Zhang Ruochen's instructions, the monster king immediately ran at high speed and chased after the Seven Top Killers of Nether Clan.

Behind an inconspicuous rock, the short and skinny old man looked around carefully. His aura had completely merged with the rock, and his body had turned illusory so no one could find him easily.

"This kid is impressive. He can even subdue the Dragon Phantom Lord, one of the five overlords. Fortunately, I was able to escape fast enough last time. However, it's a good thing that he killed more powerhouses of the Infernal Court. Best not to let any of them go." The short and skinny old man's eyes were faintly filled with killing intent.

Clearly that the short and skinny old man despised the Infernal Court. He was delighted to see Zhang Ruochen slaughtered the powerhouse of the Infernal Court.

When the short and skinny old man's distracted by Zhang Ruochen, he did not notice that someone was slowly approaching him.

Ao Xinyan, Elder Patriarch Death Zen, Corpse Emperor Tianming, and a group of Re-Awakener held the formation flag refined by Blackie especially, gathered from different directions.

With the power of the formation flag, the figures and auras of Ao Xinyan and the others were concealed.

"Attack." With Blackie's order, Ao Xinyan and the others threw out the formation flag at the same time.

Buzz
Countless complicated formation patterns appeared on the surface of the formation flag. They combined with each other to form an inescapable net that completely sealed off the area where the short and skinny old man was.

'Oh No.' The short and skinny old mand's expression changed and he decided to escape immediately.
Unfortunately, he was obstructed by the formation. No matter how he used his secret technique, he was unable to escape underground. He was feeling anxious.

A red light flashed and Blackie appeared within the formation. A mocking smile appeared on his face as he said, “Old gramps, you’re quite formidable. Remember how you led me into the spatial fault last time and almost trapped me in it? Now, how should I return the favor to you?”

Seeing Blackie, the short and skinny old man’s face turned pale. He knew he was in big trouble.

He thought he was careful enough to stay far away from Zhang Ruochen. He didn’t expect to be trapped by the formation. Seemed like the formation has been specially prepared for him.

The short and skinny old man was depressed. If he had known earlier, he wouldn’t have come.

“Oh Saint Lord, it’s all a misunderstanding. Please don’t hurt me. This old man knows many locations where treasures are hidden. I can bring you there to retrieve them at any time,” The short and skinny old man said with a flattery expression.

Blackie flapped its wings and directly slapped the short and skinny old man to the ground. Its eyes revealed a fierce light as it said, “I have always been the one to play tricks on people. How dare you play tricks on me? Do you really think that I can’t do anything to the likes of you? Hand over the key to the World Gate now.”

“This old man really doesn’t know what the key to the World Gate is. How can I hand it over? Please don’t make things difficult for this old man any longer,” the short and skinny old man pleaded.

Blackie flapped its wings once again and snorted, “Stop acting in front of me. I’ve already figured out your true identity. If you don’t hand over the key to the World Gate, I will show you what I can do.”

Hearing this, the short and skinny old man could not help but shake. His two small eyes rolled around, and there was a faint hint of anxiety in his eyes.

Chapter 2113: Another Change

Blackie and the others were as silent as a mouse while using the array to hide from plain sight, to avoid attracting anyone’s attention.

After all, everyone’s attention was on Zhang RuoChapter while ignoring others at the scene.

Blackie flapped its wings and stored away from the array along with the short and skinny old man. He said, “I will interrogate this old gramps once I have helped Zhang Ruochen.”

Now that the Son of Darkness was dead, the morale of the Infernal Court was low. It was a great opportunity to crush them.

Ao Xinyan, Elder Patriarch Death Zen, Corpse Emperor Tianming, and the Re-Awakener did not hesitate. They rushed out as fast as they could and charged towards the retreating army of the Infernal Court.

The current situation of True Dragon Island was very complicated, and the Re-Awakener was a mystery. Even though the Seven Top Killers of the Nether Clan had come into contact with them, their identities and origins were unknown, moreover, it was difficult to associate them with the devastating Kunlun Realm. On the contrary, it may be possible that they were deliberately sent by the Celestial Court to ambush them.

After all, the Re-awakened ones exist since eons ago. Some of them could be traced back to hundreds of thousands of years ago. None of them related to the creatures that were born in the last ten thousand years. Everything about them had almost been erased by time.

Therefore, they could attack as much as they wanted now and there was no need to hold back.

ROAR!
Suddenly, violent beast roars sounded one after another.

Hundreds of divine-force monsters of various forms rushed out from all directions and directly charged into the army of the Infernal Court.

BOOM
In the blink of an eye, hundreds of top cultivators of the Infernal Court were torn into pieces. They did not have the time to resist at all.

It would definitely be futile to resist against the strength of the divine-force monsters.

These divine-force monsters had the strength of the Neverwither Supreme Saint, yet they did not have intelligence. In addition, they could control techniques of the time, dimension, darkness, and origins. Even the top cultivators like the Nine-step Saint Kings might lose their lives fighting against those monsters.

‘D*mn it, where did all these terrifying monsters coming from?’ The top cultivators from the Infernal Court were shocked and furious.

The top cultivators from the Celestial Court were stunned by the scenery as well. First, a terrifying monster with a dragon head and a wolf body appeared and killed the Son of Darkness, who had broken through to the Supreme Saint realm. Now, there was a large group of them, it was as if they wanted to destroy the army of the Infernal Court.

Many of the top cultivators from the Celestial Court retreated far away from the battlefield to avoid being losing their lives. There was nothing they could do. The aura of these divine-force monsters was too ferocious and they were fearful of it.

Joy appeared on the Maiden of a Thousand Stars face. She said softly, “The Infernal Court is going to be in big trouble this time.”

She had personally witnessed how terrifying these divine-force monsters were in the underground world. If it wasn’t for Zhang Ruochen’s protection, she would have perished a long time ago.

I didn’t expect Zhang Ruochen to have such terrifying power. He can do whatever he wishes to on True Dragon Island.’ The Immort Minghu was unease.

He couldn’t help but feel fortunate that he didn’t face Zhang Ruochen. Otherwise, he and the Beidou civilization would be in deep water.

A thought came to his mind, Immortal Minghu became more ruthless. He decided to cooperate with Zhang Ruochen to kill the top cultivators of the Infernal Court.

There were many top cultivators in the Infernal Court. Apart from the Seven Top Killers of Nether Clan and the Three Emperors and Ten Reverends of Bone clan, there were also many top-notch Nine-step Saint Kings. If Zhang Ruochen hadn’t summoned the monster king, he wouldn’t have been able to escape.

It is a fact that when the Seven Top Killers of Nether Clan had formed a Seven Killer formation, it was almost comparable to The Four Heavenly Kings of the Celestial Palace. Even the mighty Ao Xukong, Immortal Minghu, and the others could only temporarily hold them back.

The Bone clan’s Three Emperors who possessed the power of Vajra and their battle strength was stunning. On the other hand, The Ten Reverends

could form a terrifying battle formation. They are on the same par as the Nether Clan's Seven Top Killers.

Unfortunately, The Bone Clan and the Nether Clan were on the verged of being defeated. They couldn't wait to leave the True Dragon Island immediately.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen was standing on top of the monster king's head. He was chasing after the Seven Top Killers of the Nether Clan.

When he'd first entered the Ying Yang Sea, he'd encountered three of the Nether Clan's Seven Top Killers. Then, he'd arrived on the True Dragon Island and was ambushed by all seven of them. Now, he would want to settle the score with them.

The monster king ran wildly while releasing all kinds of powerful divine force attacks. The Nether Lotus Flower condensed by the Nether Clan's Top Seven killers shook continuously.

'D*mn that Zhang Ruochen. How did he tame such a terrifying monster?' Never Die was furious.

Xuanming Wushang said in a low voice. 'Leave the True Dragon Island, for now, there are Emissaries Vigilant in the sky above the Ying Yang Sea. If that monster dares to leave the island, he'll be killed immediately.'

'Without that monster, Zhang Ruochen is nothing to be afraid of, no matter how strong he is,' said the Blood Ripples with killing intent.

The Nether Clan's Seven Top Killers were still confident and fearless, even after they had seen Zhang Ruochen defeated the Son of darkness with her own eyes.

The Seven Top Killers of the Nether Clan had made up their minds and would not hesitate anymore. They deployed the Nether Lotus Flower and flew straight out of the island.

"You are not gonna getaway." Zhang Ruochen shouted. He waved the Ancient Abyssal Blade and sharp sword rays were slashed out.

After the fierce battle with the Son of Darkness, his Sword of Space-Time had become more cultivated. A casual slash could subtly merge the power of time and dimension into it.

On the other side, Blackie and the others charged into the army of the Bone Clan. Although they weren't many, they were all still top-tier cultivators. Their destructive power was stronger than hundreds of divine-force monsters.

"You bunch of rotten bones, where do you think you can escape to? Watch as I crush all your bones," Blackie shouted.

Its wings were like two sharp blades that could break through anything. Wherever it passed, the bones of the Bone Clan top cultivators were all shattered.

The body of a Supreme Saint combined with its powerful strength was not enough to deal with these Bone Clan's top cultivators.

BOOM!
A humungous body made of bones disintegrated. The bones of a Supreme Saint were scattered all over the ground. The Saint Soul contained within it had already been destroyed. It belonged to one of the Twelve Reverends of the Bone Clan.

All the Twelve Reverends of the Bone Clan possessed the bone of a Supreme Saint. It was challenging to shatter the bones of a Supreme Saint. Even an ordinary Supreme Saint would find it difficult to do so. However, their Saint Souls were not as powerful as their bone bodies and they could still be destroyed.

The one who killed the Reverends of the Bone Clan was a red-haired man. He was only 1.5 meters tall and his body was covered in vermillion golden scales. He gave off an extremely violent aura like a ferocious beast.

The red-haired man was one of the Re-Awakener. He was known as the Vermilion Aurum. He was not human and was known for his powerful physique.

Previously in the Palace of Silver Dragons, the Vermilion Aurum sat on the first seat on the left and his strength was unquestionable.

Even so, the Vermilion Aurum still fought with the Bone Clan's Reverends for nearly a thousand moves after the surprise attack. Only then the Vermilion Aurum was able to destroy their Saint Soul. It was not an easy task at all.

Not long after, another Reverend of the Bone Clan has fallen along with his Saint Soul perished. The one who attacked was also a Re-awakener.

This person was an old man with white hair and a beard. He looked old, but his eyes were as sharp as knives. No one dared to look at him directly.

The Thousandblade was a top-notched Saint King just like Vermilion Aurum. His blade techniques were ruthless and created to kill. Ordinary Nine-step Saint Kings wouldn't be able to block a single blade from him.

Seeing the Vermilion Aurum and Thousandblade killing the Bone Clan's Reverands one after another, Blackie said suspiciously, 'These two Re-awakeners were not simple. Their strength should be at the top tier below the Supreme Sainthood. They were about the same as the Jinyang Twin Kings. I wonder what era were they born in because I really couldn't recall knowing them.'

"Thousandblade was born two hundred thousand years ago. He claimed countless lives because he cultivated the technique that killed lives. In the end, he was suppressed in the Ying Yang Sea.

"On the other hand, Vermilion Aurum was born a hundred thousand years ago, at the end of the Middle Ages. He belonged to the Dracolynx clan. He bathed in the ancestral blood and cultivated his body to the extreme.

"One was invincible in the blade technique, and the other was invincible in the physique. They were reputable in their respective eras," Ao Xinyan explained.

Kunlun Realm was a long-lasting realm. In every era, brilliant geniuses were born. Because of various reasons, some of the outstanding cultivators of that time were sealed away by special means, and only now were they able to be reborn, they became the precious hidden power of Kunlun Realm.

Ao Xinyan also yearned to have such a powerful strength, but she had only cultivated for a short period, so her accumulation was far from enough. Otherwise, she would not have allowed the army of the Infernal Court to set foot on True Dragon Island.

Seeing the two Reverends members died, the Eight-armed Reverend, who was the leader, could not help but be enraged. 'Damn it, who are they? How can they be so strong?'

Although the Top Seven Killers of Nether Clan had told Zhang Ruochen that there were more than a dozen powerful cultivators exist around him, he had no idea where these powerful cultivators came from. Each of them was extremely mysterious as if they had appeared out of thin air.

The Eight-armed Reverend was filled with grief and mad. The Twelve Reverends had come out together. They had wanted to obtain more rare treasures, but in the end, not only did they not get anything, they had even lost four of their own. It was simply infuriating.

“Deploy formation.” The Eight-armed Reverend roared and summoned the remaining seven Reverends to his side.

The power of the battle formation formed by the eight Reverends was also not to be underestimated.

With the support of the battle formation’s power, the dark gold staff instantly became incomparably huge and released the Supreme Power that could destroy all things.

Facing the attack of the Supreme Artifact, the Vermilion Aurum and Thousandblade retreated immediately. They made the choice not to meet it head-on.

“Let me had it.” Blackie’s body moved and charged towards the dark gold staff.

The wings that were burning with the Eternal Fire collided with the dark gold staff.

BANG!
The power of the dark cold staff was too terrifying. Blackie was unable to completely block it and was forced to retreat more than ten steps.

Despite being pushed back, Blackie was completely fine and not even a single feather fell off.

“Is that the best you can do? Your moves are not enough to scratch my back,” Blackie said disdainfully.

Blackie was once a top-tier Supreme Saint and had cultivated an unparalleled body of a Supreme Saint. It could even block the attacks of Shenlong Chaos Tower of Sun and Moon. How could a few Saint Kings hurt it when they used a Supreme Artifact that had not survived the Yuanhui Tribulation.

The Supreme Artifact could not possess supreme powers when it was refined. Instead, it needed to cultivate and overcome the Yuanhui Tribulation repeatedly to increase its own strength.

The more Yuanhui Tribulation it overcomes, the more powerful the Supreme Artifacts would be. It could even evolve into a Divine Artifact consecutively.

Of course, the probability of that happening was very small and some say it was just a legend.

Otherwise, with Kunlun Realm's history, they wouldn't have only ten Divine Artifacts.

Seeing Blackie, the Eight-armed Reverend's eyes filled with hatred. He roared, "You shall die on my hands, owl!."

An even more majestic power was transferred into the dark gold staff, causing it to completely awakened. A black violent ape appeared and swung the dark gold staff towards Blackie.

BOOM!
The earth shattered and Blackie was smashed into the ground.

"If I don't show my true power, do you really think I'm just an owl?"

With a growl, a demonic light suddenly rushed out from the ground and turned into a towering demonic mountain, smashing towards the Eight Reverends of the Bone Clan.

What Blackie brought out was the Celestial Demon Mountain. It was a top-notched regal weapon, and its power can be matched with dark gold staff.

The Celestial Demon Mountain trembled as majestic demonic qi surged out, faintly revealing many Heavenly Demon phantoms.

BANG!
Without the four Reverends, the battle formation had a huge flaw. Under the bombardment of the Celestial Demonic Mountain, it disintegrated instantly.

Without any hesitation, Blackie, Vermilion Aurum, and Thousandblade moved together and pounced on three of the Reverends.

The trio did not hold back on their most powerful techniques launched the attack furiously to kill the three Reverends of the Bone clan.

ROAR!

The three Bone Clan' Reverends roared and tried their best to block. They were not weak and would not just stand there like a sitting duck taking all the hits.

With their second tier of strength below the Supreme Sainthood and their Supreme Saint bone and body, even if Yan Wushen was to attack, it was unlikely that he could kill them easily.

BOOM!
In an instant, Blackie and the other two had struck out more than a hundred times and sent the three Reverends of the Bone Clan flying, they are all heavily injured.

The Bone Clan's Reverend who was targeted by Blackie was the most miserable. They had fought back and forth, and cracks had appeared on the Reverend's Supreme Saint bone and body. If this continued, it was likely that the fate of being shattered will be almost certain.

Rumble
Just as Blackie and the other two were about to continue attacking, the earth began to shook violently. The heavenly and earthly precepts became extremely chaotic, and the three had no choice but to temporarily stop.

For a moment, everyone on the True Dragon Island was alarmed. Even though the battle was in full swing, they all halted.

For some reason, many people felt terribly insecure as if something terrifying was about to happen.

CRACK!
A large area of Dimensional Collapse, and terrifying black cracks spread out for hundreds and thousands of miles. The scene was extremely frightening.

Some people were unlucky and were affected. Before they could react, they were swallowed by the Dimensional Rift.

"What's going on?" Zhang Ruochen asked in a low voice.

The monster king quickly replied, "Master, every once in a while, the divine forces leftover from the divine war will explode. The space on the island will become fragmented, forming many spatial faults. The entire True Dragon Island will be divided into countless regions. It will take a long time to recover."

As one of the overlords of True Dragon Island, the monster king had experienced this situation countless times, so he was not surprised about what happened.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but frown slightly. In front of him, there were large-scale spatial faults that prevented him to move forward. He could no longer see the Seven Top Killers of the Nether Clan.

He could sense that the spatial fault ahead was immensely terrifying. Even if he was a Master of Space, he would be in deep water if he got caught in it.

Zhang Ruochen looked around. In the blink of an eye, more than ten spatial faults appeared and the space was in disarray. Even he couldn't see it clearly.

With such a huge change, it was a fact that many people would suffer. He was unsure how Blackie and the others were doing.

"Master, although it's dangerous to burst out the divine force, it's also a good opportunity to obtain treasures. Every time, many hidden spaces will be revealed," the monster king suddenly said.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen recalled something. He and Blackie found a hidden space and obtained a Demonstone Engraving and the Celestial Demon Mountain from within.

The hidden spaces that could be preserved from the divine war must be extraordinary. Within the hidden spaces were all extremely precious treasures. Finding one of them would be a great harvest.

A thought flashed in and Zhang Ruochen said immediately, "Let's go back."

Because they were chasing after the Nether Clan's Top Seven Killers, they had already left the ruins of the Dragon Temple. If they didn't return in time, they wouldn't be able to touch even if a large number of hidden spaces appeared.

Although True Dragon Island was filled with spatial faults, with the dimensional technique of Zhang Ruochen and the monster king, they still had a way to return to the ruins of the Dragon Temple in a short amount of time.

“Master, every time the divine force explodes, We, the five overlords will make a move onto collect the treasures. We must be mindful of Mojo and Lord of Elixir,” the monster king warned him seriously.

After the divine war in the Middle Ages ended, due to various reasons, five mighty overlords appeared on the True Dragon Island one after another. Each of them was not easy to deal with. Even a Supreme Sainthood cultivator might not be able to escape unharmed.

The monster king was known as the Dragon Phantom Lord. Even though the monster king was a combination of divine force, its core essence however was the phantom that was born after the death of the Divine Dragon.

In addition to the Dragon Phantom Lord, the other four overlords, namely the Mojo, the Lord of Stone, the Lord of Elixir, and the Lord of Sword, all had their own unique and unpredictable means.

In the past, the Dragon Phantom Lord had no fear of the other four overlords and had powerful strength that could rival them.

However, it was different now. The Dragon Phantom Lord was injured by the God-Defiance Stele, and many of the chains of percepts had been taken away by Zhang Ruochen. His strength had been very much reduced. If he fought against them, he would definitely be at a disadvantage.

Zhang Ruochen had an idea and said. “If I have the chance, I want to take all the treasures the four overlords have collected.”

The Dragon Phantom Lord had collected hundreds of millions of treasures. He believed that the other four overlords had also collected many treasures.

They didn’t stay any longer. Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord immediately changed directions and rushed to the ruins of the Dragon Temple as swiftly as they could.

Chapter 2114: The Birth of the Cauldron

The appearance of many spatial faults divided the huge True Dragon Island into tens of thousands of regions. The top cultivators on the island were scattered all over and had no idea where they were.

“Good thing that we have suppressed that old fellow. Otherwise, God knows where we would have found him,” Blackie said happily.

At this moment, Saint King Zixin of the Three-Eyed Ancients came and met up with the other Re-awakeners. He looked at the Vermilion Aurum and Thousandblade. He was deeply shocked when he saw the two of them kill the two Reverends of the Bone Clan, therefore, he asked, “How did you two recover so much strength in such a short period?”

All the top cultivators who had been in deep slumber since ancient times could not recover their former strength immediately after they had woke up. Instead, there was a process of recovery.

When they landed on the True Dragon Island, neither the Vermilion Aurum nor the Thousandblade had recovered to their current strength. Therefore, when they were ambushed by the Nether Clan’s Seven Top killers, they kept a low profile and did not attack rashly, alternatively, they worked together with rests to activate the Silver Shenlong Armor on Ao Xinyan.

Vermilion Aurum laughed and said, “Of course, there is always a chance.”

Thousandblade said frankly, “We came to the True Dragon Island and obtained The Sun-Moon Dragon Spring. After being baptized by the spring, the effects of the long slumber were eliminated.”

Hearing that, the spirits of all the Re-awakeners, including Saint King Zixin, were lifted. They undoubtedly needed the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring for the baptism.

Vermilion Aurum have guessed what they were thinking, he couldn’t help but sigh. “The Sun- Moon Dragon Spring is extremely mysterious and it can appear anywhere. Brother Thousandblade and I haven’t discovered the source of the spring. We only found a dozen or so drops of spring water by accident, barely enough for us to recover both our strength. There was no excess.”

Hearing this, Saint King Zixin and the rest all felt disappointed. If they could obtain a large amount of the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring, their strength would recover to its former peak.

“The Sun-Moon Dragon Spring is one of its kind holy spring. It has long since become mystic and able to teleport itself here and there. Even a Supreme Saint would not be able to halt it. Whether or not we can obtain the holy spring depends entirely on the mood of the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring. Even when I made my move back then, I did not succeed. It is even more cunning than the old gramps trapped by the formation.” Blackie gritted his teeth and said.

Blackie was also very eager to obtain some of the Sun-Moon Dragon Springwater. Though it couldn't eliminate the influence of the Shenlong Chaos Tower of Sun and Moon's power, it would be a great help in stabilizing its powers of the Supreme Sainthood. It was not as fortunate as it was now, and it could not be triggered for a long time.

WA-WA!
Suddenly, an extremely ear-piercing cry sounded.

Everyone who heard the cry felt their hair stand on end. In their minds, some terrifying scenes emerged, as if they were in Infernal Asuran. If one's mental will was not strong enough, it would be eroded and controlled by a strange and evil will.

"It's this crying sound again. What is it?" Ao Xinyan frowned slightly.

She had heard this crying sound before, but she had not seen the source of it.

Blackie narrowed his eyes and said, "It's the Mojo, one of the overlords on the True Dragon Island. Through the infiltration of spiritual power, it caused the cultivators to change and become such as these vile creatures."

As he spoke, Blackie used Saint Qi to transform into an image of the creepy children. It was only one meter tall, with blood-red eyes and legless. Only dozens of tentacles supported its body.

Blackie and Zhang Ruochen had encountered this kind of creepy children before. That kind of strange spiritual power attack almost made them suffer.

Seeing the strange shape of the creepy children, Ao Xinyan and the others were all in shock. It was most certainly unheard of for a cultivator to have such a strange change.

Fortunately, their spiritual willpower was sturdy, so the effect of the crying on them was negligible. So long as they did not meet the strange and unpredictable Mojo, they should not have any problems.

Blackie and the others were not afraid of the crying, on the other hand, some cultivators with weaker spiritual willpower would be in big trouble. All Kinds of creepy images would appear in their minds, which directly led to hallucination and then they will begin to mutate.

Their eyes turned blood-red, and their bodies began to shrink. They gradually turned into children. The scene of it was extremely terrifying.

In a short time, large numbers of cultivators from the Celestial Court and Infernal Court were controlled by the Mojo and were transformed into creepy children. It was disastrous.

After turning into those creepy children, they began to attack the other cultivators near them. They used their spiritual power to erode them. They wanted everyone to be infected to turn into Mojo's children. Its spread like a plague with wildfire.

As Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord were on their way, several black-figured shadows suddenly emerged from the ground and turned into several creepy children. They all opened their mouths and bared their sharp teeth. They cried loudly and attacked with their spiritual power like a tidal wave, they rushed into the minds of Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord.

In an instant, a hideous ghost face appeared in Zhang Ruochen's mind. It wanted to devour his spiritual willpower.

Hmph!
Zhang Ruochen snorted coldly. He mobilized his spiritual power and immediately tore the ghost face in his mind into pieces.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen released the power of space to instantly build a spatial cage to trap all the creepy children.

Then, Zhang Ruochen released a stream of spiritual power to probe into the mind of one of the creepy children. He wanted to examine it in detail.

His spiritual power entered the mind of the creepy child, he was drowned by a sea of blood and was faintly targeted by a terrifying behemoth.

However, he did not see the face of the behemoth. He only saw a pair of blood-red eyes filled with boundless killing intent.

"Master, these are the children of the Mojo. They all have the will of the Mojo. So do not use your spiritual power to examine them. Otherwise, it will easily attract the attention of the Mojo," the Dragon Phantom Lord warned.

Zhang Ruochen did not hesitate. He immediately cut off the spiritual power he was about to release.

Then, he clenched his hand. The spatial cage was destroyed entirely. Several of the creepy children perished along with it.

The Dragon Phantom Lord said, “Master, the Mojo is usually in a deep slumber. Now that he has released the children, he should be fully awake. We must be more extra cautious.”

“What is the Mojo?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

The Dragon Phantom Lord explained, “Mojo’s true body was a heart. It originated from a god in the Infernal Court. It absorbed endless resentment Qi on the True Dragon Island and gave birth to intelligent sentience. It was born with the terrifying ability to control the minds of other living beings.

“Over the years, the creatures on the True Dragon Island were not only the five overlords. The weaker ones were almost all controlled by the Mojo and he also collected the most treasures amongst all.”

The Dragon Phantom Lord was undoubtedly afraid of Mojo, especially now that its power had been weakened. If it fought against the Mojo, it would undoubtedly be at a disadvantage.

“I see it now. No wonder Mojo is so evil. But if you and I join hands, we don’t have to be afraid of it,” Zhang Ruochen said calmly.

His and the Dragon Evil Emperor’s spiritual willpower was both impenetrable and would not be easily eroded. At the same time, they had the dimensional technique, so it was not a problem for them to protect themselves.

In addition, when Zhang Ruochen and Blackie met the creepy children last time, they found that the creepy children seemed to be afraid of the power of Yang. Perhaps this was one of the weaknesses of the Mojo.

Without the creepy children blocking the way, Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord continued to move forward. At this time, the deeper they went into the ruins of the Dragon God Temple, the greater the chance of obtaining treasures.

On the way, Zhang Ruochen did not miss out on any cultivators from the Infernal Court. He killed them all.

Speaking of which, he had already collected many Saint Souls of the cultivators from the Infernal Court. Including a strand of the Son of Darkness’s Saint Soul, he could exchange it for plenty of merits.

According to the rules set by the Fane of Merit, even if he killed the weakest Neverwither Supreme Saint, he would get 30 million merits. If he killed the best of them, he would get hundreds of millions of merits.

When the Son of Darkness was killed, he had already broken through to the Neverwither Supreme Sainthood. He was definitely not an ordinary Neverwither Supreme Saint. The merits that he could exchange with a wisp of his Saint Soul would definitely not be disappointed.

Passing through another spatial fault, Zhang Ruochen's eyes could not help but light up. He saw not only one but four familiar figures.

Two of them were familiar to Zhang Ruochen. They were Ao Xukong and Immortal Minghu.

He had never met the other two, but he recognized them. One was the first Imperial Scion of the Thousand-Star Civilization, Xing Wuji, and the other was the Giant Spirit King of the Giant Spirit Civilization, Jin Yu.

There were one thousand Imperial Scion in the Thousand-Star Civilization. To be able to rank first, Xing Wuji was extraordinary.

Giant Spirit King was the most respected title in the Giant Spirit Civilization. Only the top-tier cultivators below the Supreme Saint could achieve it and a great honor.

Throughout the history of the Giant Spirit Civilization, nearly every generation of Giant Spirit Kings had attained Supreme Saint or even becoming the Gods.

Jin Yu was a golden giant like Dazun. He was 99 meters tall, which was the limit of the Saint King realm.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised to meet Ao Xukong, Immortal Minghu, Xing Wuji, and Jin Yu at the same time. He didn't expect that even the spatial fault couldn't separate the four of them.

Ao Xukong and the other three felt the presence of someone was coming and couldn't help but look at him.

"Zhang Ruochen." The moment Immortal Minghu saw Zhang Ruochen, his gaze couldn't help but become a little surprised.

He can't help it because he had a conflict with Zhang Ruochen before. So he was worried that Zhang Ruochen would seek revenge upon him.

Zhang Ruochen moved and hopped down from the Dragon Phantom Lord's head. He appeared next to Ao Xukong. Among the four, he was closest with Ao Xukong.

"You can even pass through the spatial fault easily. Brother Ruochen, you really make us envious," Ao Xukong said with a smile.

It was clear that Zhang Ruochen had displayed his great strength in the battle with the Son of Darkness. Ao Xukong's attitude toward him had changed slightly. He regarded Zhang Ruochen as a top cultivator of the same level, and there was a hint of respect in his eyes.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head slightly and said, "If I could really pass through the spatial fault easily, I wouldn't have let the Top Seven Killers of the Nether Clan escape."

"I can only say that they were lucky to have encountered the changes happening on the True Dragon Island. But from now on, as long as you are around, the Nether Clan's Top Seven Killers will probably have to go around to avoid you," Ao Xukong said.

At this time, Xing Wuji, Immortal Minghu, and Jin Yu also came over. No matter what, they couldn't turn a blind eye to Zhang Ruochen.

With the Dragon Phantom Lord by Zhang Ruochen's side, anyone would need to think twice before facing them.

Xing Wuji smiled and said, "From now on, Brother Zhang will lead the Kunlun Realm's Battlefield of Merits. I think the Infernal Court will have a headache."

What he said was the truth. If Zhang Ruochen could overpower the Son of Darkness, how many people below the Supreme Saint of the Infernal Court could be stronger than the Son of Darkness?

It could be said that Zhang Ruochen's strong rise would definitely pose a great obstacle to the invasion of the Kunlun Realm by the Infernal Court.

The key point was that with Zhang Ruochen's current strength, even if the Infernal Court wanted to eliminate him, it would be impossible. He controlled the power of dimension and time. If Zhang Ruochen wanted to leave, None below the Supreme Saint could stop him?

"Brother Zhang…" Jin Yu was about to speak when the ground suddenly collapsed and thousands of auspicious qi rushed out of the ground.

“A treasure has appeared.” In an instant, Zhang Ruochen and the others all reacted.

Judging from the movement, they could roughly tell that the treasure that had appeared should be very unusual.

Swoosh!
With the surging of a refreshing and strange fragrance, countless divine dragons flew out of the ground and go in all directions.

“It’s a Heaven Grade Sacred Pill.” Immortal Minghu’s eyes lit up.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen and the others could see that the dozens of divine dragons in different shapes and sizes were formed from Sacred Pills. They all had mighty power and were comparable to the Nine-Step Saint King.

The Heaven Grade Sacred Pills were of utmost precious. Only the alchemists could refine them, and they were challenging to mass-produce.

A Heave Grade Sacred Pills would cost at least tens of millions of saint stones or even hundreds of millions of saint stones. Only a handful of Saint Kings could afford it.

Therefore, it was usually the Supreme Saints who used the Heaven Grade Sacred Pill to cultivate.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Ruochen and the others took the Heaven Grade Sacred Pill as quickly as possible.

Even with their current cultivation, the Heaven Grade Sacred Pill would still be profitable.

Although the Heaven Grade Sacred Pill was powerful, it couldn’t fight back against Zhang Ruochen and the others.

In the blink of an eye, the Heaven Grade Sacred Pills were all gone. Zhang Ruochen had five, Ao Xukong and Xing Wuji had three, Jin Yu had two, and Immortal Minghu had one. All of them had gained something.

Of course, this was the result of Zhang Ruochen not letting Dragon Phantom Lord interfered. Otherwise, Ao Xukong and the others might not even be able to get a single Heaven Grade Sacred Pill.

These Heaven Grade Sacred Pills were a small token of his gratitude for the help of Ao Xukong and the other three.

At this moment, there was another movement underground. A bronze cauldron flew out. It looked very ancient. There were many azure divine dragons carved on the body of the cauldron. It looked very lifelike as if it would fly up at any moment.

BANG!
As if someone was controlling it, the cauldron crashed through space and flew away.

“After it.” Zhang Ruochen reacted instantly. He appeared above the Dragon Phantom Lord’s head and gave the order at the same time.

Whoosh!
The Dragon Phantom Lord used dimensional technique to the extreme. He tailed behind the cauldron with the speed of lightning and passed through the broken space.

Ao Xukong and the other three reacted quickly, but they didn’t dare to follow like Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord. After all, they weren’t cultivators of dimension. It would be very troublesome if they fell into a spatial fault.

“The Heaven Grade Sacred Pills that were just born must have flown out of this cauldron. There might be higher-grade sacred pills inside. It’s a pity.” Jin Yu couldn’t help but sigh.

Ao Xukong said, “No one knows if there are King Grade Sacred Pills inside the cauldron, but the cauldron itself is an extremely precious treasure. There are seven divine dragons carved on the cauldron. It means that you can use it to refine King Grade Sacred Pills.”

Hearing Ao Xukong’s words, Xing Wuji, Immortal Minghu, and Jin Yu’s expressions couldn’t help but change. It was a pity that such a precious cauldron had slipped off their fingers. They didn’t know if Zhang Ruochen could get it.

Dragon patterns were engraved on the cauldrons of the dragonkin. The quality of the cauldron could be judged by the number of dragon engravements.

The worst cauldron had only one dragon pattern engraved on it, and the best had nine.

Legend had it that cauldrons with Nine-dragon Cauldron could refine divine pills, which was the dream of all alchemists.

Even with the heritage of the Divine Dragon race of Kunlun Realm, they only had one Nine-dragon Cauldron. It was unknown whether it had been destroyed during the celestial war in the past.

Although the Seven-dragon Cauldron could not compare to the Nine-dragon Cauldron, it could still refine King Grade Sacred Pills. In many vast worlds, there were only a few of them. Their value was immeasurable.

One had to know that the Elixir Spirit of a King Grade Sacred Pill already had the battle prowess of a Supreme Saint. From this, one could imagine how shocking the medicinal strength of a King Grade Sacred Pill was.

An ordinary Saint King wanting to collect or swallow a King Grade Sacred Pill was no different from courting death.

…

The Son of Darkness is the greatest villain of all time, will there ever be a villain who would surpass than him?

Chapter 2115: An Unexpected Discovery

The Seven-dragon Cauldron seemed to have a life of its own. It released an extremely terrifying power and smashed through the dimensional barrier one after another. No one knew where it was going.

Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord worked together to perform an exquisite dimensional technique, but they could barely keep up.

It’s not the cauldron that’s releasing power to smash through the space. There are probably King Grade Sacred Pills in it. I mustn’t let it go, Zhang Ruochen thought.

King Grade Sacred Pills were invaluable. The Dragon Phantom Lord had collected hundreds of millions of treasures, but only held two of them on hand, one of them had been refined by the Son of Darkness.

As Zhang Ruochen thought about it, he activated the Percepts of Dimension in his body and released powerful dimensional power. It swept toward the Seven-dragon cauldron. He didn’t want to keep chasing it. After all, no one knew what would happen next.

Restricted by the dimensional power, the Seven-dragon Cauldron's speed was instantly affected.

Whoosh!
A dimensional chain appeared and wrapped tightly around the Seven-dragon Cauldron.

Under this situation, the Seven-dragon Cauldron was fixed in mid-air. It couldn't move anymore.

But just as Zhang Ruochen was about to pull the dimensional chain, a small fire wyrmling suddenly rushed out of the Seven-dragon Cauldron and released an extremely violent power.

Crack!
The dimensional chain broke, and the Seven-dragon Cauldron smashed the dimensional barrier in front of it.

A strange light flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes. "A King Grade Sacred Pill can control such a powerful dragonsoul fire. If I can refine it, the Divine Purification Flame in my body will definitely improve a lot. I might even be able to transcend into Emperor-Level."

The Divine Purification Flame was divided into three levels: Mortal-level, Envoy-level, and Emperor-level. Most cultivators only held the Mortal-level, and very few had reached the Envoy-level. Emperor-level was almost a legend, merely a handful of Supreme Saints who cultivated the Path of Fire were able to achieve it.

Zhang Ruochen had made the Divine Purification Flame in his body transcended to Envoy-level a long time ago. However, it was still a long way from transcending to Emperor-level.

Zhang Ruochen was now almost certain that the King Grade Sacred Pill in the Seven-dragon Cauldron could improve the essence of the Divine Purification Flame. Naturally, he could not let it go.

With Zhang Ruochen's instructions, the Dragon Phantom Lord burst forth with godspeed. Before the dimensional barrier was repaired, he forced his way through. He had already locked onto the aura of the Seven-dragon Cauldron and would not let it escape easily.

Because of the complicated dimensional structure in front of him, the Seven-dragon Cauldron went rampaged, but its speed was slowed down.

When it broke out of the spatial fault, the Dragon Phantom Lord had caught up with it.

‘Confine!’ Zhang Ruochen attacked. He released a powerful dimensional power to confine a large area of space.

The Seven-dragon Cauldron shook violently. A sea of dragonsoul fire surged out of it, like a volcano erupting.

BANG!
The cover of the cauldron was blown away by the powerful force. A Blue Fire Dragon more than 3,000 meters long flew out of the cauldron. It broke through the spatial confinement and escaped at a high speed.

‘It is indeed a King Grade Sacred Pill. What a powerful Elixir Spirit. But Can you escape?’ Zhang Ruochen’s eyes lit up, and he immediately performed the Great Dimensional Shift.

In an instant, Zhang Ruochen appeared dozens of miles away, blocking the Blue Fire Dragon’s path.

Luoshui Fist Technique was performed, and a Celestial River appeared. It meandered and twisted toward the Blue Fire Dragon.

ROAR!
The Blue Fire Dragon let out a sky-shaking dragon’s roar, and a terrifying dragonsoul fire surged out of its body.

There was a saying that water and fire were incompatible. Being burned by the dragonsoul fire, a large amount of water vapor rose in the Celestial River, as if it was going to be instantly evaporated.

Whoosh!
The Celestial River flowed faster and faster. At the same time, it grew stronger and stronger. Soon, it overpowered the fire.

It wasn’t that the dragonsoul fire wasn’t strong enough. It was because Zhang Ruochen had refined a top-tier water-element divine object and cultivated the Luoshui Fist Technique to the extreme. The Celestial River that conjured could grow endlessly, just enough to counter the dragonsoul fire.

However, even though it was surrounded by the Celestial River, the Blue Fire Dragon still didn’t give in. Instead, it struggled even more fiercely. It

released clusters of Dark Blue Flames and condensed a strange dragon mark to attack the Celestial River.

Rumble
The Celestial River shook violently under the attack of the dragon mark, creating huge waves.

What a powerful Elixir Spirit. In terms of power, it's almost comparable to the Son of Darkness before he broke through. Unfortunately, he hasn't practiced any saint technique. No matter how strong his power is, he doesn't know how to use it.' Zhang Ruochen shook his head slightly.

As he spoke, he pulled back the Celestial River and forcefully crushed the Blue Fire Dragon.

Under the pressure of the Celestial River, the Blue Fire Dragon's huge body immediately began to shrink.

Not long after, the Blue Fire Dragon became only three meters long. Then, it disappeared into thin air. A dark blue pill appeared, only the size of a finger.

On the surface of the pill, there was a dragon pattern that kept moving, trying to break free.

'Seal.' Zhang Ruochen made a move and quickly cast a strong seal.

Buzz
The pill trembled slightly and then returned to calm.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and took the pill in his hand. After a long time, he finally got the King Grade Sacred Pill.

If his cultivation hadn't improved greatly, he might not have been able to do anything to the Elixir Spirit.

I'll refine it after I had left the True Dragon Island,' Zhang Ruochen whispered.

Refining a King Grade Sacred Pill was not an easy task, especially the one in his hand. It contained a terrifying dragonsoul fire. Even for him, it would take quite some time.

The situation on True Dragon Island was complicated and constantly changed. It was obviously not suitable for this task.

The Son of Darkness could refine one so quickly mainly because he cultivated the Path of Darkness, one of the nine Paths of Ancients. It was best at devouring and absorbing.

Carefully putting away the King Grade Sacred Pill, Zhang Ruochen came to the Seven-dragon Cauldron.

Naturally, he couldn't let go of this treasure.

A Cauldron that could refine King Grade Sacred Pills was invaluable. If it was in Blackie's hands, he might be able to refine many high-grade sacred pills.

BOOM!
Suddenly, a large area of space shattered, and destructive power surged.

Zhang Ruochen's heart skipped a beat. He quickly put away the Seven-dragon Cauldron and turned to look in the direction of the broken space.

Many huge black tentacles came into Zhang Ruochen's sight. Each one was more than 3,000 meters long. There were blood-red patterns on the surface. They looked fragile, but they were actually extremely tough. They could pierce through everything.

'Mojo.' Zhang Ruochen reacted in an instant.

He had just come into contact with the creepy child not long ago. Thus, he was very familiar with Mojo's aura. He hadn't expected to meet the true form of Mojo so quickly.

However, he couldn't see the true form of Mojo. There was pure dark divine force enveloping Mojo's body. Only many black tentacles were revealed.

The person fighting Mojo was a handsome man in black. He had sword-like eyebrows and beautiful eyes like the stars. His body exuded an extremely powerful sword aura. He held an edgeless sword, but it was as sharp as a knife.

Something struck his mind like lightning, Zhang Ruochen knew his identity. He must be the Lord of Sword, one of the five overlords.

The Dragon Phantom Lord had told him that the Lord of Sword was formed from the will of a sword left behind by a peerless sword god on the True Dragon Island. His sword technique was superb, and his attacks were the most powerful and tyrannical.

The edgeless sword in the Lord of Sword's hand was a powerful regal weapon.

The sword's will of the sword god was attached to the edgeless sword. After a long time, the Lord of Sword was born.

Therefore, the Lord of Sword and the edgeless sword were extremely compatible. With such a sword in hand, they were invincible.

"Master, the Lord of Sword and Mojo are a nemesis to each other. Every time there is a change on the True Dragon Island, they will challenge each other. We should avoid them," warned the Dragon Phantom Lord.

The five overlords had never been on good terms, especially Mojo. He wanted to devour or enslave all the creatures on the island and dominate True Dragon Island.

With Dragon Phantom Lord's current state, meeting Mojo was not a good thing.

Zhang Ruochen really wanted to use the God-Defiance Stele to suppress both Mojo and Lord of Sword as well as take all the treasures they had collected.

However, the current situation was different from when he had subdued the Dragon Phantom Lord. He might not be able to use the God-Defiance Stele to attack Mojo and the Lord of Sword.

If the God-Defiance Stele was just to use on either Mojo or the Lord of Sword, he could give it a shot.

As he was thinking, Zhang Ruochen suddenly felt his scalp tighten. A strong sense of crisis surged in his heart.

Swoosh!
Black tentacles, like spears, cut through the sky and pierced toward Zhang Ruochen like lightning.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed. He hadn't expected that Mojo would be distracted to deal with him and the Dragon Phantom Lord during a battle with the Lord of Sword.

Before the tentacles could reach Zhang Ruochen, a terrifying spiritual power attacked him first.

Compared to those creepy children, the spiritual power attack from Mojo's true form was undoubtedly many times more terrifying.

Even though Zhang Ruochen was prepared for it, his brain still felt a sharp pain. His mind was filled with gory images, so much so that there was faint blood in his eyes.

Hiss
Zhang Ruochen could not help but inhale a breath of cold air. He truly felt the terror of the Mojo.

'Break!' Zhang Ruochen let out a loud shout and mobilized his spiritual power with all his strength.

The spiritual power Saint Aspect that Zhang Ruochen had cultivated was the Thunder God Reverend. His spiritual power naturally carried a strong Yang aura, which was just right to counter the Yin and evil spiritual power of Mojo.

In an instant, the bloody and strange images that filled his mind were forcefully torn apart.

Suppressing the dizziness in his head, Zhang Ruochen waved his hand and released a large amount of Divine Purification Flame, engulfing Mojo's tentacles in flames.

When people of different cultivation used the same Envoy-level Divine Purification flame, the power would be as different as day and night.

With Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation strength, the Divine Purification Flame released by him was enough to incinerate most of the Nine-step Saint Kings into ashes.

As Zhang Ruochen had expected, Mojo's true form was afraid of the flame. The tentacles that were charged at him stopped moving.

On the other side, although the Dragon Phantom Lord's strength was greatly reduced, it was not difficult to deal with the tentacles of Mojo.

Zhang Ruochen appeared above the Dragon Phantom Lord's head and said at the same time, "Let's get out of here."

Zhang Ruochen and Dragon Phantom Lord had already attracted Mojo's attention. If the Lord of Sword also targeted them, the consequences would be dire.

The Dragon Phantom Lord did not dare to hesitate. He immediately carried Zhang Ruochen and plunged into a spatial fault. He did not want to be swallowed by Mojo.

BOOM!
Mojo's dozen tentacles came at lightning speed. Although they did not attack Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord, they shattered the spatial fault.

As a result, Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord fell into more chaotic and complicated space.

Even though they both cultivated the Path of Dimension, they were still in trouble.

"Damn Mojo, I'll gobble you up sooner or later," the Dragon Phantom Lord roared.

In the blink of an eye, the Dragon Phantom Lord had been attacked many times. There were many cracks on his body, and he was almost swallowed by a Dimensional Rift.

Zhang Ruochen became serious. He used the Path of Dimension to the extreme and tried to find a way out of the chaotic spatial fault.

With the interference of the Mojo, they were really in big trouble this time.

Born from the God of Infernal Court's divine heart, it will definitely become a calamity to us all. I must find a chance to get rid of it,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

The Dragon Phantom Lord suddenly cried out, "Oh No."

The reason was that Mojo had extended dozens of tentacles again, wanting to completely destroy the spatial fault.

At this moment, the Lord of Sword drew his sword and cut out dozens of sharp Sword Qi.

Puff!
The dozens of tentacles that Mojo had just extended were all cut off by the Sword Qi. They could not attack the spatial fault as they wished to.

Taking on this opportunity, Zhang Ruochen and Dragon Phantom Lord quickly broke out of the spatial fault and disappeared without a trace.

BANG!
The space rippled slightly. Zhang Ruochen and Dragon Phantom Lord appeared out of thin air and fell heavily to the ground.

Zhang Ruochen advanced left and right in the spatial fault. Both of them were covered in wounds.

If the Lord of Sword had not attacked at the critical moment, they might have really died in the spatial fault.

The Dragon Phantom Lord said angrily, “If my strength hadn’t been damaged, I would have joined hands with the Lord of Sword and kill that despicable Mojo.”

“Don’t worry, there will always be a chance for that. I’ll settle the score with it sooner or later,” Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were cold and said.

Zhang Ruochen had almost been killed by Mojo. How could he possibly let it go?

Mojo was powerful, but he could always find an opportunity to attack. No matter what, he would make Mojo pay the price before he left True Dragon Island.

The Dragon Phantom Lord said in surprise, “It seems a little unusual here. There are no spatial faults in a large area. And I sense a very unique and familiar aura.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but look around. It was undoubtedly necessary to figure out the surroundings first.

Based on their previous experience, True Dragon Island should be full of spatial faults. It was chaotic. If one’s dimensional attainments were not high enough, it would be difficult to move an inch.

However, this area was different. There wasn’t even a small spatial fault within a thousand miles when the Power of Dimension was used.

“I remember now. It’s the presence of the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring,” the Dragon Phantom Lord said suddenly.

As one of the overlords on True Dragon Island, the Dragon Phantom Lord had seen the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring once. He had also obtained a small amount of the spring water, so he was familiar with its aura.

Hearing the words “Sun-Moon Dragon Spring,” Zhang Ruochen’s eyes lit up. This was one of the most prominent treasures on True Dragon Island. It could refine a peerless body and have all sorts of incredible uses.

Rumour has it, that the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring contained three types of spring water. The most common and largest sacred spring could be used by saints and Saint Kings.

The second type of sacred spring, which was rarer, was used by top-tier Saint Kings and Supreme saints.

As for the third type, it was the divine spring. It was extremely rare and even the Gods yearned to obtain it.

There was also the Dragonform Grass, which had incredible effects. Legend had it that it grew beside the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring and absorbed the essence of the divine spring. It was nourished by a large amount of dragon energy and could only be produced once every ten thousand years.

If one had the Divine Dragon Bloodline and refined a Dragonform grass, there was hope to fully activate their Divine Dragon Bloodline and transform into a true Divine Dragon.

Although True Dragon Island was in ruins, the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring was still there. With the dragon’s aura left on the island, there was still hope to grow a Dragonform grass.

“Find the location of the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring immediately,” Zhang Ruochen ordered urgently.

Since he was lucky enough to encounter the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring, there was no reason to miss it. No matter what, he had to find a way to get some of the spring water.

…

Many of you had probably forgotten about the most mysterious ancient sect in Kunlun Realm. With the revival of Kunlun Realm and the Divine Sky-connecting Tree sprouting again, would they resurface once again?

Chapter 2116: Lord of Elixir

Dragon Phantom Lord relied on the weak signs of the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring it detected. Along with Zhang Ruochen, it swiftly swept through the area carefully to locate it.

Although the aura of Sun-Moon Dragon Spring pervaded a large area, they couldn't find it no matter how hard they searched. It was as if it was no longer here.

The Sun-Moon Dragon Spring had long gained spiritual intelligence and knew how to seek opportunities and avoid threats. Hence, ever since it was born, it never stayed in a certain place for long.

Are we too late? Dragon Phantom Lord looked reluctant to accept the outcome.

It wasn't easy to detect trails left by the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring. It's a pity to miss it.'

Zhang Ruochen thought for a while and took out the Secret Tome of Time and Space. He mobilized the Precepts of Dimension in him and fused them into the tome. Instantly, an invisible wave of dimensional fluctuations spread out.

It worked amazingly that it could seep into the surroundings and underground slowly to probe everything.

Suddenly, there was a hint of surprise in his eyes. "There's a strange wave of power 30,000 feet underground," he said.

So the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring hides underground this time. No wonder we can't find it, Dragon Phantom Lord said with sudden realization.

True Dragon Island's earth structure was dense, making it difficult to probe underground with spiritual power. Hence, it would be challenging to know the situation beneath the surface of the ground.

Even with his high attainments in dimensional techniques, Zhang Ruochen couldn't have sensed it 30,000 feet underground without the help of the Secret Tome of Time and Space.

Dragon Phantom Lord then acted immediately with Zhang Ruochen's instructions. It used all kinds of means to dig an underground tunnel.

However, it was obviously not an easy task. The deeper it went, the harder it became. It was difficult to even for someone like Dragon Phantom Lord.

CRACK!
At a certain moment, the underground rocks shattered, revealing a pitch-black hole. Hazy fog emanated from it.

This fog was special as it was interwoven with the Qi of profound Yin and Yang. Their nature was clearly opposite yet still appeared as one.

When Dragon Phantom Lord saw the fog, it got excited and said, “Such dense fog of the Sun and Moon, the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring must be down there.”

The springwater of the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring was also very beneficial to him. If it could get more of the Saint Springwater, it could baptize its own divine power and Saint Soul to improve its strength.

Since the fog came from the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring, it must have extraordinary effects.’ Zhang Ruochen then performed Empyrean Emperor Ming’s Scripture to absorb the fog into his body.

The fog fused with his flesh and bones once it entered his body without the need for refinement.

In the process, Zhang Ruochen vaguely sensed that his body and Saint Soul had been strengthened. At the same time, his Saint Qi had also become purer.

With his current cultivation base, it was rare for him to be able to feel the subtle effects of absorbing the fog from the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring.

‘The Sun-Moon Dragon Spring is indeed magical. If I can get some essence of it, my body and Saint Soul will be greatly improved,’ Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were full of anticipation.

Zhang Ruochen and Dragon Phantom Lord took the opportunity and entered the hole without any hesitation.

They were careful and had concealed their aura to avoid alerting the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring.

The underground space was huge. It was filled with the potent fog of the Sun and Moon, which almost condensed into a liquid.

Upon entering the underground space, Zhang Ruochen found that the place was not that dark. It was bathed in the soft saint light.

The source of the saint light was a big sun and a bright moon emitting the interwoven golden and silver saint light, respectively.

It was neither real sun nor moon but merely a phenomenon from the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring.

To see through the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring behind the thick fog, Zhang Ruochen used his Eye of the Divine Mark.

“Huh? There’s someone ahead.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes narrowed.

It was not good news when there was someone else in the location of the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring.

A glance at the person’s back had made Zhang Ruochen feel uneasy. He sensed a serious threat.

Dragon Phantom Lord also noticed the person ahead. He spoke in a low voice, “It’s Lord of Elixir. This guy really has a nose for good stuff. It always seems to be able to find the place where the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring appears.”

He had met Lord of Elixir when he accidentally found the Sun Moon Divine Dragon Spring previously. Never had he expected to meet it again this time.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but frown when he heard “Lord of Elixir” being mentioned. They had just met Mojo and Lord of Sword not long ago, and now they bumped into Lord of Elixir. He didn’t know whether it was good or bad luck.

In other words, the only one of the five overlords of True Dragon Island he hadn’t met was Lord of Stone.

According to Dragon Phantom Lord, Lord of Elixir was formed from the remnant essence of a crushed Emperor Grade Sacred Pill. Despite no longer being an Emperor Grade Sacred Pill, it was still far more potent than a King Grade Sacred Pill.

Dragon Phantom Lord then said, “Lord of Elixir holds an extremely deep obsession to condense its Origin again and transform himself into an Emperor Grade Sacred Pill. For this, he swallowed a lot of heavenly materials and earthly treasures, including a large number of King Grade Sacred Pills. At the same time, it used the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring to baptize the Qi of his elixir.”

Lord of Elixir was distinctive from the rest. It was far better at finding all kinds of Sacred Pills than the other four overlords. Most of the high-grade Sacred Pills kept in Dragon Temple, especially the King Grade Sacred Pills, had fallen into the hands of Lord of Elixir.

Over the years, almost thirty King Grade Sacred Pills had appeared, and Lord of Elixir had obtained at least two-thirds of them. That was a shocking amount of wealth that was sufficient to make a Supreme Saint envy.

Its Origin must have become extremely powerful after swallowing so many of the King Grade Sacred Pills. Given enough time, it might really be able to turn them into a complete Emperor Grade Sacred Pill.

“Swallowing an enormous number of King Grade Sacred Pills to cultivate its own Elixir Qi is really extravagant.” Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but sigh.

The King Grade Sacred Pills were priceless. Any ordinary Supreme Saints would not even have enough Saint Stones to buy them. Even if they had acquired one, they wouldn’t be willing to refine it easily.

Immediately, a light flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. He stared at Lord of Elixir’s back and wondered, ‘What kind of extraordinary effect would a Sacred Pill that was so close to the Emperor Grade have?’

Since Lord of Elixir rose after being crushed, although it has yet to become an Emperor Grade Sacred Pill, its effects might not be far off.’

Dragon Phantom Lord seemed to understand what Zhang Ruochen was thinking. He quickly said, “Master, Lord of Elixir is different from the Elixir Spirits of the King Grade Sacred Pills we encountered before. Not only does it have great power, but it also has many mysterious Elixir Spirit Secret Techniques. It is a very difficult figure to deal with. It’s best not to try it.”

“What is the Elixir Spirit Secret Technique?” Zhang Ruochen asked curiously.

Dragon Phantom Lord said, “It is a secret technique created by the Elixir Spirit of the sacred pill. It suits the Elixir Spirits the most. They practice it so they can utilize their power perfectly.”

“The Divine Dragon race used some secret techniques to tame the Elixir Spirits of the Emperor Grade Sacred Pills and taught them all kinds of secret techniques to nurture them into peerless powerhouses. Elixir Spirit

Secret Techniques were created by these Elixir Spirits. The secret techniques mastered by Lord of Elixir originated from the crushed Emperor Grade Sacred Pills."

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but be surprised by what he had heard. The Divine Dragon race was indeed powerful to have even done such a thing.

All sacred pills possessed spiritual intelligence. The higher their ranks were, the greater their spiritual intelligence was. Hence, the Elixir Spirit, which an Emperor Grade Sacred Pill cultivated, was not only similar to a cultivator in terms of spiritual intelligence. It might even be better.

And the number of precepts of heaven and earth in an Emperor Grade Sacred Pill was high. Hence, it saved the Elixir Spirit the efforts in self-cultivation.

"I think now is a good time to deal with Lord of Elixir," Zhang Ruochen said with bright eyes.

Dragon Phantom Lord was stunned at first but understood him shortly after that. It couldn't help but mourn for Lord of Elixir in its heart.

After thinking for a while, Zhang Ruochen said, "Don't alert it for the time being. Let's figure out a way to collect some spring water."

Even though he had a way to deal with Lord of Elixir, it would be a loss if they frightened Sun-Moon Dragon Spring.

Both the Lord of Elixir and the Saint Springwater were his targets, and he didn't want to lose any of them.

Zhang Ruochen and Dragon Phantom Lord then changed their direction. They moved to the other side and approached the spring carefully.

The spring was oval in shape, and it was less than three meters square. The source of the spring was in the middle. Golden and silver spring water kept gushing out of it but clearly separated, just like Tai Chi.

Two tiny divine dragons were sighted swimming in the middle of the spring. One was a golden dragon, and the other was a silver dragon. Both were only about a foot long.

The precious dragons were the essence of the Saint Spring. They were rare. One could use them in a cultivation path to becoming a top Saint Kings and Supreme Saints.

As for the divine spring, it was hidden in the source of the spring and hardly revealed. Only the experts of the divine dragon race could acquire it in small amounts.

Although Lord of Elixir sat cross-legged by the spring, it did not take the Saint Spring wantonly. It was clear that it wanted to use the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring for cultivation slowly for a long time.

“Attack.”

Zhang Ruochen whispered and threw out Mercury Gourd.

Dragon Phantom Lord used the dimensional method without hesitation and tried to get some Springwater from Saint Spring.

Mercury Gourd appeared in the spring instantly and released a strong suction force which had almost absorbed all of the spring.

Since Zhang Ruochen’s main target was the two divine dragons formed from the essence of the Saint Spring, he aimed the gourd at them directly.

Roar!
The spring shook and let out an earth-shaking dragon’s roar.

A layer of hazy saint light appeared and covered the spring to prevent the Saint Spring from flowing away.

The next moment, the sun and moon phenomenon reflected above had entered the spring. The spring itself sank directly into the ground and disappeared without a trace.

From the moment Zhang Ruochen took out the mercury gourd when the spring was trying to escape, everything happened in the blink of an eye, and Lord of Elixir could not react in time.

It opened its eyes suddenly and fixed its gaze on Dragon Phantom Lord. It shouted in anger, “How dare you disrupt my cultivation here? Dragon Phantom Lord, are you trying to get yourself killed?”

Dragon Phantom Lord opened its mouth and gulped down the Saint Spring he took. No signs of fear were observed from his face, and he said, “The Sun-Moon Dragon Spring does not belong to you. I can take it as well. If you want to fight, I’m glad to do so.”

It was confident as Zhang Ruochen was around that it even ignored Lord of Elixir's threat.

Dragon Phantom Lord, don't even think about leaving here safely. Lord of Elixir's eyes were fierce, and its body emitted strong killing intent.

As they were talking, Lord of Elixir formed a mysterious seal and released a powerful Elixir Qi. It condensed into an illusory ferocious demonic dragon pouncing at Dragon Phantom Lord.

Lord of Elixir was completely enraged this time; it used a powerful Elixir Spirit Secret Technique as he intended to teach Dragon Phantom Lord a painful lesson.

At that very moment, an ancient broken stele suddenly flew out of the back of Dragon Phantom Lord and pressed down towards Lord of Elixir.

The broken stele didn't reveal any magical features, but the malevolent demonic dragon condensed from Lord of Elixir's Elixir Qi had mysteriously dissipated.

"What is this?"

Lord of Elixir's expression changed drastically as it stared at the broken stele flying towards it.

Without any hesitation, Lord of Elixir changed its hand seals and formed a divine seal with his Elixir Qi to attack the stele.

Strange things happened again. As soon as the divine seal flew out, it dissipated instantly, just like the demonic dragon did. The Elixir Qi had also disappeared without a trace.

Having witnessed what happened, Lord of Elixir felt a chill in its heart. It knew that the situation was not working in his favor.

It retreated quickly, trying to avoid the broken stele.

Swoosh.
Zhang Ruochen rushed out from the back of Dragon Phantom Lord. He pressed one hand against the broken stele while chasing after Lord of Elixir. Since there was no one else around, he could use the God-Defiance Stele without any worries.

Only now did Lord of Elixir realize that there was someone else around besides Dragon Phantom Lord.

When it noticed that the broken stele was approaching him, Lord of Elixir had no choice but to block the stele with its hand.

However, the moment its hand came into contact with the stele, its expression changed drastically. A look of shock appeared in its eyes. It realized that the Elixir Qi in its body was dissipating inexplicably.

“What on earth is this?”

Lord of Elixir was flustered and intended to withdraw its hand immediately.

However, what frightened it was that its hand seemed to be stuck to the stele and could not be separated from the stele no matter how hard it tried.

It had no choice but to mobilize its power and fight against the stele with all its might.

Unfortunately, the more attack it resisted, the faster the power in its body dissipated.

“Who are you? What are you trying to do?” Lord of Elixir stared at Zhang Ruochen and asked loudly.

Zhang Ruochen put one hand on God-Defiance Stele and looked at Lord of Elixir calmly without uttering a word.

His plan was successful. He intended to let Dragon Phantom Lord draw Lord of Elixir’s attention and use God-Defiance Stele to catch it by surprise.

Dragon Phantom Lord watched quietly from the side. It couldn’t help but shook its head as it had personally experienced the terror of the God-Defiance Stele. Any attempts to resist against it were futile.

If it wasn’t because of that, why would it choose to submit to Zhang Ruochen anyways?

All of a sudden, Zangshan Demonic Mirror flew out of Zhang Ruochen’s body. The surface of the mirror rippled like water, and it released a terrifying suction force akin to a black hole.

The God-Defiance Stele had almost shattered the power of Lord of Elixir; it was then absorbed into the Zangshan Demonic Mirror instantly.

Zhang Ruochen put Zangshan Demonic Mirror away and smiled in satisfaction. Even a hundred of King Grade Sacred Pills would be no match for this quasi-Emperor-Grade Sacred Pill.

“Congratulations, Master. You’ve successfully suppressed Lord of Elixir. You will now be able to create the most powerful Neverwither saint body after you refine it,” Dragon Phantom Lord said with a smile.

Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat. “Maybe this quasi-Emperor-Grade Sacred Pill can help Lanyou,” he whispered to himself.

Lanyou’s Neverwither body state had been destroyed. Although it was almost impossible for it to be re-forged, it was still something Zhang Ruochen had always cared about.

With the serendipity in the second gradient of the Endless Abyss and the quasi-Emperor-Grade Sacred Pill, there would be a higher chance of success in re-forging a Neverwither Saint Body.

After putting away Zangshan Demonic Mirror and God Defiance Stele, Zhang Ruochen then took out the Mercury Gourd. He was eager to see what he had gained this time.

Mercury Gourd was very different on the inside. It was so spacious that it could even fit a large lake easily.

After checking, the smile in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes grew wider. “There were more than 35,000 drops of ordinary Saint Spring and 2,400 drops of Saint Spring essence. Our efforts have finally paid off.”

With the vigilance of the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring, he was satisfied to get this much springwater. His only regret was that he did not manage to gain the divine spring.

However, he wouldn’t be able to utilize them with his current cultivation state anyways. It was only useful for the cultivation of Supreme Saints and deities.

He should have thanked Mojo for such an opportunity to obtain the Springwater. If it were not for the Mojo’s wanton attacks, they would not have come to this area by accident.

Chapter 2117: He’s the Key to the World Gate?

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation **Editor:** EndlessFantasy Translation

As the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring escaped, the vast underground space suddenly became dark and dead silent. Nothing else existed.

The Dragon Phantom Lord did not waste any of it. It opened its mouth and swallowed all the fog that filled the underground space. The fogs were released by the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring. When condensed, it was equivalent to dozens of drops of ordinary saint spring.

The Dragon Phantom Lord had gained a lot this time. He had swallowed thousands of drops of the saint spring, including nearly hundred drops of saint spring essence. It was enough to restore his strength and help him refine the Son of Darkness effectively.

In this way, he might be able to regain his peak strength soon.

A streak of holy light flashed. An exquisite jade ring appeared in Zhang Ruochen's hand. It was a high-quality Ring of Dimensions that belonged to the Lord of Elixir.

As one of the five overlords of True Dragon Island, the Lord of Elixir was best at treasure hunting. He must have collected a lot of treasures. Naturally, he should be checked on.

His spiritual power scanned the Ring of Dimensions. Zhang Ruochen's expression changed. As he had expected, even though the Lord of Elixir had refined many treasures, there were still countless treasures left. There were also more than a hundred million, however, there were no sacred pills.

Zhang Ruochen flipped his hand over and took out something from the jade ring. It was a seven-leafed clover, the leaves glowed with a strange light. It was bright and colorful, like an illusion.

Above the seven-leafed clover, all sorts of lights converged and formed a seven-colored dragon. It soared into the sky and looked very lifelike.

ROAR!
The seven-leafed clover shook and let out a dragon's roar. It was deafening.

The Dragon Phantom Lord stared at the seven-leafed clover and said in surprise, "I didn't expect that the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring really produced a Dragonform Grass. The Lord of Elixir is so lucky to have picked it."

The Dragonform Grass was a rare sacred herb. To creatures with the Divine Dragon Bloodline, its value was higher than the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb.

All kinds of primordial beings with strong Divine Dragon Bloodline, such as the Heaven-devourer Dragon and the Azure Dragon, were especially eager to get a Dragonform Grass and transform into a divine dragon. Their achievements would be limitless.

“This Dragonform Grass must have been picked by the Lord of Elixir not long ago. Luckily, it wasn’t squandered,” Zhang Ruochen said with a smile.

If the Lord of Elixir hadn’t used the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring to cleanse his Elixir Qi, he might have refined the Dragonform Grass first.

After all, the Lord of Elixir’s previous form was an Emperor Grade Sacred Pill refined by the Divine Dragon Race. It contained the Dragon Qi, hence the Dragonform Grass would be of great benefit to him.

Looking around, Zhang Ruochen said, “Let’s recuperate here first. We’ll leave once our injuries are healed.”

Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Evil Emperor had both suffered severe injuries from the chaotic spatial fault. They didn’t rest and healed because they had sensed the aura of the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring.

The True Dragon Island was filled with danger. It was dangerous not to be in a perfect state.

With a wave of his hand, Zhang Ruochen took out the Sundial and activated it. The Power of Time covered a radius of 600 meters.

He still had a lot of things to do. Naturally, he could not stay here for too long. Using the Sundial to heal himself was the best available option.

Sitting cross-legged under the Sundial, Zhang Ruochen took out a small amount of the essence of the holy spring from the Mercury Gourd and swallowed it in one gulp. He planned to heal himself and cultivate at the same time.

In the blink of an eye, three months had passed. Both Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord had recovered from their injuries and their cultivation had improved.

The Dragon Phantom Lord took this opportunity to refine not only the saint spring he had obtained but also the Son of Darkness. Although his strength had not recovered to the peak, it was still something.

Only six hours had passed in the outside world during the three months under the Sundial. It was unlikely that there would be any major changes.

Zhang Ruochen flew out of the underground space and observed his surroundings. He whispered, 'It seems that the divine-force eruption of the True Dragon Island is about to subside.'

He said this because he found that the surrounding space was stabilizing. It would not take long for it to return to its original state.

"The divine-force eruption usually does not last long. It can last for days or even hours. Somehow, this time it is shorter, so there should not be many treasures appearing," said the Dragon Lord Phantom.

Zhang Ruochen didn't care much. He'd already gained a lot from suppressing the Lord of Elixir. He had no intention to find more treasures but to find the key to the World Gate.

Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord set off immediately, to catch up with Blackie and the others as soon as possible.

He'd left a Dimensional Mark on Blackie. Even though there were many spatial faults, he could still vaguely sense Blackie's presence.

The key to the World Gate was of the utmost importance. They had to get it as soon as possible or things could change very quickly.

The space on the True Dragon Island had been gradually stabilized, it was a lot easier for Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord to travel through the spatial faults.

Along the way, they met many cultivators, both from Celestial Court and Infernal Court.

Zhang Ruochen did not hesitate to kill all the cultivators from the Infernal Court.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord finally found Blackie and the others, including Moyin, who had devoured all the souls of the Nether Serpent.

“Have you caught the old man?” Zhang Ruochen asked immediately.

Blackie raised his head and said, “Indeed, with my skills, he is my capture for sure. However, the old man is very stubborn. Whenever I mention the key to the World Gate, he will play dumb with me.”

As he spoke, Blackie took out the array and made the short and skinny old man appear.

When the Dragon Phantom Lord saw the short and skinny old man, it was quite a surprise for him and said, “You actually captured him.”

“Do you know him?” Zhang Ruochen asked immediately.

The Dragon Phantom Lord said, “Not long ago, there was a strange movement on the True Dragon Island. There was a strong aura of Origin that gushed out, startling all other overlords and me. When we arrived, we saw him emerging from the ground. We all tried to capture him, but he escaped in the end.”

“Did he only appear when the aura of Origin gushed out?” Zhang Ruochen asked again.

The Dragon Phantom Lord nodded. “Yes. That’s why we, the five overlords were interested in him. We thought he might be hiding some secrets.”

After hearing what the Dragon Phantom Lord said, Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat. Many thoughts flashed through his mind, and he could not help but make a bold guess.

‘Could it be…’ Zhang Ruochen’s eyes lit up. He carefully observed the short and skinny old man and said, “Must the key to the World Gate be a key? Could it be a person? Or perhaps, the key has transmogrified into a human form.”

Blackie glared and said, “What did you say? How is this possible?”

Ao Xinyan and the others also looked surprised. They stared at the short and skinny old man who was sealed in the array, not understanding why Zhang Ruochen had such a guess.

After a moment of silence, Zhang Ruochen said, “None of us know how the key of the World Gate looks like. This old man appeared right when the key of the World Gate was born. He has the Kunlun Realm’s aura of Origin,

which is extremely close to the heavenly and earthly precepts and could come and go like a shadow. He holds quite a lot of specialties."

In fact, the Maiden of a Thousand Stars mentioned that the short and skinny old man had the Kunlun Realm's aura of Origin. Since then, Zhang Ruochen had doubted about it.

"Perhaps Zhang Ruochen's guess is right. We had a preconceived idea from the beginning. We didn't think that the key to the World Gate would be a person, but when it comes to the Kunlun Realm's aura of Origin, anything could be possible," Blackie said seriously.

Hearing this, Ao Xinyan and the others could not help but sunk in thought. It was not that they did not want to believe Zhang Ruochen and Blackie, but they did not want to make any wrong moves.

If they had guessed wrongly, and the real key of the World Gate fell into the hands of the Infernal Court, it would be a disaster for Kunlun Realm.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly said, "Blackie, let me in."

Although he didn't know what Zhang Ruochen was about to do, Blackie still performed a technique to get him into the array.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen, the short and skinny old man was shocked. He quickly begged for mercy, "Saint Lord, please spare my life. I begged for another chance."

"We are cultivators from Kunlun Realm. We came to True Dragon Island to find the key to the World Gate. We don't wish it to fall into the hands of Celestial Court and Infernal Court. So, you don't have to be so resistive," Zhang Ruochen said calmly.

The short and skinny old man's small eyes rolled. "But I really don't know where the key to the World Gate is. I…"

Before he could finish, Zhang Ruochen suddenly struck out with his palm. The majestic Sacred Qi condensed into a terrifying palm print and hit the short and skinny old man's chest.

Zhang Ruochen didn't hold back. If he attacked with all his strength, even an ordinary Neverwither Supreme Saint might not be able to withstand it.

The short and skinny old man didn't have time to react before he was sent flying.

The short and skinny old man was merely a One-step Saint King. If the old man took such a hit, no doubt, his soul would perish along with his body destroyed.

However, the truth was that although the short and skinny old man rolled a few times on the ground, nothing happened.

“Oh Saint Lord, let’s talk about it. I can get you anything but the key to the World Gate.” The short and skinny old man stood up and looked at Zhang Ruochen warily.

Zhang Ruochen said lightly, “Do you still wish to continue pretending? If I hadn’t guessed wrongly, you are the key to the World Gate.”

The short and skinny old man was shocked. Although he tried his best to hide it, his expression changed slightly.

Sensing this change, Zhang Ruochen sent a message to Blackie telepathically and asked him to bring the Dragon Phantom Lord in.

The moment the Dragon Phantom Lord appeared, the short and skinny old man’s expression changed drastically. He took a few steps back uncontrollably.

Under Zhang Ruochen’s command, the Dragon Phantom Lord swallowed the short and skinny old man.

A moment later, the Dragon Phantom Lord spat out the short and skinny old man again. He said to Zhang Ruochen, “Master, his body is completely made up of the Kunlun Realm’s power of Origin.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “Do you have anything else to say?”

“I shouldn’t have come out to watch the show,” the short and skinny old man sighed helplessly.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “You’re wrong. The Infernal Court has mobilized many cultivators this time. No matter how well you hide, they’ll definitely find a way to locate you. Kunlun Realm will be destroyed because of this. You will only be in safe hands if we found you first.”

After saying this, Zhang Ruochen and Dragon Phantom Lord left the array. They didn’t say anything more to the short and skinny old man.

Whether he wanted to or not, he would take him out of the True Dragon Island by force and let the plan of the Infernal Court fell apart.

At this moment, everyone had already believed that the short and skinny old man was the key to the World Gate and let out a long sigh of relief.

Since they had obtained the key to the World Gate, they should undoubtedly leave the True Dragon Island to avoid any further changes.

The group of Re-awakeners looked hesitant as if they did not want to leave so soon.

After a short discussion, Saint King Zixin said, “We plan to stay on the True Dragon Island for the time being to see if we can find the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring.”

“Do you really need the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring?” Zhang Ruochen asked curiously.

Saint King Zixin explained, “We need the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring to cleanse ourselves. While we recover our strength, we can erase the aura that we have been sleeping in for a long time. That way, it will be more convenient for us to travel to Kunlun Realm.”

The situation in Kunlun Realm was becoming much more complicated. The Re-awakeners did not want to hide in the Ying Yang Sea any longer. They wanted to play a greater role.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but smile. He flipped his hand and took out the Mercury Gourd. He poured out a large mass of saint spring, there were ten thousand drops.

Of course, these were only ordinary saint springs, not the essence of the saint springs.

‘Will these be enough?’ said Zhang Ruochen.

All of a sudden, everyone’s eyes were fixed on the large saint spring. Time and space seemed to have come to a standstill at this moment.

“Captain, how did you manage to have so much spring water from the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring?” Ao Xinyan was surprised.

The Sun-Moon Dragon Spring had long been spiritually connected. It appears that, other than the Gods of Divine Dragon Race, everyone else could only take a small amount of spring water.

Ao Xinyan wondered if Zhang Ruochen had obtained the source of the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring when he had taken out ten thousand drops of the saint spring water.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “When I accidentally found the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring, I used the Mercury Gourd to take some. Since you can use it, that’s great news.

“You don’t have to be humble. Just take it. If it’s not enough, I still have some left in the gourd.”

Hearing this, the Re-awakeners behaved strangely. They couldn’t help with their feelings going up and down the hill, yet no one dares to lay a hand on the saint spring.

The Re-awakeners had been born in the glorious Middle Age of Kunlun Realm. They were all top-notch geniuses and very egotistic. That was why they had actually looked down on Zhang Ruochen at first.

But now, their perception had changed greatly. The powerful strength that Zhang Ruochen had displayed in the battle against the Son of Darkness had shocked them greatly.

Even Vermilion Aurum and Thousandblade had strange looks in their eyes at this moment. Their eyes were locked on Zhang Ruochen.

Both of them had extraordinary origins. One had received guidance from the Dragon Lord, and the other had heard the preachings of Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations. Vermilion Aurum and Thousandblade had cultivated for hundreds of years and had many chances to attain the top-tier level of the Saint King Realm. They could be invincible in their own era, many regarded them as legendary.

Zhang Ruochen had cultivated for a much shorter time than them. The environment he cultivated in was far less than theirs, but he had attained more power than them. Perhaps this could be called a true legend.

After a short silence, the Vermilion Aurum said, “There is no need for too many saint springs. Fifty drops for one person will be enough to restore powers and cleanse the aura of the Re-awakeners. Thank you.”

As he spoke, Vermilion Aurum reached out a hand and took fifty drops of saint springs.

“I look forward to you becoming the second Saint Monk Xumi.” Thousandblade smiled.

Similarly, he took also fifty drops of saint springs.

Seeing Vermilion Aurum and Thousandblade attacked, Saint King Zixin and the others were no longer holding back. After all, this was what they needed.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t take back the remaining saint springs. Instead, he turned to Ao Xinyan and said, “Take these saint springs. They can be of use in the future.”

More than a dozen of Re-awakeners had only taken hundreds of drops of saint springs. The remaining of it could be used by more than one hundred and eighty Re-awakeners to recover their strength.

Ao Xinyan didn’t refute. With a wave of her hand, she put away the remaining saint springs. There would definitely be more Re-awakeners in the Ying Yang Sea.. The value of these saint springs was immeasurable.

Chapter 2118: Zhang Ruochen’s Will

After obtaining spring water from the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring from Zhang Ruochen, all Re-Awakeners immediately swallowed it. They couldn’t wait to complete cleansing as soon as possible.

Ao Xinyan walked to Zhang Ruochen’s side and looked as if she wanted to say something but hesitated.

“What do you want to say?” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Ao Xinyan’s eyes were filled with unwillingness. She said, “There are still a large number of powerhouses of Infernal Court on True Dragon Island. Are we just going to leave like this?”

Although they had found the most important thing—key to the World Gate, the powerhouses of Infernal Court were still lingering in the holy lands of the Divine Dragon race and stealing their treasure. This was undoubtedly unacceptable to Ao Xinyan.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “Of course not. I will do everything I can to kill the powerhouses of Infernal Court, but we must also

bring the key to the World Gate out of True Dragon Island as soon as possible. There are too many variables here, and I don't want any problems."

"Then, Captain, what do you plan to do with the key to the World Gate?" Ao Xinyan asked.

Keeping the key to the World Gate wouldn't be an easy task since many from the Infernal Court were eyeing it.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment and exhaled lightly, "Let's first bring the key to the World Gate to Silver Dragon Island. I will make other arrangements after I have finished dealing with things here."

The key to the World Gate was extremely important. Unlike anything else, Zhang Ruochen couldn't think of any suitable way to deal with it.

If that taboo person in Ying Yang Sea hadn't left, he wouldn't have to worry about this matter. There wouldn't even be an army from the Infernal Court invading the Ying Yang Sea.

After a short while, the exploded divine power calmed down, and True Dragon Island gradually returned to peace.

Meanwhile, almost all Re-Awakeners had completed their baptism and regained their strength. The special aura of the Re-Awakener was also erased, making it hard for anyone to identify them.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes swept across all Re-Awakeners and thought: those who were qualified to be sealed in the middle ancient times were indeed not ordinary people. All of them had extraordinary talent to become Supreme saints or even deities.

Yet, Zhang Ruochen didn't understand why magnates of Kunlun Realm sealed the top geniuses of each era?

Even with his current cultivation base and strength, Zhang Ruochen was still confused about many things. He couldn't understand what the magnates had planned.

After a serious discussion, most of the Re-Awakeners, including the Elder Patriarch Death Zen and Corpse Emperor Tianming, decided to stay on True Dragon Island temporarily to fight against the Army of the Infernal Court with Zhang Ruochen.

On the other hand, Blackie, Ao Xinyan, Vermilion Aurum, and Thousandblade were responsible for taking the key to the World Gate out of True Dragon Island so that their minds could be at ease.

They had originally planned to only let Vermilion Aurum and Thousandblade escort Blackie, but to be on the safe side, they could use the Silver Shenlong Armor in case of emergency if Ao Xinyan came along.

After getting enough spring water from Sun and Moon Divine Dragon Spring, Vermilion Aurum and Thousandblade had completely recovered their strength and were even stronger than before.

“Don’t worry, Zhang Ruozhen. I’ve already refined a small amount of holy spring,” Blackie said confidently. “If I run into trouble, I can easily raise my cultivation base to the Supreme saint level. No one can take the key to the World Gate from me.”

In fact, it could now restore its cultivation base to the Supreme saint level, but it didn’t do so. This was because if it had done so, it could no longer stay in Kunlun Realm anymore.

Without further delay, Blackie and the other three immediately set off. They took the key to the World Gate and rushed out of True Dragon Island.

After watching the four leave, Zhang Ruochen and those who stayed behind immediately began to search for the traces of the cultivators of the Infernal Court.

Since the cultivators of the Infernal Court were already scattered everywhere, Zhang Ruochen and the others did not walk together. They split into several teams and moved separately.

Although there weren’t many of them, they were all top powerhouses.

Since Zhang Ruochen was riding the Dragon Phantom Lord, there weren’t many places in the entire True Dragon Island that could stop them.

After a while, they saw a team that consisted of a few dozen Nether Clan soldiers.

“It’s Zhang Ruochen and that monster!”

The Nether Clan soldiers didn’t even have the will to fight at all. All they wanted to do was run.

They scattered and fled in different directions to survive.

Roar!!!
The Dragon Phantom Lord let out a roar.

It opened its mouth to let out a terrifying suction force, sucking in dozens of Nether Clan soldiers.

Without any delay, the Dragon Phantom Lord carried Zhang Ruochen and transformed into a streak of light. They continued forward.

This time, there were many powerhouses of the Infernal Court. They were all the elites of the Nether Clan and Bone Clan. If all of them were killed, it would be a huge loss for both clans.

In a short time, Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord had killed dozens of teams of the Infernal Court — more than 1,000 people in total. It was a huge massacre.

It didn't matter whether the powerhouses of the Infernal Court resisted the attack or not, their fates were decided.

Seeing that he could not escape, one of the cultivators of the Nine-step Saint Kings of the Nether Clan roared with resentment.

"Zhang Ruochen, you wouldn't end well if you kill the powerhouses of the Infernal Court in such a frenzy. Someone will kill you soon."

Zhang Ruochen said lightly, "If they want to kill me, just let them come forward. I will kill as many as they come."

With that, Zhang Ruochen waved the Ancient Abyssal Blade in his hand and slashed forward.

Puff.
The sword slashed through the Nether Clan cultivator's skull, crushing his Saint Soul immediately, leaving only a wisp.

A large number of merit points could be exchanged for killing these cultivators of the Infernal Court. Hence, as expected, Zhang Ruochen would not waste this chance.

He could collect a considerable number of Saint Souls after he swept through True Dragon Island.

After Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord left, another team emerged from a distance. They didn't belong to the Infernal Court but Sunshine Civilization.

Although Zhang Ruochen had subdued thousands of cultivators from Sunshine Civilization, that wasn't all. There were still some scattered in the ruins of the Dragon God Temple.

"Zhang Ruochen has even dared to kill the Tianzi and become the enemy of Sunshine Civilization. How evil."

"He's too strong, even the Twin Kings were subdued by him. Moreover, the Son of Darkness was also defeated by him. Even if we gather all our forces, we wouldn't be a threat to him."

"The water on True Dragon Island is too deep. It 's better if we leave first and report everything that happened here. Let the old Tianzhu decide."

..

The powerhouses of Sunshine Civilization were all furious, but there was nothing they could do. In front of Zhang Ruochen, they could only feel helpless.

In fact, not only the cultivators of Sunshine Civilization, those from Celestial Dragon Realm, Thousand-Star Civilization, Giant Spirit Civilization, and Beidou Civilization were terrified when they saw Zhang Ruochen.

After all, they were all here to seize the key to the World Gate. So, it wouldn't benefit them if they became enemies of Zhang Ruochen.

Bang!
The Dragon Phantom Lord stomped on a small hill and stopped, blocking the way of the four powerhouses.

These four powerful figures were none other than Ao Xukong, Xing Wuji, Immortal Minghu, and the Giant Spirit King. They were all the most powerful cultivators below the Supreme Saint.

While being face-to-face with the ferocious Dragon Phantom Lord, Ao Xukong and the other three felt uneasy.

They could feel that the Dragon Phantom Lord's aura had clearly become stronger, despite only a few hours have passed. This meant that he was

even more dangerous than when he swallowed the Son of Darkness earlier.

Swoosh.
Zhang Ruochen swept down from the Dragon Phantom Lord and stood before Ao Xukong and the other three.

“Zhang Ruochen, what are you trying to do?” Immortal Minghu frowned slightly.

Immortal Minghu was displeased that his path was forcefully blocked. Had it been anyone else, he would have already attacked.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the four and went straight to the point, “I hope you can gather the army and withdraw from True Dragon Island.”

Upon hearing this, Ao Xukong and the other three people’s expressions changed slightly. They weren’t dumb and immediately understood that Zhang Ruochen was trying to drive them away.

Obviously, since Zhang Ruochen has increased in strength and conquered the Dragon Phantom Lord, he was confident that no one would be allowed to touch the key to the World Gate and the treasures left in the Dragon God Temple.

Seeing that the four people were silent, Zhang Ruochen said again, “Everything on True Dragon Island belongs to Kunlun Realm. Next, I will eliminate all outsiders on the island.”

They felt a strong will that could not be disobeyed from Zhang Ruochen.

Roar!

The Dragon Phantom Lord roared toward the sky, giving off a terrifying aura. It sounded as if it were to subdue everything in the world.

Immortal Minghu was about to say something but immediately halted after sensing the terrifying aura from the Dragon Phantom Lord.

Ao Xukong smiled, “The Celestial Dragon Realm sent an army into the Ying Yang Sea to help the Kunlun Realm fight against the Army of the Infernal Court and protect the key to the World Gate. Now that the Army of the Infernal Court has been defeated by you, Brother Zhang, the Army of the Celestial Dragon Realm will no longer stay on True Dragon Island.

“Brother Zhang, if you need any help, just let me know.”

Zhang Ruochen already had a good impression of Ao Xukong. Upon hearing his words, Zhang Ruochen immediately had a better impression of him.

” I will never forget your kindness. Thank you very much.” Zhang Ruochen also smiled.

Ao Xukong said, ” Having you as a friend has made this trip to the Kunlun Realm worthwhile. We shall have a drink when this is over.”

“I will definitely serve you the best wine when that time comes,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Clearly, Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xukong had further enhanced their relationship after this conversation.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xukong were talking happily like best friends, Xing Wuji, Immortal Minghu, and the Giant Spirit King could not help but frown.

They can tell that Zhang Ruochen was determined. It was clear that there was no room for negotiation on this matter. If they refused, Zhang Ruochen might really attack them.

All this time, Zhang Ruochen didn’t seem to have any scruples. He even dared to provoke the Heavenly Realm, one of the four dominant worlds.

“The army of Thousand-Star Civilization will withdraw soon. I hope you can get the key to the World Gate as you wish,” Xing Wuji said to Zhang Ruochen with a faint smile.

The Giant Spirit King said, “Since the threat from the Infernal Court has been removed, the army of Giant Spirit Civilization should withdraw too.”

Since Ao Xukong, Xing Wuji, and Giant Spirit King had promised to retreat their army one after another, Immortal Minghu had no choice even though he was reluctant.

“Beidou Civilization will withdraw too,” he said with a cold face.

Zhang Ruochen smiled when he received positive answers from the four. He did not want to turn everyone into enemies if it wasn’t necessary.

Zhang Ruochen cupped his hands, “Thank you for the help. Goodbye.”

With that, he moved and reappeared on top of the Dragon Phantom Lord.

The Dragon Phantom Lord used a dimensional technique and disappeared from the spot. When he reappeared, he was already hundreds of miles away.

“How can Zhang Ruochen drive everyone away so quickly?” Immortal Minghu said angrily. “He’s trying to claim True Dragon Island all to himself.”

“If you and I had the strength, I believe we would do the same thing,” the Giant Spirit King said. “Unfortunately, True Dragon Island is full of dangers, which is far from what we expected. Leaving early might not be a bad thing.”

Hearing this, Ao Xukong, Xing Wuji, and Immortal Minghu felt a chill down their spine. They immediately thought of the Dragon Phantom Lord under Zhang Ruochen. That terrifying monster was definitely bred on True Dragon Island. It wouldn’t end well if they were to cross paths with it.

Not to forget that strange and unpredictable Mojo. He had caused great losses to everyone by just releasing the so-called “children”.

Not long ago, the four of them had seen many cultivators of Sunshine Civilization face a group of creepy children. After suffering a terrifying spiritual power attack, all cultivators too turned into creepy children.

At that time, they had attempted to step in and save them, but that was impossible. Those cultivators of Sunshine Civilization had been completely assimilated by the mysterious power of the Mojo and could no longer return to their original appearance.

Apart from the Dragon Phantom Lord and Mojo, there may be other terrifying creatures on True Dragon Island. If they were to encounter them somewhere, it would turn into a great disaster.

As they realized this, Ao Xukong and the other three no longer hesitated. They used special means to send the message and tried to gather all powerhouses on their side as soon as possible.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord continued to sweep through the Army of the Infernal Court, giving them no choice but to flee.

“Run! Zhang Ruochen is here!”

Many powerhouses of Infernal Court were scared out of their wits. They desperately fled from True Dragon Island.

After chasing for a long time, Zhang Ruochen finally found someone. They were the eight Reverends of the Bone Clan.

At the moment, the Eight Reverends of the Bone Clan had already fled to the edge of True Dragon Island. They were about to let out a sigh of relief when they suddenly felt a terrifying crisis.

Their leader — the Eight-armed Reverend roared, “D*mn it, how could Zhang Ruochen catch up with us?”

“Oh no, the space has been confined. Our speed has slowed down.”

All of the Eight Reverends of the Bone Clan were anxious.

They were less than a hundred miles away from the sea. They could have flashed past in the blink of an eye, but now it was completely out of reach.

The eight-armed Reverend swung his darkgold staff and gritted his teeth, “Break out with all our strength. As long as we can get out of True Dragon Island, Zhang Ruochen can’t do anything to us.”

As long as they manage to escape from True Dragon Island, the Emissaries Vigilant would be able to monitor everything. Even if the Dragon Phantom Lord dared to take a step out, he would be killed mercilessly.

The eight Reverends had absolute confidence in protecting themselves with their combined strength against Zhang Ruochen alone.

The eight Reverends of the Bone Clan instantly formed a battle formation and gathered their power onto the eight-armed Reverend. They moved the darkgold staff with all their strength and released powerful Supreme Power to tear the confined space apart forcefully.

“Don’t even think about escaping.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were cold. He waved his hand and took out Zangshan Demonic Mirror.

As Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord poured their power in, Zangshan Demonic Mirror shook violently. Monstrous demon energy was

released from it, which then condensed into a majestic demonic mountain, subduing the eight Reverends.

Bang!
Even though the eight Reverends of the Bone Clan had tried their best to block the demonic mountain with the darkgold staff, they were unsuccessful. Their battle formation crumbled in an instant.

Crack!
Under the suppression of the demonic mountain, the Supreme saint's bones could no longer handle the pressure and cracked.

Rumble…

At this moment, three powerful forces appeared. They struck the demonic mountain, and it shattered.

Zhang Ruochen looked above the sea surface and saw three tall figures. It was three skeletons who gave off powerful auras. It's the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan who had inherited the power of Vajra.

Zhang Ruochen's heart skipped a beat. He realized how powerful the Three Emperors were now.

He wondered who was stronger — the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan or the Four Heavenly Kings of the Celestial Palace?

Still, with the Dragon Phantom Lord as his mount, Zhang Ruochen wasn't afraid of the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan at all. His eyes were filled with killing intent.

The eight Reverends of the Bone Clan seized the opportunity and fled with all their might.

The Three Emperors of the Bone Clan continued to attack, obstructing Zhang Ruochen and the Dragon Phantom Lord.

Roar!
The Dragon Phantom Lord roared again and again. It flapped its wings under its ribs, releasing a vast divine power. It turned into a terrifying divine power storm that swept out immediately.

The Three Emperors of the Bone Clan were not careless and attacked quickly. At the same time, they used the power of Vajra. Their powers combined together, forming a barrier of Vajra in front of them.

“Hmph.”

Zhang Ruochen let out a cold snort. He activated the Precepts of Dimension with all his strength and pressed his hand forward.

BOOM!!
A large area of space shattered. The power to destroy everything slowly spreaded out.

AHHH!!
Shrill screams rang out. The eight Reverends of the Bone Clan were all enveloped by the power of the Dimensional Annihilation.

Their Supreme saint bones couldn’t resist the Dimensional Annihilation and shattered one-by-one.

Buzz.
The Three Emperors of the Bone Clan had to defend against the attack of the Dragon Phantom Lord and so were unable to free up their hands. They could only cast out their respective bronze seals.

The three bronze seals merged into one as they flew out and released a strong power of Vajra, destroying the power of the Dimensional Annihilation.

Taking advantage of this opportunity, five Reverends, including the eight-armed Reverend, managed to break free and obtain protection from the bronze seals.

The other three Reverends weren’t so lucky. As their bones were badly damaged, they were on the verge of death. They ended up being absorbed into Zangshan Demonic Mirror instantly.

Chapter 2119: The Most Powerful Lord of Stone
On the surface of the Ying Yang Sea, the five Reverends of Bone Clan, under the protection of the copper seal, fled to the back of the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan in a panic.

Although they managed to keep themselves alive, they had also suffered severe injuries to their bones and body. Even the leader, the Eight-armed Reverend had lost three arms. If the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan had been one step slower, they would have been doomed.

The Zangshan Demonic Mirror flew back and hovered in front of Zhang Ruochen. Ripples appeared on the surface of the mirror, reflecting the three Reverends of the Bone Clan within.

AH!
Shrill screams rang out. The three Reverends of the Bone Clan felt like they had fallen into purgatory and were being burned by the demonic fire.

Hearing the screams, the Three Emperors and the escaped five Reverends of the Bone Clan were all furious. They wanted to tear Zhang Ruochen into pieces immediately.

But in the end, they held back and didn't act rashly. The existence of Dragon Phantom Lord made them felt a great threat.

Through the short collision just now, the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan had truly felt the power of Dragon Phantom Lord. If they landed on True Dragon Island, they wouldn't be able to gain anything and they might even suffer a great loss.

As Zhang Ruochen poured a powerful Dimensional Power into the Zangshan Demonic Mirror, the screams of the three Reverends of the Bone Clan stopped abruptly.

Shortly, three wisps of Saint Souls flew out of the Zangshan Demonic Mirror and into the Dimensional Bottle that Zhang Ruochen had taken out.

Seeing this, the Eight-armed Reverend immediately roared, "Zhang Ruochen, we Bone Clan will fight you till death."

He was the leader of the Twelve Reverends of the Bone Clan. Since he had entered True Dragon Island, he had watched seven Reverends killed with his own eyes and couldn't rescue them. This made him went berserk with hatred.

The Three Emperors of the Bone Clan all exuded a terrifying killing intent. The power of Vajra surged, and the copper seal became as big as a mountain. It was about to crush anything under the sky.

BOOM!
A large area of the sea funneled into a small cavity in the center, creating a vortex. The ocean surged with raging waves.

Zhang Ruochen dared to kill the three Reverends that the Bone Clan had nurtured in front of them. This was an unbridled provocation and an unforgivable insult to the Bone Clan.

Each of the Reverends of the Bone Clan had the aptitude to become a top-notch Supreme Saint, not to mention becoming a god. This time, they had lost seven Reverends on the True Dragon Island. This was undoubtedly a huge loss.

The Bone Clan had never suffered such a huge loss in many years.

ROAR!
Dragon Phantom Lord roared. His wings flapped slowly, accumulating vast divine power, and stared fiercely at the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan.

“Zhang Ruochen, let’s fight outside the island,” Emperor Shiling said in a low voice.

Zhang Ruochen said lightly, “Why don’t you come to the island and fight me? One-on-one, fight to the death.”

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t stupid. The Three Emperors of the Bone clan were all top-tier powerhouses below the Supreme Saint level. They had the power of Vajra, with cooperation from each other, their combat power could be multiplied. It won’t be easy to deal with the three of them at the same time.

The aura from Emperor Shiling surged. Streaks of Vajra’s Seal appeared on the dark golden bone. Terrifying qi enveloped Zhang Ruochen. It seemed like he was really going to attack.

Zhang Ruochen were calm. He held the Ancient Abyssal Blade in his hand. Countless Time and Space Marks surrounded him. It made him feel like he was in another time and space.

Whoosh!
Zhang Ruochen waved the Ancient Abyssal Blade and slashed out casually.

Many Time and Space Marks merged into the sword’s ray, distorting the space and time in a small area. It then shattered, revealing a pitch-black void space.

Seeing this, Emperor Shiling attacked immediately. Using the power of Vajra, he condensed an unparalleled fist print that shattered the space and met the sword ray.

The power of Vajra was said to be invincible. When used with the strength of Emperor Shiling, it was enough to shatter the top-tier Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact.

Crack
Incredibly, the Vajra fist mark was cut in half by the sword's ray.

Although most of the sword's rays were destroyed by the Vajra fist mark, it continued to strike Emperor Shiling.

BANG!
Emperor Shiling suddenly punched out and shattered the faint sword's ray.

However, during this process, several Marks of Time entered Emperor Shiling's body.

Emperor Shiling let out a muffled groan. His aura fluctuated slightly and it seemed he had suffered a little.

As his attainments in the Path of Time improved, Zhang Ruochen's use of the Power of Time had undoubtedly become more subtle. Even if he had the power to fight against the nine Path of the Ancients, he might not be able to resist it.

The Three Emperors of the Bone Clan were overwhelming. If they worked together, they would be able to defeat Son of Darkness. But if they were alone, they were slightly weaker and Zhang Ruochen was not afraid of them.

"I look forward to seeing you on the island again." With these words, Zhang Ruochen rode on Dragon Phantom Lord and left.

The battle could not continue, so there was no need to waste time here.

It was a pity that the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan had interfered and prevented him from exterminating all the Reverends of the Bone Clan.

"Damn Zhang Ruochen. I will not share the same sky as you." the Eight-armed Reverend howls angrily at the sky.

The other four Reverends were all silent and they were all feeling gloomy.

The Twelve Reverends of the Bone Clan were once well-known. Their names spread throughout the Infernal Court and the Celestial Court. Once they appeared, even the top-tier cultivators below the Supreme Saint level had to retreat. It was glorious indeed.

But now, all the glory was gone. They had become stepping stones for Zhang Ruochen, Blackie, and the others to rise. It was unfortunate.

“Everyone underestimated The Scion of Time and Space’s potential and let him grew stronger. It’s hard to keep him in check. Soon, he might be able to stand shoulder to shoulder with Yan Wushen,” Emperor Shiling said in a low voice.

Hearing this, Emperor Lieyan and Emperor Mieyuan both exude very stiff auras.

If Zhang Ruochen reached Yan Wushen’s level, the Three Emperors might not stand a chance against him even if they joined forces.

Now, they had to recognize Saint Monk Xumi’s scion was indeed a great enemy of the Infernal Court. His growth speed was so terrifying that even the Infernal Court couldn’t make a move.

It didn’t take long for True Dragon Island to regain its peace. The top cultivators of the Infernal Court were all wiped out.

At the same time, the armies of several ancient civilizations and the Celestial Dragon Realm also withdrew from True Dragon Island. Huge battleships stood on the surface of the sea, riding the wind and breaking the waves.

Currently, several ancient civilizations and the Celestial Dragon Realm suffered a lot of losses, mainly caused by the mysterious and unpredictable Mojo.

During the eruption of divine power on True Dragon Island, Mojo’s true form was activated and he commands the creepy children to attack many of the top-cultivators from all sides.

However, compared to the Infernal Court, this little loss of theirs was nothing.

BOOM!
Outside the main building of Dragon Temple, an intense battle was going on.

Both Lord of Sword and Mojo were in a fierce battle. They were fighting with all their strength as if only one of them could be the victor.

Lord of Sword held his sword in his hand, and the sword shone so brightly it spread throughout the nine heavens. It was unstoppable.

Mojo released many of its tentacles, each of which could extend infinitely to pierce or entangle. At the same time, he released a terrifying spiritual power, trying to drown out Lord of Sword's will.

Wah Wah!
Thousands of creepy children gathered around Mojo. All of them let out ear-piercing cries, which manifest into a terrifying phenomenon of mountains of corpses and seas of blood.

Thousands of miles away, Zhang Ruochen and Dragon Phantom Lord restrained their auras and combined them with the surrounding space to hide from plain sight perfectly.

"Mojo has obtained a lot of children this time. His power will increase greatly. I'm afraid Lord of Sword will be in trouble." said Dragon Phantom Lord with worrisome.

Zhang Ruochen could see that although Lord of Sword was strong, he was still at a disadvantage against Mojo and his army of creepy children.

Even so, Lord of Sword did not show any intention of retreating. Instead, his fighting spirit rose in high.

Zhang Ruochen had a thought and said, "It seems that Lord of Sword wants to achieve a big breakthrough by fighting with Mojo. These two are fighting so hard that Lord of Stone has yet to reveal himself."

Dragon Phantom Lord was silent for a moment, he said, "The body of Lord of Stone is a unique stone. It has bathed in the blood of many gods. Therefore, its born-with intelligence is very chaotic. In fact, the Lord of Elixir and I have the same problem. So, most of the time, we are in a deep slumber.

"Only Lord of Sword and Mojo are special. Lord of Sword inherited the will of the sword god from Kunlun Realm, and Mojo inherited the will from the god of The Fane of Darkness. Therefore, their intelligence is untainted. The fight between them is presumably the continuation of the war of gods during the Middle Ages.

“And I was able to fuse the chaotic spiritual intelligence into one body because I was attacked by master’s treasure.”

For Dragon Phantom Lord, being suppressed by the God-Defiance Stele was actually a blessing in disguise.

Only with pure spiritual intelligence could there be hope to improve and become stronger.

Hearing this, a thought came into Zhang Ruochen’s mind. He knew that Dragon Phantom Lord was formed from four types of divine force. Each type of divine force contained a terrifying will, and it was difficult to truly fuse them.

Lord of Elixir was formed from part of the Emperor Grade Sacred Pill’s essence. However, during the process, he must have been eroded by the divine force of darkness. The spiritual intelligence that was born could not be pure either.

“Let’s go find the Lord of Stone,” Zhang Ruochen said suddenly.

Dragon Phantom Lord was stunned at first, then a sudden realization flashed into his mind. He vaguely guessed Zhang Ruochen’s plan.

Without hesitation, Dragon Phantom Lord sets off. He knew exactly where Lord of Stone’s nest was located.

After bypassing the battlefield between Lord of Sword and Mojo, Zhang Ruochen and Dragon Phantom Lord entered the main building of Dragon Temple.

Dragon Temple used to be sacred and glorious. It had attracted countless cultivators to make pilgrimages. But now, it was dilapidated and in ruins.

Lord of Stone was very similar to Mojo in a way. They had built their nests underground. The nests didn’t have any tunnels because they could move through the earth at will.

If someone tried to break in, they would be alerted immediately.

However, this wasn’t a problem for Zhang Ruochen.

He used Great Dimensional Shift and sneaked into the underground space with Dragon Phantom Lord.

The layout of the underground space was straightforward. Although it was dark, Zhang Ruochen still locked onto Lord of Stone's location.

Lord of Stone was sitting cross-legged on an ancient stone platform. His eyes were closed and his breath was steady. He didn't seem to notice anything around him.

Zhang Ruochen had an idea, he took out the God-Defiance Stele, activated his own Percepts, and inserted them into some of the ancient texts on the stele. Then he suppressed Lord of Stone with it.

Zhang Ruochen had suppressed Dragon Phantom Lord and Lord of Elixir one after another. It was no doubt that he was very experienced.

The moment Zhang Ruochen attacked, Lord of Stone suddenly opened his eyes. A terrifying murderous aura burst out from his body. The majestic power of the Supreme Saint was released.

"Suppress him." Zhang Ruochen growled. He held the broken God-Defiance Stele with his hand and walked forward.

Wherever he went, the murderous aura and the power of the Supreme Saint that was charging at him dissipated and returned to nature.

This was the power of the God-Defiance Stele. It could eliminate the power of the Path and Divine Path.

Zhang Ruochen had heard from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree's saplings that the God-Defiance Stele had a shocking origin. It seemed to come from the Celestial Court and was considered taboo. If anyone finds out, it would be a huge problem.

Lord of Stone's eyes shone with a terrifying light. Like two sharp knives, it was extremely fierce. He suddenly punched out, gathering the power of a Supreme Saint and hitting the God-Defiance Stele.

BANG!
A terrifying power spread out, sending Zhang Ruochen and the God-Defiance Stele flying at the same time.

Zhang Ruochen was shocked by what happened, he thought. 'Just how strong was Lord of Stone to resist the power from the God-Defiance Stele?'

He had known for a long time that although the God-Defiance Stele was amazing, how powerful it could be had a lot to do with his cultivation and strength.

Even if the God-Defiance Stele had the god-defying power, it wasn't something he could use right at present.

"Kill!" Lord of Stone growled. His body exuded a monstrous killing intent.

At this moment, Lord of Stone was like an Ashura that had walked out of infernal. He was extremely dangerous.

It was obvious that the surprise attack had fully enraged Lord of Stone. He was filled with a desire to kill.

Now that Zhang Ruochen finally saw Lord of Stone's form clearly. He was three meters tall and had six arms. His entire body was chartreuse and many strange patterns formed and appeared faintly as if it was natural.

"Lord of Stone's true form is actually an AzureTerra Stone!" Zhang Ruochen exclaimed.

AzureTerra Stone was one of the most precious stones in the world. Only a great world with a strong origin could crystalize one. If it fell into the hands of a god, it could be turned into a small world.

For example, the nine Realm Seals refined by Empress Chi Yao had AzureTerra Stone added to them.

AzureTerra Stone was the hardest stone. Even a god couldn't break it.

Seeing Lord of Stone pounce on him, Zhang Ruochen quickly inserted all of his Percepts into the ancient texts on the God-Defiance Stele.

BANG!
Lord of Stone's fist hit the God-Defiance Stele again. Zhang Ruochen took a step back, but he managed to block it.

Such strong force. If it were any stronger, even the God-Defiance Stele wouldn't be able to suppress it,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

Dragon Phantom Lord was also shocked. It hadn't fought with Lord of Stone for a long time and hadn't expected Lord of Stone to be so powerful. Lord of Stone could be considered the strongest of the five overlords.

Fortunately, Lord of Stone's intelligence was chaotic and came from the will of different divine blood. It kept resisting, causes Lord of Stone to fall into a deep sleep. Otherwise, the other four overlords might be in big trouble.

Lord of Stone kept attacking. He was not willing to be suppressed by the God-Defiance Stele. However, as time passed, his own power of the Supreme Saint was being eliminated. It was difficult to shake the God-Defiance Stele anymore.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to suppress Lord of Stone in one go, Lord of Stone transformed into his original form. It was a mysterious AzureTerra stone with a diameter of nearly one meter.

Even gods would fight against such a huge AzureTerra stone.

Zhang Ruochen fixed his eyes on Lord of Stone's true form. He couldn't help but freeze.

The AzureTerra Stone in front of him was branded with six mysterious divine marks. Each of them was completely different. They all emitted strange divine light and interweaved to form a special shield.

Even when the God-Defiance Stele was pressed on it, the protection barrier formed of divine light didn't disappear.

Of course, this did not mean that the God-Defiance Stele had lost its function. It was just that this function had been greatly weakened and was unable to truly harm Lord of Stone's base form.

"Lord of Stone's ambition is so great. He has already completely absorbed the divine blood of the six gods and inherited many techniques of the six gods. When the six gods' will fuse with the shattered Lord of Stone's will, his cultivation will definitely reach to an astonishing level," Dragon Phantom Lord exclaimed.

But then Dragon Phantom Lord shook his head and said, "How can the wills of the gods be easily shattered and fused? Especially the wills of the six gods. If Lord of Stone does this, it's likely that he won't be able to recover."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen realized something and said. "A technique belonging to the gods? No wonder you can resist the God-Defiance Stele. But how long can you resist it?"

He had decided to fight Lord of Stone to the end to see who could outlast the other.

…

Chapter 2120: The Three Emperors and Mojo

The power of Lord of Stone was far beyond Zhang Ruochen's expectations. Even if he used the God-Defiance Stele, it would still be difficult to subdue it. Now, they have reached a deadlock.

However, under the full suppression of the God-Defiance Stele, although the Divine Light Barrier was very powerful, its power was slowly being diminished.

Zhang Ruochen appeared to be very patient. He was not anxious at all. Taking this opportunity, he was also discovering more mysteries of the God-Defiance Stele to unleash stronger power.

There were many ancient words carved on the God-Defiance Stele. They contained mysterious, yet strange power. With Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation level, he couldn't even understand a single word, let alone all of it.

'These 42 ancient words contain Canon aura. Could these be written by the gods who had grasped the Canon?' Zhang Ruochen was shocked.

The Canon was extremely mysterious. Under normal circumstances, only extremely powerful gods could master it. The acquisition of Canon of Truth was the only exception.

The Canon aura contained in the 42 ancient words was completely different from each other. It should have originated from the 42 powerful gods who had mastered the Canon.

Zhang Ruochen even suspected that the other ancient words on the God-Defiance Stele might have been written by different gods.

As soon as this came into mind, Zhang Ruochen was stunned. He only had a broken stele, but there were already thousands of ancient words on it. He couldn't imagine how many ancient characters there would be in a complete God-Defiance Stele. It would be shocking if each ancient character corresponded to different gods.

Zhang Ruochen quickly collected himself and halted his speculations. He vaguely felt that there were terrible taboos involved in this. It wasn't a good thing to know too much when one's power wasn't strong enough.

As time passed, the Divine Light Barrier gradually faded. The six divine pattern imprints slowly sank into the AzureTerra Stone.

Crack!!
Suddenly, the Divine Light Barrier shattered. The God-Defiance Stele was able to truly subdue the AzureTerra Stone.

Boom!!
Six powerful wills emerged from the AzureTerra Stone and fought against God-Defiance Stele.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were serious. The six wills belonged to the six gods. If they couldn't be subdued, it would cause a huge disaster.

Gods were beyond things. Their wills couldn't be disobeyed.

Yet, God-Defiance Stele had god-defying power. It subdued the six divine wills and wore them down bit by bit.

After a long time, the six divine wills finally broke, but they didn't disappear. Instead, they sank back into the AzureTerra Stone.

Zhang Ruochen could sense that it was Lord of Stone's own will which swept away the six broken divine wills and refined them quickly.

This was what Lord of Stone had always wanted to do, but couldn't before. Now, Zhang Ruochen had fulfilled his wish.

From now on, Lord of Stone's spiritual wisdom would be purer. He could reach a higher realm.

Zhang Ruochen did not stop. His goal was not to help Lord of Stone, but to subdue him.

However, after refining the six divine wills, Lord of Stone was able to use the skills and techniques of the gods freely. Since he also had the special characteristics of the AzureTerra Stone, it became even harder to injure Lord of Stone.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was feeling a headache, something suddenly flew out from Divine Light Sea of Qi.

“Why did Secret Tome of Time and Space fly Out?” Zhang Ruochen asked in confusion.

Without him urging, Secret Tome of Time and Space opened automatically. It released a strange divine light which sank into the AzureTerra Stone.

Suddenly, the AzureTerra Stone shook and a mysterious mark appeared. It was formed by the power of time and space.

Seeing this, Zhang Ruochen’s heart jumped a beat, ‘*Could this AzureTerra Stone be related to Saint Monk Xumi?’*
At this moment, an obscure piece of information came to his mind.

‘I see. This AzureTerra Stone was accidentally obtained by Saint Monk Xumi. He knew that it could be used to communicate with spirits, so he placed it on True Dragon Island. At the same time, he left a Space-Time mark in its core both as a protection and restriction.‘ Zhang Ruochen finally understood.
Zhang Ruochen quickly made his move. He condensed the Blood God’s Curse Seal and combined it with the Space-Time mark.

His current cultivation base wasn’t strong enough. It would be difficult for him to control Lord of Stone with the Space-Time mark alone. But it would be easier with the Blood God’s Curse Seal with him.

The Space-Time mark was originally imprinted on the core of the AzureTerra Stone, which was also Lord of Stone’s Saint Soul. If the Blood God’s Curse Seal was combined with it, it could enter into Lord of Stone’s Saint Soul without his permission.

Buzz…
The AzureTerra Stone’s vibration intensified. It was obvious that Lord of Stone was resisting.

But after a moment, the AzureTerra Stone calmed down. Zhang Ruochen could clearly sense that the Blood God’s Curse Seal had merged with Lord of Stone’s Saint Soul. Everything was under his control.

Zhang Ruochen let out a sigh of relief. He put away the God-Defiance Stele and the Secret Tome of Time and Space.

‘*The will of Lord of Stone is extremely strong and arrogant. If Saint Monk Xumi hadn’t left the Space-Time mark, I wouldn’t have been able to plant the Blood God’s Curse Seal in its Saint Soul*,’ Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

After truly feeling the will of Lord of Stone, Zhang Ruochen understood that without Saint Monk Xumi's backup plan, it would almost be impossible to subdue Lord of Stone. Even if he was severely injured, he could only suppress it.

A streak of AzureTerra light flashed, and Lord of Stone transformed back into his human form. He stared at Zhang Ruochen with a terrifying gaze.

Zhang Ruochen looked straight back at Lord of Stone with no fear in his eyes.

A moment later, Lord of Stone said in a cold and deep voice, "Don't you think that you can control me just because you planted a servant seal in my Saint Soul. You weaklings have no right to order me to do anything."

Even though Zhang Ruochen now has the Blood God's Curse Seal, it was clear that Lord of Stone refused to yield. He still refused to follow Zhang Ruochen's orders.

Zhang Ruochen was not mad at Lord of Stone's strong attitude. Instead, he admired it. Perhaps it was because of his relentless attitude that he could become so powerful.

Speaking of which, Lord of Stone was the most unique one among the five overlords on True Dragon Island. He cultivated by himself and reached the Supreme-saint realm step by step. As for the other four overlords, they were born with great power, so they basically used the power of their predecessors.

Zhang Ruochen thought quickly and calmly said, "Lord of Stone, how about we make a deal?"

"What deal?" Lord of Stone asked coldly.

Zhang Ruochen said, "It's very simple. You can join me and kill Mojo. After that, you can continue to practice on True Dragon Island. I won't force you to do anything until my power surpasses yours."

Hearing this, Lord of Stone frowned slightly and began to think seriously.

A moment later, bright light flashed in Lord of Stone's eyes, and he said in a clear voice, "Alright, I promise you."

Upon hearing Lord of Stone's acceptance, a faint smile appeared in Zhang Ruochen's eyes. He said, "I know that you've collected a lot of treasures. Give me what you don't need so I can use them to train powerhouses."

Lord of Stone looked at Zhang Ruochen deeply in his eyes. Without saying anything, he threw out the Ring of Dimensions.

Zhang Ruochen reached out and caught the Ring of Dimensions. He immediately released his spiritual power and looked into it.

There were a lot of treasures in the Ring of Dimensions. The treasures were piled up into a mountain, but there were only half of that of Dragon Phantom Lord.

Zhang Ruochen didn't think that Lord of Stone was deliberately hiding his treasures. Since Lord of Stone rarely traveled outside, it was already fairly well that he could collect more than 50 million treasures.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen's expression changed, as he found a King Grade Sacred Pill that could greatly increase spiritual power. This was even rarer than an ordinary King Grade Sacred Pill.

If he chose to eat it now, given his current spiritual power level, he might immediately become a spiritual Supreme Saint.

King Grade Sacred Pills like such were undoubtedly extremely precious. Even a spiritual Supreme Saint would yearn for it.

"Are you trying to steal Mojo's Treasure?" Lord of Stone suddenly asked.

Zhang Ruochen came back to his senses and put away the Ring of Dimensions. A cold light flashed in his eyes, "Mojo was born with the will of the gods of Infernal Court. He is the most evil of them all, so he's a great disaster for Kunlun Realm. We must eradicate him as soon as possible."

"A hundred thousand years ago, someone once told me that one day if I had great power, I must help protect Kunlun Realm. I would start by killing Mojo." Lord of Stone's gaze turned especially sharp.

Hearing this, something triggered in Zhang Ruochen's mind. The person who said this to Lord of Stone must be Saint Monk Xumi.

It seemed that Saint Monk Xumi had high hopes for Lord of Stone. Otherwise, he would not have deliberately left a Space-Time mark in his core. This acted as a guidance to prevent Lord of Stone from going astray.

If there was no Space-Time mark, perhaps Lord of Stone's spiritual intelligence would be drowned by the will of the six gods as soon as he was born.

Without further delay, Zhang Ruochen, Lord of Stone, and Dragon Phantom Lord set off immediately.

At this moment, the battle between Lord of Sword and Mojo was still ongoing outside the main building of the Dragon Temple. The winner hasn't been decided, but Lord of Sword was clearly at a disadvantage.

Crash!
Dragon Phantom Lord appeared on the battlefield with Zhang Ruochen on his back. From afar, he released a terrifying four-colored Divine Light and attacked Mojo with lightning speed.

At the same time, Lord of Stone used his teleportation skills and appeared below Mojo suddenly. Six fists struck out at the same time, bursting with incomparable terrifying power.

Unlike Dragon Phantom Lord and Lord of Elixir, Lord of Stone didn't lose too much power from God-Defiance Stele. He still had strength to fight with Mojo.

BOOM!!
Mojo's tentacles and nearly half of the creepy children exploded when Lord of Stone and Dragon Phantom Lord attacked at the same time.

Even someone as strong as Mojo suffered significantly when it was caught off guard.

Boundless divine force of Darkness surged out from Mojo's body, enveloping all creepy children. It immediately wanted to retreat in order to escape from the encirclement of Lord of Sword, Dragon Phantom Lord, and Lord of Stone.

"Mojo, you can't escape."

Dragon Phantom Lord let out a long cry, and the divine force of Origin poured into the ground continuously.

Half of Mojo's body was already in the ground, but it was unable to continue sinking in.

Under the influence of the divine force of Origin, the structure of the ground had already undergone a fundamental change, completely restraining Mojo's ability to move underground.

At this moment, Lord of Stone rushed out from the ground. Its body emitted a monstrous baleful aura, like an unrivalled Demonic god. It gathered the majestic power of the Supreme Saint and blasted out tyrannical fist imprints.

Lord of Stone' body itself was his most powerful sacred artifact. It was indestructible and could even go heads-on with a Supreme Artifact.

At such a close distance, there was no way Mojo could dodge, so it could only defend itself.

An unusual-looking tentacle extended out. It was pitch-black in color and extremely sharp. It was like an indestructible battle spear.

Bang!!
After a short collision, Lord of Stone's fist imprint and Mojo's black tentacle exploded at the same time. No one was able to gain any advantage.

Yet in fact, Mojo had suffered some losses. This was because its black tentacle was formed from the vital force of its Origin. It only had eighteen tentacles like such, which were much more powerful than the other tentacles.

The black tentacle was extremely tough. Even the fierce attacks by Lord of Sword couldn't damage it.

Mojo did not expect that it would suffer serious damage after exchanging blows with Lord of Stone. This caused strong fear in Mojo's heart.

Lord of Sword was unhappy to see Lord of Stone and Dragon Phantom Lord adding into the fight. He frowned instead, as if he was disturbed.

He looked at Zhang Ruochen, who was standing on Dragon Phantom Lord. His instinct told him that everything was related to Zhang Ruochen.

Simultaneously, Zhang Ruochen casted his gaze on Lord of Sword.

Zhang Ruochen had a good impression of Lord of Sword as he had helped him previously when Mojo tried to kill him and Dragon Phantom Lord.

Zhang Ruochen cupped his hands and said, “Lord of Sword, thank you for your help previously.”

“Leave quickly. Don’t interfere with my battle with Mojo,” Lord of Sword said indifferently.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I know that you want to use Mojo to hone your Swordwill. However, Kunlun Realm is in a precarious situation now. As long as the heart of Kunlun Realm is still alive, others will send armies to attack it. Now they even want to seize the key to the World Gate and destroy World Spirit.”

“I am sure that you know about Mojo’s origin, Lord of Sword. It was transformed by the heart of a god of Infernal Court, and it inherited the will of the gods of Infernal Court. As long as it is there, we will be in big trouble. So, We hope that we can join hands to get rid of it.”

Zhang Ruochen already knew that Lord of Sword was related to a sword god of Kunlun Realm. This was the main reason why he had been at odds with Mojo for so many years.

As long as Lord of Sword’s original intentions hadn’t changed, he would be standing on the same side as them.

Suddenly, Lord of Stone’s body rose to a height of 300 meters and released a stronger murderous aura. He looked down on the world and said loudly, “Lord of Sword, if you don’t want to join forces, step aside and let me destroy the heart of the god of Infernal Court.”

“Lord of Stone, just attack. I have completely sealed off the area within a thousand miles. Mojo can’t escape,” Dragon Phantom Lord said.

At this stage, although his powers weren’t as strong as Mojo’s, he could restrict Mojo with his various methods. These powers would help Lord of Stone massively.

Of course, he wouldn’t mind killing Mojo if the opportunity arose.

Roar!!
Lord of Stone roared into the sky. His aura engulfed the mountains and rivers. Heavy AzureTerra Qi surrounded his body, as if a new world was opening up.

Lord of Stone’s six hands moved at the same time and formed a strange seal. He combined the power of the Supreme Saint with AzureTerra Qi and

instantly formed three huge artifacts: AzureTerra seal; AzureTerra pagoda; and AzureTerra cauldron. They were all extremely solid, and its mysterious patterns were fighting against Mojo.

It was obvious that Lord of Stone didn't want to waste his time and energy. He utilized his full strength as soon as he made his move to destroy Mojo.

Lord of Stone's true form was in fact AzureTerra Stone. He was born with the power of AzureTerra, which was almost comparable to the power cultivated by the Nine Paths of the Ancients. This was his innate advantage, which also meant that his future achievements were limitless.

Perhaps it was because of this that Saint Monk Xumi deliberately made all kinds of arrangements to ensure that AzureTerra Stone could successfully cultivate spiritual intelligence and embark on the path of cultivation.

…

Were the gods of Kunlun Realm dead? This could be seen from the happenings on the Great Saint Battlefield!

Chapter 2121: The Moment of Life and Death

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation **Editor:** EndlessFantasy Translation

Faced with Lord of Stone's tyrannical attack, Mojo did not retreat, nor could it. Mojo could only defend itself. Boundless divine force of darkness surged out from his body, purer and stronger than Dragon Phantom Lord.

Endless darkness descended, wanting to envelop this entire world. It was as if it wanted to devour everything in the world, presumably the end of the world had begun.

Billions of dark arcane runes interweaved, forming a massive object. It was shaped like a heart, and countless veins extended from its surface. It was as if it wanted to use this as a foundation to evolve into a terrifying creature.

The three objects that Lord of Stone had evolved shook, and ten thousand streams of AzureTerra Qi descended, crushing the skies and forcing the darkness to retreat.

BANG!

Even though Mojo had transformed into a heart, it released a very majestic divine force, it was still unable to withstand the attacks of the three objects and was shattered by force.

However, at this moment, Mojo released three pitch-black tentacles that carried the power of ten thousand hectares and shattered the three objects.

The collision between the two was too intense. The land within a radius of a thousand miles was crumbling and sinking for thousands of meters.

One had to know that this was True Dragon Island and the suppression of heavenly and earthly percepts was extremely strong. An ordinary person's battle would not be able to cause too much damage.

If they were in the outside world, such a terrifying collision would probably change the shape of the world. Even the stars in the outer realms would fall.

Lord of Stone looked nonchalantly and its brows lifted. An AzureTerra sacred spear flew out. There were countless patterns on the surface of the spear, like dragon scales. At a glance, it looked like a divine dragon.

The AzureTerra spear was a genuine regal weapon. It was born from Lord of Stone's body and was like one with him. The tip of the spear was sharp as a razor and could split the sky.

With the AzureTerra sacred spear in hand, Lord of Stone pressed forward and displayed an extremely tyrannical spear technique. Countless sharp spear shadows appeared in the void, enveloping Mojo's true form.

WAWA!
In the darkness, ear-piercing cries rang out. Vast spiritual power surged out and swept towards Lord of Stone like a tidal wave.

For a moment, the entire world turned dark red. The sky split open and countless corpses of divine demes fell, piling up into mountains on the ground. The blood of the divine demons converged into a pool. One could faintly hear the angry roars of countless divine demons, shaking the hearts of people.

The sceneries were all anomalies, but they gave people an awfully realistic feeling. It was as if they had entered the most chaotic dark age.

Mojo was very clear about Lord of Stone's weaknesses. It wanted to use spiritual power to attack and make Lord of Stone's spiritual intelligence even more chaotic.

However, Mojo did not know was that Lord of Stone has been reborn. Its spiritual intelligence was pure, and its spiritual will was as firm as a rock. The spiritual attack will have no effect.

BOOM!
The AzureTerra sacred spear shook, and the frightening phenomenon that illuminated the world immediately shattered.

When Lord of Stone approached, a dark golden sacred shield appeared. Its entire body emitted holy light, revealing a gorgeous and colorful starry sky. Countless stars were rotating within it, releasing majestic star power.

The stars arranged themselves according to the mysterious formation, transforming into a vast and mighty space that enveloped Lord of Stone in a wink.

The next moment, endless starlight became blazing, turning into a raging fire of stars that drowned Lord of Stone.

‘Such powerful top-tier regal weapon.’ Zhang Ruochen was astonished.

A regal weapon was a saint weapon exclusive to the top-cultivators of Supreme Sainthood. Only in the hands of a top-cultivator of Supreme Sainthood could it unleash its true power.

For a terrifying powerhouse like Mojo, to activate a regal weapon was much more powerful than a Supreme Artifact triggered by a top-notch Saint King.

No matter how powerful a sacred artifact or even a divine artifact was, one had to have sufficient strength to activate it. Otherwise, one would only be allowed to gain the upper hand in a battle of the same level.

Lord of Stone did not show any signs of panic when it was trapped in that strange starry sky and immolated by the astral fire. A large amount of AzureTerra Qi surged out from its body and gathered on the AzureTerra sacred spear.

“Break!” Lord of Stone shouted explosively and swung the AzureTerra sacred spear discharging brilliant sharp rays.

Boom!
Countless stars were destroyed in an instant. The starry sky was torn apart, unable to trap Lord of Stone.

“Mojo, your life is mine.” Lord of Stone growled. As it waved the AzureTerra sacred spear, it performed a mystical conjuration.

An intense battle erupted. Lord of Stone was like an unparalleled war god, valiantly charged at Mojo.

In the blink of an eye, both Lord of Stone and Mojo had fought for hundreds of rounds. Everything within a radius of thousands of miles had been shattered, yet there was still no victor.

Despite losing part of its power to the God-Defiance Stele, the fact that Lord of Stone could still fight at the peak with Mojo showed how mighty Lord of Stone was. As Lord of Stone was the strongest of the five overlords.

Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes and said, “As expected from the god of Infernal Court’s heart. It will be difficult to deal with. Let’s attack together and get rid of it as soon as possible.”

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen had already taken out the Zangshan Demonic Mirror and activated it together with the Dragon Phantom Lord.

The Zangshan Demonic Mirror resurrected speedily and released impressive Supreme Power to attack Mojo.

Although Mojo was focused on fighting with Lord of Stone, it also paid attention to the movements of Lord of Sword and Dragon Phantom Lord. When it sensed the threat, it immediately summoned the sacred shield.

BANG!
The starry sky formed by the sacred shield was shattered by the Supreme Power right away and blown away.

Combining the power of Zhang Ruochen and Dragon Phantom Lord to activate a Supreme Artifact, the power was significant and could threaten Mojo.

“Are you still hesitating, Lord of Sword? Once Mojo and the Infernal Court come together, a great disaster will unfold,” Zhang Ruochen shouted.

If Zhang Ruochen wished to end Mojo as soon as possible, he would undoubtedly need the power from Lord of Sword.

Lord of Sword’s emotions fluctuated. Many thoughts flashed through its mind quickly, and it had mixed feelings about this.

A moment later, Lord of Sword's eyes became firm, and a sharp sword's will exuding from its body. It said, "Very well then. Let's join hands and put an end to this blight, the final act for the past war between gods."

After making the decision, Lord of Sword no longer hesitated. It immediately waved the sacred sword in its hand and joined in the battle. Together with Lord of Stone, they attacked Mojo.

Mojo was indeed overpowered, but it still could not withstand the attacks of two powerhouses of the same level.

In just a few dozen moves, Mojo was at a disadvantage. It could only passively defend itself.

Zhang Ruochen and Dragon Lord Emperor used the Zangshan Demonic Mirror to completely block Mojos's path of retreat. From time to time, they would launch an attack to interfere with Mojo.

It did not take long for Lord of Stone and Lord of Sword's cooperation to become quite tacit. They had suppressed Mojo entirely.

BANG!
Lord of Stone's spear sent the sacred shield flying and Lord of Sword struck out at the right time. Thousands of sword Qi slashed out. Not only did it cut off Mojo's tentacles, but it also broke through the thick divine power of darkness.

When the darkness dispersed, Zhang Ruochen finally saw the true form of Mojo. It was a dark crimson heart and was covered with dark divine marks and had many tentacles.

This was a heart of a god. It had been cut out for a long time, but it hadn't withered. Instead, it had turned into a terrifying monster.

"Blasphemy! You must all die." At this moment, a hoarse voice came from the divine heart.

Swoosh
The eighteen most fundamental tentacles extended immediately upon and attacked both Lord of Stone and Lord of Sword.

At the same time, the creepy children protected by Mojo exploded and turned into a mist of blood, all of which entered the true form of Mojo.

After swallowing so much blood qi, the true form of Mojo expanded rapidly. Its diameter reached thousands of meters, like a small star.

Majestic dark divine power surged out of the divine heart and condensed into a very tall figure as if it was about to burst through the world.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen and the others felt the terrifying divine power. It was overwhelming as if a true god had descended.

Undeniably, Mojo was displaying the divine power of the god from the Infernal Court and condensed into a divine shadow.

Facing the tall divine shadow, Lord of Stone said coldly, “A mere divine heart dares to call itself a god. Watch how I smash your true form into pieces.”

Before it could finish its words, Lord of Stone had already made a strong move. It gathered the power of AzureTerra and punched out four utmost Yang punches. At the same time, it swung the AzureTerra sacred spear and chopped down at Mojo’s head.

Lord of Sword didn’t utter a word, but it was also performing an exquisite sword technique. Its sword’s will is linked with heaven and earth.

“Now.” Zhang Ruochen commanded.

Dragon Phantom Lord performed the Great Dimensional Shift and suddenly appeared behind Mojo with Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t hesitate at all. He flipped his hand and took out the God-Defiance Stele. Then he activated the Precept and inserted them into the ancient characters.

The moment the God-Defiance Stele appeared, both the divine power and dark divine power dispersed rapidly.

Suddenly, the divine shadow became unstable and showed signs of collapsing.

Before Mojo could react, Zhang Ruochen had already put away the God-Defiance Stele. He and Dragon Phantom Lord activated the Zangshan Demonic Mirror to attack Mojo.

If Zhang Ruochen continued to activate the God-Defiance Stele, the attacks of Lord Stone and Lord of Sword would fade.

With Lord of Sword present, Zhang Ruochen did not plan to expose the God-Defiance Stele.

Zhang Ruochen used the God-Defiance Stele behind Mojo. It was only for a moment, and he did not make any movements. In addition, Lord of Sword's attention was on Mojo, so it did not notice it.

With such a turn of events, Mojo immediately ran into big trouble. It was struck by many terrifying attacks.

BANG!
The divine shadow instantly collapsed, and the divine power dissipated.

The Supreme Power unleashed by the Zangshan Demonic Mirror and the peerless sword ray slashed out by Lord of Sword all struck Mojo's true form.

The AzureTerra sacred spear in the hands of the stone emperor was even more terrifying. It actually broke through the barrier of the dark divine marks and pierced through Mojo's true form.

Pfft
Dark crimson divine blood flew out. Each drop contained a terrifying power that could corrode everything.

ROAR!
Bathing in the divine blood, Lord of Stone couldn't help but lifted its head and roared.

Only Lord of Stone who possessed the AzureTerra stone body could prevent the corrosion of the divine blood.

Lord of Stone mobilized the even more dynamic power of the AzureTerra and transferred it into Mojo's true body through the AzureTerra sacred spear. Tens of thousands of AzureTerra power flowed out from the tip of the spear, like streams and dragons. They intertwined together as if they wanted to prop up an AzureTerra world within the Mojo's body.

This was a type of offensive power that attacked from the inside out.

Immediately, Mojo's true form swelled up once again. Many cracks appeared on its surface, and divine blood gushed out.

Just as Lord of Stone was about to shatter the Mojo's true form, a powerful force burst out and sent it flying backward.

“This is not good… Mojo is going to fight back with all its might. It’s dangerous.” Zhang Ruochen was alarmed. He quickly retrieved the Zangshan Demonic Mirror to protect himself.

Before he could say anything, Dragon Phantom Lord had already retreated rapidly. It also felt a great threat.

Lub-dub.
The divine heart trembled, and its voice was like a loud bell.

Endless blood qi as vast as the ocean spread out from the divine heart. It carried an unparalleled divine power as it swept through all corners of the world. It was unstoppable.

What was even more terrifying was that an extremely grim spiritual will burst out from the divine heart. It changed the colors of the world, thunder rumbling and lightning flashed from the sky.

“Do not underestimate the divine powers. You will have to pay the price of your lives for this.” Mojo roared furiously, and its ferocious power overflowed the sky.

The expressions on both Lord of Stone and Lord of Stone’s changed. They could felt an immense threat.

No one had expected that Mojo’s body actually still contained the terrifying spiritual will of the god from the Infernal Court. Moreover, Mojo was still able to release it.

Without a doubt, this was Mojo’s final and strongest trump card. Such a powerful spiritual will was probably something even Mojo itself would find it difficult to withstand.

BANG!
Lord of Stone was the closest to Mojo. It was the first to bear the brunt and was sent flying.

Lord of Stone’s body was unscathed, but its saint soul had suffered a great impact. If it had not just refined six divine wills, it would most likely be in grave danger.

Immediately after, Lord of Sword also suffered a terrifying attack. The sacred sword in its hand, which was a Regal Artifact, shattered into pieces directly.

BOOM!
Lord of Sword could not withstand this power, and its body exploded instantly.

It was not that they were outmatched, but the trump card of Mojo was too terrifying. It was as if the god of Infernal Court in the past had been revived at this moment.

Even the Regal Artifact was shattered, and the Supreme Saint's body was torn apart.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen felt a chill run down his spine. His body was definitely not as strong as the Regal Artifact, much less than Lord of Sword. At the critical moment, he took out the God-Defiance Stele once more.

Rumble.
The God-Defiance Stele acted as a shield, blocking Zhang Ruochen.

Even so, the remaining strength still attacks through the God-Defiance Stele. Zhang Ruochen was badly injured. He almost couldn't hold on and fell into a pool of blood.

After about fifteen minutes of resistance, the vast blood qi released by Mojo was finally suppressed by the God-Defiance Stele. Although it was still surging, it couldn't touch Zhang Ruochen and Dragon Phantom Lord.

The spiritual will of the god of the Infernal Court was also suppressed, but the effect was not obvious.

The reason was that Zhang Ruochen's own strength was not strong enough. He can be invincible in the realm of Saint King. However, there was still a huge gap between him and the Supreme Saint, or even a god.

Even with the God-Defiance Stele in hand, it could not crush the spiritual will of a god.

ROAR!
Dragon Phantom Lord let out a painful roar.

Faced with the impact of the spiritual will of a god, its Saint Soul showed signs of cracking no matter how tough it was.

Zhang Ruochen's Saint Soul was also affected, and his face turned pale.

Buzz
At this moment, a ray of divine light suddenly flew out of Zhang Ruochen's body and blocked the vast spiritual will of the god.

The next moment, the divine light faded and revealed a simple-looking wooden staff. It was the Staff of the Divine Envoy bestowed by Yueshen.

Whenever the Staff of the Divine Envoy was in the outside realm, a Supreme Saint or higher power can activate it. Zhang Ruochen could borrow part of Yueshen's divine force with it.

However, in Kunlun Realm, the Staff of the Divine Envoy had lost its function. It could only be used to communicate with Yueshen but could not borrow divine power. The attack of a Supreme Saint could not activate it either.

But now, under the impact of the god of Infernal Court's spiritual wills, it was the spiritual wills of Yueshen and Shushen that were contained in the Staff of the Divine Envoy that was triggered. Thus, the staff flew out automatically.

When it sensed the spiritual wills of Yueshen and Shushen, the spiritual wills of the god of the Infernal Court were also triggered. It abandoned both Lord of Stone and Lord of Sword and rushed towards the Staff of the Divine Envoy.

In the blink of an eye, all the spiritual wills of the god of the Infernal Court entered the Staff of the Divine Envoy.

For a moment, the Staff of the Divine Envoy shook violently. Light and darkness flickered. Clearly, the spiritual wills of the three gods were fighting.

Fortunately, the Staff of the Divine Envoy was made from the branches of Shushen. It contained robust divine force and never deteriorate. Otherwise, it would have been destroyed.

Zhang Ruochen's expression became serious. He hadn't expected such a turn of events.

'I hope the will of Yueshen and Shushen contained in the wooden staff can suppress the will of the god of Infernal Court. Otherwise, it will be catastrophic,' Zhang Ruochen said in a deep voice.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Mojo. After releasing monstrous blood qi and the will of the spirit of the god, Mojo was like a deflated rubber ball and its true form had withered.

Zhang Ruochen snorted. He deployed the Zangshan Demonic Mirror and said, “Suppress it.”

Mojo had also been attacked by the spiritual will of the gods. The power was uncontrollable. Now that it was heavily injured and its blood qi was suppressed by the God-Defiance Stele, it could no longer resist.

The surface of the Zangshan Demonic Mirror shone with a dark light. Like an enormous black hole, absorbed the true form of Mojo right away.

In any case, suppressing Mojo’s true form first could eliminate plenty of hidden dangers and prevent any further changes.

Chapter 2122: Someone from the Imperial Court
Zangshan Demonic Mirror shook violently. Countless profound demonic inscriptions appeared on the surface of the mirror. It unleashed an even stronger suction force to devour the vast divine Blood Qi

There was a hint of surprise on Zhang Ruochen’s face. Initially, he had wanted to retrieve Zangshan Demonic Mirror. Never had he expected this to happen.

He could sense that the implement spirit of Zangshan Demonic Mirror had awakened. It was craving the divine Blood Qi.

Zhang Ruochen believed that Zangshan Demonic Mirror tried to devour the divine Blood Qi to heal its damage.

With a wave of his hand, Zhang Ruochen put away God-Defiance Stele. He then looked at the Staff of the Divine Envoy again.

Although the crash between the spiritual wills of the three deities only happened inside the Staff of the Divine Envoy, it had caused a big impact on the outside world.

With the Staff of the Divine Envoy as the center, a terrifying spiritual storm formed within a 300-meter radius. It was so powerful that it could even tear a Supreme Saint’s will to pieces.

Dragon Phantom Lord had already retreated far enough with Zhang Ruochen to avoid getting dragged into it. Its eyes were filled with fear. It had almost been killed.

On the other side, Lord of Sword's shattered body coalesced back together. It looked fine on the surface, but its aura became much weaker.

Lord of Sword was different from ordinary creatures. It was the Swordwill left behind by a sword god from the Middle Ages. It had cultivated a body with all kinds of vital Qi it had gathered. Similar to Dragon Phantom's body, its body could coalesce back together after it dispersed. On top of that, it was not so different from a Supreme Saint's body.

As long as the core of the Swordwill was not destroyed, Lord of Sword would be able to reassemble its body. However, It would need to refine its body again to restore its condition to its prime.

It was obvious that Lord of Sword had suffered great injuries. Otherwise, it would not have taken long to reassemble its body.

On the other hand, Lord of Stone was in a much better condition. With its AzureTerra Stone body, it greatly weakened the attack from divine Blood Qi and spiritual power.

At this moment, Lord of Stone and Lord of Sword looked at the Staff of the Divine Envoy with grave expressions.

After an hour of long stare, the Staff of the Divine Envoy finally calmed down. Everything, including the spiritual storm, was restored to its peace.

Despite that, Zhang Ruochen did not approach the Staff of the Divine rashly. Instead, he released a wisp of spiritual power to probe into it.

"Huh? The spiritual will of Infernal Court's deity has yet been destroyed. Instead, it was integrated into the Staff of the Divine Envoy." There was a slight change in Zhang Ruochen's expression.

He reached out and took the Staff of the Divine Envoy, holding it in his hand.

He could clearly feel that the Staff of the Divine Envoy had become different. It faintly emitted an evil aura.

One could only conclude that this spiritual will of the Infernal Court's deity was strong. The spiritual wills of Yueshen and Tree God left in the Staff of

the Divine Envoy could only restrict it mutually. They sort of neutralizing each other. Their most fundamental forces fused with each other.

However, for Zhang Ruochen, this was the best result. At least he had solved a big problem.

The current Staff of the Divine Envoy contained powerful spiritual power, but it was full of sinister aura. On the surface of the staff, a vague devil mark appeared faintly. It seemed to have a life. The staff would devour any approaching spiritual power.

Zhang Ruochen—the owner of Staff of the Divine Envoy—had his spiritual power devoured by it several times, so he could not accurately figure the situation inside the staff.

After carefully sizing up the staff for a moment, Zhang Ruochen suddenly had a thought. He whispered, “If the true body of Mojo is smelted into the staff, the staff may become a powerful spiritual power Saint Artifact.”

Spiritual power Saint Artifacts were very rare, and high-level ones were even more precious. Zhang Ruochen had killed many elites, but he had not obtained much high-level spiritual power Saint Artifacts. The only one he could use was Golden Thunder Orb.

With Zhang Ruochen’s powerful spiritual power, if he had a top-level spiritual power Saint Artifact, he might be able to kill a top Saint King with just his spiritual power.

“Oh no. The power that Mojo released just now is too strong. It has triggered the incomplete divine array in Dragon Temple.”

When Zhang Ruochen was deep in his thought, Lord of Stone suddenly spoke in a deep voice.

Zhang Ruochen immediately reacted. He turned his eyes and noticed a strange movement in Dragon Temple’s main building not far away. A faint divine light burst out, and a terrible aura spread out.

Complicated array patterns emerged from the ground and spread in all directions.

The divine array was extremely powerful. Even the war of Gods in the past had only crippled it, not completely destroyed it.

It had stayed silent for 100,000 years. Under the impact of the divine power of the Infernal Court's deity, the divine array was finally activated again.

Dragon Phantom Lord said anxiously, "Master, if the divine array is revived, there will definitely be a huge change on True Dragon Island. It might destroy everything. We have to leave immediately."

The divine array—despite its incomplete state—was powerful enough to slay most Supreme Saints and even cause deities some damages.

"Kunlun has become a Battlefield of Merits. At this stage, Supreme Saints are forbidden to join the battle. If you go out like this, the Emissaries Vigilants from Infernal Court will throw you a tribulation that kills you. So, you can only hide," said Zhang Ruochen with a grim look.

Those powerhouses from Infernal Court must have spread the news about the presence of Supreme-Saint level elites on True Dragon Island. Therefore, the Emissaries Vigilants of Infernal Court would certainly keep their eyes on them.

Fortunately, True Dragon Island was isolated from the world. Even the power of deities could not penetrate it, so Lord of Stone and the others had been safe and sound.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Secret Tome of Time and Space and wanted to send them inside. However, he changed his mind later and tried opening the gateway to Qiankun Realm instead.

He was worried the Secret Tome of Time and Space would not slip under the radar of deities from Infernal Court.

It was likely because Zhang Ruochen's cultivation of the Path of Dimension had improved greatly, and True Dragon Island was unstable. He could successfully open the gateway.

The Dragon Phantom Lord was the most proactive. He was the first to enter Qiankun Realm.

Lord of Stone turned to look at Lord of Sword and said, "Swordie, let's go. If we stay on True Dragon Island, it will be hard for us to make breakthrough in our cultivation. We can make great progress in our cultivation in the vast heaven and earth in Infernal Court and Celestial Court."

Hearing this, Lord of Sword did not say a word. Its gaze landed on the main building of Dragon Temple for a moment. Apparently, it was reluctant to leave. After all, this was its homeland.

Then, along with Lord of Stone, Lord of Sword stepped into the temporary dimensional gate Zhang Ruochen had built. They bid farewell to their homeland and did not know when they could return.

Zhang Ruochen immediately closed the gateway. At the same time, he retrieved and tucked Zangshan Demonic Mirror—that had swallowed a large amount of divine Blood Qi—away. He immediately rushed out of the island at the highest speed after performing Dimensional Shift with no hesitation. He did not want to stay on True Dragon Island.

Ao Xinyan and the others had already left the island before him. He did not have to worry about them.

As time passed, more and more divine array patterns emerged from the ground. They spread very quickly. Zhang Ruochen could not help but feel a strong sense of urgency.

Finally, Zhang Ruochen came to the edge of True Dragon Island. All he could see were dense array patterns interweaving into a net. The divine array was almost complete.

A brilliant light flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. He merged with space and turned into a stream of light. He flashed through the gaps of the divine array patterns.

Rumble.
The sea where True Dragon Island was located was experiencing violent power fluctuations. Billions of divine lights burst out. It was as if an incredible divine artifact had descended.

However, in just a moment, the divine lights became dim. All the power fluctuations disappeared without a trace. Only the surface of the sea was still surging. The phenomenon lasted for a long time.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the surface of the sea thousands of miles away. Looking from afar, he could no longer see True Dragon Island.

The incomplete divine array was activated, so True Dragon Island was once again sealed and isolated from the world.

Perhaps only the deities of Infernal Court could reopen True Dragon Island.

“The divine array sealed off True Dragon Island. Let’s hope that all parties, be it Infernal Court or Celestial Court, will give up the idea of taking the key to the World Gate for themselves,” Zhang Ruochen whispered.

However, he was also a little worried. After all, the Fane of Darkness had predicted that the key to the World Gate would appear on True Dragon Island. In other words, it could also predict that it was no longer on the island.

Of course, with his current strength, as long as Infernal Court did not send anyone with cultivation rank higher than a Supreme Saint, he was confident that he could protect the key to the World Gate.

At this moment, there were still many cultivators, from both Celestial Court and Infernal Court, in the waters near True Dragon Island. Most of them were unwilling to give up on the key to the World Gate.

Even though they had all been expelled, none of them believed that Zhang Ruochen would stay on True Dragon Island for a long time. As for the Supreme-Saint level monsters on the island, they could still find a way to deal with them.

But now, all the powerful figures could not help but widen their eyes. Never had they expected True Dragon Island to be sealed again; the seal was a hundred times stronger than the previous one.

“What did Zhang Ruochen do? How could a divine array be activated? D*mn it.” The powerful figures in Infernal Court were furious.

The Seven Top Killers from Nether Hall and the three Emperors and five Reverends of the Bone Clan gathered together. They could only watch as the divine array sealed true Dragon Island. The atmosphere was extremely heavy.

Xuanming Wushang’s face was gloomy. “The divine array forbids us to enter True Dragon Island.from now on. Zhang Ruochen alone has made Infernal Court suffer so much. We can’t let him go.”

“Yes, Zhang Ruochen must die,” Emperor Shiling said coldly.

Five surviving Reverends of Bone Clan, including the Either-armed Reverend, hated Zhang Ruochen to his core. They wanted nothing more than to burn Zhang Ruochen into ashes.

Just as Xuanming Wushang and the others were about to attack, a spiritual sense swept over them and sent them a message, telling them to retreat immediately.

There was only one reason—it was no longer a secret that the key to the World Gate was in Ying Yang Sea. Everyone had heard the news and moved. If they continued to stay, they were afraid of even greater changes.

“Let Zhang Ruochen live a little longer. When I attended the Battlefield of Merits in Kunlun, I’ll come and kill him.”

Although Xuanming Wushang and the others showed reluctance, they didn’t dare to disobey a deity’s order. They quickly retreated.

In other waters, four huge warships were hidden in the fog. They belonged to Thousand-Star Civilization, Giant Spirit Civilization, Beidou Civilization, and Celestial Dragon Realm.

“Zhang Ruochen is indeed powerful. He can activate a divine array and cut off everyone’s plan from a root.” Great Spirit King squinted.

Immortal Minghu sighed. “Who would have thought that Zhang Ruochen could sweep True Dragon Island by himself? He’s the biggest winner. I wonder if he got the key to the World Gate.”

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars was struck by the words she heard. She had told Zhang Ruochen that the short, skinny old man might know where the key to the World Gate was. However, the old man was elusive, and some events had happened. Did Zhang Ruochen succeed in catching the old man?

‘Perhaps the best outcome is to keep the key to the World Gate sealed on True Dragon Island,’ the Maiden of a Thousand Stars thought to herself.

Ao Xukong smiled and said, “As long as Infernal Court is not advantaged, it’s a good thing. Now that True Dragon Island has been re-sealed, it’s meaningless to stay here. Everyone, Let’s go.”

Hearing this, many elites could not help but smile bitterly. Never had they expected things to turn out this way.

Seeing the battleships of Celestial Dragon Realm set sail, the battleships from Thousand-Star Civilization, Giant Spirit Civilization, and Beidou Civilization didn’t stay any longer. They urged their battleships to leave.

Sensing that the elites hiding in the dark were quietly retreating, Zhang Ruochen also set off toward the sea area where Silver Dragon Island was located.

“Huh?”

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen stopped and looked at the hazy sea area ahead.

Even though a dense fog was blocking him, he could still clearly see a canoe slowly approaching him from thousands of miles away.

There were two figures standing on the green boat, a man and a woman.

The young woman in white was a peerless beauty. Her black hair was as long as a waterfall, her body delicate. Her eyes were bright and deep, emitting a holy light. She was full of grace. With a refined and quiet temperament, she was like an ethereal goddess descending from the heavens.

The beauty was someone Zhang Ruochen knew very well. She was Nalan Danqing, the Divine Scripture Maiden who was a part of the Nine-heavens Maiden.

As he gave her a once over, his eyes lit up. He could clearly sense the changes in her. She was emitting a mysterious aura of Confucianism of ten million years of knowledge and cultivation. It was elegant, natural, and unfathomable. Could it be that Sacred Confucian Tome had merged with her?

With the Divine Scripture Maiden’s current cultivation level in Path of Confucianism, even Shangguan Que might not be able to beat her.

As for the man, he was shrouded in black fog. Zhang Ruochen could not see his appearance clearly, but the blood-red robe on his body was particularly eye-catching.

“Ye Bei, the Exterminator who slay the lands at nightfall.” Zhang Ruochen’s gaze was fixed on the man in the blood-red robe.

Judging from the man’s robe, Zhang Ruochen could tell his identity. He was the number one killing machine of the Imperial Court’s Ministry of War—the Exterminator.

It was mainly because the blood-red robe had left Zhang Ruochen a deep impression. Back then, at the same location—Ying Yang Sea—he had seen it before. A glimpse of it had sent him shivers.

He could still recall that Bu Qianfan, Wan Huayu, and the others had shown great fear when they saw the Exterminator.

Ye Bei, the Exterminator, had slain 19 counties of Southern Region in one night, leaving no one alive. It was terrifying to even think about it.

In the hearts of the billions of living beings in Kunlun, the Exterminator was the embodiment of fear. He had a strong deterrent effect on all beings in Kunlun, which had contributed to the long-term stability under the rule of Imperial Court.

In terms of the number of lives killed, no one in Kunlun could surpass the Exterminator.

Among the people Zhang Ruochen had met, no one had a murderous intent stronger than the Exterminator.

If one's spiritual will was not strong enough, they could get affected by the Exterminator's presence easily, letting fear take over their minds.

Before Kunlun was revived, the Exterminator was already a top elite at Saint Kinghood. Now, he was even more unfathomable. He had slaughtered countless Ashuran powerhouses in Southern Region.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were fixed on Divine Scripture Maiden and the Exterminator. He had already figured their purpose of coming to Ying Yang Sea.

Swoosh.
Suddenly, the Exterminator rushed out of the canoe. He condensed a terrifying killing intent and shot a punch strike at Zhang Ruochen directly.

A terrifying fist print filled with killing intent appeared along with faint wailing cries of countless creatures. It was clearly a fist technique, but it carried an attack targetting spiritual will.

Seeing the Exterminator's attack, Zhang Ruochen could not help but let out a cold snort. He also launched a strike with his fist.

A divine shadow and a phantom shadow appeared at the same time. As the shadows walked side by side, the surface of the sea shook, huge waves surging.

Zhang Ruochen had refined a top-tier aquatic divine object. On top of that, he was currently at Ying Yang Sea. Hence, Zhang Ruochen could unleash a more powerful move from Luoshui Fist Technique.

BANG!
The Exterminator's fist print was instantly destroyed.

The divine and phantom shadows continued to walk on the waves. Looking down from above, they charged at the Exterminator.

Clang.
The Exterminator's body was different. He reached out and pulled out the Saint blade on his back.

The Saint blade was extremely sharp. The blade was blood-red in color, and it was filled with killing intent. No one knew how much blood it had been stained with.

This blade had an extraordinary origin. When the Exterminator had slain the 19 counties of Southern Region, a strange phenomenon occurred in the sky. Blood-red lightning pierced through heaven and earth, splitting open an ancient tomb. This Saint blade flew out from the ancient tomb and acknowledged the Exterminator as its master.

It was rumored that the blood-red Saint blade belonged to a Supreme Saint who had massacred countless people tens of thousands of years ago. In his lifetime, he had slain hundreds of millions of lives. He was known as the "Mortal Slayer." The blood-red Saint blade was forged with endless blood and killing intent. Ordinary people simply could not wield it.

Although the blood-red Saint blade was only a regal weapon, it was not much weaker than an ordinary Supreme Artifact in terms of attack power.

In the hands of the Exterminator, it could be even more powerful than an ordinary Supreme Artifact.

The Exterminator wielded the blood-red Saint blade and slashed out with lightning speed.

A 30,000-meter-long blade light slashed out. It was indestructible, cutting through the huge waves. At the same time, it shattered the divine and phantom shadows.

As a result, the 30,000-meter-long blade light, too, shattered inch by inch. It was obliterated by the gentle Fistwill contained in the Luoshui Fist technique.

Zhang Ruochen took a deep look at the Exterminator and thought to himself, ‘It seems that the Exterminator has indeed inherited techniques from that Mortal Slayer. He has displayed the slaying blade technique that slaughters, and he has merged with the blade. His combat strength is amazing, and he is almost as powerful as a Reverend of the Bone clan.”

When one practiced cultivation on the Path of Slaughter, the more cultivators they killed, the stronger they became.

Kunlun had become a Battlefield of Merits, which had given the Exterminator the advantage.

Zhang Ruochen changed his fist movement in an instant. He mobilized the Precepts of Water and Precepts of Fist, causing more turbulent waves on the sea’s surface. The waves condensed into a giant sword and slashed down in the air.

The Exterminator immediately changed his blade move. He slashed from bottom to top, trying to block the giant sword formed by the waves.

Rumble.

Before the giant sword fell, a crack was formed at the sea’s surface, revealing a huge gully that was thousands of miles long.

The blade light that the Exterminator sent out shattered, and the huge sword continued to slash down with unstoppable momentum.

RAAAWRRR!
The Exterminator let out a long roar and raised the blood-colored Saint blade high above his head.

At this moment, the Exterminator freed his restraints and unleashed his murderous intent without reservation, dyeing the entire realm blood-colored. He became the main character of this world, and there were billions of corpses beneath his feet.

However, as the giant sword slashed down, the terrifying vision formed by the murderous intent collapsed.

The Exterminator tried his best to resist, but his body kept falling. He completely sank into the sea gully.

“Please stop.”

Seeing that the Exterminator was about to lose his resistance, Divine Scripture Maiden’s voice suddenly sounded.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at her. He withdrew his Fistwill and let the giant sword dissipate.

BOOM.
The Exterminator broke through the water current and rose into the air. He returned to the canoe.

Seeing this, Divine Scripture Maiden couldn’t help but let out a sigh of relief. She steered the canoe and sped toward Zhang Ruochen.

“I didn’t expect your strength to be so strong. It seems that Son of Darkness has indeed been defeated by you,” the Exterminator said solemnly.

Obviously, he had heard about what happened on True Dragon Island, so he was trying to test Zhang Ruochen’s strength.

Zhang Ruochen said indifferently, “You’d better don’t make a move against me from now on. Otherwise, I won’t show mercy no matter who you are.”

He did not bother whether the Exterminator’s aim was to test him. As long as he attacked him, he would be an enemy. Zhang Ruochen would never show mercy to an enemy.

When she saw that Zhang Ruochen was angry, Divine Scripture Maiden quickly said, “Zhang Ruochen, don’t be angry. Ye Bei didn’t mean any harm.”

After a pause, Divine Scripture Maiden continued, “When Imperial court found out about Infernal Court’s plot, they immediately sent me and Ye Bei. Unfortunately, we were too late.”

“Infernal Court sent Son of Darkness, the Seven Top Killers from Nether Hall, the three emperors and twelve Reverands of the Bone Clan, and tens

of thousands of Saint King troops. Contrary, Imperial Court only deployed the two of you. It doesn't matter whether it's early or late, the outcome would be the same," Zhang Ruochen said.

Divine Scripture Maiden sighed. "Imperial Court is under relentless attacks from Infernal Court, our force is already stretched thin. There's no way to send large number of elites to Ying Yang Sea."

"Kunlun has only been recovering for a short time. Although the number of Saints and Saint Kings has increased in Kunlun, we are still a lack of top powerhouses. There are even fewer who listen to Imperial Court's orders. If it weren't Blood Dripper[1], Imperial Court would be in even worse situation."

Imperial Court in Kunlun was indeed very powerful, but its strength could not hold a candle to Infernal Court's. It was not easy for them to be able to hold on until now.

If it were not for the key to the World Gate—which was deemed highly important, Imperial Court would not have purposely recalled the Exterminator from the Battlefield of Merits at Southern Region and deployed him to Ying Yang Sea instead.

[1] The Swordsoul of Chi Yao's Blood Dripper.

Chapter 2123: The Painter's Death

Although Zhang Ruochen didn't have a good relationship with the imperial court, he had to admit that they played a huge role in keeping the five regions in a relatively stable state ever since Kunlun Realm became the Battlefield of Merits.

However, as the attacks of the Infernal Court became fiercer, the imperial court's power became further stretched to the limit. The key problem was that there was a lack of top powerhouses. No matter how strong Blood Dripper was, it could not defeat all powerhouses of Infernal Court's Ten Clans.

Many thoughts flashed through Zhang Ruochen's mind. He said, "You're too late. There's an incomplete divine formation that has been revived, so True Dragon Island has been re-sealed. No one can enter nor leave."

Upon hearing this, Divine Scripture Maiden and the Exterminator's expressions changed. They had came for the key to the World Gate. Never had they expected that they couldn't even enter True Dragon Island.

At this moment, they also finally understood why Zhang Ruochen showed up here and not on True Dragon Island.

“Is there any news about the key to the World Gate?” the Exterminator asked.

Zhang Ruochen pondered for a moment and said, “The key to the World Gate is extremely mysterious. No one should be able to find it. Otherwise, World Spirit would be in danger.”

Although the key to the World Gate, which had turned into the short skinny old man, had already fallen into their hands, it was clearly not Zhang Ruochen’s intention to hand it over to the imperial court.

There were many reasons for this. Most importantly, the imperial court was an enemy of Zhang Ruochen. There was no reason for him to hand the key to the World Gate over to them. Secondly, the imperial court was too weak, and it would be difficult for them to protect the key to the World Gate.

Since the key to the World Gate was derived from Kunlun Realm’s Origin , it couldn’t be brought out of Kunlun Realm. If not for this reason, they would have handled it over to the taboo character of Yin Yang Sea. This would undoubtedly be the safest.

“In that case, I should return to Southern Region,” the Exterminator was very anxious.

Without any delay, the Exterminator rose into the air, turned into a streak of blood-red light and left in a flash.

Seeing the Exterminator leave, Zhang Ruochen moved and appeared on a canoe, standing face-to-face with Divine Scripture Maiden.

Their eyes met, and Zhang Ruochen saw the tiredness in Divine Scripture Maiden’s eyes. He could not help but ask:

“Are you okay?”

Zhang Ruochen and Divine Scripture Maiden asked at the same time.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said as casually as possible, “I’m alright. I’ve been walking around and admiring all kinds of scenery.”

He didn’t want to talk about all the killings and blood.

Speaking of which, it had been a long time since he last saw Divine Scripture Maiden. Although she had been to Peacock Manor, she came in the form of the Nine-heavens Maiden. They hadn't even had a chance to talk properly.

"Too many cultivators have died at your hands. I'm afraid that Infernal and Celestial Courts will not let this matter rest. You must be careful," Divine Scripture Maiden reminded him seriously.

She knew that Zhang Ruochen was very powerful. He was already a top-tier cultivator who was in the first-tier below Supreme Sainthood. However, things had gotten more dangerous for him since he gained more attention. He couldn't afford to be careless. Any carelessness could be fatal.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Many people want to kill me, but I'm still alive. I have to thank these external pressures so that I was able to improve my abilities in such a short time. Don't worry about me, I will be careful."

"I just don't want anything to happen to you," Divine Scripture Maiden whispered. A hint of sadness flashed in her eyes.

Sensing the change in Divine Scripture Maiden's emotions, Zhang Ruochen felt a bit uneasy. He quickly asked, "Are you alright? Did something happen?"

"I'm fine. I have to deal with something in the imperial court, so I can't stay for long. Take care," Divine Scripture Maiden's eyes flashed. She didn't dare to look Zhang Ruochen in the eye.

Seeing this, Zhang Ruochen became even more suspicious. He stared at Divine Scripture Maiden, "Tell me, what exactly happened? As long as it's within my capability, I'll help you."

He didn't want to have anything to do with the imperial court, but he couldn't just stand by and watch when things had something to do with Divine Scripture Maiden.

Divine Scripture Maiden slowly sat down on the canoe. She hugged her knees and bit her lips. A faint mist appeared in her eyes, and she looked as if she had been wronged.

Zhang Ruochen's heart skipped a beat. He had never seen Divine Scripture Maiden in such a weak state.

Even when she was trapped in the first level of Endless Abyss, she still appeared very strong, unlike how she was now.

Just when Zhang Ruochen wanted to ask more questions, Divine Scripture Maiden murmured, “Elder Art Saint, he has passed away… he…”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen was stunned. He then stared at her in disbelief, thinking that he had misheard what was said.

Chu Siyuan had practiced for hundreds of years. Before Kunlun Realm recovered, he had already reached the pinnacle of Saint Realm and became a Grandmaster of Path of Confucianism. He had accumulated rich experiences.

In the Battlefield of Merits of Zuling Realm, Chu Siyuan had made a breakthrough and became a Spirit Saint in one fell swoop. After that, he became stronger and stronger. He was one of the top cultivators of Path of Confucianism .

Moreover, Chu Siyuan was in possession of Path of Confucianism’s most precious treasure — the Portrait of Seven Lives and Seven Deaths. With this, he should be able to protect himself even if he met an invincible enemy.

For those reasons, Zhang Ruochen found it hard to believe that Chu Siyuan had died.

“When did this happen?” Zhang Ruochen asked with a heavy heart.

Divine Scripture Maiden said with a sad look in her eyes, “Just three days ago.”

“With Elder Chu’s… shrewdness and power, who could kill him?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Divine Scripture Maiden lowered her head even further, and her eyes began to well up. She said, “It was Great Prince Mara of Rakshasa.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned. He hadn’t expected the powerhouses of Rakshasa to do this. After all, Rakshasa’s main battlefield was in Southern Region, not Central Region.

Central Region had its own Battlefield of Merits, but it was dominated by the Immortal Vampires.

In Rakshasa, those whose cultivation had reached the Precept Domain level could be conferred the title of ‘Prince’. Above that, there was also ‘Great Prince’, whose status was even more revered.

Any Great Prince had to be at least in the third tier below the Supreme Sainthood. They were usually well-known in Celestial and Infernal Courts.

However, even if he encountered Great Prince of Rakshasa, Chu Siyuan should still have a chance to escape since he could rely on the Portrait of Seven Lives and Seven Deaths. Furthermore, what had Chu Siyuan done to provoke Rakshasa suddenly?

“Not only Elder Art Saint, but the entire Art Sect has been destroyed by Great Prince Mara’s army,” Divine Scripture Maiden could no longer hold back her tears and started to sob softly.

She was once an apprentice under the Four Schools of Confucianism. Art Sect was her root, and Chu Siyuan was also her master. She was inevitably sad that they were all gone.

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. At this point, he had understood that it was not Chu Siyuan who provoked Rakshasa, but it was Rakshasa who came to destroy Art Sect.

Zhang Ruochen asked in a deep voice, “Why did Rakshasa want to destroy Art Sect?”

“That’s because Art Sect still has the last Saint Ancient Tea Tree, which was planted by the Confucius forefathers. It’s the spiritual symbol of Path of Confucianism. Even the deities from Infernal Court would be tempted by it. They treat it as treasure since it can help them comprehend the supreme way of the gods,” Divine Scripture Maiden said.

The relationship between Path of Confucianism and the imperial court was too deep. Their fates were closely intertwined as they rise and fall together.

Tens of millions of years ago, the four Confucius forefathers each planted a Saint Ancient Tea Tree. During the middle age catastrophe, three of those were destroyed, so the one by Art Sect was the only one left.

Saint Ancient Tea Tree meant a lot to Path of Confucianism. It was as if the Confucius forefathers were still alive. It also held an extremely high position in the hearts of the disciples of Path of Confucianism.

A large Rakshasa army had sneaked into Central Region and attacked Art Sect. This was something that Path of Confucianism and the imperial court had never expected. By then, it was too late for anyone to step in and help.

Since Chu Siyuan was dead, Saint Ancient Tea Tree had most likely fallen into Rakshasa's hands.

"The Rakshasa army, led by Great Prince Mara had thousands of dukes and hundreds of princes. Although Art Sect has tens of thousands of disciples, most of them are weak. There was no way that they could defend themselves.

"Elder Art Saint originally had the chance to escape, but he chose to stay and fight for Art Sect. He risked his life to protect Saint Ancient Tea Tree. It was planted by the Confucius forefathers and represents the spirit of Path of Confucianism. No matter what, it must not fall into the hands of Infernal Court.

"Elder Luo Xu received the news and wanted to help, but he couldn't enter into Art Sect. He was heavily injured by Great Prince Mara and chased by Rakshasa cultivators. Even until now, we don't know whether he's dead or alive.

"Within a short period of time, Art Sect became like hell. The Rakshasa army killed everyone they saw. Elder Art Saint fought with all his might, yet he was powerless to turn the situation around. He was grabbed by Great Prince Mara, hung by his neck, and hung on Saint Ancient Tea Tree. Great Prince Mara used a demonic blade to cut off Elder Art Saint's flesh piece by piece and eat it. In the end, only his white bones were left swaying in the wind."

Divine Scripture Maiden started to cry loudly as she spoke. Tears kept flowing down her face.

At this point, she had completely lost control of her emotions. She couldn't accept the fact that a respectable Elder had died so tragically.

Zhang Ruochen was stunned upon hearing the news. He felt like he was suffocating. He clenched his fists, and his joints cracked. Cold killing intent surged in his eyes.

There should be a bottomline for everything. Great Prince Mara not only killed Chu Siyuan, but also cut off his flesh piece-by-piece and ate them in front of him. How cruel was that?

Needless to say, Chu Siyuan must have suffered unimaginable pain before he died eventually.

Zhang Ruochen had a strong impression of Chu Siyuan. Their first encounter was when Chu Siyuan was leading Ling Feiyu, who had damaged her willpower, to escape the pursuit of the saints of the evil way.

At that time, Chu Siyuan only drew a picture and destroyed all 100,000 troops of the Qitian Clan Immortal Vampires. It was absolutely shocking.

Then, Chu Siyuan used the Portrait of Seven Lives and Seven Deaths, Art Sect's precious treasure, to help Ling Feiyu recover her willpower. That was also when he and Ling Feiyu started a special relationship.

In Zhang Ruochen's heart, Chu Siyuan was a very stubborn person, but he was full of righteousness. He abhorred evil, and treated it as if it was his enemy.

He still remembered that Chu Siyuan had gone to Shengming City with him and taught him not to go astray.

When Sect of the Blood God was in great danger, Chu Siyuan had set aside his prejudice and stepped in to fight the missus of the Sect of the Blood God leader. Even though he wasn't strong enough, he didn't retreat.

Now, he had died protecting Art Sect and Saint Ancient Tea Tree. He had demonstrated the noble character of Confucianism to the fullest.

Thinking that the old man had been eaten and turned into bones, and the entire Art Sect scorched, Zhang Ruochen was in a daze for a moment. His eyes welled up unconsciously.

War was cruel and merciless after all. Perhaps one day, his family and close friends would all die in battle.

Who would be next?

Chapter 2124: Their own Respective Paths

Looking at the Divine Scripture Maiden, Zhang Ruochen felt very unpleasant. He knew that she must have been extremely depressed.

As a Divine Scripture Maiden, she couldn't show such a weak side in the imperial court. She need not to worried and could release her suppressed grief now that there was no one else around.

Zhang Ruochen was the only one facing Divine Scripture Maiden.

It seems that Zhang Ruochen had a special place in her heart.

‘It is still far from enough to protect the people and things I care about with my current strength. I need to become stronger. If I don’t become a god, I will become an ant in the end,’ Zhang Ruochen thought to himself as he looked up at the sky.

As time passed, the situation in Kunlun Realm would only become more and more serious. No one could tell how long they could withstand the surging attacks of the Infernal Court.

Countless top-cultivators from Kunlun Realm were defeated by the Infernal Court a hundred thousand years ago. Whether they could still defy the heavens are a no-answer question.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head slightly and put aside all the distracting thoughts. He squatted down, he said softly, “Senior Chu sacrificed himself for a martyr. His morality will live on, and his bravery will be the song that bard sings. We should inherit his will and turn grief into strength to fight against the Infernal Court to the end. We must not let his blood flow in vain.”

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen walked towards Divine Scripture Maiden. He smelled the faint fragrance on her body and felt pity for her. He could not help but reach out a hand, twirling his sleeve and wiping away the tears in her eyes.

Zhang Ruochen recalled the first time they met. At that time, Divine Scripture Maiden was high up like a goddess in the nine heavens. He did not dare to have the slightest sense of blasphemy.

Time had changed. Now, Zhang Ruochen was famous throughout the world. Many from the Celestial Court and the Infernal Court would think twice before facing him. Divine Scripture Maiden, on the other hand, seemed delicate in his eyes.

Divine Scripture Maiden slowly raised her head. A blush appeared on her soul-stirring face. She quickly turned to avoid Zhang Ruochen.

Divine Scripture Maiden’s emotions gradually calmed down. After a cry, she felt much better.

“Elder Art Saint knew that he wouldn’t be able to escape, so he used a secret technique to let a disciple of the Art Sect escape with the Portrait of Seven Lives and Seven Deaths. He didn’t let this treasure fall into the hands of the Rakshasa,” Divine Scripture Maiden whispered as she took out an old painting.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t unfamiliar with this painting. He had once shared seven lives with Ling Feiyu in the illusory world of the painting. Although it wasn’t real, everything he had experienced was as real as it was. It was engraved so deeply in his heart that it was unforgettable.

Seeing the Portrait of Seven Lives and Seven Deaths again made Zhang Ruochen sigh with emotion. Unfortunately, he would never see the stubborn and boastful “Old man Chu” again.

Zhang Ruochen sighed lightly and said, “Senior Chu entrusted the Portrait of Seven Lives and Seven Deaths to you, which is the same as trusting the hope of the Art Sect to you. The disciples of the Art Sect are all over the world. Even if the Rakshasa destroys the Art Sect, it will not be truly destroyed.”

“Danqing, you are the scion of Senior Chu. As long as you show up and raise your arm, all the disciples of the Art Sect in the world will definitely gather and rebuild the Art Sect. This is the best consolation for Senior Chu’s spirit in heaven.”

The Four Schools of Confucianism had existed in Kunlun Realm for tens of millions of years. They had experienced countless storms and tribulations, but they had never fallen. Their foundations were unfathomable. Their Paths had long been spread across the other worlds. Even if Kunlun Realm was destroyed, Confucianism would not perish.

The catastrophe at the end of the Middle Ages had spread far and wide. Qin Sect, Chess Sect, and the Calligraphy Sect had all been destroyed along with the Saint Ancient Tea tree of the three sects. But after that, the three sects had been rebuilt. They were still as powerful as ever.

“I won’t let Senior Art Saint fail. After the catastrophe, the Art Sect will be stronger than before.” Divine Scripture Maiden stood up with determination in her eyes.

Zhang Ruochen also stood up and said solemnly, “Senior Chu has been gracious to me. I will avenge for him. where is Great Prince Mara now? I will take his head as a tribute to Senior Chu.”

As of today, Zhang Ruochen was very clear about the information of the powerhouses of the ten clans of Infernal Court, including Great Prince Mara.

Great Prince Mara was a top-notch cultivator below the Supreme Saint. Although he was not as famous as Yan Wushen, he should not be underestimated.

Over the centuries, Great Prince Mara had dominated the Battlefield of Merits from many great worlds. His favorite hobby was to cut off the flesh of the captured top-cultivators and eat them in front of him, cruel indeed.

“Great Prince Mara is not in Kunlun Realm now. He is escorting the Saint Ancient Tea Tree back to the Infernal Court.” Divine Scripture Maiden shook her head.

Zhang Ruochen frowned slightly and said, “Keep a close eye on Great Prince Mara. If he shows up, let me know immediately. I will sever his head off his neck.”

He did not do this for Confucianism, nor for the imperial court. He only did it because he admired Chu Siyuan’s integrity and wanted to repay the favor he had done in the past.

Divine Scripture Maiden nodded slightly and said, “Well, the situation of Confucianism is very chaotic now. I have to go back and deal with it as soon as possible. You have to take care of yourself.”

Ever since the news of the destruction of the Art Sect spread, all the scholars in the world were furious and wanted to avenge Chu Siyuan. More and more great Confucianists and saint Confucianists had rushed to the southern region. If anything went wrong, the impact on Confucianism would undoubtedly be greater.

If the key to the World Gate wasn’t the priority, Divine Scripture Maiden would not have put aside the matter of Confucianism and rushed to the Ying Yang Sea at this time.

“You’d take care as well. If you run into trouble, send a message to me. You should know that as long as you send a message, I’ll do my best to help you, no matter how dangerous could it be,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Although Divine Scripture Maiden was from the imperial court, and someone close to Chi Yao, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t just stand by and watch as long as something happened to her.

Today, Zhang Ruochen finally dared to express the feelings he had from the bottom of his heart.

Perhaps this was also a breakthrough in the state of mind. Without this breakthrough, even if Zhang Ruochen had attained the Path's Anterior realm, he would not be able to become a Supreme Saint.

The Divine Scripture Maiden's delicate body trembled, and a warm feeling emerged in her heart. For her, as long as she had Zhang Ruochen's words, it would be enough.

What else could she ask for in her life?

She only hated that the knot between them had been unsolvable for thousands of years. With the gap that Chi Yao and Zhang Ruochen had drawn with their own hands, the entire Kunlun had been divided into two. It was destined that the two of them would not have a happy ending.

"Farewell. Perhaps this time, when we return to the imperial city, we will really be parted forever."

The Divine Scripture Maiden thought so. Some things could only be hidden from the bottom of her heart, but she did not tell Zhang Ruochen in the end. She smiled bitterly and did not dare to turn around. She was afraid that Zhang Ruochen would see the tears in her eyes again. She steered the canoe and slowly disappeared into the fog.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the surface of the sea for a long time. His eyes were filled with complicated emotions as he looked in the direction where Divine Scripture Maiden had left.

The news of Chu Siyuan's death had touched him greatly. It made him yearn to become stronger. Not only would he become stronger, but he would also make the people around him stronger and can survive in the chaotic world.

Phew
Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath and cast aside his distracting thoughts. He continued to rush to the sea region where Silver Dragon Island was.

Ao Xinyan had been waiting for him outside the island early on.

Zhang Ruochen briefly informed the situation on True Dragon Island, which made Ao Xinyan very happy.

Even if the key to the World Gate was no longer on True Dragon Island, it was still the sacred ground of the Divine Dragon Clan. Ao Xinyan naturally did not want any outsiders to casually step on it.

It was undoubtedly the best outcome for the divine array to re-seal True Dragon Island.

As soon as he landed on the island, Zhang Ruochen ran into the Heaven-devourer Dragon and several dragon kings from Mount Zulong. They were waiting for him and the reason why was obvious.

With a flip of his hand, Zhang Ruochen took out an Exquisite Dimensional Orb and released all the rescued dragon clans from Mount Zulong.

Although Mount Zulong had suffered a great calamity, the Infernal Court wanted to use their Divine Dragon Bloodline to activate True Dragon Island. They did not kill wantonly. Therefore, most of the dragon clans survived and could rebuild Mount Zulong.

Seeing so many dragons being saved, the Heaven-devourer Dragon and the dragon kings were very excited. Yet they had mixed feelings about it. After all, Mount Zulong used to be hostile to Zhang Ruochen. Now, Zhang Ruochen had saved them.

After a moment of silence, the Heaven-devourer Dragon walked forward. Lowering his arrogant head, he said seriously, “I can’t say how thankful I am. But If you have any request in the future, the entire Mount Zulong will not refuse.”

Zhang Ruochen said indifferently, “Kunlun Realm is in a precarious situation. No matter what grudges we have in the past, we should put them aside and fight against the Infernal Court together.”

“From now on, Mount Zulong and the Infernal court will fight to the death,” the Heaven-devourer Dragon said firmly.

Mount Zulong’s lineage had almost been exterminated by the Infernal Court. How could they let go of such a deep hatred?

Considering that Mount Zulong had been destroyed and the situation in Kunlun Realm was grim, Ao Xinyan made the decision to let the dragon race of Mount Zulong stay on Silver Dragon Island for the time being.

After all, the dragon race of Mount Zulong also had traces of Divine Dragon Blood flowing in their bodies. At this time, it was reasonable to give them some care.

Under the call of Ao Xinyan, all the top-cultivators who had returned from True Dragon Island gathered in the main hall of Silver Dragon Palace.

Glancing at everyone present, Zhang Ruochen said seriously, “The key to the World Gate determines the rise and fall of Kunlun Realm. I hope you can keep it a secret and not leak it to anyone. Otherwise, all our efforts for this may be in vain.”

Hearing this, everyone could not help but nod seriously. Although they had different identities and origins, they all had the same intention to protect Kunlun Realm.

Zhang Ruochen had displayed his strength in the battle with the Son of Darkness, and he had gained everyone’s recognition. No one was more suitable than him to be the guardian of the key to the World Gate.

The matter of the key to the World Gate had come to an end temporarily. The Elder Patriarch Death Zen and the Corpse Emperor Tianming hadn’t stayed on Silver Dragon Island for long. They had other important matters to attend to.

Before they left, they had promised Zhang Ruochen that they would help as long as the matters related to the key to the World Gate.

Zhang Ruochen did not plan to stay on Silver Dragon Island either. He was ready to leave with Blackie, bringing the key to the World Gate.

The gods of the Fane of Darkness were almighty. If Zhang Ruochen let the key to the World Gate stayed in the Ying Yang Sea, they might notice it. It was better to relocate it. Zhang Ruochen had already thought of a place in mind.

Speaking of which, ever since he was brought out of True Dragon Island, the short and skinny old man had revealed his true form. He had turned into an ancient stone key. There were patterns etched on it naturally. Each of the patterns was perfectly compatible with the precepts of heaven and earth.

Cultivating near the key to the World Gate and comprehending the Precept could hasten the effort. Even comprehending the Path of Supreme Saint or the Path of the Ancients was no exception.

Moreover, as long as the key to the World Gate was located, the Saint Qi of heaven and earth would gather endlessly. Even a very ordinary place would become a sacred ground for cultivation after a while.

If it could be used well, it would undoubtedly be used to cultivate masses of powerhouses.

Ao Xinyan waved her hand and took out a complicated dimensional teleportation array. She said, “Captain, this is what you asked me to keep when you left the Divine Dragon Halfling clan. Now, it should be returned to its owner.”

This was not an ordinary spatial teleportation array. It had an extraordinary origin and was left behind by Saint Monk Xumi.

When they were in the Black Dragon Ruins Realm, Zhang Ruochen and the others had discovered a dimensional teleportation array underground. After activating it, they had been teleported to the distant Golden Ruins Realm. Then, they had been teleported again and again until they finally reached the desolate Ever-white Planet.

Above Ever-white Planet, there was a vast milky way of Styx and a massive Death’s Door. There were many mysteries.

Later, they had been transported in reverse and were able to return to Kunlun Realm. However, they were in the Endless Abyss.

To reach the Ever-white Planet again, they had put away the dimensional teleportation array in the Endless Abyss.

The last time Zhang Ruochen came to the Ying Yang Sea, he was oppressed by Mount Zulong. He had to use the dimensional teleportation array to escape and left it in the hands of the Divine Dragon Halfling clan.

Many years passed in a flash. Seeing the dimensional teleportation array again reminded Zhang Ruochen of Death’s Door. He was too weak and didn’t even have the strength to break through it.

The gatekeeper had said that only those who had attained the Saint King realm were qualified to break through the Death’s Door, and it would still be deadly.

Zhang Ruochen was very curious. who’d built the Gate of Hell and why? Was It really infernal behind it?

With his current strength, he might be able to solve these mysteries.

Blackie's eyes lit up when he saw the dimensional teleportation array. He quickly put it away.

"Hey hey, take your time to say goodbye. I won't be in your way." Blackie moved and disappeared.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "Thank you."

"Captain, I don't think we need to be so polite between?" Ao Xinyan rolled her eyes.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Xinyan, Congratulations on becoming the disciple of that taboo figure. I hope that one day, the Divine Dragon Clan will rise again because of you and regain its former glory."

"If it weren't for your help, Captain. I wouldn't have such an opportunity. It's a pity that I have my master's orders and need to guard the Ying Yang Sea. Otherwise, I would like to travel with you everywhere, just like before." Ao Xinyan sighed.

As Princess Shenlong, she had a significant duty on her shoulders. She could no longer be as carefree as before.

Zhang Ruochen said, "There will be opportunities in the future. The most important thing now is for you to become stronger so that you can complete your master's orders better. The road we need to walk is still very long. It's just the beginning."

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen's eyes lit up. His goal was very ambitious. Not only to become a god but to become a powerful figure among the gods. Only then could he truly control his own destiny.

Chapter 2125: Challenging a Supreme Saint

After bidding farewell to Ao Xinyan, Zhang Ruochen went straight to Merit Star. On the other hand, Blackie had brought the key to the World Gate to a safe place.

Merit Star was still very lively even after some time.

As the situation in the Battlefield of Merits intensified, numerous powerhouses visited Kunlun Realm every day. They all came from the macroworld and ancient civilizations of Celestial Court.

Being a long-lasting realm, Kunlun Realm contained countless opportunities. This was extremely attractive to both Infernal and Celestial Courts. It attracted the attention of all Celestial Courts and the Infernal Court's Ten Clans.

Zhang Ruochen was in the limelight now. As soon as he arrived on Merit Star, he immediately caused a great sensation and became the focus of attention of cultivators from various realms.

There were many cultivators involved in the incident at Yin Yang Sea, hence it was impossible to hide the news. It would not take long for the news to be spread all over the world.

"Why are you all looking at Zhang Ruochen? Did he do anything incredible again?"

Some cultivators had no idea what happened previously and were confused.

"You are late to the party. Not long ago, a series of huge incidents happened in Kunlun Realm's Yin Yang Sea. They were all related to Zhang Ruochen."

"Infernal Court sent a powerful army of Saint Kings, led by Son of Darkness, Nether Hall's Seven Top Killers, and the Three Emperors and Twelve Reverends of Bone Clan into Yin Yang Sea. They wanted to seize the key to the World Gate, which was closely related to the World Spirit of Kunlun Realm. Thousand-Star Civilization, Beidou Civilization, Giant Spirit civilization, Sunshine Civilization, and the Celestial Dragon Realm were somehow informed of the news. They also sent many cultivators."

"But in the end, Infernal Court lost thousands of Saint Kings, including Son of Darkness and the Seven Reverends of Bone Clan. The Tianzi of Sunshine Civilization was also killed. Jinyang Twin Kings, along with thousands of the Saint Kings of Sunshine Civilization were also subdued."

Immediately, some cultivators who knew the details began to explain.

After hearing this, those cultivators who hadn't heard about the recent news were shocked. They couldn't believe what they had just heard.

"Son of Darkness is a peerless genius nurtured by the Fane of Darkness. He's fused with the strange power of Darkness of the Abyss of Darkness, and his power has reached the first tier below Supreme Sainthood. Zhang Ruochen may be powerful, but how can he kill Son of Darkness?"

“Jinyang Twin Kings’ power can reach the first tier below Supreme Sainthood if they join hands. Who can suppress them? If Zhang Ruochen was really this powerful, how could Sect of the Blood God have broken through?”

Some cultivators shook their heads. They didn’t believe it was true.

It wasn’t easy to rise from the second tier below Supreme Sainthood to the first tier. Zhang Ruochen did have such potential, but it should take some time.

In Celestial and Infernal Courts, all those in the first tier below Supreme Sainthood had practiced for a long time. It would take hundreds of years to accumulate experience. It couldn’t be achieved overnight.

“You have to believe it. Son of Darkness was indeed defeated by Zhang Ruochen. After that, he even broke the rules and took a King Grade Sacred Pill to break through to the Neverwither Supreme Saint level. Yet, he was swallowed by a monster which Zhang Ruochen had subdued. It was a crushing defeat.”

“Also, Sunshine Civilization was indeed defeated by Zhang Ruochen this time. Their Tianzi was killed, and JinYang Twin Kings wanted to take revenge. However, they were no match for Zhang Ruochen. He easily subdued them.”

“Zhang Ruochen has truly risen. No one can stop him. He is Kunlun Realm’s true god of war now. Since he made his return to Kunlun Realm, he has made Infernal Court suffer too many losses.”

…

Many cultivators couldn’t help but discuss about it. Some cultivators even had reverence in their eyes.

The strong were always respected. This was a rule that had never changed.

Zhang Ruochen paid no attention to those discussions. He ignored them and walked straight to Merit Exchange Hall.

Wherever he passed, cultivators made way for him. Even the cultivators from Heavenly Realm didn’t dare to frown in front of him.

“Hurry up and see how many merits Zhang Ruochen can exchange this time.”

All of a sudden, many cultivators followed Zhang Ruochen.

Upon entering Merit Exchange Hall, Zhang Ruochen immediately shifted his gaze at the Saint King Merit List to check the recent changes.

The number of people on the Saint King Merit List had increased again, but there were no significant changes in the top 10,000 rankings.

The last time he came, Zhang Ruochen had 6.6 billion merit points, ranking at 3,342. Now, his ranking has only dropped over 20 places.

With a flip of his hand, Zhang Ruochen took out a dimensional jade bottle and began to pour out the collected Saint Souls of the powerhouses of Infernal Court.

As the Saint Souls were poured out, his merit points also increased rapidly.

After all the Saint Souls were poured out, Zhang Ruochen’s merit value increased from 6.6 billion points to 11.4 billion points. His ranking also rose sharply, and he was now ranked at 786, entering the top 1,000.

Although Zhang Ruochen had only killed thousands of Infernal Court cultivators, they were all powerhouses of Saint King Realm. This was why he could receive such an astonishing amount of merit points.

Entering the top 1,000 also meant that Zhang Ruochen could exchange for a better Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light.

Although Zhang Ruochen might not be able to use the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light with his current attainments in the Path of Dimension, he had no reason to refuse it.

Zhang Ruochen immediately took out the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, which was 1,000 times the speed of sound, for the Fane of Merit to summon back. At the same time, he began to enhance his powers with Merit Qi.

The Merit Qi power upgrade for those in the top 1,000 of Saint King Merit List was extremely effective. Even someone as strong as Zhang Ruochen who was now a top cultivator below the first tier of Supreme Sainthood could still benefit from many upgrades. Now, the slight flaws in his body and Saint Soul were eliminated, and he became tougher.

“What a powerful Neverwither Saint Light. Zhang Ruochen actually used Merit Qi to make his arms immortal,” some cultivators exclaimed.

With all cultivators in the hall watching, Zhang Ruochen’s arms emitted a bright Neverwither Saint Light. A dragon and an elephant appeared, giving off an extremely powerful pressure.

Another cultivator widened his eyes and said in disbelief, “Zhang Ruochen’s body was not immortal at all when he fought with Son of Darkness. How could…”

Before his body was immortal, Zhang Ruochen’s strength had already reached the first tier below Supreme Sainthood. If most of his body became immortal, how much stronger could he be?

Not too long later, the Merit Qi upgrade was over. A strange armor glowing with silver light appeared out of thin air and automatically wore on Zhang Ruochen’s body. It fitted him perfectly, as if it had been tailor made for him.

‘*The Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light is 2,000 times the speed of sound. It’s not bad. Maybe there will be a time where I can use this*,’ Zhang Ruochen thought.
After feeling it for a bit, Zhang Ruochen put the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light away.

However in comparison, the Armor of the Fire God increased his combat power and defense more.

Then, Zhang Ruochen looked at his arms. After the immortal transformation, he could clearly feel the difference in his arms. Be it palm techniques or fist techniques, his power would definitely increase vastly.

However, at this stage, this could only be considered as the initial immortal transformation. The strength of his arms would be further enhanced after he refined all Five-element Divine Objects.

Without stopping for long, Zhang Ruochen walked straight to the Merit Treasure Exchange Counter.

Now that he had obtained the top-level Five-element Divine Objects, there is no need to save his merits. He could use his merit points to exchange other treasures.

Zhang Ruochen still had 7.5 billion merit points left to spend. Obviously, he could use them to redeem a large number of treasures.

After careful selection, Zhang Ruochen used these merit points to redeem hundreds of treasures. These were rare items and could be used to cultivate many more powerhouses.

Zhang Ruochen was about to leave after redeeming the treasures. Strangely, he felt that he was being targeted by someone suddenly. He frowned and had his guard up secretly. Following his senses, he looked over to the source.

'*It's a Supreme Saint,*' Zhang Ruochen couldn't open his eyes because of the brilliant saint light.
That person was dozens of miles away, but the light and heat he emitted seemed to be melting Zhang Ruochen's body.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't an ordinary Saint cultivator. He quickly blocked the holy light. At the end of his line of sight, he saw a tall, middle-aged man in golden armor. He was majestic and held the Sky-Piercer Halberd. He looked like a god of war.

The Grand Terminal of Merits was specially built for Saints and Saint Kings. Under normal circumstances, no Supreme Saints would visit.

If there was an exception, it would be the Emissaries Vigilant appointed by the Celestial Palace.

'*Such strong hostility. It seems that the comer isn't friendly.*'
It wasn't that Zhang Ruochen had never interacted with an Emissaries Vigilant, but he had only interacted with their clones. This was the first time he had seen an Emissaries Vigilant in person. It would be impossible for him not to be afraid.

An actual Supreme Saint, the Emperor of Saint Realm, was right in front of him.

The middle-aged man had long golden hair. Each strand of hair seemed to contain thousands of Precepts. He walked slowly in the void space and appeared in front of Zhang Ruochen. With a stern tone, he shouted, "Zhang Ruochen, how dare you ignore the rules of heaven set by the Celestial Palace and kill and subdue your allies? How should you be punished?"

At this moment, many cultivators had gathered around and surrounded the Merit Treasure Exchange Counter.

A familiar Saint's shadow appeared nearby, he sneered and said, "It was so noble of Sunshine Tianzi to visit Yin Yang Sea to stop Infernal Court's

conspiracy. However, Zhang Ruochen killed the Tianzi in order to take his precious treasure. This was outrageous! If we don't punish him severely, we will definitely disappoint our allies."

Another saint tone came from afar, "Zhang Ruochen has repeatedly violated the rules of heaven and trampled on the majesty of the Celestial Palace. He should be punished severely. Please arrest him, Emissaries Vigilant."

A cold light flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes. These people were probably cultivators of Heavenly Realm who had deep grudges with him.

These people must also be the ones who informed the Emissaries Vigilant about his whereabouts, or else he wouldn't have cornered him here.

If not mistaken, this Emissaries Vigilant should be from Sunshine Civilization. Their Tianzi's death was a huge deal for them.

"Immediately release the cultivators of Sunshine Civilization and surrender. Don't make me do anything," the middle-aged man said in a commanding tone, expressing his strong will.

Initially, Sunshine Civilization didn't know how to deal with Zhang Ruochen. Now that he had left Kunlun Realm and came to Merit Star, he was walking right into a trap.

Without the restrictions of Kunlun Realm, no matter how powerful Zhang Ruochen was, he could not escape from his grasp.

Although the other party was a Supreme Saint, Zhang Ruochen isn't someone who could be easily controlled. He said with an indifferent expression, "Is this the attitude of Sunshine Civilization? It's not up to you to decide what's right and wrong."

So what if he was an Emissaries Vigilant?

It was impossible for him to subdue Zhang Ruochen with force.

"Zhang Ruochen, no matter how you quibble, you can't change the fact that you killed Sunshine Tianzi. Not only did you violate the rules of heaven which forbids internal strife, but you also subdued thousands of Sunshine Civilization cultivators. This is a flagrant disregard of the rules."

The saint shadow who had been standing in a distance walked out from a group of Saint Realm cultivators and said loudly.

This person wore a three-colored armor and a jade crown. His eyes were deep and he looked extraordinary.

He was no stranger to Zhang Ruochen. He had met him in Peacock Manor previously. He was Shang Ziyan's senior brother, Xing Yuan. He was a top powerhouse in the third tier below Supreme Sainthood, trained by the Fane of Merit.

Xing Yuan looked at Zhang Ruochen coldly. He cupped his hands and said to the middle-aged man, "Supreme Saint Jinhui, given your status, you don't need to say anything to Zhang Ruochen. Just arrest him."

"Brother Xing Yuan is right. Zhang Ruochen has repeatedly violated the rules of heaven and is unpardonable. Even if you kill him, no one will dare to say anything," another person chimed in.

This person had also appeared in the Peacock Manor. He was Chen Hu, a Scarlet Angel of the previous generation, nurtured by the Fane of Bloody War. His strength wasn't much weaker than Xing Yuan's.

The Fane of Merit and the Fane of Bloody War undoubtedly hated Zhang Ruochen to the bone. This was a rare opportunity to add insult to injury. Naturally, they wouldn't let this chance slip through their fingers.

Xing Yuan and Chen Hu were harboring evil intentions. They were eager for Supreme Saint Jinhui to attack Zhang Ruochen. It would be best if he could kill Zhang Ruochen.

After all, Zhang Ruochen had Yueshen behind him. Even if they brought him back to the Celestial Palace, they would not be able to do anything to him.

"Do both of you want to die?" Zhang Ruochen's eyes flashed with terrifying killing intent.

Back then, Shang Ziyan had led a group to attack Shengming City. These two had contributed a lot to the killings. Countless Shengming citizens had died because of them.

If it wasn't for the involvement of the Emissaries Vigilant, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't have let them leave Peacock Manor.

Yet, these two people still dared to appear in front of him. They even dared to incite Supreme Saint Jinhui to attack him. They were truly despicable.

Xing Yuan's eyes turned cold. He quickly said, "Zhang Ruochen is already crazy and murderous. If we continue to let him go, more allies will be killed. Please call the shots, Supreme Saint Jinhui."

"Zhang Ruochen, you are too presumptuous. Do you still want to kill people in front of me? Do you really think that no one can stop you?" said Supreme Saint Jinhui.

Zhang Ruochen's expression turned cold. "If I really want to kill them, no one can stop me. Quit putting on airs in front of me. If you want me to release Jinyang Twin Kings and the others, you better change your attitude."

Hearing this, Supreme Saint Jinhui's expression turned grim. No junior in the Saint King Realm had ever dared to speak to him like this.

He knew that Zhang Ruochen had already reached the first tier below Supreme Sainthood. He may be standing at the peak of Saint King Realm, but that doesn't mean he had the right to act all arrogant in front of him.

Without becoming a Supreme Saint, no one would ever know the true meaning of Path.

Similarly, without becoming a Supreme Saint, one would only be cultivators of Saint Realm and not Saint Emperors.

The three strongest levels below the Supreme Sainthood corresponded to the combat power that could rival, defeat and kill a Neverwither Supreme Saint.

However, they were all referring to the Supreme Saints in the initial stage of the Neverwilt Realm.

Furthermore, those Supreme Saints who were defeated by Saint Kings only cultivated 30 million Precepts in Saint King Realm. The immortal saint bodies that they forged were also very weak. Their potential was almost exhausted and it would be difficult for them to improve during their lifetime.

In other words, they were the weakest among the Supreme Saints.

Although Supreme Saint Jinhui wasn't the most talented, he had cultivated more than 40 million Precepts when he was in Saint King Realm. He had broken through to Supreme Sainthood for almost a thousand years. He had cultivated his strength to the mid-stages of the Neverwilt Realm step by step, and he wasn't far from the advanced stage. His strength wasn't

something that the Supreme Saints who had just entered the Neverwilt Realm could compare to.

Supreme Saint Jinhui had absolute confidence in his own strength. Below the Supreme Sainthood, not to mention Zhang Ruochen, even Yan Wushen was no match for him.

“Zhang Ruochen, since you don’t have any sense of propriety, don’t blame me for humiliating you,” Supreme Saint Jinhui’s eyes were sharp, and his body exuded a vast Supreme Saint’s pressure.

Chapter 2126: The Battle In The Starry Sky

Xing Yuan and Chen Hu were shocked and fall back helplessly. They were third-level top-notch Saint Kings below the Supreme Saint, yet they could not resist Supreme Saint Jinhui’s coercion.

The so-called power of a Neverwither Supreme Saint was nothing in front of Supreme Saint Jinhui.

Seeing Supreme Saint Jinhui was about to make a move, the atmosphere became extremely solemn. Almost everyone was silent, not daring to even breathe.

“So powerful.” Zhang Ruochen was shocked. He quietly circulated the Saint Qi in his body to neutralize the Supreme Saint’s coercion.

Although Zhang Ruochen knew that the Supreme Saint Jinhui had come with ill intentions, yet he did not expect that the Supreme Saint Jinhui would attack him at the Grand Terminal of Merits.

However, even if the opponent was a powerful Emissaries Vigilant, he would not be able to make Zhang Ruochen bow his head.

Back on Mount Yueshen, Zhang Ruochen had not even flinched when faced with Blackheart Demonlord’s divine avatar, much less now.

“Supreme Saint Jinhui, please calm down.”

At this moment, a voice suddenly sounded.

A young man in gray-white armor walked out of the crowd and walked to Zhang Ruochen’s side under great coercion.

This man looked ordinary, but he exuded an extremely noble temperament. He was born with the aura of an emperor even though he had not become a Supreme Saint.

“The first son of Emperor Ji Mie — Ji Kongyuan.”

Although it was the first time they had met, Zhang Ruochen knew his identity at first glance.

Ji Kongyuan was the first person in hundreds of years to attained Guanghan Realm’s Saint King apart from Zhang Ruochen. He could even occupy a place on the Saint King Merit List of the Celestial Court.

However, Ji Kongyuan was low-key and mysterious, so only a handful of people could really see through him.

After sizing up, Zhang Ruochen thought, ‘It seems that everyone has underestimated Ji Kongyuan. His strength has reached at least the third level below the Supreme Saint, perhaps even the second level. He hid it very well.’

Ji Kongyuan cupped his hands and humbly said, “Everyone knew about the life-and-death challenge between the Divine Envoy and Son of Darkness on True Dragon Island, Supreme Saint Jinhui. The Jinyang Twin Kings launched an attack on the Divine Envoy at this moment. They initiated infighting, but the Divine Envoy didn’t kill them. He only suppressed them. This proves that the Divine Envoy isn’t a bloodthirsty person.

“So, there must be some misunderstanding in the matter of the Divine Envoy killing Sunshine Tianzi.”

Ji Kongyuan didn’t wish to get involved, but if he allowed Zhang Ruochen to fight with the Supreme Saint Jinhui, things might become a point of no return.

No matter what, Zhang Ruochen was the Divine Envoy appointed by Yueshen. Once the matter blew up, the entire Guanghan Realm could not stay out of it.

At the same time, Ji Kong Yuan secretly transmitted his voice to Zhang Ruochen, “Divine Envoy, bear with it for a while. Don’t fight head-on with the Sunshine Civilization. Supreme Saint Jinhui is not someone easy to dealt with. If you fight with him, you will be at a disadvantage.

“Supreme Saint Jinhui’s strength has reached the pinnacle of the middle stage of Neverwilt Realm. He has condensed the Grade Eight Spearmanship Saintwill and cultivated two high-level Neverwither Saint techniques. The Saint Kings will be no match of him.”

Upon hearing this, Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat. With his experience, he clearly knew the difference between a Supreme Saint and a Saint King.

Even the weakest Neverwither Supreme Saint would be able to cast a powerful Neverwither Saint’s body. It wouldn’t decay even after ten thousand years and wasn’t something a Saint King’s body could compare.

In addition, the power in the body of a Supreme Saint was miraculous, the control over the precepts of heaven and earth and the surrounding vitality would become exquisite. The range and amount he could control would be greatly increased. Furthermore, he would be able to cast high-level saint techniques, the power would also become even stronger.

Most importantly, once he reached the middle stage of Neverwilt Realm, he would be able to condense Saintwill. The abilities of the Supreme Saint in all aspects would be enhanced.

The so-called Saintwill was extracted from a Precept bit by bit and condense continuously. The extracted Path was like a soul, mysterious indeed.

Three thousand Major Paths, seventy-two Paths of Supreme Saint, and nine great Path of the Ancients could all condense the Saintwill.

Every cultivator cultivated more than one type of Paths. Therefore, the Saintwill that could be condensed was not limited to one type.

In theory, a Supreme Saint could at most condense nine types of Saintwill. This was an extreme number.

However, the difficulty of condensing one more type of Saintwill would increase exponentially. Furthermore, the more Saintwill there was, the better. More importantly, it depended on the grade of the Saintwill.

Some Supreme Saints who were skilled could fuse two different types of Saintwill together to form a different kind of Saintwill, it’s extraordinary.

For every Supreme Saint, forming Saintwill was not a child's play as once it was successfully condensed, the grade would almost be fixed, and raising the grade of it would be difficult.

The Saintwill would directly affect their future achievements. Only by condensing a high-grade Saintwill would they have a chance of becoming a god. They could even become powerful gods who could control the canon.

According to the previous cultivators, if one wished to become a god, one needed to condense at least a Grade Five Saintwill.

And if one wanted to control the canon, one needed to condense a Grade Three or higher Saintwill. There was an extremely close connection between the two.

No matter which great world it was in, a Supreme Saint that could condense a Grade Five or higher Saintwill would be highly valued. They were called God Candidate, which meant that one had the hope of becoming a god.

However, it was too complex to condense a high-grade Saintwill. Even if they cultivated the Path of Supreme Saint, the Saintwill they condensed might not be of a high grade.

Supreme Saint Jinhui was a good example. He was able to extract the Precept of Spearmanship from the 72 Paths. He expended a lot of energy to condense the Spearmanship Saintwill, though it was only Grade Eight.

This kind of achievement was quite common among the Supreme Saints. However, it was not something that those Neverwither Supreme Saints at the bottom could compare to. It was a world of difference from the Saint King.

No matter how strong the Saint King was when he met a Supreme Saint who had condensed the Saintwill, he did not even have a high chance of fighting back, let alone winning.

"A Misunderstanding? Sunshine Tianzi's Golden Sun of Destruction is in Zhang Ruochen's hands. Everything is crystal clear. How would there be a misunderstanding?

"If it wasn't for Immortal Minghu, Zhang Ruochen would have killed the Jinyang Twin Kings long ago instead of suppressing them. Ji Kongyuan, it's a waste of effort for you to defend him. He's a bloodthirsty demon deep in his blood."

Seeing Ji Kongyuan mediate, Xing Yuan said immediately.

Ji Kongyuan frowned slightly. He looked at Xing Yuan deeply and said, “Supreme Saint Jinhui, the Divine Envoy…”

“Who do you think you are? How dare you interfere with my business? Get out of my sight!” Supreme Saint Jinhui shouted. He released an even more powerful Supreme Saint’s pressure.

An invisible force hit Ji Kongyuan’s chest, forcing him to retreat. He groaned.

Ji Kongyuan was not happy about it. As the eldest son of Emperor Ji Mie, no one had ever dared to scold him like this. This was not only insulting him but also trampling on Emperor Ji Mie’s prestige.

At the same time, Supreme Saint Jinhui had already attacked Zhang Ruochen. He condensed a large golden hand with Saint Qi and grabbed at Zhang Ruochen.

Ji Kongyuan quickly said, “Supreme Saint Jinhui, Zhang Ruochen is Yueshen’s appointed Divine Envoy. Aren’t you afraid of Yueshen’s wrath by attacking him so recklessly?”

“Zhang Ruochen killed the Tianzi of Sunshine Civilization and suppressed many Sunshine Civilization cultivators as well. An explanation is required from him and no one can protect him,” Supreme Saint Jinhui said loudly.

Supreme Saint Jinhui had come under the orders of the Sunshine Civilization’s elder god. He was full of confidence. Even the name of Yueshen could not subdue him.

There was a cold glint in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. This time, he could not surrender. He immediately mobilized the Saint Qi in his body and struck out with his palm like lightning.

A giant green dragon flew out. It carried the unparalleled power of a Supreme Saint and crashed into Supreme Saint Jinhui’s golden hand.

BOOM!
The giant green dragon and the golden hand exploded at the same time and the powers dissipated.

Is Zhang Ruochen Crazy? He dares to retaliate. Isn’t he afraid of further angering Supreme Saint Jinhui?

He is indeed crazy. He thinks he can challenge the Supreme Saint just because he has made some achievements on the Battlefield of Merits. He really overestimates himself.

“No Saint King can fight against any of the Emissaries Vigilant. Zhang Ruochen couldn’t make his decision whether to attack or back off. He’s simply asking for trouble by openly fighting against Supreme Saint Jinhui.”

…

Seeing Zhang Ruochen fought back, many cultivators around him were surprised, as if they saw a monster in making.

They heard that Zhang Ruochen had also attacked the Emissaries Vigilant in Kunlun Realm, though it was only a clone back then which is different from his true form.

At this moment, Supreme Saint Jinhui’s eyes became colder and colder. If he couldn’t suppress Zhang Ruochen now, how could he save himself from shame?

“Zhang Ruochen, how dare you strike back at me?” Supreme Saint Jinhui shouted coldly.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t afraid at all and snorted. “Why can’t I fight back? Just because you’re an Emissaries Vigilant and I must be at your mercy? Do you even have the heavenly decree of the Celestial Palace?”

“You are ignorant as dirt. Just because you’re disrespectful to me, I have all the reason to teach you a lesson.” A cold glint flashed in Supreme Saint Jinhui’s eyes. He extended his hand again.

Zhang Ruochen frowned slightly. He didn’t expect Supreme Saint Jinhui to be so stubborn.

It seemed that he had indeed caused a lot of trouble by killing Sunshine Tianzi. The Sunshine Civilization wouldn’t let him off easily, even if it was just to save their own reputation.

A thought came to his mind, Zhang Ruochen soared into the air and rushed out of the Grand Terminal of Merits.

The Grand Terminal of Merits had all sorts of contraptions that greatly suppressed the spaces. If he fought with Supreme Saint Jinhui in there, it would undoubtedly be disadvantageous to Zhang Ruochen.

Moreover, a battle between the Supreme Saints would probably shatter this planet.

“Where do you think you’re going?”

Supreme Saint Jinhui did not hesitate and immediately chased after them.

Zhang Ruochen and the Supreme Saint Jinhui entered the dim starry sky outside the Grand Terminal of Merits in the blink of an eye.

BOOM!
Violent power fluctuations appeared in the starry sky. Bright saintly light burst forth like a comet piercing through the sky.

The cultivators in the Grand Terminal of Merits were all Saints and Saint Kings. They all have magnificent sights. Almost all of them could clearly see all the stars in the sky.

Their eyes were all fixed on Zhang Ruochen and Supreme Saint Jinhui and watched the fierce collision between the two.

It was Zhang Ruochen’s first time fighting with a real Supreme Saint. Moreover, he was a Supreme Saint in the middle stage of the immortal realm. Naturally, He wouldn’t dare to be careless.

From the beginning, Zhang Ruochen activated the Canon of Truth and the Armor of the Fire God to make up for the flaws in his physique.

Although his Five-element Chaotic Body was strong, he could only immortalize his arms. It wasn’t comparable to the immortal saint body of a Supreme Saint.

Of course, if he could become a Supreme Saint with his vessel, everything would be different.

ROAR!
With the earth-shaking roars of a dragon and an elephant, the Saint Aspect of his palm formed by a dragon and an elephant appeared on both sides of Zhang Ruochen.

In the Divine Light Sea of Qi, the divine sun formed by the Golden Sun of Destruction and the Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi’s Sun Leaf spun rapidly at the same time. It released extreme yang energy and merged into the palm technique.

Ever since Zhang Ruochen obtained the Golden Sun of Destruction, he rarely used it for direct attack. Instead, he used it to cultivate and refine his physical body, Saint Soul, and Saint Qi. At the same time, he adjusted the Yang Qi in his body that was hundreds of thousands of times more vigorous than an ordinary person.

With the aid from the Golden Sun of destruction, Zhang Ruochen's power increased greatly when the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike was used.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen's powerful palm technique, Supreme Saint Jinhui said with contempt. "Let me show you what a high-level saint technique truly is."

As he spoke, Supreme Saint Jinhui quickly formed a strange seal. Large amounts of Path and power of a Supreme Saint surged out of his body. They interweaved and released a bright golden light. It quickly turned into a golden ocean and flowed into the dim starry sky, it was beautiful and dazzling.

The brilliant Saint King could indeed cultivate a high-level Neverwither saint technique, but the effect of the technique he displayed couldn't compare to that of a Supreme Saint.

Only with the immortal saint body and the power of a Supreme Saint could the power of a high-level Neverwither saint technique be fully displayed.

Zhang Ruochen's expression was solemn. His arms released a bright immortal saint light. Hundreds of thousands of Precepts of Truth were mobilized and infused into the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike.

In an instant, the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike exploded with nine times the attack power. The dragon and the elephant exuded vast Supreme Saint's pressure. Their huge figure expanded throughout the starry sky.

Indeed, Zhang Ruochen didn't have an immortal saint body or the power of a Supreme Saint. However, he had cultivated the Path of Truth to an extremely high level. With the immortalized arms, the enhancement of the Golden Sun of Destruction, the Armor of the Fire God, and the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike in his hands, he could unleash a terrifying power.

BOOM!
As if two stars had collided, the starry sky showered with endless saint light. It seemed to be able to pierce through the past, present, and future.

A dragon, an elephant, and the golden sea of stars exploded at the same time and disappeared into nothingness.

Under the impact of the powerful force, Zhang Ruochen retreated continuously. He drew a streak of light like a meteor and crashed into an asteroid thousands of miles away. It directly pierced through the asteroid and exploded into pieces. Some of the flames on Armor of the Fire God had been extinguished because of this. He had managed to block the attack.

On the other side, Supreme Saint Jinhui's figure only swayed for a moment before he stood still again. He was like an eternal divine sun in the starry sky, shining in all directions.

"The high-level saint technique that Supreme Saint Jinhui used was actually blocked by Zhang Ruochen. How is this possible?"

"It must be that Supreme Saint Jinhui hasn't used his full strength yet. No matter how strong Zhang Ruochen is, he is no match for the middle stage of Neverwilt Realm Supreme Saint."

"Just wait and see. Zhang Ruochen will definitely not be able to block the next attack of the Supreme Saint Jinhui. There is no suspense in this battle at all."

…

All of a sudden, many cultivators who were watching the battle began to discuss.

Zhang Ruochen's performance was stunning that even the Supreme Saint Jinhui could not suppress him immediately.

Xing Yuan whispered objectively, "Zhang Ruochen, the more powerful you are, the angrier the Supreme Saint Jinhui will be. Even if you have great abilities, you can not escape the suppression."

"If Supreme Saint Jinhui can miss and kill Zhang Ruochen, that would be the best." Chen Hu sneered.

Zhang Ruochen had grown up and become a great threat. No matter what, the sects of the Celestial Court did not want to see him become a Supreme Saint or even a god.

Since Zhang Ruochen was exceptionally talented in cultivating the Path of Time and Space, the sects of the Celestial Court worried that he would become the second Saint Monk Xumi. That would be a huge problem.

Chapter 2127: The Spearmanship Saintwill

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation **Editor:** EndlessFantasy Translation

Zhang Ruochen steadied himself. The Qi and blood in his body surged violently, almost rushing out of his body. Fortunately, the Armor of the Fire God blocked most of the attack power, so he was safe.

Through the collision earlier, Zhang Ruochen truly felt the terror of the middle stage of Neverwilt Realm Supreme Saint. His use of power and comprehension of saint technique was not comparable to that of a Saint King.

Even so, Zhang Ruochen still did not have the slightest intention of retreating. Instead, he released a stronger battle will, causing the Armor of the Fire God to burn with even more vigorous flames.

“Zhang Ruochen, do you still want to grapple on? Looks like I should make you suffer a little.” Supreme Saint Jinhui said with a cold gaze.

Supreme Saint Jinhui assumed that after he attacked, Zhang Ruochen would obediently surrender. Yet, He did not expect Zhang Ruochen to be so indecisive and that enrages him.

As soon as he finished speaking, even greater power of the Supreme Saint emerged from Supreme Saint Jinhui’s body. The precepts of heaven and earth within a radius of 10,000 miles gathered towards him.

In an instant, a vaster golden ocean appeared in the dim starry sky. There were countless golden flames of the sun burning in it as if they wanted to burn the entire starry sky into nothingness.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes narrowed. Without any hesitation, he immediately turned his palm into a fist. He shifted the Precepts of Fist and Precepts of Water to advance the Level Eleven Luoshui Fist Technique.

The aspect of the fist in the form of Celestial River appeared. It was more than a hundred miles wide and spread across the starry sky. It was vast and mighty.

As the Celestial River shook, precepts of heaven and earth in a large area were shifted. They gathered quickly, making the Celestial River bigger and bigger.

Performing the Luoshui Fist Technique in the starry sky was very different from performing it in Kunlun Realm. Zhang Ruochen vaguely felt that the Celestial River he advanced seemed to have a subtle connection with the Celestial River that flowed outside the Celestial Court, it was more majestic.

Burble.
The Celestial River flowed and swept up many star fragments. Like a huge divine dragon, it rushed toward the golden divine sea with unstoppable momentum.

During this process, Zhang Ruochen activated the Precepts of Truth once more and evoked nine times the attack power of the Celestial River.

With his current attainments in the Path of Truth, it was easy for him to trigger numerous times the power.

If he could condense the Realm-frame of Truth, he could use the Path of Truth as he pleased. As long as he manifested the Realm-frame of Truth, he didn’t need to deliberately activate the Precept of Truth. Any saint technique he used would have multiple times the power.

Zhang Ruochen had refined the Primordial Water. Naturally, the Celestial River contained the characteristics of the Primordial Water and it could extinguish all kinds of flames in the world.

Rip.
The golden ocean’s light dimmed after being eroded by the Celestial River.

BOOM!
There was a saying that water and fire were incompatible. When the two extreme forces collided, they exploded instantly, releasing a terrifying destructive force.

Under this impact, the small planet that had been shattered earlier was completely destroyed and turned into dust.

A large part of the starry sky shattered and revealed a pitch-black void. It looks extremely terrifying and fathomless.

Even though Zhang Ruochen was far away, he still received a heavy impact. Like a shooting star, he flew hundreds of miles away.

Even though the Celestial River was fragmented, it still surrounded Zhang Ruochen and neutralize the powerful impact.

Supreme Saint Jinhui's body shook violently and he almost fell back. Part of the Neverwither Saint Light enveloping his body split apart.

"He can still withstand it. How did this happen?" Supreme Saint Jinhui was shocked.

Supreme Saint Jinhui did not hold back in this attack. He used all his strength and even activated precepts of heaven and earth within a radius of 10,000 miles. He thought that he could severely injure Zhang Ruochen. Surprisingly, Zhang Ruochen was able to withstand the attack.

He had used two high-level saint techniques in a row, but he was still unable to suppress Zhang Ruochen. Furthermore, he was being watched by many cultivators in the Grand Terminal of Merits. This made Supreme Saint Jinhui outraged.

If this continued, what will be left of his reputation when the other Emissaries Vigilant arrived?

With a piercing gaze in Supreme Saint Jinhui's eyes. He grabbed the Sky-Piercer Halberd. His entire aura suddenly changed, displaying his top-state as if he could tear apart the starry sky.

"Supreme Saint Jinhui is furious. He's finally using the regal weapon. With the Spearmanship Saintwill, he's going to use an extremely domineering halberd technique. A Saint King like Zhang Ruochen won't be able to stop him." Xing Yuan smirked.

Chen Hu grinned too and said, "Zhang Ruochen is too arrogant. He's asking for trouble when he insists on challenging Supreme Saint Jinhui. Just wait and see. Supreme Saint Jinhui might not hold back and slay Zhang Ruochen with his halberd."

At this moment, Ji Kongyuan's eyes were filled with worry. He had never expected things to escalate until this stage.

"Supreme Saint Jinhui has condensed the Grade Eight Spearmanship Saintwill. The Sky-Piercer Halberd in his hand is a regal weapon. He has

also cultivated a high-level saint halberd technique. If to combine them, will the Divine Envoy be able to withstand them? And how long can he last?”

Just like high-level saint technique, a regal weapon could only unleash its true power if it was in the hands of a Supreme Saint.

Even if a Saint King who activated a Supreme Artifact might not be able to fight against a Supreme Saint who uses a regal weapon.

After all, a Supreme Artifact may be powerful, the amount of power a Saint King could unleash was probably less than 1%.

Supreme Saint Jinhui’s greatest achievement was Spearmanship. With the help of the Grade Eight Spearmanship Saintwill and the regal weapon, it was hard to imagine how powerful the halberd technique would be.

As Supreme Saint Jinhui waved the Sky-Piercer Halberd, a shocking phenomenon appeared in the starry sky. The thousand-mile-long shadow of the halberd swept across the sky and triggered the precepts of heaven and earth within a radius of ten thousand miles, causing a huge wave of energy to surge.

For a moment, Supreme Saint Jinhui seemed to have become the ruler of this starry sky. Everything was under his control and the power of all things.

In this starry sky, Zhang Ruochen actually felt a strong repulsion. Even the circulation of Saint Qi was slightly affected.

“Have you finally decided to use your strongest move? I want to see how strong the middle stage of Neverwilt Realm Supreme Saint who has cultivated the Saintwill is. Can he really crush all the Saint Kings?” Not only was Zhang Ruochen fearless, but his eyes revealed a look of anticipation.

There were very few Saint Kings who had the chance to fight with a Neverwither Supreme Saint. There were even fewer rumors regarding the fight with the middle stage of Neverwilt Realm Supreme Saint.

The so-called strongest three tiers below the Supreme Saint were divided according to certain criteria. Such as how many precepts of heaven and earth and Heaven and Earth Qi could be mobilized. However, everyone’s situation was unique, their strength would naturally be different, sometimes, the difference would be even greater.

In theory, Zhang Ruochen already had the strength to kill the weakest Neverwither Supreme Saint. However strong he was, a test is still required.

In Zhang Ruochen's opinion, Supreme Saint Jinhui, who was in the middle stage of Neverwilt Realm, was undoubtedly the best person to help him testify his strength.

Activating the Empyrean Emperor Ming's Scripture, five-colored saint light flew out of Zhang Ruochen's body and quickly condensed into a world behind him. There was a dense chaotic qi filling the world.

Based on the Five-element Chaotic Body, a strange Spatial Domain was created. It covered a radius of 1,500 kilometers.

Actually, with Zhang Ruochen's current spatial attainments, the Spatial Domain could cover a radius of more than 5,000 kilometers. However, his control over space would be far inferior to now.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen took out the Zangshan Demonic Mirror to further freeze space.

Looking at the Zangshan Demonic Mirror, Supreme Saint Jinhui said in a deep voice, "In the face of absolute power, the Supreme Artifact can not change anything. Star-splitting Spear!"

As he spoke, the Supreme Saint Jinhui suddenly performed a halberd technique.

Under the power of the Supreme Saint, the Sky-Piercer Halberd was completely restored. Hundreds of thousands of thick king class inscriptions appeared clearly.

A sharp halberd ray that was thousands of miles long appeared. It was like a comet dragging its long tail across the starry sky, tearing a huge black crack in the starry sky.

Seeing Supreme Saint Jinhui's terrifying attack, Zhang Ruochen didn't lower his guard. He immediately activated the Precepts of Dimension and released powerful dimensional power. He compressed it with all his might and condensed it into silver light.

Whoosh
The silver light flew out and cut open the starry sky in front of him completely. It revealed a bottomless void. It seemed to be able to connect to the starry sky in the universe and reach any great world.

BANG!

The thousand-mile-long halberd light shattered and was quickly destroyed by the violent dimensional power.

Under the impact of this power, more than half of the space domain that Zhang Ruochen had constructed was destroyed without delay. He had to rely on the Zangshan Demonic Mirror to withstand it.

Supreme Saint Jinhui did not hold back. Instead, he continued to display an even more powerful halberd technique. The entire starry sky was filled with countless sharp halberd lights.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze filled with ferocity. With the Secret Tome of Time and Space in hand, he displayed Time and Space Techniques to his heart's content.

BOOM!
An intense battle erupted. Saint lights flashed in the starry sky and bloomed like fireworks.

Relying on Time and Space Techniques, Zhang Ruochen managed to stabilize his footing. He engaged in a series of fierce battles with Supreme Saint Jinhui. He was gradually turning from a passive confrontation to an active attack.

With the Path of the Ancients, it was possible to fight against the Saintwill.

In fact, most of the first-tier powerhouses below the Supreme Saint cultivated the Path of the Ancients or had powers comparable to it. That was why they had the chance to kill the weakest Neverwither Supreme Saint.

In the Grand Terminal of Merits, the cultivators from each realm could not help but be stunned.

In their opinion, as long as Supreme Saint Jinhui made a serious move, he would be able to easily suppress Zhang Ruochen. However, the current situation was not like this. They could not believe what they had seen.

"Supreme Saint Jinhui could be testing him. He is deliberately playing with Zhang Ruochen," a weaker saint said with uncertainty.

A top-notch Saint King shook his head with a serious expression. "No, Supreme Saint Jinhui has used all his strength. He even used the Spearmanship Saintwill. It's because Zhang Ruochen is too powerful that this situation has occurred."

Hiss.
Many cultivators watching the battle couldn't help but gasp.

A Saint King couldn't defeat a Supreme Saint in the middle stage of Neverwilt Realm. But now, it was actually happening. Everyone felt that it was surreal.

Staring at the two figures fighting in outer space, Xing Yuan and Chen Hu's faces darkened. Zhang Ruochen's strength was far beyond their expectations.

"Why has Zhang Ruochen's strength increased so much in such a short time? What kind of monster is he?" Chen Hu said indignantly.

The battle outside the Peacock Manor hadn't been long. It had only been a few months.

For a powerhouse of Saint King Realm, time would pass in the blink of an eye. It was barely enough for one closed-door cultivation.

A few months ago, Zhang Ruochen's strength wasn't weak, but he couldn't defeat them either.

But in the blink of an eye, Zhang Ruochen had reached the pinnacle of the Saint King Realm. Even the Son of Darkness had been defeated by him. Now, he could even fight against Supreme Saint Jinhui. This speed of improvement was terrifying.

Xing Yuan said in a low voice, "Zhang Ruochen is indeed a scourge. We must not let him live and find a way to get rid of him. Otherwise, when he becomes a Supreme Saint or even a god, I'm afraid that the Celestial Court and Infernal Court will never be in peace because of him."

"But now, even Supreme Saint Jinhui can't do anything to him. If he stays in Kunlun Realm, who can threaten him?" Chen Hu frowned.

The Fane of Bloody War had been defeated by Zhang Ruochen one after another. They naturally wanted to get rid of Zhang Ruochen, but there was nothing they could do.

With Zhang Ruochen's terrifying strength, even the peerless cultivators from the sect of Heavenly Realm couldn't guarantee that they could deal with him.

A strange look flashed in Xing Yuan's eyes, "In fact, the Infernal Court wants to get rid of Zhang Ruochen more than we do. Since Kunlun Realm became the Battlefield of Merits, there have been many geniuses in the Infernal Court who have died at Zhang Ruochen's hands. The Deathkin, the Nether Clan, the Immortal Vampires, and the Bone Clan must have hated the sight of Zhang Ruochen. Just wait and see. Those clan's cultivators who don't often appear in the Battlefield of Merits will probably find a way to enter Kunlun's Field."

Hearing this, Chen Hu's expression changed slightly, and many figures that looked like Divine Demons appeared in his mind.

The Infernal Court could fight against the entire Celestial Court, and it even had a considerable advantage. Its foundation was naturally unfathomable.

Any one of the ten clans of Infernal Court was stronger than a ruler of a world.

The powerhouses of the Infernal Court recorded in The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans were all familiar to the Celestial Court, but they didn't include all the Saint King powerhouses of the Infernal Court.

For example, the Nether Clan naturally didn't only have Son of Darkness and The Seven Top Killers of Nether Clan. Otherwise, how could they be considered one of the three upper clans of the Infernal Court?

Excluding those very low-key demons, the Nether Clan had two top-notch Saint King cultivators namely Nether Demon and Nether Buddha. Their strength was no less than the Son of Darkness.

In fact, Immortal Ming who died in the Sword Vault was a peerless demon who was on par with Nether Demon and Nether Buddha. Unfortunately, his strength hadn't reached the pinnacle yet, and he was killed by the Blood Dripper.

There was also the Bone clan, a top-notch powerhouse of the Saint King Realm. Besides the Three Emperors and Twelve Reverends, the strongest powerhouse of this generation was Dark Skeletal Lord.

It was rumored that Dark Skeletal Lord had a bone body at the demigod level. Just by relying on his bone body, he could crush most of the Nine-Step Saint Kings.

Even if the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan joined hands, they could only fight to a draw with Dark Skeletal Lord. They couldn't gain too much advantage.

"With Zhang Ruochen's terrifying rise, it's impossible for the Infernal Court to let him continue growing. Dark Skeletal Lord of Bone Clan, Nether Demon and Nether Buddha of Nether Clan, the talented demons, and even Yan Wushen, might not be able to resist attacking him after what happened on True Dragon Island," Chen Hu said seriously.

Any one of these peerless demons from the Infernal Court could affect the outcome of the Battlefield of Merits.

Xing Yuan narrowed his eyes, "That being said, I still want to see Zhang Ruochen fall at the hands of the Heavenly Realm sect. He has many secrets and all kinds of treasures. How could he fall into the hands of the people of the Infernal Court for nothing? I really hope that the Archangel Michael can come out of seclusion soon."

Hearing the name "Michael", Chen Hu's heart trembled. An incomparably majestic figure appeared in his mind.. He couldn't help but feel a sense of awe.

Chapter 2128: Defeating the Supreme Saint

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation **Editor:** EndlessFantasy Translation

After a series of fierce battles, the starry sky outside the Grand Terminal of Merits had become empty. There were originally ten asteroids that were hundreds of miles in diameter around it, but now, they had been beaten into ashes.

In the beginning, Zhang Ruochen was still at a disadvantage, but gradually, he was able to fight evenly with Supreme Saint Jinhui and catching up with the pace.

Relying on the Secret Tome of Time and Space, he could use any Time and Space techniques with ease, and his power was multiplied.

'How can Zhang Ruochen's Time and Space techniques be so difficult to deal with? I can't even get close to him.' Supreme Saint Jinhui was anxious and annoyed.

Supreme Saint Jinhui's power was indeed much stronger than Zhang Ruochen's. Combined with the Spearmanship Saintwill, his halberd

technique was also exceptionally tyrannical. However, it was restrained, and the effects of all his attacks were greatly reduced.

He couldn't suppress Zhang Ruochen for a long time, which made Supreme Saint Jinhui uneasy.

If this continued, what reputation would he have left?

ROAR!
The Supreme Saint Jinhui roared into the sky. Hundreds of millions of Precept emerged from his body.

Whoever broke through the Supreme Saint realm, the number of Precepts in their body would immediately double fold and become more solid.

Therefore, as long as their foundation wasn't infirm, after becoming the Neverwither Supreme Saint, the number of Precepts would not be less than the top-notch Saint Kings.

The Supreme Saint Jinhui cultivated more than 40 million Precepts in the Saint King realm. When he broke through to the Supreme Saint realm, it immediately became 90 million. After almost a thousand years of hardcore cultivation, the number of Precepts had reached 150 million, which was more than three times that of Zhang Ruochen's.

However, the Precept cultivated by the Supreme Saint Jinhui were mainly Minor Paths, accounting for more than 80%. The Path cultivated from the Major Path and the Path of Supreme Saint only had less than 30 million. The overall quality could not be compared to Zhang Ruochen's.

A ball of bright saint light flew out from the Supreme Saint Jinhui's body. It gave off a sharp, domineering Qi and integrated into the Sky-Piercer Halberd.

It was the Spearmanship Saintwill condensed by the Supreme Saint Jinhui. Now that it was released, it means that he would be using his strongest move.

As the Sky-Piercer Halberd waved, the Supreme Saint Jinhui's own Precept and the heavenly and earthly precepts within a radius of 10,000 miles were activated. They surged like a tidal wave.

Before the halberd technique was fully unleashed, a large area of the starry sky was already rippling violently. Even Zhang Ruochen's Spatial Domain could not suppress it.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed slightly. Without any hesitation, he immediately formed a seal at the fastest speed. The Saint Aspects of Time and Dimensions in the form of a vortex appeared on his left and right respectively.

As the two invisible vortexes spun, they released an intensely powerful time and dimensional power and inserted it into the Secret Tome of Time and Space.

Instantly, countless fragments of time and space flew out of the Secret Tome of Time and Space. They collided with each other and merged into one. The fragments transformed into a powerful force that seemed to be able to pierce through the time and space of different periods.

Fusing both the power of time and dimensional power into the power of time and space was Zhang Ruochen's trump-card technique. Even though he wasn't very familiar with this power, he could still use it forcefully.

Of course, he couldn't use the power of time and space casually. If he didn't control it well, he would fall into it and be devoured by time and space.

Luckily, Zhang Ruochen was fully prepared this time. He had been using the power of time and dimensional power all this time. He was confident that he could condense the power of time and space in a battle with the Supreme Saint Jinhui.

BOOM!
The power of time and space struck hard. It ignored the barriers of space and clashed violently with the Supreme Saint Jinhui's strongest halberd technique.

In an instant, a large area of the starry sky was torn apart and a terrifying spatial storm appeared. Even the mysterious River of Time appeared.

No matter how powerful the Supreme Saint Jinhui's halberd technique was, it was destroyed in an instant.

Under the influence of the power of time and space, the shattered starry sky could not be repaired. Instead, terrifying distortions appeared and formed a huge black hole. It seemed like it wanted to devour everything.

Pfft.
Supreme Saint Jinhui was hit by the power of time and cough out a mouthful of blood. He was severely wounded.

To make things worse, Supreme Saint Jinhui was being sucked in by the black hole. He could not break free no matter what.

The area where he was in complete chaos. The terrifying power entered his body. Even someone with a powerful immortal saint body could not withstand it. Countless cracks appeared on his body and blood spurted out.

If this continued, Supreme Saint Jinhui's immortal saint body would probably be shattered before he was sucked into the black hole.

"No…" Feeling the threat of death, Supreme Saint Jinhui started to reveal his fearful side.

He had never thought that dealing with a Saint King realm junior would be so dangerous. He was about to lose his life.

Zhang Ruochen's face was pale. The time and space power he had condensed was too strong. It had completely gone out of control. He still couldn't manage to bend the time and space power as he wished.

In fact, even a Supreme Saint would find it difficult to control the time and space power perfectly, let alone a Saint King. If he didn't do it right, he might be exiled to an unknown time and space.

Seeing Supreme Saint Jinhui was about to be swallowed by the black hole, Zhang Ruochen could not help but frown slightly. He immediately took out the Zangshan Demonic Mirror and turned it into hundreds of miles in size to shield Supreme Saint Jinhui from the black hole.

Feeling the devouring power had dissipated, Supreme Saint Jinhui felt as if he had been pardoned. He did not dare to hesitate at all and immediately retreated at high speed.

The Zangshan Demonic Mirror released a vast amount of Demonic Qi that condensed into towering demon mountains and suppressed the black hole.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen activated the Secret Tome of Time and Space and used the power of time and dimensional power to repair the chaotic time and space.

Before long, the black hole formed by the distortion of time and space disappeared without a trace, and the starry sky returned to stillness once more.

Zhang Ruochen did not actually care about the life and death of the Jinhui Grand Sage. However, if he killed the Supreme Saint Jinhui in front of everyone, the consequences would be unimaginable. The conflict between him and the Sunshine Civilization would probably never be alleviated.

Zhang Ruochen puts away the Zangshan Demonic Mirror and the Secret Tome of Time and Space. He gazed at the severely injured Supreme Saint Jinhui and said, “If you want me to release Jinyang Twin Kings and the others, the Sunshine Civilization had better send someone with a better attitude. In addition, I am returning to the Battlefield of Merits and continuing to fight with the Infernal Court. I don’t wish for anyone to stab me in the back. Otherwise, don’t blame me for being merciless.”

Zhang Ruochen’s voice wasn’t loud, but it clearly reached everyone in the Grand Terminal of Merits. It was obvious that he wasn’t just speaking to the Supreme Saint Jinhui.

After leaving these words, Zhang Ruochen flashed straight towards the Grand Terminal of Merits.

Supreme Saint Jinhui felt ashamed of himself and looked pale. He never thought that he would lose to Zhang Ruochen.

The middle stage of Neverwilt Realm Supreme Saint was destined to become a joke when he lost to a Saint King. It would soon spread throughout the corners of Celestial Court and Infernal Court.

Zhang Ruochen’s reputation would be getting better and his influence shall surpass that of defeating the Son of Darkness on True Dragon Island.

“How is this possible? Zhang Ruochen actually defeated Supreme Saint Jinhui.”

All the cultivators in the Grand Terminal of Merits were astonished.

The outcome of the battle was like a dream and surreal.

He was a Supreme Saint of middle stage Neverwilt Realm, who had condensed the Saintwill. Furthermore, he had the regal weapon. How could he be defeated by a Saint King?

Chen Hu’s expression changed drastically. He said in a trembling voice, “How is this possible? is The Scion of Time and Space really undefeatable?”

Xing Yuan's expression also became serious. With the terrifying strength that Zhang Ruochen had displayed, he doubted that even if Archangel Michael came out of seclusion, could Zhang Ruochen be suppressed?

Bang!
Zhang Ruochen appeared in the Grand Terminal of Merits like a god descending from heaven.

Everyone in the Grand Terminal of Merits steps back involuntarily. Most of them showed their respect to Zhang Ruochen.

Xing Yuan and Chen Hu were panicking and wanted to find a hole to hide in. After all, they had been urging the Supreme Saint Jinhui to attack Zhang Ruochen.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't even look at them. Obviously, he didn't care much about them.

Xing Yuan and Chen Hu heaved a sigh of relief. At the same time, they were furious. With their status and strength, they were being looked down upon for once in their whole life.

Ji Kong Yuan appeared beside Zhang Ruochen and advised. "Divine Envoy, you may have defeated Supreme Saint Jinhui, but the Sunshine Civilization will not let this go. No matter what, you must ensure the safety of the Jinyang Twin Kings."

"Why is that?" Zhang Ruochen asked curiously.

Ji Kongyuan said, "In the history of the Sunshine Civilization, there was a pair of powerful twin gods. Legend has it that they both grasped the canon and lived for many eras. In the end, they buried themselves in a secret place and only left the Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron they used in the outside world.

"These twin gods have many treasures and the Sunshine Civilization has always been eyeing on them. Unfortunately, only their descendants with the Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron can open their burial ground.

"However, after so many years, none of their descendants are pure-blooded. Due to some unforeseen circumstances, the clan is on the verge of extinction.

"It wasn't until this generation that the Jinyang Twin Kings appeared. Their bloodlines were strong. They had the glory of the twin gods when they were

young and were recognized by the Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron. Therefore, the Sunshine Civilization placed great importance on them and focused on their cultivation."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen suddenly understood. He hadn't expected the Jinyang Twin Kings to have such a backstory.

If Zhang Ruochen did kill the Jinyang Twin Kings and kept the Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron to himself, the Sunshine Civilization would definitely go crazy.

"After this battle, I think the Sunshine Civilization will go look for Yueshen. It'll save you a lot of trouble," Ji Kong Yuan added.

Zhang Ruochen's heart skipped a beat. Although he didn't want to trouble Yueshen with everything, it would be much easier if she came forward.

However, he also understood that this matter wouldn't be easy to resolve. After all, he had killed the Tianzi of an ancient civilization, and everyone knew about it.

Otherwise, the Sunshine Civilization wouldn't have sent an Emissaries Vigilant to deal with him.

After chatting with Ji Kong Yuan again, Zhang Ruochen did not linger in the Grand Terminal of Merits. He went straight back to Kunlun Realm through the dimensional teleportation array.

Supreme Saint Jinhui stood in the starry sky and watched Zhang Ruochen leave, but he was powerless to stop him.

He was seriously injured this time. If he had not cultivated to the Supreme Saint realm for nearly a thousand years, his immortal saint body would have been broken.

Eastern region of Kunlun Realm, Omen Ridge.

After many twists and turns, Zhang Ruochen returned to his homeland.

Because of Luoshui, the Omen Ridge became very lively. People often came here to seek out opportunities.

Zhang Ruochen didn't stop for a moment. He rushed to Yunwu Commandery's Royal Mountain as fast as he could.

“Who dares to trespass the Royal Mountain? Take My Punch.”

With a loud shout, a fat rabbit that looked like a pig appeared out of nowhere.

The rabbit looked aggressive. It stood up and punched out its forelegs like a fist.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were calm and unmoved. He casually slapped out.

The heavenly and earthly precepts and the Qi of Heaven and Earth were mobilized and condensed into a 300-meter-long hand with unparalleled power.

BANG!
The fat rabbit did not have any power to resist. It was directly sent flying by the big hand and embedded into a mountain.

It had to be said that Zhang Ruochen controlled his power very well. Otherwise, not to mention a mountain, even an asteroid would have been smashed into pieces.

“Ahem, Lord Chen, I was just joking with you. Did you have to hit me so hard?” The rabbit struggled out of the mountain, its eyes full of resentment.

This rabbit was naturally the greedy Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit. It had eaten all kinds of sacred medicine, but it had stolen a leaf of the Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi.

Every time he thought of this, Zhang Ruochen felt so angry and his blood boiling all over. That was a divine medicine, one of its kind in the world. Yueshen could recover 50% of her divine power just by refining a leaf. Its value was immeasurable.

“You dare to be disrespectful to the Crown Prince. You deserve it.”

The Demon Ape appeared and bowed respectfully. “Greetings, Crown Prince.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and the Demon Ape. He couldn’t help but nod secretly. After not seeing them for a while, their cultivation had already reached the Nine-Step Saint King cultivator of the Lesser Precept World. The divine medicine hadn’t been eaten in vain.

With their physiques, there shouldn't be any problems dealing with ordinary top-cultivators from Precept Domain. They could even fight against top cultivators of the Precept Domain realm.

Zhang Ruochen had a thought and asked lightly, "Did anything happen while I was away?"

"Lord Chen, perhaps you are not aware. Someone has been watching this place since you left. Luckily, I was here. Otherwise, Royal Mountain would be in danger," the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit said.

The Demon Ape rolled its eyes at the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and said, "Your Highness, don't listen to its nonsense. Someone indeed wanted to attack the Royal Mountain, but it was the fairy from Luoshui who eliminated several groups of people and stunned everyone."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen's heart skipped a beat. He knew without a doubt that the fairy from Luoshui mentioned by Demon Ape was Luoji, Fairy Tianchu.

It had been a while since they had parted at the Peacock Manor. Now that he had returned to Omen Ridge, he should go to Luoshui to see Fairy Tianchu.

Luoshui had the inheritance left by Luoshen and the Nine Carols Star. If there was nothing special, Fairy Tianchu would not have left.

"Your Highness, the master is waiting for you."

While Zhang Ruochen was deep in thought, the voice of Demon Ape sounded again.

The master of Demon Ape spoke of was none other than Blackie.

Thanks to Blackie being its master, Demon Ape was able to receive the teachings of the Archdemon's Ten Heavens. It cultivated slowly and gradually achieved its current state.

Zhang Ruochen came back to his senses and said, "Take me to it."

The Demon Ape and the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit did not hesitate and immediately led the way.

According to Zhang Ruochen's request, Blackie rushed to Royal Mountain ahead of schedule and hid the key to the World Gate.

Zhang Ruochen had not only set foot in the awakened sacred land but there was no other place that could compare to Royal Mountain. This place was full of mysteries and magic. It was a good place to kept the key to the World Gate.

Sometimes, Zhang Ruochen even wondered if this place was an awakened sacred land?

Chapter 2129: War with Yan Wushen

During Zhang Ruochen's absence, Royal Mountain had gone through many changes. The internal space was wider, the Saint Qi of heaven and earth was thicker, and there were sacred medicines everywhere.

According to Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and Demon Ape, there were even two one-hundred-thousand-year-old sacred medicines. However, they were all picked up and eaten by them immediately.

With Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation base and strength, obviously he wasn't interested in one-hundred-thousand-year-old sacred medicines. He would however be interested in the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb if there's one.

However, the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb was extremely precious and could not be easily obtained. Even if Royal Mountain was really an awakened divine ground, it would still be difficult to produce one in a short time.

Under the lead of Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and Demon Ape, Zhang Ruochen entered a magnificent Weapon-Refining Pavilion and saw Blackie, who was staring blankly.

"How is this place? Is Royal Mountain suitable for us to place the key of the World Gate?" Zhang Ruochen went up and asked.

Blackie came back to his senses in a snap and said excitedly, "This is a really good place. After my careful investigation, it is very likely that this is an awakened divine ground, but it hasn't fully recovered yet. I suspect that there might be divine medicine in the deepest areas of the folded dimension."

"There's divine medicine here?" Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

Blackie said, "That is just my speculation, but I can't be sure for now. We wouldn't be able to confirm this until the folded dimension is fully opened. Let's talk about the key of the World Gate first.

“Your idea to use the key of the World Gate to build a sacred ground for cultivation is good, however, we need to set it up carefully to ensure that nothing goes wrong. You will have to provide me with sufficient materials to set up the array.”

Blackie became serious as it was speaking. The key of the World Gate was extremely important, and matters related to it must be treated seriously.

If they were exposed, all their efforts would be in vain.

“Don’t worry. As long as you can set it up properly, I can provide you with as many materials as you need,” Zhang Ruochen said.

He had obtained hundreds of millions of treasures collected by the four overlords of True Dragon Island. There were various kinds of treasures, so he could use them however he wanted.

The key to the World Gate couldn’t be brought out of Kunlun Realm nor stored in Qiankun Realm. If it could, they wouldn’t have to go through so much trouble.

Immediately, Blackie listed down all the materials he needed in detail and handed it to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Ring of Dimensions from the four overlords of True Dragon Island. Blackie needed a lot of materials, and most of them were very precious. He could only find them from here.

Due to several delays, he did not have time to check and count the treasures he had obtained.

There were too many treasures so it took a lot of time just to count them roughly. To add on to that, there were many treasures which Zhang Ruochen couldn’t recognize, so he had to ask Blackie to help him identify.

“What is this thing?”

Zhang Ruochen waved his hand and took out an object.

It was a huge rock. At first glance, there was nothing special about it. However, if one looked at it carefully, they would find many complicated patterns on the surface of the rock. They seemed to be formed naturally.

Upon seeing this, Blackie’s eyes lit up. It immediately pounced forward and stared at the patterns on the surface of the boulder.

After a moment, Blackie said excitedly, “This is good stuff. It’s actually the cornerstone of the divine array, and this one’s so well-preserved. Zhang Ruochen, do you still have any?”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but look surprised. He immediately took out eight similar boulders.

These boulders were all collected by Mojo. Thankfully it was able to recognize these rocks as treasures.

“That’s great. With these nine cornerstones of the divine array, I’m confident that I can set up a perfect maze array. No one can sense the aura of the key of the World Gate,” Blackie said confidently.

This matter could not be delayed. After getting the materials, Blackie immediately got busy.

With Blackie’s current array attainments, he had enough materials and was extremely efficient in setting up the array.

In the past few days, Blackie found some remnants of an ancient array in the depths of Royal Mountain. It was like a circular wall buried in the soil. After using its spiritual power to explore, Blackie could feel its grandeur. He suspected it to be an ancient divine array.

However, the ancient array was badly broken. Blackie and Zhang Ruochen spent a lot of effort to push some of the remnants of the array to the ground surface and set it up at the entrance of Royal Mountain.

It took Blackie another ten days to restore the ancient array. Although only less than one percent of the array pattern was restored, it was already enough to resist the attack of Nine-Step Saint King.

Then, Blackie began to set up the formation to seal the key of the World Gate. It was indeed a big project as they had to ensure that the key of the World Gate could not escape from the formation nor be discovered by anyone, but also that the formation could create an excellent cultivation environment.

Fortunately, there were some people who knew about arrays among the old Shengming cadres, so they were able to help Blackie.

In a cultivation room in the Weapon-Refining Pavilion, Zhang Ruochen was quietly adjusting his breath to make up for the vital energy he had used up in the battle with Supreme Saint Jinhui.

Suddenly, the Staff of the Divine Envoy flew out on its own. It shone with a bright divine light, and Yueshen's figure appeared out of thin air.

Zhang Ruochen immediately woke up. He stood up and bowed respectfully, "Greetings, Yueshen."

"You should give me an explanation for what happened to Sunshine Tianzi, don't you think?" Yueshen said coldly.

Zhang Ruochen could clearly feel Yueshen's dissatisfaction, but he remained calm and said, "This isn't what I intended. Sunshine Tianzi was too evil and vicious. He wanted to plot against me to snatch my treasure and then take over my body. I never attack anyone unless they attack me. Since he had attacked me, I had no choice but to kill him."

"None of those ancient civilizations are easy to deal with. Killing their Tianzi is a huge matter and will affect the entire ancient civilization. The elder Tianzhu of Sunshine Civilization is especially known for shielding shortcomings of his own people. This time, he visited Mount Yueshen in person and asked me to hand you over. What do you think I should do?" Yueshen's eyes shone with divine light, as she stared at Zhang Ruochen.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen frowned. He didn't expect Sunshine Civilization to be so aggressive to even have someone as powerful as Tianzhu to visit Yueshen in person. Were they so determined to kill him?

On the surface, Zhang Ruochen was still calm, but his eyes were sharp, "This is my fault, so I will take all responsibility. I won't make things difficult for Yueshen, and I won't implicate Guanghan Realm.

"However, I won't let Sunshine Civilization control me. If they want to deal with me, they will need to have the ability to do that. Also, Jinyang Twin Kings and the Golden Crow Ancient Cauldron will disappear forever."

Zhang Ruochen couldn't fight against the entire Sunshine Civilization with his current cultivation level, but he wouldn't be threatened by them either. If they really make this a big deal, he would make Sunshine Civilization regret it.

Zhang Ruochen and Yueshen looked at each other but neither of them spoke. There was a pin drop silence in the cultivation room, making the atmosphere extremely stifling.

After some time, Yueshen said, "Before you become powerful enough, you must always think twice before you act. Acting on impulse will only destroy

you. You have to understand that I can't protect you every time. Of course, dealing with the sects in the Heavenly Realm is an exception."

"I understand," Zhang Ruochen nodded.

Of course he understood the principle of being flexible. However, there were some things that he just couldn't compromise. If his mood was affected, how could he become a Supreme Saint or even a God?

Yueshen slightly pondered, "Since you have a reason to kill him, things are different. It is me who should demand an explanation from Sunshine Civilization. Now that I have fully recovered my divine power, I should look for someone to spar with. Sunshine Tianzhu is a good candidate. Leave all the cultivators of Sunshine Civilization to me. With these bargaining chips, the initiative will be in my hands."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but think: when Yueshen had only recovered 50% of her divine power, she could already crush Yanshen, Blackheart Demonlord, and Bloodlord Erjia. Now that she had fully recovered her divine power, how powerful could she be?

Of course, the more powerful Yueshen was, the better it was for Zhang Ruochen. This would mean that he can do many things without scruples.

Thinking of this, Zhang Ruochen quickly replied, "It's up to Yueshen."

"Supreme Saint Manjian will look for you soon. Just hand over the cultivators from Sunshine Civilization to him."

After leaving these words, Yueshen disappeared without a trace.

Zhang Ruochen put away the Staff of the Divine Envoy. A faint smile appeared in his eyes. Yueshen was indeed reliable.

In just six hours, a clone of Supreme Saint Manjian arrived at Yunwu Commandery.

Zhang Ruochen immediately went up to him and smiled, "Brother Manjian, congratulations. You survived a great disaster, and your cultivation has improved again."

When Zhang Ruochen followed Yueshen to Celestial Court, he practiced in Supreme Saint Manjian's sacred realm. Supreme Saint Manjian took great care of him and even lowered his status to talk to him as an equal.

During the battle on Mount Yueshen, Supreme Saint Manjian had his head chopped off, but he still fought with a headless body. This left a lasting impression on Zhang Ruochen.

Supreme Saint Manjian had practiced with his immortal body for more than a thousand years. His vitality was strong, even chopping off his head wasn't enough to take his life.

"Brother Ruochen, what you did in Kunlun Realm really surprised me. Thanks to you, Guanghan Realm was able to acquire an excellent cultivation environment in Celestial Court," Supreme Saint Manjian patted Zhang Ruochen on the shoulder.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Brother Manjian, don't make fun of me. In the eyes of the gods, these fights are just insignificant matters.

"Oh right, the people Yueshen wants are all here. I'll need to trouble you to bring them back, Brother Manjian."

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen took out an Exquisite Dimensional Orb.

Supreme Saint Manjian reached out his hand to catch the Exquisite Dimensional Orb and said, "In that case, I'll go back and report to Yueshen first. We shall have a few more drinks when you visit Ziluo Domain."

"Then, Brother Manjian, you must bring out your best wine," Zhang Ruochen said.

Supreme Saint Manjian said, "Don't worry, I won't mistreat you. However, Brother Ruochen, you must be very careful in Battlefield of Merits. Kunlun Realm is not like Zuling Realm. The situation here is very complicated. Even with your current strength, you must not be careless."

"Yes, I will be careful," Zhang Ruochen nodded.

After a few more words of advice, Supreme Saint Manjian's clone did not delay any longer. He took the Exquisite Dimensional Orb and soared into the sky. He came quickly and also left quickly.

Seeing Supreme Saint Manjian leave, Zhang Ruochen stood still for a moment. Then, he rushed to Royal Mountain.

Now that he had Yueshen to deal with this troublesome matter, Zhang Ruochen did not have any more worries. He could go into seclusion and

cultivate for a period of time in peace, and also digest what he had gained on True Dragon Island.

While Zhang Ruochen was recuperating and recovering, Blackie had already chosen a place for the key to the World Gate — a valley which emerged from the folded dimension, located deep in Royal Mountain. It was very secluded and had a large internal space.

The Saint Qi of heaven and earth in this valley was very rich. There was a huge Saint Meridian underground that nurtured many sacred medicines.

If one looked carefully, one could even see hints of spiritual Qi of heaven and earth. This was the main reason why Blackie suspected that Royal Mountain was an awakened divine ground.

In a short time, Blackie had made some arrangements. It had built a Ninth Stratum Array using the boulders engraved with divine array patterns as its foundation. The array was used to seal the key of the World Gate and prevent it from emitting any aura. Yet, it could make the heavenly and earthly precepts and the Saint Qi of heaven and earth in the valley very active, making cultivation processes more efficient.

Although it hadn't finished all arrangements, the valley was already equipped with the basic functions to assist with cultivation. So, Zhang Ruochen gathered Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit, Demon Ape, and nearly a hundred female saints. At the same time, he released many old Shengming cadres from Qiankun Realm.

He had obtained a lot of cultivation resources on True Dragon Island. Obviously, he had to use them to train more powerhouses.

Wars in the future would be crueler. No one knew what would happen. Zhang Ruochen hoped that everyone around him would be equipped with the skills to protect themselves. After all, he might not always be able to protect them.

"I can also use the power of Sundial to cultivate. This time, I must break through to the greater precept world. No, I want to cultivate Precept Domain." Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit was very excited.

The others were also looking forward to it. With enough time and resources, as long as their innate talent was not too weak, their cultivation and strength would definitely improve vastly.

Sundial was opened, and the power of time covered a 2000-meter radius. Except for Blackie, who was going to continue setting up the array, the others all began to seclude themselves to cultivate.

It didn't take long for Zhang Ruochen to adjust to his best condition. He couldn't help but take out the King Grade Sacred Pill, which contained dragonsoul fire.

Zhang Ruochen had two goals for this seclusion. First was to refine this King Grade Sacred Pill, and the second was to refine all millions of Precepts of Gods in Yanshen's Leg.

Once he refined all millions of Precepts of Gods, the power Yanshen's Leg could emit would be shocking. This could become Zhang Ruochen's trump card.

At that point, Zhang Ruochen would be confident that he could fight against a Supreme Saint in the advanced stage of Neverwilt Realm.

At that point, Zhang Ruochen would be ready to challenge Yan Wushen, the number one cultivator below the Supreme Saints of Celestial and Infernal Courts.

This was every Saint King's dream!

As long as he could defeat Yan Wushen, he would defend the dignity of Kunlun Realm and announce to the whole universe that Kunlun Realm has someone with the name of Zhang Ruochen.

His path to becoming an emperor would begin with defeating Yan Wushen.

Of course, it was obviously not easy to refine the King Grade Sacred Pill or Precept of Gods. It would take a lot of time.

In addition, Zhang Ruochen would want to continue improving his cultivation and elevate the Paths that he was focusing on to a higher level.

With the six Saint Aspects, this was Zhang Ruochen's great advantage. He could do six different things at the same time.

'If I can transform Divine Purification Flame into Emperor-level flame, it will be of great help to me in forging the immortal saint body. It will also make it much easier to control the power of Yanshen's Leg,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen was full of expectations as he put the King Grade Sacred Pill into his mouth.

The medicinal power of the King Grade Sacred Pill was amazing. Even a Supreme Saint had to be careful to refine it. Ordinary Saint Kings didn't even dare to touch it.

When Zhang Ruochen immersed himself in seclusion, the outside world was full of spirit. He had become the talk of the town in both Celestial and Infernal Courts.

Yet this wasn't something that was unexpected — first, Zhang Ruochen defeated Son of Darkness, a rare genius of the Fane of Darkness on True Dragon Island. Then, he defeated Supreme Saint Jinhui, who was in the mid-stages of Neverwilt Realm outside Grand Terminal of Merits. It was hard for him not to attract attention.

Those who didn't have a bad impression of Zhang Ruochen clapped their hands in satisfaction. Many younger cultivators even made him their idol.

Those who were hostile to Zhang Ruochen gritted their teeth in hatred. They wanted to get rid of him even more.

The native Kunlun Realm cultivators had mixed feelings. They were happy that Zhang Ruochen had killed many powerhouses of Infernal Court, but they felt sorry when they remembered that Zhang Ruochen was no longer a member of Kunlun Realm.

"Who would have thought that Zhang Ruochen could grow to such a level in such a short time? No one can stop him from rising. Perhaps he will soon be on par with Yan Wushen."

"Zhang Ruochen is very strong and can defeat a Supreme Saint in the mid-stages of Neverwilt Realm. Yet, he is still far from being on par with Yan Wushen. There are countless geniuses in Celestial and Infernal Courts, but there is only one Yan Wushen. He is the only one who can cause the Four Heavenly Kings of the Celestial Palace a headache."

"Yan Wushen is temperamental. Recently, he's been killing wantonly in Kunlun Realm. He single-handedly massacred the fifteen commanderies of the Western Region. Hundreds of millions of lives were robbed, and their corpses were scattered on the earth. It was like a purgatory on Earth."

“This isn’t the first time Yan Wushen has done this. Before this, he had massacred all the lives in the three macroworlds. No one has ever killed as much as he did.”

“I believe that Yan Wushen will find Zhang Ruochen soon. Zhang Ruochen is definitely a worthy opponent, though I’m not sure if this heritor of time and space will be able to continue his legend of invincibility by then.”

…

The cultivators discussed animatedly. Their focus was on Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen since they had both done great things recently.

Therefore, many people were looking forward to the battle between Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen. However, it was hard to say what was going on internally in these people’s minds.

Chapter 2130: The Legendary Ancestral Land

No matter how chaotic the outside world was, it was quiet in the valley deep in Royal Mountain. Everyone was immersed in self-cultivation. After all, in the world of cultivation, strength was the key to survival.

Swoosh!

Zhang Ruochen suddenly opened his eyes. Pure white flames rose from his body.

After refining the King Grade Sacred Pill and top-class Pyro divine object, Zhang Ruochen finally upgraded his Divine Purification Flame, advancing it to Emperor-level flame from Envoy-level flame.

The Emperor-level flame was fundamentally different from the Envoy-level flame. Its power was incomparable. It could even refine a regal weapon.

The millions of Precepts of Divinity in Yanshen’s Leg had all been refined. The divine energy was terrifying.

Apart from that, Zhang Ruochen had also refined all five top-tier Five-element Divine Objects into his body. He had practiced Five-element Chaotic Body to the extreme. Other than the weakest organs and brain, his body had almost completely become immortal.

He just needed a little more time to forge an immortal saint body and breakthrough to the Neverwither Supreme Sainthood.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen could not do that now. The higher achievement he was within his Saint Kinghood, the stronger he would be when he stepped in Supreme Sainthood. Zhang Ruochen followed his goal to maximize his cultivation attainment for every aspect, including his cultivation of Precepts and forging of immortal saint body within his Saint Kinghood.

“The transformation of Divine Purification Flame is indeed not easy to acheive. Even with the help of King Grade Sacred Pill and the top-tier Pyro divine object, it still took me 28 years. Fortunately, I gained enough Godstones on True Dragon Island. Otherwise, I might have to give up halfway,” Zhang Ruochen sighed.

According to his initial plan, he had thought that it would only take him about 10 years to upgrade the level of Divine Purification Flame to Emperor level. Never had he expected that it would take him nearly three times the time originally envisioned.

After retracting Divine Purification Flame into his body, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but whisper, “Unfortunately, I still haven’t succeeded in forming the Realm-frame of Truth. I’m still a little lacking. Without the secret techniques from Fane of Truth, it’s really difficult to achieve it.”

Over the years, the number of Precepts of Truth in Zhang Ruochen’s body had increased to 680,000. He still needed 200,000 more Precepts of Truth to enable tenfold amplification of attack power. However, if he failed to form the Realm-frame of Truth, tenfold amplification was not possible even if the number of his Precepts of Truth met the requirement.

The total number of Precepts one could practice in the Saint King realm was one million. The further one went, the harder the cultivation was.

And because of that, even if Zhang Ruochen was holding 0.0039 percent of Canon of Truth, his speed of cultivating Precepts of truth was far slower than before.

With the aid from all kinds of rare items and the effect of the key of the World Gate, Zhang Ruochen’s Precepts had increased by 15 million, totaling 60 million.

Among them, the total of the Precepts of Dimension and Time had reached 610,000 and 570,000 respectively; the Precepts of Swordsmanship had increased to 880,000; as for the Precepts of the Palm and Fist, they had increased to 790,000 and 770,000 respectively.

With Zhang Ruochen's current strength, he should be able to defeat Supreme Saint Jinhui without resorting to the power of Time and Space.

Zhang Ruochen glanced over everybody and nodded in amazement.

As a result of 28-year cultivation and the ample resources he supplied, there was a great improvement in their cultivation base, especially Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and Demon Ape. Both had reached the Path's Anterior realm. With their current strength, they could be regarded as elites in any macroworlds.

In this period, Blackie had also finished setting up the array. It turned the valley into an ideal place for self-cultivation. At the same time, it could ensure the safety of the key to the world gate.

Zhang Ruochen did not interrupt their training session. He put away Sundial and left the valley alone.

He only had seven Godstones left. Instead of using them, he would keep them for now, thinking that they could serve other purposes.

A streak of blue holy light flew out of Zhang Ruochen's sleeve. It then transformed into a hundred-mile-long blue dragon, emitting a vast dragon aura.

It was the Azure Dragon that Zhou Yu had caught from Hidden Barrens after spending tremendous efforts. This dragon was a descendant of ancient species with a powerful bloodline. It was no less than the Heaven-devourer Dragon; its cultivation and strength far surpassed that of the Heaven-devourer Dragon.

However, unlike Zhang Ruochen, Zhou Yu hadn't been able to tame the Azure Dragon successfully.

There were two reasons why the Azure Dragon had submitted.

First, Zhang Ruochen was powerful enough to suppress the Azure Dragon's urge to resist.

Second, the Dragonform Grass was a great temptation to the Azure Dragon.

After refining a Dragonform Grass, the Azure Dragon's divine dragon bloodline was fully activated, and it was about to attain a True Dragon's physique.

‘True Dragon’ referred to the divine dragon that had yet attained Godhood. Since the Middle Ages, Ao Xinyan was the only one in Kunlun who had cultivated a True Dragon’s pure physique, which was why she was favored by the unspeakable figure at Yin Yang Sea.

Although the Azure Dragon had yet attained True Dragon’s physique state, its strength improved significantly. If it fought Zhou Yu again, it might not lose.

Tap, tap
Footsteps sounded. A skinny old man appeared out of nowhere, his drooling eyes staring at the Azure Dragon.

“What a fat dragon. It must taste good.”

As he spoke, the old man licked his lips, saliva almost drooling out.

Hearing this, the Azure Dragon was enraged. It flew down from the sky, landed in front of the old man, and let out a terrifying dragon breath.

Although the old man looked half-dead, he was extremely agile. He retreated instantly and distanced himself from the Azure Dragon. At the same time, he looked at Zhang Ruochen and shouted, “Watch your dragon, Zhang Ruochen. It’s so scary.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned slightly. He looked at the old man with an unfriendly gaze. He wanted to beat him up, but he restrained himself in the end.

It was the third time he had met this old man at Royal Mountain. The first time was when Royal Mountain was awakening. This old man had come out of the ground and claimed to be a grave robber. The second time, he had attempted to drug the group of saintesses. Even Fairy of a Hundred Flowers was almost drugged.

Unfortunately, the old man was too elusive. Zhang Ruochen had tried all methods, but he couldn’t do anything to him.

Even now, Zhang Ruochen still could not see through the old man’s cultivation base. He knew nothing about the old man’s background and cultivation level.

“Hey old geezer, why are you still staying at Royal Mountain?” Zhang Ruochen asked with hostility.

The old man chuckled and said, “Didn’t I tell you last time I am the guardian of Zhang clan? The ancestral land of Zhang clan is here. So of course, I have to stay here.”

“Since you refuse to tell me the truth, you left me no choice.”Zhang Ruochen’s eyes suddenly became fierce.

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen had already activated the Precepts of Dimension and released the Spatial Domain. It completely imposed a lockdown on space within hundreds of miles.

His current cultivation base was different from before. He could even fight against a Supreme Saint who was in the late Neverwither realm.

RAAAWRRR!
The Azure Dragon charged at the old man.

A huge and sharp dragon claw reached out like lightning. It condensed into a whirlpool of wind and cloud blocking all the old man’s escape routes.

“Wow, Zhang Ruochen, what are you trying to do?” the old man screamed and dodged swiftly.

What surprised Zhang Ruochen was that the old man could still move freely even though he had completely locked down the space within hundreds of miles. It seemed that the lockdown did not have any effect on him.

While he was surprised, Zhang Ruochen mobilized many Precepts of Dimension and cast a Dimensional Storm rushing toward the old man.

The Dimensional Storm affected a wide area and immediately approached, making it impossible for the old man to dodge.

Yet, the old man did not perform any Saint Techniques. Instead, he withstood the storm with his body of flesh and blood.

BANG!
The Dimensional Storm calmed down after being torn apart by the old man.

When Zhang Ruochen saw this, his eyelids twitching. With his current cultivation attainment in Path of Dimension, even a Neverwither Supreme Saint could not withstand the Dimensional Storm he cast. Yet, the old man was able to break it so easily.

‘How is this possible?’

Previously, he had suspected that the old man was a top-tier Nine-step Saint King. Now, it seemed that he had seriously underestimated him.

No wonder the old man had said that he could not leave Royal Mountain for fear of being discovered. His cultivation base would not allow him to stay in Kunlun.

Zhang Ruochen stopped and asked solemnly, “You are not a Saint King at all, and you are not a person of the present time. Tell me, who are you?”

He had already figured out that the old man could be a Re-Awakener. When they first met, he should have just risen from underground.

The old man was not an ordinary Re-Awakener. He was very powerful, with the level of a Supreme Saint, at least.

It was unbelievable that the once unremarkable Royal Mountain had become an awakening place, where even a Re-Awakener had emerged.

“Like you, I am a member of Zhang clan. Let’s talk it out. Why do we have to fight? My old arms and legs can’t take it,” said the old man with a smile as he massaged his waist.

The Azure Dragon also witnessed the old man’s strength. It could not help but retreat to Zhang Ruochen’s side and watch him warily.

Rumble–
During the stalemate of both parties, a huge commotion suddenly was heard from the depths of Royal Mountain.

Zhang Ruochen immediately turned and looked in the direction. His eyes couldn’t help but show a hint of surprise. “The folded dimension is open further, and Royal Mountain has become even wider.”

In the blink of an eye, the old man had disappeared into thin air. No one knew where he had gone.

Zhang Ruochen tried to track him with Spatial Domain, but to no avail.

After thinking for a while, Zhang Ruochen put the Azure Dragon into his sleeve. He then performed Great Dimensional Shift, traveling to the depths of Royal Mountain.

With his current strength, he had the ability to explore this folded dimension. Even if there was any danger, he was confident that he could protect himself.

The Saint Qi of heavens and earth in the depths of Royal Mountain was even more potent to the extent that it was almost indispersible. Mixed with some Divine Qi of heavens and earth, it made the scenery looked spectacularly sacred.

As soon as he entered the depths of Royal Mountain, something had attracted him.

On a rocky wall, there was a huge green dragon of thousands of feet long. It was breathing Saint Qi of heavens and earth.

“This is a Dragonvine.” Zhang Ruochen’s eyes lit up.

The green dragon was not a real dragon but a sacred herb.

If it were an ordinary sacred herb, even if it were 100,000 years old, it would not have attracted Zhang Ruochen’s attention. But this Dragonvine was different. It was a Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb.

As if sensing the aura of the Dragonvine, the Azure Dragon immediately stuck its head out of Zhang Ruochen’s sleeve, staring at it with an intent gaze

“Master, I want it,” the Azure Dragon said excitedly.

Zhang Ruochen knew that a Dragonvine was the most useful to dragons. It could improve a dragon clan member in all aspects.

However, a Dragonvine was an extremely aggressive Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb. Ordinary cultivators couldn’t do anything to it.

Zhang Ruochen had already sensed that the aura of this Dragonvine. It was compelling and ferocious. It was definitely not an easy character to deal with.

ROAR!
At this moment, the Dragonvine suddenly let out an earth-shattering dragon roar. It revealed its fangs and struck out its claws as it pounced toward Zhang Ruochen.

Swoosh!

The Azure Dragon immediately flew out of Zhang Ruochen's sleeve. As its body expanded along with the wind, it collided with the incoming Dragonvine.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen moved forward, continued walking toward the depths of the folded dimension. He did not have the slightest worry whether the Azure Dragon could defeat that Dragonvine.

Many sacred herbs were growing everywhere. Most of them were very old. They were all of the top grade, which would be useful even for Saint Kings.

Zhang Ruochen even found three 100,000-year-old sacred herbs. Each of them was extremely rare and valuable that even a Nine-step Saint King would yearn for them.

However, Zhang Ruochen did not collect them. After all, Royal Mountain was sealed away, so he did not have to worry that they would be taken away.

Zhang Ruochen had handed Seven-dragon Cauldron over to Blackie. With these high-quality sacred herbs, Blackie should be able to make many high-grade pills.

After passing through a few Saint Mountains, Zhang Ruochen stopped.

In front of him, a special area appeared. A brilliant nona-colored divine light enveloped it. It looked spectacularly sacred, like a holy land.

Somehow, when Zhang Ruochen approached it, his heart became very calm. He did not know the reason but he felt a sense of tranquility.

Through the nona-colored divine light, Zhang Ruochen saw many hills. They were densely scattered in the area that he couldn't see the end. He didn't know how many were there.

Each hill was unique, with huge gravestones before them. Ancient Supreme-Saint Precepts clouded the gravestones, so he could not see their true shapes. They also gave off an extremely intimidating aura of Supreme Saints.

"Are these the graves of Supreme Saints?"

Zhang Ruochen was shocked.

In Shengming Royal's gravesite of Zhang clan, nine graves were belonging to Supreme-Saint level ancestors that looked similar to these low hills.

As Zhang Ruochen speculated, he couldn't calm down anymore. There were thousands of graves within his sight. The actual number must be far higher.

'Does this mean at least thousands of Supreme Saints were buried here?

'Or could it be that all the Supreme Saints in Kunlun had died at some time and got buried here? But it was impossible.'

The aura of a Supreme Saint was intimidating. Even after death, it remained strong and would not disappear even after a long time.

Zhang Ruochen walked forward with puzzlement in his mind. However, as soon as he got close to that nona-colored divine light, circles of dimensional ripples appeared under his feet. Waves of terrifying Saint aura rushed over as if wanting to tear him into pieces.

Just as Zhang Ruochen wanted to fight back, he noticed something strange happened to his own blood, and the Saint aura rushing over just now dissipated with no reason.

Immediately, Zhang Ruochen felt that the intimidating pressure was greatly reduced. He was more comfortable now.

"What's going on? Why did the aura of Supreme Saints recede like a tide? Just now, my bloodline seemed to have an unprecedented throb," Zhang Ruochen vaguely figured something out.

He took another step further into the depths. After a great effort, he finally arrived at the foot of a hill.

In front of this hill was a stone tablet. There were some complicated characters engraved on it. They did not belong to the current era.

"What an ancient aura. The characters on it should be from the Middle Ages. They contain rhymes of Supreme-Saint Path.

"However, there is an invisible force clouding the surface of the characters. Even with my Saint Eyes, I can only see a general outline. It's a bit blurry and hardly visible."

Looking at the stone tablet in front of him, Zhang Ruochen could not calm down.

Immediately, he released a strong spiritual power, focusing on the characters engraved on the stone tablet. He began to decipher them.

What surprised Zhang Ruochen was that the characters were even more obscure than he had expected. Even with the current level of his spiritual power, it was extremely difficult for him to decipher them.

After fully utilizing his spiritual power, Zhang Ruochen finally managed to decipher the characters on the stone tablet.

“The grave of NorthBright Saint Lord, Zhang Lin.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes narrowed. “It really is the grave of a Supreme Saint. This…”

Here lay thousands of graves of Supreme Saints. It was an unbelievable, shocking scene.

“NorthBright Saint Lord, Zhang Lin. Why does this name sound so familiar?” Zhang Ruochen looked surprised.

Zhang Ruochen moved to a nearby grave. He mobilized his spiritual power to envelope the gravestone in front of him.

“The grave of Shadow Emperor, Zhang Tianshu ”

Zhang Ruochen was deep in thought. He murmured, “Zhang Lin, Zhang Tianshu, …”

“Zhang Lin, Zhang Tianshu. Aren’t these the names of the two Supreme-Saint ancestors in the Middle Ages recorded in my family tree?” Zhang Ruochen suddenly recalled the names.

Zhang clan of Central Region had an extremely glorious history, with Supreme-Saint level elites born in every generation. Even now, there were dozens of statues of Supreme-Saint level ancestors enshrined in the imperial ancestral halls.

With a flip of his hand, Zhang Ruochen took out an object. It was a record of Zhang clan’s long-standing family tree.

It was incomplete, with only half of it.

He did not take long to find the names Zhang Lin and Zhang Tianshu on the family tree. Both had left an indelible mark in the history of Zhang clan.

“Is this really the legendary ancestral land of the Zhang clan?” Zhang Ruochen was shocked and could not remain calm.

He had read an ancient record that mentioned an ancestral land of Zhang clan. However, according to the record, the land was destroyed during the late Middle Ages and could not be found by the descendants.

‘Does this imply that Zhang clan of Yunwu Commandery really belongs to the same lineage as Zhang clan of Shengming in Central Region?”

‘However, there were so many Supreme Saints’ graves here. Could it be that all the deceased resting in peace here were the ancestors of Zhang clan?’

Chapter 2131: The Supreme Saint Fruit

Zhang Ruochen stood in front of the ancient tomb. His emotions were fluctuating violently. If his guess was right, the Zhang Clan would have been prosperous in the past.

Unfortunately, there was a fault in the history of the Zhang Clan. Many things before the Middle Ages were a complete mystery. Even the deity known as the Crownsnatcher in the Middle Ages had long been forgotten. It was only when Yueshen mentioned it that Zhang Ruochen found out.

“It’s exactly the same as the description of the ancestral land in the ancient tome. Only after the Supreme Saint dies can he be buried in the ancestral land. This would be a great honor for every member of the Zhang Clan,” Zhang Ruochen said in a low voice.

The ancestor of the Zhang Clan was The Immovable Wisdom King. He was a legendary figure, so old that even Yueshen had never seen him. Therefore, the inheritance of the Zhang Clan was at least millions of years old.

Given the superior cultivation environment in the Middle Ages, the number of Supreme Saint cultivators that could be born over a million years would undoubtedly be astounding.

However, there was only half of the genealogy book. The time recorded was from the end of the Middle Ages, and there were less than a hundred Supreme Saint ancestors that could be seen on it.

If they could retrieve the first half of the genealogy book, all the mysteries would be easily solved.

The Zhang Clan that he had lived in for two lifetimes belonged to the same clan. Was it a coincidence or a deliberate arrangement?

Zhang Ruochen climbed to a higher position and looked at the entire gravesite. His gaze was fixed on the deepest part of it.

However, there was an extremely powerful force there. Even if he used the Eye of the Divine Mark, he could not see through it nor did he know where this gravesite extended to?

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to give up, his blood courses through his veins. The Empyrean Emperor Ming's Scripture began to activate on its own. An inexplicable aura enveloped him and shocked his mind.

Zhang Ruochen's body shook. His soul seemed to be pulled out of his body. In a daze, he arrived at a mysterious chaotic land, and condensed chaotic qi surged within.

A vast and majestic tomb appeared before his eyes. Above the tomb, the Precept of Chaos and Chaotic Divine Light flowed slowly like water, gives an extremely sacred feeling.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help himself but want to pay his respect towards the tomb.

Above the tomb, the space twisted violently. It faintly showed 27 layers of the magnificent sky. It felt like reality and fantasy at the same. No one could tell if it was real or just a vision.

Above the 27 layers of the sky, an extremely majestic figure sitting cross-legged. Many stars were surrounding him, like the center of the universe.

Zhang Ruochen tried to see the figure clearly, but he could not. In the end, he could only see chaos.

Just when Zhang Ruochen felt uneasy, his mind suddenly returned to his body. Whether it was the tomb, the 27 layers of the universe, or the majestic figure, they all disappeared without a trace, as if they were just a dream.

Zhang Ruochen stood in the air and did not come back to his senses for a long time. What he had seen just now had a great impact on him.

“Is there really such a big tomb in the depths of the gravesite? Who does it belong to? Why does it affect the blood in my veins so greatly?” Zhang Ruochen muttered to himself.

Zhang Ruochen could not help but activate Heaven’s Eye between his eyebrows with all his strength, wanting to take a closer look.

However, no matter how hard he tried, it was useless. An invisible and mysterious power blocked his prying eyes.

The moment he withdrew his gaze, Zhang Ruochen suddenly made other discoveries.

A strange fruit the size of a fist on top of the tomb in front of Zhang Ruochen. Countless Supreme-Saint Precepts interweaved on it, emitting a brilliant immortal light.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes changed slightly. He suddenly thought of something. ‘Could it be the legendary… Supreme Saint Fruit!’

Zhang Ruochen had only seen such a rare treasure in ancient tomes, yet he had never seen it in real before.

According to the records in ancient tomes, after a Supreme Saint died, he was buried in a unique place. After at least 10,000 years, the Supreme Saint’s essence and Precepts would be condensed into a fruit, known as the Supreme Saint Fruit.

Rumour has it, that after consuming a Supreme Saint Fruit, one could obtain his inheritance and part of the Precepts. There was a high possibility that one could cultivate the Supreme Saint realm.

“You’re right, this is the Supreme Saint Fruit.” A voice suddenly sounded.

Zhang Ruochen was slightly shocked. He didn’t know when the mysterious old man had come to his side and he didn’t notice at all.

If the old man wanted to harm him, he would undoubtedly be in great danger.

Zhang Ruochen closed his Heaven’s Eye between his eyebrows and glanced at the old man. He said, “I didn’t expect you to come in.”

“This is the ancestral land of the Zhang Clan. I’m a member of the clan. Of course, I can come in.” The old man looked as if it was a matter of course,

and his expression was very arrogant. It was as if he was a member of the Zhang Clan and was cocky.

If Zhang Ruochen wasn't a member of the Zhang Clan, he would have slapped him.

After a pause, the old man continued, "Zhang Ruochen, do you believe me now? The Zhang Clan of the Central Region also came from here. Their roots are here."

Zhang Ruochen had to admit that the old man was telling the truth. After all, he had seen the graves of the Supreme Saint's ancestors recorded in the genealogy book with his own eyes.

The names of the Supreme Saints buried in the adjacent graves could be found in the genealogy book.

"Why did the Zhang Clan of the Central Region lose touch with the ancestral land? And why don't the Zhang Royalty of the Yunwu Commandery know about the existence of the ancestral land?" Zhang Ruochen asked seriously.

Although he already believed that this was the legendary ancestral land of the Zhang Clan, he had many questions in his heart that needed to be answered.

With his hands behind his back, the old man spoke in a heavy tone, "The Zhang Clan failed to escape the catastrophe at the end of the Middle Ages. The battle was brutal. Almost all the top cultivators of the Zhang Clan were killed and their vitality was greatly damaged. Everything about the ancestral land became a legend

"According to the rules of the Zhang Clan, only the Supreme Saint could be buried in the ancestral land after his death. To know the location of the ancestral land, one must be a top-notch Saint King. Only then, the secret of the ancestral land could be protected.

"The Zhang Royalty of the Yunwu Commandery should be the ones guarding the ancestral land. Perhaps because of the small number of people, the inheritance was interrupted, yet they still remembered the importance of this land and never left."

In fact, the ancestors of the Yunwu Commandery's royalty were responsible for guarding the mausoleum.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen's heart skipped a beat. He guessed that these things should be related to the catastrophe at the end of the Middle Ages. After all, according to Yueshen, the Crownsnatcher of the Zhang Clan had died in that battle. Logically speaking, he should have been buried in this ancestral land.

The Zhang Clan of the Central Region was relatively lucky. Although they had experienced many hardships, they had risen again in recent ancient times. They had established the Central Shengming Empire. Including Zhang Ruochen's father, they had a total of ten Supreme Saint powerhouses.

Unfortunately, an accident 800 years ago had almost destroyed the sacred foundation. The Zhang Clan was on the verge of destruction.

"The Zhang Clan can no longer remain silent. We must restore it to its former glory. Zhang Ruochen, as a descendant of the Zhang Clan, you must shoulder this heavy responsibility," the old man suddenly said seriously.

Zhang Ruochen was slightly stunned. He shook his head and said, "Of course I want the Zhang Clan to rise again, but it won't be easy."

"How hard could that be? Zhang Ruochen, your bloodline is strong and your descendants will be a giant among men. With the Supreme Saint Fruit, it's not difficult to give birth to a group of Supreme Saints," the old man said wide-eyed.

"Zhang Ruochen, as one of the few males in the Zhang Clan, why are you so ignorant? There are nearly 100 female saints by your side and all as beautiful as flowers. Their cultivation is also not weak. If you marry them, the offspring you will give birth to will have strong bloodlines and good looks."

"And the girl transformed from the Lotus of Divine Reflection I saw last time. If you and she procreate offspring, not only will they look good, but their talent will also be heaven-defying. Perhaps they will even exceed you."

"As long as you find more powerful women to marry and have plenty of good-looking and talented children, the Zhang Clan will be able to rise again."

“I refined the powder out of kindness and wanted to lend a hand, but you didn’t appreciate it at all. Are You a man or not? Do you want to anger me to death?”

The old man kept scolding Zhang Ruochen as if he was disappointed.

Zhang Ruochen did not know whether to laugh or cry. He said, “Your cultivation is higher than mine, so your bloodline must be stronger. You are more suitable to do this than me.”

Hearing this, the old man suddenly blew his beard and glared. He said, “If I could, would I need you?”

It could be seen that the old man was really angry with Zhang Ruochen. He almost wanted to beat Zhang Ruochen up.

“What do you mean?” Zhang Ruochen stared at the old man’s lower body with a strange look. It was hard to imagine that such a powerful superior would… No.

“Where are you looking at? What are you thinking about?” The old man roared in exasperation. Then, he stretched out his right hand, and a gray fog appeared in his palm.

He waved his hand gently. Wherever the gray fog passed, the grass and trees withered instantly. A strong death qi spread for dozens of miles.

“How could you have such a strong death qi?” Zhang Ruochen quickly released Saint Qi to resist the erosion of the death qi.

The old man sighed, “Back then, I fought with several fierce Deathkins of the Infernal Court in the starry sky for three months. The stars were destroyed and the sun and moon lost their glow. Unfortunately, I was hit by their death spiritual power in the end and almost died. Fortunately, I was lucky enough to come back to life. It’s a pity that I spent 100,000 years but failed to completely dissolve the evil death qi.”

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen understood. It was because of the evil death qi in his body that the old man could not reproduce.

‘That was great!’

Otherwise, to revive Zhang Clan’s mission, the old man might have to rely on his unknown powder, dirty methods, and righteously licentious the Royal Mountain. That would be a headache for Zhang Ruochen.

Ignoring the old man, Zhang Ruochen looked at the tombs one by one. He found that many tombs had the Supreme Saint Fruit, but not all of them had it.

It was not that these tombs did not have the Supreme Saint Fruit, but more as they had already been plucked.

Since they knew the effects of the Supreme Saint Fruit, Zhang Clan's predecessors would certainly use it in history.

Many of the Supreme Saints might have eaten the Supreme Saint Fruit before.

Zhang Ruochen moved slowly toward the tomb, trying to pick the Supreme Saint Fruit on top of it.

Although he was greatly hindered, he was still able to get close. The Supreme Saint Fruit was within reach.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to pick it, the old man stopped him. "Don't casually pick the Supreme Saint Fruit."

"Why not?" Zhang Ruochen asked curiously.

The old man said, "After you pick the Supreme Saint Fruit, you need to eat it immediately. It's best if you eat it in front of the Supreme Saint's tomb. Only then can you completely absorb and refine the essence of the Supreme Saint Fruit. Hopefully, you can cultivate to the Supreme Saint realm."

"The tombs and gravestones you see are all places of treasure for comprehension and cultivation. You should cultivate here for a while before consuming the Supreme Saint Fruit, the effects would be tremendous."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen immediately gave up the idea of plucking it. The Supreme Saint Fruit was so precious that it should not be wasted.

He now completely understood the significance of the ancestral land to the Zhang Clan. As long as the ancestral land was there, no matter what disaster the Zhang Clan encountered, there would be a day when they would rise again.

Perhaps it was because of this test that most of the Supreme Saint Fruit were preserved.

If all the Supreme Saint Fruit were used, the number of Supreme Saints that the Zhang Clan produce would be unimaginable.

“Zhang Ruochen, do you understand what I’m saying? Your most important task now is to carry on the clan’s line and procreate as many offsprings as you can.”

“There was an ancestor of the Zhang Clan who married a total of 3,000 wives. All of them were beautiful. They were goddesses, saintesses, heavenly ladies of the ancient civilization, favored daughters of the Dragon Clan, Ninelynx Clan, and Phoenix clan. They flew in the sky, ran on the ground, and swam in the water. All of them were caught in a net and reproduced over 10,000 generations. That’s an example you should follow,” The old man said, he stared at Zhang Ruochen with a contemptuous look, as if he was talking about himself.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but have a strange look in his eyes. He instantly thought of Emperor Ji Mie of the Guanghan Realm. He did not expect that the Zhang Clan had an ancestor who was more powerful than Emperor Ji Mie in terms of reproduction.

However, Emperor Ji Mie was now in his prime. He should have many more descendants in the future. Perhaps he would surpass the ancestor of the Zhang Clan.

Looking at the old man’s burning eyes, Zhang Ruochen said, “The Zhang Clan of the Yunwu Commandery doesn’t have many people left. However, the Zhang Clan of the Central Region still has many clansmen who can let them come here to cultivate. Their cultivation speed will definitely be much faster with the surrounding and blessing of Zhang Clan’s ancestors, even without the Supreme Saint Fruit. Perhaps they can even get some unexpected benefits.”

Zhang Ruochen had basically taken all the members of the Zhang Chan who were still in Kunlun Realm into the Qiankun Realm. The number wasn’t small, but most of their bloodlines were already very weak. It was difficult to find true geniuses.

“I can’t leave the Royal Mountain. Hurry up and gather them all. Even if the quality is bad, it’s still better than nothing,” The old man immediately urged.

But then, the old man added, “No matter what, you can’t shirk responsibility. Hurry up and push down hundreds of beautiful saintesses to help the Zhang Clan grow.”

Hearing this, black lines appeared on Zhang Ruochen's forehead. He really couldn't stand the old man.

Swoosh
Zhang Ruochen immediately flashed out of the sacred gravesite.

At this time, the Azure Dragon had already suppressed the Dragonvine and started refining it.

Zhang Ruochen didn't disturb them. He rushed back to the hidden valley and gathered all the members of the Zhang Clan, with King Mingjiang as the leader. There were more than 1,000 of them.

After explaining the situation, Zhang Ruochen led the group of Zhang Clan members to the gravesite in the depths of Royal Mountain.

Of course, he only said that there was precious land for cultivation, but he did not mention Zhang Clan's ancestral land.

In his opinion, it was better not to tell the ordinary Zhang clansmen about the Zhang Clan's ancestral land.

After arriving outside the gravesite, Zhang Ruochen had these Zhang clansmen break through the barrier formed by the nine-colored divine light on their own.

Although the barrier was strong, even a Supreme Saint could not break through it, but it would not stop people with the Zhang Clan's bloodline.

"Ruochen, are these Supreme Saints' tombs? How can there be hundreds of them?" King Mingjiang was shocked.

He had entered the royal tomb before, so he was no stranger to the Supreme Saints' tombs.

However, his cultivation was not as high as Zhang Ruochen's, so the number of tombs he could see was naturally much less than Zhang Ruochen's.

As for the other members of the Zhang Clan, they could see even less. The strange power in the gravesite would affect their vision and perception.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, "It is indeed the tomb of a Supreme Saint, but it is different from the tomb of the Supreme Saint in the royal

tomb. Sitting cross-legged in front of the tomb and comprehending the Path can double the result with half the effort."

After getting a definite answer, King Mingjiang was even more shocked. Hundreds of Supreme Saints were buried in the same place. It was unbelievable.

King Mingjiang stepped forward in shock. Like Zhang Ruochen, he entered the gravesite with ease.

Seeing this, the other members of the Zhang clan also took action.

However, their speed was much slower. It was mainly affected by the strength of their bloodlines and cultivation.

Among these people, only one of King Mingjiang's sons had reached the Saint King realm. The others didn't even reach the Saint realm. Naturally, they would face great resistance.

More than 1,000 people came, but in the end, less than 300 people entered the gravesite. Most of them were blocked outside.

Thinking about it, Zhang Ruochen understood the mechanism. These people's bloodlines were too thin and couldn't be recognized by the ancestral land.

Zhang Ruochen had no choice but to send them back.

Chapter 2132: Great Prince Mara's Arrival at Eastern Region

Most people of the Zhang clan immediately knelt and bowed down after entering the gravesite. This was because they felt the vast Supreme Saint aura, and also because they saw the endless Supreme Saint graves. They felt a great shock to the depths of their hearts, and their souls couldn't help but tremble.

Even Zhang Ruochen was shocked when he first came in, let alone these Zhang clansmen whose cultivation was much lower.

Those whose cultivation had reached saint level were more composed. They managed to contain their emotions.

The old man walked over from the side. He glanced at King Mingjiang and the others and shook his head.

“There are so few people with such poor quality. Are you worthy of being members of the Zhang clan?”

King Mingjiang turned to look at the old man and frowned slightly. He was obviously unhappy. No matter how the Zhang clan had become, it was not for the outsiders to criticize them.

However, since he was unable to deduce the old man’s intentions, King Mingjiang did not dare to act rashly. He could only ask in a deep voice, “Who are you? Do you have any connections with Zhang clan?”

The old man shot a glance at King Mingjiang and replied calmly, “I am your ancestor.”

Hearing those words, King Mingjiang was immediately enraged!

As a Nine-Step Saint King, how could he be humiliated like this?

“I am the purest direct descendant of the Zhang clan and the younger brother of the previous Emperor Ming. You are too presumptuous.”

As he spoke, King Mingjiang stretched out a hand, which turned into the size of a millstone, and slapped directly at the old man.

Swoosh!

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen appeared out of thin air and blocked King Mingjiang’s attack.

“Twelfth royal uncle, what happened?” Zhang Ruochen was puzzled.

He had just sent away the unrecognized clansmen. How did King Mingjiang start fighting with the old man all of a sudden?

King Mingjiang tried his best to suppress his anger and said, “Ruochen, this old man came out of nowhere and acted like a big bully. Not only does he despise us, but he also says that he is my ancestor. How can I forgive him?”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen immediately understood. The old man could easily drive people crazy with his character. He had experienced it before.

Rubbing his temples, Zhang Ruochen had no choice but to use his spiritual power to communicate his message, “Twelfth royal uncle, he really is a living ancestor of the Zhang clan. He survived a disaster hundred-thousand

years ago. Due to certain reasons, he woke up in the present world. This is a secret. Don't tell anyone."

Upon hearing this, King Mingjiang's expression became very interesting. He stared at the old man with wide eyes, and his mind was in a mess. He couldn't react.

He would never have thought that this scrawny old man in front of him was an ancient ancestor of the Zhang clan from a hundred-thousand years ago.

King Mingjiang couldn't imagine how the old man survived through the years.

It didn't look like he could!

After a long time, King Mingjiang finally came back to his senses. All his anger had dissipated. He didn't doubt Zhang Ruochen's words.

"Ruochen, how is… Senior's strength?" King Mingjiang asked in secret.

"Very strong," Zhang Ruochen replied. "He's at least in Supreme Sainthood so he can only stay here in the holy land of enlightenment. Once he leaves, he'll be discovered by the Emissaries Vigilant."

Hearing this, King Mingjiang was shocked. This was followed by excitement. No matter what, it was good news that there's a Supreme Saint in the Zhang clan.

"Your cultivation in Precept Dominion isn't bad so your descendents shouldn't be too bad. Hurry up and marry some beautiful wives so that Zhang clan can grow," the old man looked at King Mingjiang carefully and said seriously.

Zhang Ruochen was very generous to his royal uncle. He provided him with many precious cultivation resources. Moreover, King Mingjiang's talent was not bad, so he finally broke through to Precept Dominion during this seclusion.

Since King Mingjiang was able to cultivate to Precept Dominion, it meant that he had a ten-percent chance of entering Supreme Sainthood in the future.

King Mingjiang's face was full of astonishment. He didn't expect that the old man would say what he had just said.

King Mingjiang had lived for more than a thousand years. He had five wives and had more than ten children. Unfortunately, his wives'cultivations weren't high, and they had passed away one after another. Now, none of them were by his side.

Most of King Mingjiang's children had passed away, only three were left. Two were in saint level, and one was in Saint Kinghood.

King Mingjiang had been alone for the past 300 years. He had no intention of taking another wife.

Zhang Ruochen was a little speechless. He felt that the old man was obsessed — all he could think about was reproduction.

However, the old man was not talking to him this time. Zhang Ruochen felt a huge relief that the old man's words weren't directed at him.

Just as he was thinking, the old man continued, "For a Nine-Step Saint King in Precept Dominion, you are at the prime of your life. Your children will inherit your bloodline perfectly. Although your bloodline isn't as good as Zhang Ruochen's, it's still not bad. As long as you find some women whose cultivation is above saint level, your offspring will not be too bad. Who knows, you might even give birth to a few true geniuses.

"Now that Zhang clan's bloodline has withered, as one of the few powerhouses of Zhang clan in Saint Kinghood, you should take up the responsibility of strengthening the clan. Otherwise, no matter how much preparation the Zhang clan has made, it will still be hard for us to revive.

"I've established a new rule here — any male of the Zhang clan who has reached the saint level or above must have at least one-hundred offspring."

The old man spoke in a serious manner. He did not seem to be joking at all.

Hearing this, everyone who was present put on a very strange expression. They looked at each other in dismay. Most of them still did not understand the situation.

Zhang Ruochen was extremely speechless. He really did not know what to say. He could only take his hat off to him for coming up with such a rule.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen thought of something. He took out a dimensional jade bottle and handed it to the old man.

“There’s a lot of Spring of Life in here. These can purify the evil energy of death. I think you can work hard after you get better with this.”

As the tree seedlings of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree tree seedlings grew, it produced more and more Springs of Life, forming a pond.

Upon hearing this, the old man’s eyes lit up. He quickly took the dimensional jade bottle and said, “This is good stuff, why didn’t you take it out earlier?”

After that, the old man picked up the dimensional jade bottle immediately and poured the Spring of Life into his mouth. He couldn’t wait.

In the blink of an eye, the old man finished the Spring of Life in the dimensional jade bottle. He reached out his hand and said, “This isn’t enough. Give me another eight or ten bottles.”

“Do you think I got these from the river? I’ll give you two more bottles at most,” Zhang Ruochen said unhappily.

The amount of Spring of Life in that bottle was definitely not small. It accounted for one-tenth of the total amount.

If it were not for the fact that this old man was most likely an ancestor of the Zhang clan and had strong cultivation, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t have taken out so much Spring of Life to dissolve the evil energy of death in his body.

As for the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, Zhang Ruochen didn’t plan to disclose it for the time being.

After all, the old man’s identity wasn’t completely confirmed, and his cultivation was unfathomable. What if he tried to snatch it?

A treasure like the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was enough to cause families to turn against each other. Naturally, he had to treat it carefully.

The old man curled his lips and said, “Why are you being so stingy? Forget it, I will take those two bottles then. Hurry up and take them out.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t even bother to bicker with him. He took out two more bottles of Spring of Life.

He couldn’t take the remaining Springs of Life out for the old man. He had to keep it just in case he needed it.

After that, Zhang Ruochen ignored the old man and walked into the depths of the gravesite.

Zhang Ruochen's cultivation had already reached Path's Anterior realm. He didn't need the Supreme Saint Fruits at all. However, mastering the Supreme-Saint Precepts on the graves would undoubtedly be beneficial. Perhaps it would greatly increase his Precepts.

At his current level, what he lacked was accumulation. He had to find a way to increase his number of Precepts to the upper limit of Saint Kinghood. At the same time, he had to do his best to make his body immortal.

The Supreme Saint ancestors of the Zhang clan practiced all kinds of Precepts, including Path of Time, Dimension, and Truth.

Zhang Ruochen planned to learn more in front of some of the ancestors' graves to strengthen his accumulation.

However, the gravesite was filled with immensely strong power. Even though Zhang Ruochen was an elite Saint King, he couldn't go too deep inside. He could only touch not more than five-hundred ancestors' graves.

"What is that?"

Gazing at a Supreme Saint Fruit, Zhang Ruochen suddenly made a discovery.

He reached out and grabbed the fruit, and a drop of crystal water flew out of it.

Zhang Ruochen held the water droplet in his palm and observed it carefully. Then, he changed to a strange expression and said, "It seems to be made up of a large number of Precepts."

After thinking for a while, Zhang Ruochen swallowed the water droplet. Then he started to refine the Empyrean Emperor Ming's Scripture.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes and said in surprise, "It has increased the number of Precepts in my body by a hundred-thousand."

This was not a Supreme Saint Fruit but just a drop of water on the surface of it. It was like a dewdrop.

This was incredible.

Zhang Ruochen moved and appeared in front of another ancestor's grave. He gazed at the Supreme Saint Fruit on the top and found another drop of water.

Now that he knew how it could benefit him, Zhang Ruochen did not just stand by but directly grabbed at it.

Then, Zhang Ruochen quickly flashed through the gravesite and collected all dewdrops on the Supreme Saint Fruits.

Although he could only touch less than five-hundred ancestral graves, the amount of dewdrops he collected were not small. There were nearly three-hundred drops in total.

"If each drop can help me increase one hundred-thousand Precepts, then there will be close to ninety million Precepts in my body."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were filled with anticipation.

Putting away all the Saint Fruit Dew, Zhang Ruochen came in front of an ancestor's grave with an extremely powerful Supreme Saint aura.

Judging from the Supreme-Saint Precepts covering the grave, this ancestor's cultivation had reached the ultimate realm of Supreme Sainthood — Paramount Realm.

Among those in the outer ring of the gravesite, this ancestor's strength should have been the strongest when he was alive.

"I'll cultivate in seclusion here for a while."

Zhang Ruochen muttered and took out the Sundial with a flip of his hand.

His Precepts had grown too much all of a sudden. It was necessary to arrange them properly to avoid any mistakes.

The Sundial was opened, and the power of time enveloped dozens of graves around it.

Zhang Ruochen immediately released the five Saint Aspects to the five nearby graves respectively. Only the Saint Aspect of the Immovable Wisdom King was in charge of refining the Saint Fruit Dews collected from the Supreme Saint Fruits.

He would comprehend the true meaning of the cultivational paths more easily by learning the path of different Supreme Saint ancestors and verifying each other.

The advantage of having six Saint Aspects at the same time was fully revealed at this time.

As Zhang Ruochen entered into his cultivation state, King Mingjiang and the others also began to cultivate in front of the graves of the Supreme Saint ancestors.

The old man had been watching from the side, but he shook his head as he watched.

Nearly three-hundred members of the Zhang clan tried in front of the Supreme Saint graves, but in the end, only seven of them could barely match the Supreme-Saint Precepts in seven of the graves. Only these seven clansmens' states of mind could withstand the impact of the Supreme Saint pressure.

That was to say, only seven of them had the foundation to refine the Supreme Saint Fruits, but they had to wait for their cultivation level to reach Saint Kinghood.

Therefore, only King Mingjiang and his son, who had reached Saint Kinghood, met the conditions to refine the Supreme Saint Fruits.

In addition, one could not break through Supreme Sainthood immediately by refining the Supreme Saint Fruits. Certain amount of time is needed for the conversion.

"If not for the Zhang clan's bloodline, the number of people who met the conditions would probably have been halved. I didn't expect the Zhang clan to have declined to such a state after I slept for a hundred-thousand years," the old man could not help but shake his head and sighed.

He felt helpless now that there were so many Supreme Saint Fruits but no one could use them.

However, the old man didn't chase those who weren't qualified to refine the Supreme Saint Fruits out. It was still beneficial for them to cultivate in front of the graves. It should help many of them enter saint level.

Turning his gaze, the old man looked into the depths of the gravesite. A strange look flashed through his eyes.

“Zhang Ruochen didn’t choose the Supreme Saint Fruit which contains the Paths of Time and Dimension,” he said to himself. “This is weird. However, he has cultivated six Saint Aspects at the same time and has a Sundial in his hand. That’s really enviable.”

Although he was a little confused, the old man didn’t plan to ask about this. He believed that Zhang Ruochen must have had specific considerations.

In the blink of an eye, six days had passed in the outside world, and six years had passed in the area covered by the power of time.

The Godstone inlaid on the Sundial had turned into ashes, and the power of time had disappeared without a trace.

However, Zhang Ruochen was still immersed in his cultivation state and showed no signs of waking up.

After a few days, Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes leisurely. Then, he summoned back all the five Saint Aspects which he had released.

‘The effect of the water droplets on the different Supreme Saint Fruits varies. The weakest one only helped me increase ten-thousand Precepts, and the best one helped me increase two-hundred-thousand Precepts. It has helped me increase my total number of Precepts to ninety million,’ a satisfied smile appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes.

However, many of the fast-growing Precepts were Minor Path ones. The total number reached thirty million, accounting for more than thirty percent.

Even so, the structure of Zhang Ruochen’s Precepts was still perfect. After all, he had a solid foundation from the beginning.

Putting away the Sundial, Zhang Ruochen stood up and looked at the Supreme Saint Fruit, which contained the inheritance of the Paramount Realm elite.

After thinking for a while, Zhang Ruochen used dimensional means to get hold of this Supreme Saint Fruit. Then, he immediately sent it to Qiankun Realm and soaked it in the Spring of Life.

As he expected, the Supreme Saint Fruit didn’t decay, melt, nor evaporate after being nourished by Spring of Life.

Then, Zhang Ruochen took a few more Supreme Saint Fruits, and also preserved those in the Spring of Life.

He didn’t need them himself, but he could give them to others.

Of course, these Supreme Saint Fruits were the Zhang clan’s heritage, so he couldn’t take too many.

After bowing respectfully to the ancestral graves three times, Zhang Ruochen turned around and walked out of the gravesite.

“Zhang Ruochen, there is a Communication talisman for you. I just took it from outside of Royal Mountain,” the old man appeared out of thin air and handed a Communication talisman to Zhang Ruochen with a smile.

Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat. He had a vague guess so he reached out to take it hurriedly and checked it carefully.

The old man asked, “Who is this Nalan Danqing? What does he look like? What’s your relationship with him?”

“I don’t think this has anything to do with you?”

After saying this, Zhang Ruochen left the gravesite.

The old man curled his lip, “How rude. I won’t lower myself to your level.”

After leaving the gravesite, Zhang Ruochen brought the Azure Dragon, who had just preliminary refined Dragonvine, together with him and left Royal Mountain as quickly as possible.

The Communication talisman was sent by Divine Scripture Maiden. It told him that Great Prince Mara of Rakshasa had entered Kunlun Realm again and had arrived in Eastern Region. His destination was Luoshui. The reason was unknown.

“He actually came to us. Are all Rakshasa cultivators so conceited?” Zhang Ruochen felt that there was something strange about this, but he paid no more attention to it.

With Zhang Ruochen’s current cultivation, even if Yan Wushen came, he might not be able to win.

An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth. No matter how powerful Great Prince Mara was or how many cultivators he brought, he had to die this time.

Chapter 2133: Fierce Battle at Luoshui

Zhang Ruochen set off from Royal Mountain. Traveling at his current speed, he managed to arrive at the bay of Luoshui in no time.

Luoshui was still mysterious as ever. Its water surface was covered with layers and layers of white mist clouding one's vision. No matter how sharp one's eyesight was, one could barely see through the deep waters.

Since Kunlun's revival, Luoshui had undergone an enormous change. Its water was as vast as an ancient ocean; its dimensional structure was profoundly complex, that even the floating celestial bodies looked like specks in the vast.

Compared to Royal Mountain, Luoshui was much more dangerous. Nevertheless, it was also more attractive. The sacred medicinal herbs growing here were similar to those found at Divinity Bestowment Altar. These herbs could help cultivators to boost the number of Precepts within a cultivator's body.

Standing by the riverbank, Zhang Ruochen could clearly sense many powerful auras in Luoshui. Apparently, many elites were looking for fortuitous encounters here.

Luoshui had long been recognized as an awakened sacred ground. The fortuitous encounters within the region were beyond imagination. It was so great that even a Supreme Saint would yearn for it.

'Few hundred years ago, when Luoshui had descended from the sky, nothing unusual was found.

'It was until 300 years ago, Luo Xu gained a fortuitous encounter; he developed insights on the 36 moves of Luoshui Fist and gained fame that shook the entire Omen Ridge.

'He was even dubbed a genius back then. Just how amazing was his encounter.' Zhang Ruochen stood before Luoshui and couldn't help but sigh.

Luo Xu had been a great help to Zhang Ruochen. Not only had he taught him Luoshui Fist, but he had also helped him on several desperate occasions. Zhang Ruochen highly respected Luo Xu and felt grateful for him.

Zhang Ruochen believed in Luo Xu. His intuition told him that Luo Xu would not get killed easily, even if Great Prince Mara severely injured him.

Unfortunately, Chu Siyuan—the Art Saint—had been brutally killed by Great Prince Mara. He's forever gone, ashes to ashes and dust to dust.

"Are you looking for me, Zhang Ruochen?"

Suddenly, a faint voice sounded.

The voice struck Zhang Ruochen. He looked at the vast Luoshui.

In the thick white fog, a tall figure slowly emerged. With a ferocious smile on his face, the man looked at Zhang Ruochen.

This man was nearly seven meters tall. He had a pair of huge jade wings on his back and big eyes that looked like lanterns; his nose was caved in, like those of gorillas; his mouth was filled with jagged fangs and canine teeth. To sum up, he was very ugly.

However, the aura he exuded was potent. Tens of millions of Precepts appeared around him, sinful blood light wrapping around his body. The energy was so dense that it didn't seem to be dissolvable. It was hard to imagine just how many lives he had taken.

"Mara."

A murderous intent flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

Zhang Ruochen had thought that Great Prince Mara was still on the way, so he did not expect to see him this early at Luoshui. And somehow, Great Prince Mara knew he would come.

Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes and said, "Did you lure me here on purpose?"

"Yes. All Kunlun cultivators know about your close relationship with Art Saint and Luo Xu. One of them died at my hands, and I severely wounded the other,

"You must be outraged, Zhang Ruochen.

"Do you want to tear me into pieces? Hahahaha!" Great Prince Mara laughed impudently.

Great Prince Mara continued after pausing for a second, "That old geezer was a fool. He had overestimated himself, trying to stop me.

“But he was somewhat impressive. I cut him 3,000 times, raking off all his flesh, and even ate some in front of him. Yet, he did not utter the slightest groan. It was annoying.”

What disappointed Great Prince Mara was that he saw no anger in Zhang Ruochen despite telling him much. Zhang Ruochen still looked calm, as if he did not feel bothered at all.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Great Prince Mara calmly and said indifferently, “Any last words? This is your last chance.”

According to the intel he got, Great Prince Mara was indeed very powerful. However, although his cultivation had reached the first tier below the Supreme-Saint level, his attainment was considered the weakest within that realm. His level of strength was about the same as that of Jinyang Twin Kings, so Zhang Ruochen had never taken him seriously.

However, all signs showed that things were not as simple as that.

Great Prince Mara knew that Zhang Ruochen had defeated Son of Darkness, but he still dared to show himself and provoked him. Moreover, he looked fearless. Something was fishy.

Nevertheless, no matter what Great Prince Mara was plotting, he was doomed to die.

“The one who should leave last words is you, Zhang Ruochen. Just how ignorant you are for not knowing that you gonna die.” Great Prince Mara sneered.

Zhang Ruochen said no word, his indifferent gaze looking past Great Prince Mara.

Under the influence of Luoshui, he could sense someone else’s presence even though they had restrained their aura very well.

“Rumors say that you, Zhang Ruochen, value loyalty. It seems to be true, but this is also your biggest weakness.” A magnetic voice suddenly sounded.

Two figures—one tall and one short—slowly emerged from the white fog behind Great Prince Mara.

The one who spoke was a tall and handsome man in red. He had phoenix eyes and a high nose bridge. His facial features were more perfect than

those of most women. With a jade fan in his hand, he looked elegant and gave off a demonic feel.

The man beside him had a chubby face. He was relatively shorter than him but with a sturdy build. His chest was bare, revealing a japamala around his neck, and there was another one in his hand. He looked like a monk.

‘It’s Nether Demon and Nether Buddha from Nether Clan who are as famous as Son of Darkness.’

Zhang Ruochen knew the duo’s identities from a glance.

After he saw the duo, he instantly understood everything.

Great Prince Mara dared to swagger to Eastern Region and head straight to Luoshui because Nether Demon and Nether Buddha backed him.

Apparently, Nether Demon and Nether Buddha had planned to use Great Prince Mara as bait to lure Zhang Ruochen out.

Their motive was to settle score with him because Nether Clan had suffered great defeat on True Dragon Island. Not only had they lost Son of Darkness, but many Netherkin elites were also massacred. It was a great humiliation for Nether Clan.

As someone who was as famous as Son of Darkness in Nether Clan, how could Nether Demon and Nether Buddha not make a move at this time?

Nether Demon gently waved the jade fan in his hand and said in a cold voice, “Zhang Ruochen, the stupidest thing you’ve done is to provoke Nether Clan. Now, you must pay the price.”

“I heard that Zhang Ruochen is somewhat related to Myriad Buddha Sect of Kunlun. Let me grant him an eternal rest.” Nether Buddha touched his big belly and stepped forward.

Nether Demon’s eyes were cold. “Zhang Ruochen is my prey. No one can snatch him away from me.”

“It’s been a long time since you’ve fought, Nether Demon. Just give Zhang Ruochen to me! ” Nether Buddha did not back down.

It was obvious that Nether Demon and Nether Buddha were both very confident in their own strength. Even though Zhang Ruochen had defeated Son of Darkness, they still believed that they could kill him alone.

Zhang Ruochen said lightly, “Do you really think you can defeat me? I don’t want to waste time. If you want to fight me, you can come at me together.”

“I can kill you alone,” Nether Demon growled.

Nether Demon suddenly fanned the jade fan in his hand. Eighteen solid-looking Curse runes flew out and turned into eighteen ferocious beasts in various forms. They all gave off evil and ominous aura.

Roar!
The eighteen ferocious beasts were like actual living beings. They let out earth-shattering roars. The monstrous power of Curse surged out of their bodies, trying to drown Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were calm and unperturbed. He casually threw a punch.

The Saint Aspect of Fist, condensed from 870,000 Precepts, appeared like a smaller version of Luoshui.

Zhang Ruochen had only cultivated 770,000 Precepts of Fist. After refining dew of Saint Fruit, they had been increased by 100,000.

Similarly, the Precepts of the other cultivation paths he practiced had also increased a lot.

Rumble–
Affected by the Fistwill, Luoshui began to shake violently, stirring up huge waves.

BANG!
Both the eighteen ferocious beasts and the power of their curses collapsed in an instant.

Nether Demon’s eyes changed slightly. He had already predicted that fighting with Zhang Ruochen in Luoshui would be disadvantageous to him.

SWOOSH!
Nether Demon moved and left Luoshui. He came to a high mountain near the riverbank.

Zhang Ruochen preferred to initiate an attack instead of countering a strike.

Zhang Ruochen would not hold back when dealing with a top elite like Nether Demon. He immediately used his dimensional technique. With a

raise of his hand, dozens of huge Dimensional Rifts appeared, charging at Nether Demon from all directions.

As his attainment level in the Path of Dimension became higher, the power of any dimensional techniques he performed had increased correspondingly.

A powerful Dark power emerged from Nether Demon's body and instantly covered all the Dimensional Rifts.

Almost all top Netherkin elites would develop insights on the Path of Darkness, and Nether Demon was no exception. He had cultivated the Path of Darkness to an extremely high level and could devour everything, including the Dimensional Rifts.

Then, Nether Demon immediately formed a hand seal at unbelievable speed. He combined the Power of Curse and the Power of Darkness to condense them into a terrifying palm strike, shattering a large area of space.

"Take a speck of dust from me."

Zhang Ruochen stretched out two fingers. He picked up a grain of dust in the air and flicked it out.

Incredibly, under the effect of the Precepts, the speck of dust turned into a huge rock sphere the size of a mountain that carried immense power like a small star. It collided with the palm strike formed by Nether Demon.

BANG!
The rock sphere and the palm strike met and exploded simultaneously, releasing a terrifying impact force. The ground within a radius of one thousand miles shattered in an instant. The tall mountains were razed to the ground. Fortunately, no humans were living in Luoshui valley. Otherwise, who knew how many casualties it would cause.

Great Prince Mara's face became very grim. "He could open up a mountain-sized dimension within a speck of dust,

"which is something even most Supreme Saints practicing the Path of Dimension cannot achieve.

"Zhang Ruochen's attainments in the Path of Dimension have reached such a terrifying level."

Zhang Ruochen's move had certainly given Great Prince Mara a huge impact.

"Below Supreme Sainthood, the only people who can surpass Zhang Ruochen in the Path of Dimension are Yan Wushen and Shentu Yunkong from the Fane of Dimension," Nether Buddha whispered.

Upon hearing these two names, Great Prince Mara's pupils constricted. Even though he was very proud of himself, he had to admit that these two people were not someone he could afford to mess with.

There was certainly no doubt about Yan Wushen, who was top one elite below Supreme Sainthood in Infernal Court. He would need to join forces with the Four Heavenly Kings of the Celestial Palace to suppress him.

As for Shentu Yunkong, he was the most outstanding successor that the Fane of Dimension had nurtured since myriad years ago. He had outstanding talent in the Path of Dimension. Ever since he joined the Fane of Dimension, Shentu Yunkong rarely went out. He had flung himself at cultivating the Path of Dimension since then. He was practically madly indulged in the cultivation of the Path of Dimension.

After so many years, no one knew what level Shentu Yunkong had reached in the Path of Dimension.

However, many people believed that even Yan Wushen might not be able to beat Shentu Yunkong in the Path of Dimension alone.

At this moment, Luoshui showed a strange sign of activity. Many cultivators rushed out one after another.

They were cultivators from different macroworlds, looking for fortuitous encounters at Luoshui. At this moment, they were all alarmed by the fight between Zhang Ruochen and Nether Demon.

"That is…Zhang Ruochen. Who is the opponent?" a cultivator asked curiously.

Nether Demon's threat level was Ultraten, so his name was not recorded in the *Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans*. In addition, he rarely appeared on a Battlefield of Merits. Therefore, ordinary cultivators failed to recognize him.
A cultivator who recognized Nether Demon said fearfully, "It's Nether Demon of Nether Clan. He's one of the three strongest elites below

Supreme Sainthood in Nether Clan. He is as famous as Nether Buddha and Son of Darkness. It's a surprise to see him in Kunlun."

The next moment, when he saw Nether Buddha and Great Prince Mara standing on Luoshui, his pupils constricted. "Nether Buddha and Great Prince Mara are here too. They must be here to kill Zhang Ruochen."

Upon hearing this, all the cultivators present were shocked. Although Nether Demon and Nether Buddha were not familiar names, being regarded as prominent elites below Supreme Sainthood was enough to show how powerful they were.

Hence, everyone immediately retreated, keeping a distance from Nether Buddha and Great Prince Mara to avoid getting implicated.

Splash!
Luoshui suddenly parted on its own. A graceful and beautiful silhouette emerged from it. Beneath her feet was a sacred golden fog. She looked like a goddess descending from heaven. She was none other than Fairy Tianchu.

After receiving the inheritance of the God of Luoshui, Fairy Tianchu became even more extraordinary, giving off an otherworldly feel.

Behind Fairy Tianchu, there were three people—Li Miaohan, the Fool, and the Butcher. They were all Zhang Ruochen's acquaintances.

"Master, it looks like Zhang Ruochen is in trouble!" Li Miaohan frowned slightly.

The Fool's eyes were grim. "Nether Demon and Nether Buddha charge at him together. And besides them, there's Great Prince Mara. It seems like they're determined to get rid of Zhang Ruochen. I wonder if he can handle it?"

"Zhang Ruochen is getting stronger. He even defeated Son of Darkness. It's not a surprise that his existence alerted Nether Demon and Nether Buddha. Unfortunately, the level of this battle is not something we can intervene." The Butcher shook his head.

Fairy Tianchu did not say anything. She just looked at Zhang Ruochen. At the same time, she unconsciously reached out and touched the necklace resembling the shape of Celestial River around her neck.[1]

[1] The necklace that Zhang Ruochen gave her.

Chapter 2134: The Evil Weapon of the Ancient Times

In the misty white fog, a tall and graceful figure stood on the surface of the water. Dressed in Elemental Sacred Robe, exuding an extremely noble temperament.

It was Luo Sha, Princess of Rakshasa.

“Zhang Ruochen’s growth speed is really terrifying. He has already become a powerhouse of the first level below the Supreme Saint. In time, he might really be comparable to Yan Wushen. He’s worthy of being the one for me,” Luo Sha said softly with joy in her eyes.

But then, Luo Sha frowned slightly and said. “Great Prince Mara has teamed up with the Nether Clan. He even acted as bait to lure Zhang Ruochen out. Isn’t he afraid of getting into trouble?”

Although Luo Sha’s status was very noble, her strength hadn’t reached the top level yet, so she couldn’t interfere with Great Prince Mara’s affair.

Especially, Great Prince Mara had just made a great contribution by taking the last remaining Saint Ancient Tea Tree. Many Gods of Rakshasa had personally rewarded him, his reputation had reached its zenith, and no one could restrain him.

However, this time, both Nether Demon and Nether Buddha had attacked together. No matter how strong Zhang Ruochen was, he won’t be able to free his hands and deal with Great Prince Mara.

On the ground, Zhang Ruochen and Nether Demon fought fiercely. They caused the land within thousands of miles to sink.

Nether Demon attacked fiercely. Like a storm, he used many terrifying curses and dark techniques.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen seemed to have taken root. He stood still and didn’t move at all. He casually used all sorts of mysterious dimensional techniques to perfectly neutralize the attacks. At the same time, he also attacked actively.

Anyone could see that Zhang Ruochen seemed relaxed. It didn’t seem like he was fighting to the death. It was more like an ordinary sparring match.

Zhang Ruochen’s strength isn’t just slightly stronger than Son of Darkness. Is there a mistake in the intelligence, or did he make another big

breakthrough in such a short time? The more Nether Demon fought, the more frightened he became.

According to the intelligence he received, Zhang Ruochen had defeated Son of Darkness with great difficulty. Their strengths shouldn't be too far apart.

Because of this, Nether Demon was more than 80% confident that he could defeat Zhang Ruochen and save the reputation of the Nether Clan.

However, the current situation was beyond what Nether Demon expected.

A flower petal the size of a fingernail suddenly appeared beside Nether Demon.

Before Nether Demon could react, the flower petal transformed. Many Precepts of Dimension appeared on its surface. In an instant, it turned into a dimensional cage and enveloped the Nether Demon.

Then eight more petals appeared. In the same way, they formed an eight-layered dimensional cage.

Nether Demon's expressions in his eyes changed. He didn't expect Zhang Ruochen to be able to hide from his senses by carrying hundreds of thousands of Precepts of Dimension on a single petal.

In the nine-layered dimensional cage, Nether Demon's ability to move was obviously restricted. Even the circulation of Saint Qi in his body slowed down.

"Do you think a mere dimensional cage can trap me? I can easily break through even the ninety-layered, let alone the nine-layered," Nether Demon said coldly.

As he spoke, Nether Demon attacked. Boundless dark techniques and the Power of Curse surged out of his body crazily, wanting to erode everything.

No one noticed that Zhang Ruochen had condensed a silver light with his powerful dimensional power.

Swoosh.
The silver light suddenly cut out and locked onto Great Prince Mara's qi.

Crash.

The space was cut open by the silver light. A huge crack appeared, revealing a deep-layered void.

Great Prince Mara's pupils constricted. He turned into a scarlet hurricane and retreated quickly.

"Damn that Zhang Ruochen. He can actually spare himself to deal with me while fighting with Nether Demon."

In a hurry, Great Prince Mara crossed his hands. A bright light dot appeared between his palms.

If one looked carefully, one would find that the light dot seemed to contain thousands of Saint Shadows.

He pushed out his palms. The light dot turned into an army of Saint Shadows and collided with the spatial crack. The space between Zhang Ruochen and Great Prince Mara became distorted.

Rumble
Although the spatial crack was closed, the silver light pierced through the army of Saint Shadows and rushed to the front of Great Prince Mara.

'How could this be?'

There was no time to use any means and no way to avoid it. Great Prince Mara had to release the power of evil and inject it into his armor, hoping to resist this attack.

Crack
The silver light was invincible. It broke through the high-grade ten-thousand-pattern armor Great Prince Mara was wearing.

Even though Great Prince Mara had the Divine Marks carved by the Rakshasa Gods, a wound so deep that the bones can be seen appeared on his chest.

Great Prince Mara flew backward. Saint Blood gushed out from the wound and dyed a large area of water red.

How could the first-level powerhouse like Great Prince Mara be injured by Zhang Ruochen shortly after meeting up? Many cultivators of the Infernal Court were terrified by this scene.

Nether Buddha shouted, “Zhang Ruochen, don’t be impudent. Let me come and ease your passing.”

Nether Buddha could no longer stand idly by.

He could see that Nether Demon alone had no hope of killing Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation speed was too fast. If he wasn’t rid of now, it would be even more troublesome in the future. No one could really control him.

With a shake of his hand, Nether Buddha threw out the prayer beads in his hand and activated them with a powerful curse power.

Instantly, 15 prayer beads grew rapidly. The beads turned into 300 meters long skulls and surrounded Zhang Ruochen.

All the skulls were branded with complicated curse runes. They gave off an extremely evil aura. Powerful Saint Souls were trapped in each of them.

Sensing slightly, Zhang Ruochen discovered that 14 of the skulls gave off the aura of top-notch Saint Kings. The last one gave off the aura of a Neverwither Supreme Saint.

Refining the skulls of a Neverwither Supreme Saint and 14 top-notch Saint Kings into prayer beads, one had to admit that the Nether Buddha was a great cultivator.

“Zhang Ruochen, I am looking forward to refining your skulls into the 16th prayer bead.” A cruel smile appeared in the eyes of Nether Buddha.

Nether Buddha had a unique hobby. His hobby was to suppress powerful opponents and refine them into prayer beads with the secret techniques of the Nether Clan. These opponents would be tortured endlessly and never be freed.

The stronger the resentment of these opponents, the more powerful his prayer beads would become.

ROAR!
The 15 skulls let out a sharp roar and performed different saint techniques at the same time.

Each saint technique was extremely powerful. The weakest was an intermediate saint technique of the exquisite level, and it contained three high-level saint techniques. The high-level saint techniques performed by the Supreme Saint skulls were the most terrifying.

Out of a sudden, the heavenly and earthly precepts and the Saint Qi of heaven and earth within a radius of thousands of miles were activated. The wind and clouds surged, and the color of heaven and earth changed.

Zhang Ruochen maintaining his calm and his hands formed a strange dimensional seal at the speed of light.

“Dimensional Tide.”

A soft voice came out of Zhang Ruochen’s mouth.

Instantly, the incomparably vast power of dimension surged out of Zhang Ruochen’s body. It turned into a surging tide and swept out in all directions.

Boom.
No matter what kind of saint technique it was, it was immediately submerged after coming into contact with the Dimensional Tide. It was like a clay ox entering the sea, unable to set off any waves.

The 15 huge skulls were all sent flying by the power of the Dimensional Tide.

Crack!
Some skulls let out cracking sounds and were almost destroyed.

‘How can he be so strong?’ Nether Buddha was shocked.

He already had Zhang Ruochen in the eye, so when he attacked, he took out a string of skull prayer beads that he had spent a lot of effort and blood sacrifice to refine. He didn’t expect it to be destroyed so easily.

Under the influence of the Dimensional Tide, Luoshui raised huge waves thousands of feet high, as if some giant beast was about to come into being.

At this time, Nether Demon finally broke out of the dimensional prison and looked at Nether Buddha.

Swoosh

Both Nether Demon and Nether Buddha moved at the same time and attacked Zhang Ruochen together.

They had already seen how powerful Zhang Ruochen was. Only by joining hands could they hope to suppress him.

Zhang Ruochen waved his sleeve, and the Azure Dragon immediately flew out. It was dozens of miles long, and its body gave off boundless dragon power. A sacred aura spread out.

“Kill him.”

Zhang Ruochen pointed at Great Prince Mara and ordered coldly.

He was waiting for Nether Buddha and Nether Demon to work together. Only then would he let the Azure Dragon deal with the Nether Buddha.

After refining the Dragonvine, the Azure Dragon’s strength had greatly increased. Just the range of the precepts of heaven and earth and the Saint Qi of heaven and earth was close to the first level below the Supreme Saint.

If Great Prince Mara hadn’t been injured, the Azure Dragon wouldn’t have been his match.

But now, the Azure Dragon could at least tie him down and make it impossible for him to escape.

“Yes, Master.”

The Azure Dragon answered immediately.

Seeing Nether Buddha and Nether Demon working together, Great Prince Mara had just breathed a sigh of relief. He hadn’t expected Zhang Ruochen to release a powerful Azure Dragon in the blink of an eye.

Just the aura of the Azure Dragon made Great Prince Mara feel a great threat.

‘Isn’t this the Azure Dragon that Zhou Yu captured in the Hidden Barrens? Zhang Ruochen actually subdued it and became so powerful.’

Many cultivators watching the battle couldn’t help but look surprised.

It was known that Zhou Yu had dragged the Azure Dragon to the Sect of the Blood God.

The Azure Dragon wasn't weak then, but it was only at the second level below the Supreme Saint realm. It wasn't as strong as it was now. Otherwise, it wouldn't have been suppressed by Zhou Yu.

Fairy Tianchu was surprised and said, "The Azure Dragon's Divine Dragon bloodline has been fully activated. It's about time to turn into a True Dragon. This should be the effects of the Dragonform Grass."

"Your Highness, you mean that Zhang Ruochen obtained a Dragonform Grass on True Dragon Island?" The fool said in surprise.

Fairy Tianchu nodded. "That should be the case. Otherwise, a primordial being such as the Azure Dragon, wouldn't be submitted to Zhang Ruochen willingly."

The Dragon Clan had always been arrogant. Let alone the primordial being, even ordinary dragons were often unruly and difficult to tame.

ROAR!
The Azure Dragon roared and pounced toward Great Prince Mara.

This was the first thing Zhang Ruochen had ordered it to kill. It could feel Zhang Ruochen's killing intent toward Great Prince Mara and mustn't make any mistakes.

"Damn it."

Great Prince Mara was angry and anxious.

Seeing the Azure Dragon pounce, Great Prince Mara had no choice but to take out a demonic saber at the level of a regal weapon to block it.

Boom
The Azure Dragon's claws clashed with the demonic blade, and the terrifying force caused a large area of water to sink.

With this as the center, waves tens of thousands of feet high rose up and slapped out in all directions.

"Retreat!"

The cultivators watching the battle on the surface of the water immediately retreated.

Even a Nine-Step Saint King might not be able to block such a collision.

Fairy Tianchu didn't make a move. The golden fog beneath her feet shook and released a mysterious power, instantly dissipating the waves.

In the area covered by the white fog, Luo Sha frowned deeply. Zhang Ruochen's release of the Azure Dragon was also out of her expectations.

There was no doubt that Great Prince Mara was in big trouble. If he wasn't careful, he would die in Luoshui.

"Of all the people to messed with, they chose to mess with Zhang Ruochen" Luo Sha was hiding her anger.

After all, Great Prince Mara was a top-notch cultivator below the Supreme Saint of the Rakshasa. If he died here, it would undoubtedly be a great loss to the Rakshasa.

In particular, Great Prince Mara had just made a great contribution. If he was killed at this time, it would also damage the dignity of the Rakshasa.

Unfortunately, Luo Sha couldn't interfere. She had many tricks and was resourceful, but she wasn't a match for the Azure Dragon.

On the other side, Zhang Ruochen had already engaged in a fierce battle with Nether Demon and Nether Buddha. He wasn't at a disadvantage even if he fought against two of them alone. He even seemed to be at ease.

Zhang Ruochen kept using all sorts of exquisite dimensional techniques. Nether Demon and Nether Buddha didn't even have a chance to get close.

Suddenly, Nether Demon's glabella lit up. A dark brown furnace flew out, giving off an ancient and evil aura.

Both Nether Demon and Nether Buddha attacked together, pouring their Curse powers into the furnace without holding back.

Suddenly, the surface of the furnace gave off a demonic bloody glow, and a strange fluctuation appeared as if a special life form was recovering.

All of a sudden, the sky of Luoshui darkened. Lightning flashed and thunder rumbled as if doomsday was coming.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the furnace and whispered, “What an evil aura. It’s very similar to the Hadean Curse summoned by Son of Darkness.”

In fact, the evil aura emitted by the ancient furnace was much more terrifying than the Hadean Curse summoned by Son of Darkness.

“Zhang Ruochen, let me show you what the real Hadean Curse is,” Nether Demon sneered.

Bang!
The dark brown ancient furnace was opened. It was dark and deep as if it contained a world.

A vast divine force was released and suppressed the space within thousands of miles.

Then, countless curse runes flew out of the ancient furnace and quickly merged into the air. They became invisible and spread in all directions at a shocking speed.

Wherever the Power of Curse passed by, everything turned deathly gray and gave off a strange and ominous aura.

“Not good, it’s the Hadean Furnace. Nether Demon and Nether Buddha actually brought this evil artifact left behind from the ancient era to Kunlun Realm. Once, a Supreme Saint of the Nether Clan used the Hadean Furnace and wiped out all living beings in a great world. All life force was exterminated. This evil weapon is too terrifying. We must retreat quickly.”

Some cultivators recognized the ancient furnace and couldn’t help but reveal a shocked expression.

Hearing this, no one dared to hesitate. They all desperately fled into the depths of Luoshui.

There were countless folded spaces in Luoshui. Only by escaping into it could one avoid being eroded by the Hadean Curse.

Luo Sha’s expression also changed drastically. He cursed inwardly, “Nether Demon and Nether Buddha are two lunatics. They even dare to get their hands on the Hadean Furnace. Aren’t they afraid of getting into trouble?”

Like the others, Luo Sha did not hesitate and used a dimensional technique to escape into the depths of Luoshui at the fastest speed. Even she had to stay far away.

As the Master of Space, she was not worried at all that she would get lost in the folded space.

Chapter 2135: Yan Wushen's Arrival

The Hadean Furnace contained boundless Hadean Curses. It was intensely evil. Since ancient times, it had harvested countless souls and this made it even more terrifying.

Even the Netherkin cultivators didn't dare use the Hadean Furnace rashly. They were afraid of an unpredictable disaster.

This weapon had become a taboo weapon of the Nether Clan.

Both Nether Demon and Nether Buddha had taken the risk to bring the Hadean Furnace into Kunlun Realm. They had made up their minds to get rid of Zhang Ruochen and save the reputation of the Nether Clan. At the same time, they would eliminate a huge threat to the Infernal Court.

AH!

Some cultivators were caught by the invisible curse that entered their bodies, and they screamed in pain.

Their skin turned gray-black in the blink of an eye. Their expressions became ferocious, and there was only despair in their eyes.

Zhang Ruochen, who was the main target of the attack, was in an even worse situation. He was completely submerged by the Power of Curse.

The Power of Curse was too terrifying. It could even erode space. There seemed to be no way to resist it.

The Canon of Truth was activated. Blazing flames rose as the Armor of the Fire God was activated.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen released the Emperor-level Divine Purification Flame. It combined with the flame of the Armor of the Fire God and covered his entire body.

As soon as the Power of Curse came into contact with the flame, it sizzled, turned into wisps of black smoke, and then disappeared without a trace.

Fortunately, the Divine Purification Flame has transformed into the Emperor-level flame. Otherwise, it would be difficult to deal with the Curse power from the ancient times,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

The Divine Purification Flame represents purification and annihilation. It is the best way to deal with the Power of Curse.

ROAR!
Suddenly, a deafening beast roar sounded.

A ferocious and terrifying behemoth broke free from the Hadean Furnace. Its body was branded with many complicated Curse runes. As soon as it appeared, it emitted all sorts of auras: bizarre, ominous, fearful, destructive, resentful, and other negative auras.

"It's a Cursed Wraith created by harvesting countless souls… hiss…"

Many cultivators couldn't help but gasp, and even their Saint Souls trembled.

The Cursed Wraith was like a giant centipede. It had over 10,000 legs, and they were all different in shape. Some looked like human legs, some looked like beast legs, and some looked like sharp claws. It seemed to be pieced together by countless creatures, and it gave people a terrifying feeling.

Anyone could clearly feel the strong resentment from the Cursed Wraith. It felt like even if they poured all the water from the Celestial River, they wouldn't be able to wash it clean.

The Cursed Wraith's body was dozens of miles long.

After breaking free from the Hadean Furnace, it pounced directly at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed. He stretched out a hand and activated the 680,000 Precepts of Dimension in his body pressed forward suddenly.

With Zhang Ruochen's current dimensional attainments, even if the Hadean Furnace froze dimension, it wouldn't be able to completely restrict him.

BANG!
The space within a 3,000-meter radius shattered in an instant, revealing a large area of the dark void. It was like a black hole.

The Cursed Wraith was obstructed and flew backward. Its huge body was directly broken into dozens of pieces.

However, in the next moment, the Cursed Wraith's body was pieced together again. Not the slightest damage. Instead, the aura it emitted became even more terrifying.

Once again, the Cursed Wraith pounced at Zhang Ruochen. Gray-black flames spewed out of its mouth, interwoven with a sea of Curse runes.

The corrosive power of the gray-black flames was extremely terrifying. Wherever it passed, the dimension melted rapidly.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade flew out of the Divine Light Sea of Qi. Zhang Ruochen grabbed it and waved it slowly. The Precepts of Swordsmanship and the Precepts of Dimension were activated at the same time.

"Realm of Swords."

A calm voice sounded. A strange world was created out of thin air, engulfing the Cursed Wraith within.

This world was filled with endless Sword Qi. Each one could threaten a Nine-Step Saint King.

This sword technique was created by Zhang Ruochen after 28 years of seclusion. It perfectly combined both the Precepts of Swordsmanship and Dimension.

Of course, the Precept of Swordsmanship and the Precept of Dimension were both broad and profound. The sword technique created by Zhang Ruochen at this stage could only be considered a base form and further improvement was required. By then, the power it could unleash would also be enhanced accordingly.

The great advantage of creating a saint technique was that it had unlimited room for growth. It could be perfected step by step and become extraordinary in the future.

In fact, many of the saint techniques that were passed down in the various worlds were created by the gods at various stages of their cultivation. There was a deep connection between them.

If one cultivated a lower-level saint technique first, there was hope to use it as a foundation to practice a higher-level saint technique.

When Zhang Ruochen was fighting with the Cursed Wraith, the Curse power released by the Hadean Furnace was still spreading.

The Curse power merged and seeped into Luoshui. Many cultivators who fled to the depths of Luoshui were terrified by it.

It wasn't until now that many cultivators understood why the Hadean Furnace could extinguish the life of a great world. It was because it could seep into anything and erode everything.

"Both Nether Demon and Nether Buddha are too strong. They can actually activate the Hadean Furnace to such an extent. If this continues, we'll all die in Luoshui.

"There's no other way. We can only continue to retreat into the depths of Luoshui. There might be a chance of survival. If we leave Luoshui now, we'll probably be dead. We can't come in contact with the Hadean Curse. Even a Nine-Step Saint King will end up in a miserable state.

"Zhang Ruochen really got us killed this time. He wants to implicate us in the grudge between him and the Nether Clan.

"You're thinking too simply. Since both Nether Demon and Nether Buddha have come to Kunlun Realm, they'll definitely cause a bloodbath. If they didn't want to deal with Zhang Ruochen, they might have already used extreme methods to wipe everyone out in Luoshui.

"I just received news that before Nether Demon entered Kunlun Realm, he ambushed a Supreme Saint in the Late-stage of Neverwither realm. He almost succeeded. We can't afford to provoke such a fiend."

…

The cultivators were conversing while sped up their escape.

The cultivators had suffered an unexpected disaster this time. They had thought to come to look for an opportunity. They hadn't expected to be trapped in Luoshui by Nether Demon and Nether Buddha. They were in a dilemma.

"Master, what should we do now? There are still many of our cultivators of the Tianchu Civilization on the Nine Carols Star. If the Power of Curse seeps through, they won't be able to resist it at all," Li Miaohan said worriedly.

The butcher frowned and said, “If the Power of Curse corrodes the Nine Carols Star, our cultivators of the Tianchu Civilization will not be able to comprehend the Paths in the future.”

“Damn Nether Demon and Nether Buddha. I really hope that they will be devoured by the Hadean Furnace.” The fool gritted his teeth and said.

Even though he was furious, the other party was the two strongest cultivators below the Supreme Saint of the Nether Clan. There was no way for them to fight back. They could only be anxious.

The Nether Clan was born with the Power of Curse. However, in this generation, only Nether Demon and Nether Buddha were able to control the power of the Hadean Curse.

Even Son of Darkness needed to borrow external forces to be able to use the Power of Curse.

The power of the Hadean Curse was extremely terrifying. It was a power that could contend with the nine Path of the Ancients. It was because of this that Nether Demon and Nether Buddha were able to become top-notch cultivators below the Supreme Saint-level, they were on par with Son of Darkness, who were the Masters of Darkness.

Only those who possessed the power of the Hadean Curse were able to activate the Hadean Furnace. Otherwise, they would suffer a backlash.

At this moment, Fairy Tianchu closed her eyes, and a mysterious energy fluctuation radiated from her body.

Rumble
A huge commotion came from the depths of Luoshui, and the Nine Carols Star that was floating in Luoshui started to shake violently.

The nine divine rivers flowing on the Nine Carols Star suddenly increased their speed by ten times. They released a vast amount of divine force that instantly reached Fairy Tianchu’s body.

Instantly, Fairy Tianchu opened her eyes. Her body emitted a dazzling light that spread out for several hundred kilometers.

With a light tap of her feet, Fairy Tianchu’s delicate body floated into the air. Her hands slowly spread out, and her body emitted an increasingly saint aura. It was as if Luoshen had appeared once again.

For a moment, the waters behind Fairy Tianchu stirred up huge waves. It was a hundred meters tall, a thousand meters tall, ten thousand meters tall… . Layers upon layers of terrifying waves connected the sky and the Earth. The entire Luoshui seemed to have flipped over, and the scene was incomparably terrifying.

“What happened?”

The cultivators who were fleeing towards the depths of Luoshui all had astonished expressions on their faces.

Everyone could see strands of golden mist gathering from all directions and converge onto Fairy Tianchu’s body.

As for the vast power contained within Luoshui, it had already been augmented onto Fairy Tianchu’s body.

“Master, you have resonated with the Nine Corals Star and obtained the divine force of Luoshen. Luoshui is almost completely under master’s control.” Li Miaohan lifted her head to look at Fairy Tianchu and said excitedly.

“Her Highness is simply the incarnation of Luoshen. She was actually able to draw upon such majestic energy. Even the Hadean Curse that was infused into Luoshui is being rapidly expelled.” The fool’s eyes were filled with reverence.

Fairy Tianchu’s expression was solemn. She stretched out her slender finger and pointed.

Splash.
Behind her, the ten thousand meter tall waves transformed into countless water dragons. They carried boundless power as they charged straight towards Nether Demon and Nether Buddha.

At the same time, the Power of Curse that permeated the Luoshui also reversed.

Bang.
The Hadean Furnace was struck by the attack and flipped over. The Curse runes on its surface dimmed as a result.

Both Nether Demon and Nether Buddha’s expressions changed. They hadn’t expected Fairy Tianchu to display such a powerful technique.

Zhang Ruochen naturally wouldn't let go of such a rare opportunity. He let go of the Ancient Abyssal Blade and used the Luoshui Fist Technique.

Fairy Tianchu had already activated the power of Luoshui. Now, she could display the true power of the Luoshui Fist Technique.

As Zhang Ruochen waved his fist, a huge wave rushed out of Luoshui.

Two towering figures appeared on both sides of Zhang Ruochen. One was a god, and the other was a ghost. They stepped on the wave and charged at Nether Demon and Nether Buddha.

Both Nether Demon and Nether Buddha were dealing with Fairy Tianchu's attack. At this moment, Zhang Ruochen's attack was hard for them to deal with.

In a hurry, Nether Demon and Nether Buddha attacked at the same time. They combined the Power of Curse and the Power of Darkness to form two huge palm prints.

Bang.
The phantom of the god and ghost collapsed, but the huge impact still sent Nether demon and Nether Buddha flying.

There were traces of blood at the corners of Nether Demon and Nether Buddha's mouths. They had obviously suffered a bit.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen used the Realm of Swords with all his strength to cut the Cursed Wraith into pieces. Then he used the Power of Dimensions to completely shatter it.

On the other side, Fairy Tianchu landed on the water again. Her breath was weak and her face was pale.

Li Miaohan quickly reached out and held Fairy Tianchu. "Master, how are you?"

"I'm fine. I just used up all my Saint Qi." Fairy Tianchu shook her head.

Fairy Tianchu's cultivation hadn't reached its peak yet. Even if she could borrow Luoshen's remaining divine force, she couldn't attack continuously.

However, just one attack was enough to solve the crisis. It was also enough to help Zhang Ruochen.

At the moment, Nether Demon and Nether Buddha were at a disadvantage. The situation was undoubtedly advantageous to Zhang Ruochen.

AH!
Suddenly, Great Prince Mara let out a shrill scream.

Everyone couldn't help but look over. They saw a bloody scene.

One of Great Prince Mara's arms and a wing were torn off by the Azure Dragon's Dragon Claw. Blood was dripping.

"Master, I'll go help the Azure Dragon."

Moyin came out of Zhang Ruochen's spine and its eyes shining.

Zhang Ruochen understood what Moyin was thinking. It clearly wanted to devour Great Prince Mara's Spiritual Qi and Sainthood Source. He couldn't help but nod. "Go. Don't let him die too easily."

"Don't worry, master. I'll make sure he suffers," Moyin promised.

Immediately, Moyin rushed out and charged towards the battlefield between the Azure Dragon and Great Prince Mara.

After devouring the essence of many powerhouses from the Infernal Court on True Dragon Island, along with the countless powerful Nether Serpent's souls, she went into seclusion and cultivated for thirty-four years.

Moyin's accumulation could be said to be extremely powerful. No one knew just what level her strength had reached?

Great Prince Mara couldn't handle the Azure Dragon alone. Now, with Moyin, it has gotten even worse.

"Great Prince Mara is finished!"

This thought appeared in many cultivators' minds.

Of course, they were more concerned about Zhang Ruochen's battle with Nether Demon and Nether Buddha. After what had happened, they all hoped that Zhang Ruochen could defeat them and put an end to the crisis.

Nether Demon turned his gaze to Fairy Tianchu. Terrifying killing intent appeared in his eyes. If Fairy Tianchu hadn't suddenly interfered, how could they have lost to Zhang Ruochen?

“Your opponent is me.”

Zhang Ruochen held the Ancient Abyssal Blade and walked forward.

With him around, how could anyone lay a hand on Fairy Tianchu?

“Nether Budda, stall Zhang Ruochen for me. I’ll go kill the Fairy Tianchu,” Nether Demon said in a low voice.

In Nether Demon’s eyes, Fairy Tianchu’s existence was a great threat. He had to get rid of her as soon as possible and he didn’t want the same thing to repeat itself.

“Stop embarrassing yourselves. Two against one, you can’t take her down for a long time. Yet you claimed to be the strongest of the Nether Clan.”

At this moment, a voice with a sneer suddenly sounded.

Nether Demon and Nether Buddha’s expressions changed slightly. They turned their heads at the same time and looked at the distant horizon.

They could sense that although the voice was loud, it was not nearby. Instead, it came from hundreds of thousands of miles away.

In the next moment, the wind and clouds surged above Luoshui. Thick black clouds appeared and covered the area within ten thousand miles.

Crack.
A large area of space shattered, forming a massive black hole that seemed to pierce through the heavens and earth.

A figure that looked like a Divine Demon crossed the void and walked out of the black hole.

Just the aura it released completely annihilated the surrounding space.

Bang.
The Divine Demon figure landed with a bang, causing the land within a five thousand kilometer radius to sink down by several hundred meters, causing Luoshui to flow backward.

The land turned into a sea.

An incomparably evil aura emanated from this person, and it was even more powerful than the Hadean Curse.

When the land within a radius of 1,000 kilometers was corroded by this evil aura, it immediately turned into black soil. Large areas of Luoshui were also dyed black like ink.

“Yan… Yan Wushen.”

When the cultivators saw this person, their faces couldn’t help but change dramatically, and their bodies trembled.

…

The most powerful cultivator below the Supreme Saint, Yan Wushen of the Infernal Court!

Chapter 2136: Like a God, Like a Demon

Yan Wushen, a name that made the Celestial Court and Infernal Court afraid of, was the symbol of invincibility below the Supreme Saint.

No one had expected that Yan Wushen would appear in Luoshui at this time. Was it a coincidence, or was he here for Zhang Ruochen?

What an evil aura. It can even corrode the awakened sacred land into a death waste. Just how many creatures has he killed?

Rumour has it, Yan Wushen is either good or evil. Once he falls into the evil side, he will go on a killing spree. Even if the cultivators of the Infernal Court provoke him, he will kill them regardless.

The extremely dark Yama Qi that Yan Wushen cultivates is getting more and more terrifying. It’s best to retreat a little further. If one can’t resist it and got infected, one will only die in a hysterical frenzy.

…

The cultivators from the Celestial Court and the Infernal Court have no choice but to retreat. They fear the incomparably evil Yan Wushen.

Yan Wushen stood on the black soil and water. He wore black armor that was as black as ink. His black hair fluttered in the wind, and the evil aura emanating from his body grew stronger and stronger. He was like a demonic god with heinous sins, looking down on heaven and earth.

In Yan Wushen’s hand was a man. He was dripping with blood and had a big hole in his chest. No one could tell if he was still alive.

Seeing this man, Zhang Ruochen's eyes darkened, and said. "Jiang Yunchong."

He recognized this man, the mysterious Tianjue Pavilion Master, Jiang Yunchong. He was also the first Re-Awakener in Kunlun Realm.

Back then, Mr. Godcliff wanted to attack the Eastern Region Holy City. Thanks to Jiang Yunchong, he was able to stop him. Later, he joined hands with Murong Yefeng to heavily injure Mr. Godcliff.

Jiang Yunchong was very powerful. He could fight against Mr. Godcliff, who was an Array Master. At that time, he hadn't fully recovered his strength.

Zhang Ruochen hadn't expected to meet Jiang Yunchong again in such a situation.

He could see that although Jiang Yunchong was seriously injured, he was still alive.

Yan Wushen gazed at Zhang Ruochen, he said, "When I heard that you killed Son of Darkness, I knew that there was finally a Saint King who was qualified to die at my hands. So, I came to the Eastern Region to look for you, the State Prince of the Eastern Region.

"I went to the Eastern Region Holy City first, but unfortunately, I didn't find any traces of you. What's more disappointing is that there aren't any decent powerhouses in the Eastern Region Holy City. Only he can barely make it to the top.

"Looking at your expression just now, you should know him… hmm… how about this, I'll give you a chance to prove your strength. If you can beat me, I'll let him go. If you lose, I'll hand him over to Mara. You know why. Scion of Time and Space, you won't let me down too much, right?"

Zhang Ruochen had heard about Yan Wushen's recent evil deeds. He had massacred hundreds of millions of humans in the Central Region. Now that he had forced his way into the Eastern Region Holy City, there would probably be rivers of blood there.

After taking the Seal of Flames from Chen Yuhua, Zhang Ruochen became the State Prince of the Eastern Region. Yan Wushen's massacre in the Eastern Region Holy City was undoubtedly a huge provocation to him.

Since Yan Wushen had appeared here, it means that the array of the Eastern Region Holy City could not hold him back. Just how powerful was he?

Zhang Ruochen suppressed the anger in his heart and tried his best to remain calm and said, “Yan Wushen, if you want to fight, I’ll fight with you. Since the Eastern Region of Kunlun Realm is my territory, whoever dares to act recklessly here has to pay the price.”

“Good. You have personality. I like it.” Yan Wushen nodded.

Nether Demon held the shrunken Hadean Furnace with one hand and said, “Yan Wushen, this is between the Nether Clan and Zhang Ruochen. You don’t have to interfere.”

Yan Wushen said indifferently, “I don’t need your permission to do anything. Besides, don’t you think it’s embarrassing enough?”

Nether Buddha frowned slightly and said. “Yan Wushen, we don’t mind if you want to kill the others, but Zhang Ruochen is our target. You can’t touch him.”

The pride of the Nether Clan had to be saved by the Netherkin powerhouses. Besides, both Nether Demon and Nether Buddha had absolute confidence in their strength. They could crush Zhang Ruochen.

Boom.
The aura from Yan Wushen’s body suddenly emanated. The extremely dark Yama Qi surged. Behind him, an extremely evil phantom of a demon appeared.

Instantly, the sky and earth changed color. The void exploded and thunder filled the sky. It was as if the heavens were angry and wanted to punish the world.

Yan Wushen slowly rose into the air. Looking down at Nether Demon and Nether Buddha, he said in a cold voice, “Do you two want to fight me first?”

“You…”

Nether Demon raised his eyebrows and he was about to flare up.

At the critical moment, Nether Buddha reached out and pulled him back, he said telepathically, “Don’t mess with Yan Wushen. If you mess with him,

he'll do anything. Since he wants to deal with Zhang Ruochen, let him do it! We'll wait and see. As long as Zhang Ruochen was rid of for good."

Thinking of this person's style, he wasn't easy to mess with. Nether Demon's eyes narrowed. He thought for a while and finally calmed down.

Nether Demon snorted and didn't say anything else.

"So overbearing. It seems the rumors are true. Once Yan Wushen falls into evil, he'll be completely unrestrained. Whoever messes with him will be the unfortunate ones."

Many of the cultivators on the scene couldn't help but suck in a breath of cold air. Their fear of Yan Wushen grew.

At this moment, Yan Wushen swept his gaze across the area. With a wave of his sleeve, he sent all the cultivators in the distance flying. Huge waves rose in Luoshui. Even the Azure Dragon, Moyin, and Great Prince Mara were unable to withstand it. They fell into the depths of Luoshui along with the waves.

Boom! Boom!
Some cultivators with weaker cultivations exploded and turned into a blood mist, including those from the Infernal Court.

"Those who aren't qualified to stay here, you'd better get lost. I'm fighting with Zhang Ruochen, and a bunch of ants dares to spy on me?"

Yan Wushen's cold voice rang out.

Hearing this, all the cultivators were shocked and they didn't dare to stay any longer. They all ran away as fast as they could. Even Nether demon and Nether Buddha retreated far away.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze locked at Yan Wushen.

Zhang Ruochen had heard of the name—Yan Wushen—a long time ago. He had also heard many legends about it. Now that he finally met the real person and was about to fight him, he couldn't help but look forward to it.

"The strongest cultivator below the Supreme Saint of the Infernal Court. Let me see if you are really invincible, Yan Wushen," Zhang Ruochen said proudly.

In a battle of the same level, Zhang Ruochen was not afraid of anyone. Even Yan Wushen, who had countless legends, was no exception.

Yan Wushen said, “Many people have the same thoughts as you. But they all died at my hands, and you will be one of them.”

There had never been anyone who could defeat him before, and there would never be anyone who could defeat him in the future. No matter who he faced, his belief in invincibility would not waver.

Zhang Ruochen did not say anything more. He tried his best to adjust his condition to the best.

He did not dare to be careless in the face of an opponent like Yan Wushen. He had to give it his all.

Yan Wushen waved his hand and put away Jiang Yunchong. Then, he casually pointed a finger out.

The space was like a flat mirror on the surface of a lake. Ripples were set off at the tip of his finger. Wherever the ripples passed, the geography of the surrounding mountains changed dramatically. Mountain ridges rose from the ground and wrapped Zhang Ruochen layer by layer.

Looking down from the sky, the land within a radius of 10,000 miles seemed to have turned into a picture. The mountain ridges that rose from the picture corresponded to the spatial ripples in front of Yan Wushen.

“He raised his hand to draw heaven and earth and changed it with his fingers. Yan Wushen’s attainments in the Path of Dimension have reached such a level.”

Zhang Ruochen moved. He mobilized the Precepts of Dimension in his body and released powerful dimensional power. It formed a mysterious wave and resonated with the entire space.

There was no big movement, but the mountains quickly disintegrated and turned into dust, scattering in the air.

“Not bad.”

Yan Wushen smiled wickedly and raised his right finger forward.

Instantly, the ground beneath his feet began to churn. It rose thousands of feet. Flowers, trees, mountains, hills, rivers… They all rose into the sky above the clouds and rolled toward Zhang Ruochen.

As if heaven and earth were being reversed!

All the cultivators who stood in the distance and looked at the battlefield trembled. Even a Supreme Saint couldn't display such a technique.

Besides the cultivators, even the Emissaries Vigilant from the outer realm looked at each other in shock.

Zhang Ruochen spread out his five fingers and pressed them toward the sky. He uttered a word, "Break."

His five fingers seemed to have turned into a Realm of Palm Strike, emitting dazzling saint ray. His fingerprints and palm prints were like mountains and rivers. The Realm of Palm Strike collided with the land of the Eastern Region in the sky. An earth-shaking sound burst out, and the entire territory of the Eastern Region trembled slightly.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the ground and looked up.

The land of thousands of miles shattered. Countless mountains, rivers, rocks, and scorched earth fell. The entire world seemed to be destroyed.

"Good, good. I'm glad that I have come to the Eastern Region to kill you."

Yan Wushen laughed loudly. He put his hands together and rubbed them together.

The mountains, rivers, plants, mud, and rocks that fell in the air were quickly gathered together by an invisible Power of Dimension. With a rub from Yan Wushen's hands, the gathered things transformed into a floating planet with a diameter of thousands of miles and rolled slowly.

The planet created by Yan Wushen using the land of thousands of miles in the Eastern Region made a humming sound every time it rolled. The surface of the planet was accompanied by the light of thunder and lightning. It condensed into clouds, rainbows, and rain. It was as if a new world had formed.

Naturally, Zhang Ruochen did not want to be outdone. He stared at the outer realm. His gaze fell on an asteroid hovering near Kunlun Realm.

He grabbed it through the Power of Dimension.

The asteroid, which was millions of miles high in the sky of Kunlun Realm, fell rapidly. It passed through the atmosphere and burned like a blazing sun. It collided with the planet formed by Yan Wushen.

BOOM!
The two planets collided. The area around Luoshui and Royal Mountain turned dark. Countless firestones shot out in all directions like meteors.

Yan Wushen and Zhang Ruochen stood on this destructive battlefield. One was like a demon and the other was like a god.

At this moment, Yan Wushen's eyes finally became serious. He began to face his opponent in front of him.

Whoosh.
Zhang Ruochen made the first move and gathered robust dimensional power at his fingertip and pointed out. An invisible dimensional power disregarded the dimensional barrier and arrived before Yan Wushen in an instant.

Rumble.
Suddenly, the space where Yan Wushen at was distorted violently. It collapsed and compressed crazily as if it was going to be compressed into a thin piece of paper.

Yan Wushen's eyes were indifferent. He waved his finger lightly, and more violent ripples appeared in the space. Like a breeze, they disintegrated Zhang Ruochen's power bits by bits.

In the next moment, Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen moved at the same time. Both of them executed dimensional techniques. Their speed was faster than anyone could imagine. It was hard to see clearly.

Boom.
The spaces shattered one after another and filling the atmosphere with destructive power. The scene was extremely terrifying.

It truly was a peak-level battle. Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen were both Masters of Space. It was unknown who was better based on their attainment.

Bang.
Zhang Ruochen revealed himself and retreated quickly.

“Still a little lacking.”

Yan Wushen whispered and attacked again.

Zhang Ruochen flipped his hand and took out the Secret Tome of Time and Space to increase the power of his space techniques.

He had cultivated 680,000 Precepts of Dimension, which was already a lot. Few people in the Saint King realm could achieve it.

But Yan Wushen had cultivated more Precepts of Dimension than him, at least 800,000. It wasn’t that Yan Wushen was more talented than him, but that he had cultivated for a munch longer time and accumulated more.

If Zhang Ruochen had more time, he was fully confident that he could cultivate more than 800,000 Precepts of Dimension.

The only way to make up for the gap now was to use the Secret Tome of Time and Space.

Yan Wushen discharged the extremely dark Yama Qi. It quickly condensed and formed 999 shadow clones. Each clone was extremely sturdy and gave off a powerful aura. It was comparable to a Saint King with high cultivation.

“The Thousand Yama Shadows is a forbidden technique of the Yama Clan. One has to cultivate it to the Supreme Saint realm to have a chance of succeeding. Yan Wushen is indeed terrifying.”

Luo Sha looked surprised.

Even though these shadow clones were formed from the extremely dark Yama Qi, they all possessed extremely terrifying powers. When they were combined, even a Neverwither Supreme Saint would have to step back.

Yan Wushen and his 999 shadow clones formed the same seal.

A thousand arcane seals overlapped and formed an ancient mottled stone bridge. It was thousands of miles long and stretched across the void.

On the bridge, there were three words carved from an unknown ancient era.

“The Bridge of Vaitarna.”

A demonic voice sounded and reverberated in void space.

Vaguely, countless soul shadows appeared on the mottled stone bridge. They were all extremely ferocious. They struggled desperately to break free.

Zhang Ruochen felt a strange power enveloping him. It wanted to pull his Saint Soul out of his body.

The mottled stone bridge moved and pressed down on Zhang Ruochen.

At the same time, the soul shadows rushed out of the stone bridge. They screamed and pounced on Zhang Ruochen crazily.

Zhang Ruochen's expression was solemn. He held his state of mind and released the pure white Divine Purification Flame.

Driven by the Saint Qi, the Divine Purification Flame quickly turned into a sea of fire that covered hundreds of miles.

"The pure white Divine Purification Flame. This is an Emperor-level flame. Legend has it that only those who have reached the Hundred-Shackle Realm have a chance of cultivating it. How did Zhang Ruochen succeed in cultivating?"

All of a sudden, many cultivators look surprised.

The power of Emperor-level flame was extremely terrifying. As soon as the soul shadows approached, they were burned into nothingness. Nothing was left behind.

However, the mottled stone bridge couldn't be burned. Instead, it could suppress the Divine Purification Flame.

Zhang Ruochen held the Secret Tome of Time and Space. He used all of his Precepts of Dimension to perform the second level of Dimensional Annihilation.

Hundreds and thousands of Precepts of Dimension merged into the space before him, creating violent ripples like waves.

Boom.
The space within a radius of tens of thousands of meters was destroyed in an instant.

Although the mottled stone bridge was extraordinary, it was still shattered by Yan Wushen and his 999 ghostly counterparts.

Bang.
A terrifying power hit Zhang Ruochen's body, forcing him to retreat.

With a muffled groan, blood dripped from the corner of Zhang Ruochen's mouth.

Yan Wushen's body shook violently, and he also took a step back.

"Take another punch from me."

1,000 Yan wushen shouted at the same time.

Then, 1,000 Yan Wushen moved together, releasing endless extremely dark Yama Qi. Behind each of them, an evil phantom of a demon condensed. Black flames burned on the surface of their bodies as if they could burn everything in the world.

After performing the Thousand Yama Shadows, Yan Wushen's power had indeed weakened a lot.

However, when 1,000 Yan Wushen attacked at the same time, no matter what saint technique they used, the power would undoubtedly be doubled.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze displayed ferocity. His left leg released majestic divine power and his entire body turned red. Millions of thick Precepts of God emerged, like red chains.

Let me see how powerful Yanshen's leg can be after breaking the second seal,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen poured his Saint Qi into his left leg continuously. He activated vast divine force and then displayed the Nine-Heaven God's Step. He unleashed the power of Yanshen's leg without hesitation.

The unparalleled divine force was released. It surged in all directions.

All of a sudden, Luoshui within thousands of miles boiled and evaporated quickly.

The land melted quickly and turned into a huge lava lake.

Boom.

The powerful saint techniques cast by thousands of Yan Wushen were all dissolved in an instant.

Apart from Yan Wushen's vessel, his 999 shadow clones all fell back and suffered a strong impact.

Zhang Ruochen's body swayed slightly. He activated a million Precepts of God in Yanshen's leg and instantly used up all his Saint Qi.

However, in the next moment, the Golden Sun of Destruction shook and released majestic Saint Qi. It quickly flowed through Zhang Ruochen's limbs and bones, filling his body with Saint Qi again.

The Saint Qi was compressed and stored in the Golden Sun of Destruction by Zhang Ruochen in advance, in case his Saint Qi was depleted during the battle.

The Saint Qi stored in the Golden Sun of Destruction still allows me to recover twice more. If it's not necessary, I can't use Yanshen's leg at full strength once more,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

Yanshen's leg was powerful, but it consumed too much Saint Qi.

Although the Golden Sun of Destruction could store Saint Qi, yet there was a limit. It couldn't be squandered.

Of course, with the Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi's Sun Leaf, as long as the Saint Qi in his body wasn't exhausted, he could recover quickly.

"Is Zhang Ruochen's leg a god's leg? How can he release such powerful divine force?"

"He can even resist the saint techniques cast by thousands of Yan Wushen. Zhang Ruochen is getting overpowered."

"Will the history of Yan Wushen's invincibility be changed this time?"

"Others may not be able to do it, but Zhang Ruochen is The Scion of Time and Space. He has never been defeated at the same level. Perhaps he can create a miracle and pull Yan Wushen down from the invincible altar."

Chapter 2137: Breaking the Legend

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation **Editor:** EndlessFantasy Translation

The 999 avatars dissipated and turned back into the profoundly dark Yama Qi, entering Yan Wushen's body.

"You do have an extraordinary physique that can fuse with a deity's leg. Yet, no matter what, it isn't yours. How many times do you think you can use it?" Yan Wushen said with a faint smile.

As the Master of the Origin, Yan Wushen had the same Divine Eye of Origin as Maiden of a Thousand Stars'. He was even more powerful, so he could naturally see through Zhang Ruochen's left leg.

With Divine fire burned outside his body and high fighting spirit, Zhang Ruochen stood above the lava lake like Wargod of Fire. "Let's fight then you will know," he said calmly.

.
Yanshen's Leg was indeed Zhang Ruochen's trump card, but it didn't mean he had to rely on it to fight Yan Wushen.

"Very arrogant. Not bad. I hope you can play with me a little longer." Yan Wushen laughed.

As he spoke, Yan Wushen raised his hand slightly. The hot lava on the ground shot up into the sky and flooded Zhang Ruochen.

What was incredible was that the enormous amount of lava condensed into a metallic mountain in an instant. It was very high, but its internal structure was not stable. As it kept compressing, the structure became more compact, forming a terrifying pressure that could even crush a cultivator with an immortal saint body.

In the center of the mountain, there was a three-meter wide void. And Zhang Ruochen was in it.

The void's condition was unstable. It was constantly shrinking and had reached its limit. In other words, this space could shatter at any time.

'Both Yu Chenjing and Yan Wushen are Masters of Origin. Yet there's a huge gap between them in terms of strength,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen felt the rising pressure. Without hesitation, he took out Ancient Abyssal Blade and entered a wondrous state of becoming one with his sword instantly. To one's naked eyes, his movement might seem slow. But, in fact, it was the other way around.

What followed was the appearance of crystal-clear flower buds. Each flower bud contained a vast realm of swords. Each realm was an individual dimension running through different timelines—the past, present, and future.

With a thought in Zhang Ruochen's mind, all the flower buds bloomed and released billions of streaks of powerful Sword Qi accompanied with countless fragments of Time and Space.

BANG!
No matter how condensed the metallic mountain's structure was, it exploded in an instant.

Then, Zhang Ruochen changed his sword technique and slashed out a cross.

It was Sword Ten at grand completion state. Its power had reached the top of Neverwither Level. At the same time, Precepts of Truth were activated, amplifying the sword strike's power by nine times.

Back then, the insights Zhang Ruochen had learned from Ling Feiyu were limited, which covered only the first four levels of Sword Ten. Nevertheless, Zhang Ruochen's innate talent in swordsmanship was extraordinary. He had managed to develop insights on the fifth level of Sword Ten by himself. Thus, his Sword Ten had advanced to Grand Completion.

Zhang Ruochen's current swordsmanship had certainly surpassed the Supreme-Saint grandmaster of Heaven's Fall Blade.

Zhang Ruochen's current strength was powerful that he would only use Sword Ten when fighting an opponent as powerful as Yan Wushen.

Yan Wushen's eyes turned grim when he saw the cross. Many Precepts of Origin rose from his body and turned into a stream of Origin particles that were not visible to the naked eye.

When he was less than three meters away from Yan Wushen, the cross suddenly collapsed, disintegrated by the force of Origin.

However, a special Dimensional Mark emerged at the same time when the cross collapsed, and the force of Origin could do nothing to it.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen appeared where the Dimensional Mark was. He swung his sword at Yan Wushen in an instant.

Needless to say, Zhang Ruochen had calculated every move. The sword strike just now was to create a diversion to get close to Yan Wushen.

With a flash of sword light, Yan Wushen's head was cut off and sent flying.

However, Zhang Ruochen's pupils constricted; no single drop of blood was spilled from Yan Wushen—who had been beheaded!

It was eerie. Yan Wushen appeared behind Zhang Ruochen and tried to punch Zhang Ruochen's head.

Zhang Ruochen turned around and managed to block the attack with Ancient Abyssal Blade at this critical moment.

CLANG!
Yan Wushen's fist hit Ancient Abyssal Blade.

The power of this punch was too terrifying. It was like a star falling from a height of million miles. It was unstoppable. Even with Ancient Abyssal Blade blocking it, Zhang Ruochen was sent flying like a meteor.

Not until Zhang Ruochen was more than a thousand miles away did he manage to stabilize his posture. He spat out a mouthful of Saint blood due to the damage he had taken.

Yan Wushen's attack was fierce and overbearing. It had sent Zhang Ruochen's internal organs a heavy blow even after going through layers of protection from Ancient Abyssal Blade and Armor of the Fire God.

Another contributing factor was that Zhang Ruochen's internal organs were yet to attain Neverwither state, so they were relatively weak.

Zhang Ruochen's face turned grave. 'Not only did he form an avatar instantly with power of Origin, he teleported himself using Great Dimensional Shift and appeared behind me. His proficiency in Paths of Dimension and Origin are impressive!' he thought.

If it were an avatar made from ordinary Saint Qi, essence and blood, Zhang Ruochen could have told them apart.

But Yan Wushen's cultivation in Path of Origin was too great. Nobody could notice that it was his avatar.

Among the opponents Zhang Ruochen had faced so far, Yan Wushen was indeed the scariest in terms of his method and combat sense.

Even a Neverwither Supreme Saint would have died at Yan Wushen's hands if it had been anyone else.

"You reflex is brisk enough. Taste another punch from me."

Just before Yan Wushen's voice trailed off, he had appeared in front of Zhang Ruochen, at close distance.

Zhang Ruochen did not back away. He immediately brandished his sword to counter Yan Wushen's attack with Sword of Time.

Due to the effect of the power of Time, Zhang Ruochen's sword managed to strike first. Myriad Marks of Time flooded over Yan Wushen.

Yan Wushen was a rare talent who mastered two Paths of the Ancients. Not only could he use techniques from two Paths of the Ancients as he pleased, but he could also even combine them.

Zhang Ruochen was not bad either since he also mastered two Paths of the Ancients. And the profoundness in the power of Time was no less than that of the power of Origin.

Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen fought fiercely. Their positions changed constantly, and they gradually moved away from Luoshui.

The other cultivators could only watch from afar. They did not dare to follow. Only Nether Demon and Nether Buddha followed closely behind.

The duo was almost certain that Zhang Ruochen would lose this duel. Their purpose was to prevent him from escaping.

The battle between Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen was too intense. Everywhere they had been, the spaces shattered, the ground burned, and surrounding plants and animals were implicated and killed.

Fortunately, there were no humans left in this area. Otherwise, it would have caused heavy casualties.

After a series of fierce battles, Zhang Ruochen's morale grew as the fight progressed. He had yet to let Yan Wushen gain any further advantage. Even the wound—he had gotten when he was caught off guard earlier—had been healed.

The presence of the divine sun formed by Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi's Sun Leaf allowed Zhang Ruochen to fight at ease without worrying about minor injuries.

Yan Wushen stared at Zhang Ruochen. "I have to admit, Zhang Ruochen, your strength is beyond my expectations. You are qualified to die under the secret technique of Yanluo Clan."

As Yan Wushen's voice trailed off, the whole place suddenly became dark.

The strange mark on Yan Wushen's forehead glowed with a dark light. The Precepts and Saint Qi of heavens and earth within a radius of 10,000 miles surged violently and gathered from all directions.

At the same time, close to a hundred million Precepts rushed out from Yan Wushen's body. Each of them was solid and thick. They were comparable to the Precepts in the Neverwither Supreme Saint's body.

With the strange mark as the foundation, close to a hundred million Precepts interweaved. An evil realm was formed. Under the rule of Heaven and Earth and Heaven and Earth Saint Qi, it became bigger and bigger.

The realm was as dark as a black hole. It gave off the aura of hell. One could vaguely hear the howls of myriad ghosts sending them shivering goosebumps.

An invisible pressure from that realm spread out as if it would cover the entire Eastern Region.

"What a terrifying technique. Is this really a technique that a Saint King can use?"

"Yan Wushen is too powerful. It seems that even Zhang Ruochen can't break legend about Yan Wushen being invincible."

"Zhang Ruochen hasn't practiced cultivation long enough. He lacks accumulated experience. If he were allowed to have more time, Yan Wushen might not be able to defeat him."

"I hope Zhang Ruochen can survive. Otherwise, who can compete with Yan Wushen in the future?"

"I'm afraid it will be difficult. Nether Demon and Nether Buddha have been following him. They have made up their minds to kill Zhang Ruochen."

…

Sensing the terrifying aura from the evil realm, all the cultivators of Celestial Court who were watching from afar trembled.

Fairy Tianchu raised her head. The vertical eye between her brows glowed with divine light. Looking at the growing evil realm, she could not help but felt worried.

She wanted to help Zhang Ruochen, but there was nothing she could do. Her cultivation had not reached the pinnacle yet. Even with the inheritance from her ancestor—Goddess of Luoshui, she still couldn't mobilize the power of Luoshui as she pleased.

"Unless… I use that thing, but…"

Fairy Tianchu was conflicted.

That thing was something prominent. If she used it, the consequences would be unpredictable. It could even bring disaster to the entire Tianchu civilization if something went wrong.

Nether Demon sneered. "I didn't expect Yan Wushen to use Yama Naraka. It seems that Zhang Ruochen will certainly die without our involvement."

"Only by practicing both the Path of Dimension and the Path of Origin can we have a chance to cultivate Yama Naraka. This is Yanluo Clan's supreme secret technique. Very few have successfully practiced it since ancient times. It'll be difficult even for the ones like us—who can control Hadean Furnace—to resist such attack," Nether Buddha said seriously.

Thinking of how terrifying Yama Naraka was, Nether Demon and Nether Buddha retreated further to avoid getting implicated.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen's expression turned very grave. He stared at the evil realm in size of more than 10,000 miles in diameter.

He could clearly feel that the space around him had completely frozen. Even he couldn't use Dimensional Shift to leave.

Yan Wushen looked down at Zhang Ruochen with a cold gaze. "This will be your end."

Yan Wushen waved his hand, and the huge Yama Naraka was charging at Zhang Ruochen with unparalleled force.

Guided by the terrifying power, more than a dozen small stars fell from the outer realm. They were all swallowed by the ‘Yama Naraka’ and turned into dust.

Zhang Ruochen gasped softly. He flipped his hand and took out something. It looked simple and unadorned, but it had a profound and mysterious aura. It was none other than Sundial.

Zhang Ruochen poured Saint Qi and the 63 Precepts of Time he had cultivated into Sundial without holding anything back. He even utilized his portion of Canon of Truth.

In addition to that, Zhang Ruochen performed the scripture of the Empyrean Emperor Ming’s Scripture. He extracted a large amount of divine essence from the divine sun formed by Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi’s Sun Leaf and poured it into Sundial.

Immediately, a layer of cyan light appeared on the surface of Sundial. Countless light spots flew out from it and condensed into a cyan stream countering ‘Yama Naraka’.

Wherever the cyan stream passed, time and space turned into chaos; they distorted and collapsed in destruction.

With his current attainments in the Path of Time and his knowledge of Sundial, Zhang Ruochen could finally launch an attack using Sundial. It was no longer just an artifact supporting cultivation training.

Sundial was an artifact of Time that had existed since the beginning of human civilization. If it could be fully activated, it could even destroy a Macroworld.

Needless to say, Zhang Ruochen was still far from being able to unleash the true power of Sundial with his attainment at this point. However, even if it was only one-tenth of the full power, one should not underestimate it.

Boom!
Yan Wushen’s ‘Yama Naraka’ exploded with a bang, releasing a highly terrifying destructive power.

“Oh No!”

Nether Demon and Nether Buddha’s expressions changed drastically. They quickly took out Hadean Furnace to block the impact approaching them.

This destructive power spread far and wide that it even stirred up huge waves at Luoshui tens of thousands of miles away.

All mountains within a radius of tens of thousands of kilometers were razed flat, with not a single grass left.

At the center of the explosion, a huge pit diameter of more than ten thousand kilometers appeared. The deepest part of the pit was more than nine thousand meters. It was as if a huge planet had hit it.

Many cultivators rose into the air and looked at the massive pit from afar.

“Who won?”

Of course, everyone was concerned about the result of this battle.

Fairy Tianchu also appeared in the air, stepping on golden fog. She looked at the huge pit; she was worried.

In the huge pit, the violent force did not dissipate for a long time. The two figures—Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen—stood 50 kilometers away from each other.

Zhang Ruochen held Sundial in his hand. His posture was as straight as a spear. His eyes were as bright as lightning as he stared at Yan Wushen.

Yan Wushen, on the other hand, maintained a straight posture as well. However, the strange mark on his forehead dimmed. The evil aura around his body almost completely disappeared.

Puff!
Suddenly, Yan Wushen’s body trembled, and he spat out a large mouthful of blood. His essence, Qi, and spirit instantly withered.

“How is this possible? Yan Wushen lost!”

Nether Demon’s eyes widened. He could not believe what he had just seen.

Nether Buddha was also stunned. He stared at Zhang Ruochen.

“Th-Th-This is really unbelievable. Zhang Ruochen has broken the legend of Yan Wushen’s invincibility!”

All the cultivators were stunned. Their minds went blank.

Yan Wushen wiped the blood from his mouth. He stared at Zhang Ruochen. “Tsk, I didn’t expect to meet a strong opponent within the same realm.

“Although you did rely on an artifact of Time, your performance was still impressive that you could severely injure me.

“I’ll face you again soon. Then we will know who’s the winner.”

As soon as Yan Wushen finished his words, he shattered the space around him with a powerful force and left through the void space as he had come.

Zhang Ruochen just watched quietly and did not stop him.

Just as the shattered space was about to be restored, a bloody man sighted falling out of it.

Zhang Ruochen moved and caught the falling man. It was none other than Jiang Yunchong.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised that Yan Wushen would leave Jiang Yunchong behind.

“Let’s go.”

Nether Demon and Nether Buddha came to their senses and looked at each other. They could see the shock in each other’s eyes. What was the artifact of Time that Zhang Ruochen held? How could it injure Yan Wushen so severely?

The duo did not dare to hesitate longer and retreated immediately.

Even Yan Wushen had retreated. What else could they do to fight Zhang Ruochen?

From now on, Zhang Ruochen would be deemed as the strongest elite below Supreme Sainthood. Today’s battle would probably cause a huge uproar among myriad Macroworlds and Microworlds of Celestial Court and Ten Clans of Infernal Court.

Chapter 2138: Heavy Damages on Both Sides

Jiang Yunchong was breathing his last breath in the giant pit.

Zhang Ruochen immediately took out a large amount of Spring of Life and fed it to him.

Jiang Yunchong was severely injured. Not only his physical body, but his Saint Soul was also severely injured. If it weren't for his powerful strength and extraordinary bloodline and physique, he would not have been able to hold on until now.

Spring of Life could heal the physical body, but it could not heal a Saint Soul. Hence, Zhang Ruochen took out a sacred pill and fed it to Jiang Yunchong.

It was a Heaven Grade Sacred Pill from True Dragon Island, refined by the Elixir Master of the Divine Dragon race. It could even heal the damaged Saint Soul of a Neverwither Supreme Saint.

Then, Zhang Ruochen reached out a hand and pressed it against the hole in Jiang Yunchong's chest. He mobilized dimensional force to carefully extract the extremely dark Yama Qi that had infiltrated Jiang Yunchong's body.

During this process, Zhang Ruochen felt a deep chest ache. He tried hard to hold back when he nearly spat a mouthful of blood.

The last blow had been so powerful that even Yan Wushen—whose physical state was near Neverwither state—was heavily injured. Hence, there was no way that Zhang Ruochen was unscathed.

He had deliberately held back his injuries to intimidate Nether Demon and Nether Buddha. After all, if they knew that he was also injured, they would not miss this great opportunity.

Now, the spiritual power of Nether Demon and Nether Buddha was still targetting this area. Therefore, he could not show any signs of injury. Instead, he treated Jiang Yunchong generously to make it look like he was not injured.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen finally cleared away all of the extremely dark Yama Qi in Jiang Yunchong's body.

The erosion of the extremely dark Yama Qi stopped. Under the nourishment of Spring of Life, blood and flesh grew back in the hole of Jiang Yunchong's chest at a visible speed.

Jiang Yunchong's pale face gradually regained its color. He struggled to sit up and said, "Thank you."

“You’re welcome. How’s the situation in Eastern Region Holy City Now?” Zhang Ruochen asked with a solemn expression.

Jiang Yunchong’s eyes narrowed. He muttered, “Many of the ancient inscriptions in Eastern Region Holy City have been restored. The city can withstand any attack even if all Saint-level troops of Infernal Court join hand. It’s the safest place in Eastern Region.

“Never did we expect Yan Wushen would show up. However, when he started to slay the city, we activated the inscriptions in time to suppress him.

“Unfortunately, Yan Wushen was too strong. Before the ancient inscriptions were fully activated, he managed to escape from Eastern Region Holy City.”

Zhang Ruochen breathed a sigh of relief. Apparently, the casualties in Eastern Region Holy City were not as severe as he had expected.

However, with Yan Wushen’s cultivation base, even if it was only a short attack, the destructive power could kill countless cultivators and destroy many cities.

Ever since Kunlun had become a Battlefield of Merits, many humans had fled to Eastern Region Holy City to seek refuge. Therefore, it had not been difficult for Yan Wushen to enter Eastern Region Holy City.

However, after Yan Wushen’s attack, Eastern Region Holy City might no longer be a safe place. People would feel panic. And it was impossible to seal Eastern Region Holy City off completely and forbid cultivators to enter or leave.

“Has Eastern Region Saint King Manor been attacked?” Zhang Ruochen asked again.

Jiang Yunchong shook his head and said, “Eastern Region Saint King Manor is under protection by a Ninth Stratum Array. Although the place was implicated, it is still fine.”

“Since Eastern Region Saint King Manor is still there, I believe that the situation in the Eastern Region Holy City will get under control soon, and people will be reassured,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Otherwise, he, the nominal Prince of Eastern Region, would have to rush to the Eastern Region Holy City as soon as possible to take charge of the overall situation.

“Brother Jiang, you are severely wounded. If you don’t mind, you can enter one of my microworlds to recuperate,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Jiang Yunchong said, “Thank you!”

Seeing that Jiang Yunchong agreed, Zhang Ruochen flipped his hand and took out a green bead covered with profound dimensional runes.

This bead was snatched from Saint King Xuankong of Sunshine Civilization. It contained a Microworld of vibrant woodlands with a diameter of more than a million miles. It was much more precious than an Exquisite Dimensional Orb.

The green bead released a beam of Saint light that enveloped Jiang Yunchong.

Jiang Yunchong disappeared from where he was following a slight dimensional distortion. He entered the microworld of jungles. He was sent to an ancient and elegant manor. The place was filled with different types of flowers and rich Saint Qi of Heaven and Earth.

After settling Jiang Yunchong, Zhang Ruochen put away the green bead and performed a dimensional technique. He appeared on the shore of Luoshui out of thin air.

“Run!”

All cultivators of Infernal Court who could not retreat in time saw Zhang Ruochen return, and they were scared out of their wits. They fled in panic.

A cold light flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. With a wave of his hand, ripples spread across the large area.

Wherever the ripples passed, the fleeing cultivators of Infernal Court froze. They exploded and turned into clouds of blood mist.

Their items and Saint Souls were all put away by Zhang Ruochen.

At this moment, two streaks of Saint light rushed out from the depths of Luoshui and came directly in front of Zhang Ruochen. They were Moyin and the Azure Dragon.

Moyin said respectfully, “Master, Mara has been subdued.”

Great Prince Mara was in a miserable state. He was entangled by layers of vines and covered in wounds and blood. The roots of Moyin pierced into his body and completely controlled his movement. He could not kill himself even if he wanted to.

As a Great Prince and the son of the infamous Evil God—Majya, he had the potential to achieve godhood. Great Prince Mara probably had never once thought he would end up being in such misery one day.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression was indifferent. His eyes showed no pity. After all, Great Prince Mara had taken lives in Kunlun and eaten them without mercy.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen sensed something; he instinctively looked at the deep waters of Luoshui.

“Huh? I’m busted.”

Luo Sha—who was hiding near the deep waters of Luoshui—had a slight change on the expression of her pretty face.

She was hiding in a folded space. By using a profound Dimensional technique, she camouflaged herself in the surrounding space.

At the same time, she also had an artifact that could help her to conceal her presence.

Yet, such a perfect camouflage was busted by Zhang Ruochen. There was nothing Luo Sha could do about it.

Since she had been discovered, Luo Sha removed all her camouflage. With her hands behind her back, the enchanting figure walked out, showing no slightest fear.

“Even Yan Wushen was defeated by you. You are indeed my destiny,” Luo Sha said with a smile.

As she spoke, Luo Sha strode on her feet, stepping out from layers and layers of folded space. She walked out from the deep waters of Luoshui calmly. There was no panic in her eyes. It was as if she was not afraid of Zhang Ruochen at all.

Standing on the surface of the water, Luo Sha looked at Great Prince Mara. She slightly shook her head. “Mara, if you had listened to me, you would not have ended up like this.”

At this stage, Luo Sha and Great Prince Mara were in charge of the Rakshasa Army that entered Kunlun.

Although Luo Sha’s cultivation and strength had not reached the pinnacle yet, she was a resourceful, prominent noble who could play a significant role in the Battlefield of Merits.

Hence, almost all the other Scions and Scionesses of the Rakshasa, except Great Prince Mara, were willing to follow Luo Sha’s orders. On the other hand, Great Prince Mara had been doing things as he pleased, and Luo Sha could not do anything about it.

“I won’t play with you anymore. We’ll meet again, Zhang Ruochen.”

Suddenly, Luo Sha crushed a talisman. Streaks of silver light wrapped around her, and she disappeared.

Bang!
But the next moment, Luo Sha reappeared. She was shocked to realize that she could only move a few hundred feet away.

Luo Sha’s eyes were filled with surprise. The Dimensional Shift talisman she had used just now was created by a Supreme Saint practicing the Path of Dimension, and yet its effect was blocked.

“Still want to escape?”

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen reached out a hand.

He released a large number of Precepts of Dimension condensing into a Dimensional chain that wrapped around Luo Sha.

Luo Sha sighed. She knew that she could not escape, so she didn’t resist. She let the Dimensional chain wrap around her. At the same time, she smiled bitterly. “Zhang Ruochen, since you are reluctant to part with me, I won’t leave!”

Zhang Ruochen dragged Luo Sha closer to him by pulling the Dimensional chain. Then he used a delicate technique to seal Luo Sha’s Saint Qi and spiritual power.

Since the Battlefield of Merits in Zuling Realm, Zhang Ruochen had dealt with Luo Sha—a Rakshasa princess—many times. And finally, he could capture her.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Luo Sha coldly. “Why are you in Luoshui? What are you plotting?”

He knew how cunning Luo Sha was and thought she must have been in Luoshui for a plot against him.

Especially during this time, Zhang Ruochen had all the reasons to suspect that Luo Sha had come with Great Prince Mara with malicious intention against him. He felt she might have some powerful tricks up her sleeve.

“Of course I’m here looking for you. Don’t you miss me?” said Luo Sha, with an alluring look in her eyes.

Zhang Ruochen had another episode of chest ache. He felt intense pain in his body. Nevertheless, he endured it. “It’s okay if you don’t want to talk about it. All I have is time.”

“I treat you sincerely, Zhang Ruochen. Never have I harmed you. Why are you always so mean to me?” Luo Sha said pitifully.

Luo Sha continued after a pause, “Celestial Court has been acting unfair to you and Kunlun, and Heavenly Realm’s faction keeps sending their minions to go after you. What’s the point of staying with Celestial Court?

“Why don’t you take Kunlun with you and join us, the Rakshasa? I can guarantee that we will treat you a hundred times better than Celestial Court.

“I am aware of the feud between you and Empress Chi Yao. As long as you are willing to join Rakshasa and come with me, I can ask Father to help me subdue Empress Chi Yao and leave her at your mercy.”

Despite hearing this, Zhang Ruochen did not bat an eyelid. He said lightly, “Luo Sha, stop wasting your time. I will never join the Rakshasa that treats humans as food.”

As his voice trailed off, Zhang Ruochen handed Luo Sha over to Moyin, ordered it to keep an eye on her.

With a slight movement, he showed up in front of Fairy Tianchu.

Li Ruohan, the Fool, and the Butcher immediately retreated to the side tactfully.

They were aware that Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu had an unusual relationship. So, they were not worried that Zhang Ruochen would harm Fairy Tianchu.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Fairy Tianchu for a moment before he said, “Thank you.”

The blow sent out by Fairy Tianchu had undoubtedly helped him during his intense fight against Nether Demon and Nether Buddha.

Fairy Tianchu’s radiant skin—as smooth as cream—was illuminated with a white Saint light. It was as if she were Goddess of Luoshui. “You always thank me. Actually… There’s no need for you to be this polite,” said Fairy Tianchu with a smile on her face.

Her smile lit up the entire world. Nothing was more beautiful than it.

After Zhang Ruochen looked at her for a bit longer, he suddenly felt a sweetness in his throat and almost spat out blood.

Even though he hid it well, Fairy Tianchu could sense his condition at a close distance. She immediately said, “It’s rare to see you in Luoshui. Please join me at Nine Carols Star!” Her tone was delicate and soft.

Zhang Ruochen immediately understood and said, “Sorry to bother you.”

Fairy Tianchu’s tall and beautiful figure walked to Zhang Ruochen’s side. She held his hand with a warm and soft arm.

At the same time, she secretly supported his body.

She looked like a beautiful, decent, and sensible wife welcoming her husband, who had returned from afar.

Swoosh–

Fairy Tianchu drew a line in the air with her fair finger. Luoshui was split, and a golden path emerged under her feet, leading directly to Nine Carols Star.

She and Zhang Ruochen passed through the path and flew out.

Seeing this, Li Miaohan, Moyin, and the others followed without hesitation.

When the cultivators of Celestial Court saw Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu entering Nine Carols Star like a couple, they let out a long sigh of relief.

Zhang Ruochen's aura was too intimidating, making them hard to breathe, and they could not do anything about it.

Cough.
As soon as Zhang Ruochen stepped into Nine Carols Star, he spat out a mouthful of blood. His body swayed, and he almost fell to the ground.

His injuries were too severe. At this moment, he could no longer hold back.

Fortunately, after entering Nine Carols Star, he no longer had to worry about the prying eyes of Nether Demon and Nether Buddha.

"How do you feel?" Fairy Tianchu asked with concern.

Li Miaohan, Moyin, and the others were shocked. They had not expected this to happen.

They immediately realized that the battle between Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen hadn't been easy. Not only had Yan Wushen severely wounded, but Zhang Ruochen himself had also taken serious damage.

Zhang Ruochen spat out blood a few more times. His face turned pale, and his aura weakened.

Many visible cracks appeared on the surface of his body. His entire body was on the verge of shattering.

If one could see the inside of his body, they would find that his internal organs were almost completely shattered.

More importantly, even his Saint Soul had suffered serious damage.

Zhang Ruochen's heart sank when he noticed his own condition. His injuries were more serious than he had expected. It would not be easy for him to recover fully.

Fairy Tianchu brought Zhang Ruochen to the place where she practiced her self-cultivation.

“You can recuperate here. No one will disturb you,” Fairy Tianchu said.

“Thank—” Zhang Ruochen had wanted to thank her again, but as soon as he recalled what Fairy Tianchu had said earlier, he swallowed his words.

After all, “Thank you” was for politeness.

Being polite to Fairy Tianchu meant that deep down in Zhang Ruochen’s heart, he felt there was a distance between them.

In order not to disrupt Zhang Ruochen’s recovery, Fairy Tianchu retreated immediately.

Of course, she didn’t go far. Instead, she stood guard outside the cave and personally protected Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen collected his thoughts. He took out a Heaven Grade Sacred Pill and swallowed it. At the same time, he drank a large amount of Spring of Life and started the healing process.

The situation in Kunlun was constantly changing. Something big could happen at any time. He had to heal his injuries as soon as possible and recover to his prime condition. Only then could he deal with everything.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen held the divine sun formed by Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi’s Sun Leaf in his body. It constantly released strange essence and Qi to nourish his body. It restored the vitality of every inch of his flesh and blood. Under its effect, his recovery ability was far from what ordinary people could compare to.

When Zhang Ruochen went into seclusion to recuperate, the outside world was in an uproar. The news of the Battle of Luoshui quickly spread to myriad Macroworlds and Microworlds of Celestial Court and Infernal Court.

The result of this battle was too significant. After all, for hundreds of years, Yan Wushen had had always been regarded as being invincible at the realm below Supreme Sainthood. No one had expected that he would get defeated by Zhang Ruochen.

“Impossible. Zhang Ruochen has only practiced cultivation for a short period. Even if he is the Scion of Time and Space, there’s no way he can defeat Yan Wushen. This must be a rumor.”

Upon hearing this news, many cultivators in Infernal Court did not buy it.

Yan Wushen had remained a legend for his invincibility for long years. He had subdued all cultivators—from both Celestial Court and Infernal Court—of first-tier under Supreme Sainthood. They could barely gasp an air when facing him.

On Celestial Court side, the forces and individuals who had no grudges against Zhang Ruochen were, of course, happy to see such an outcome.

However, those who held resentment against Zhang Ruochen, especially those supporting Heavenly Realm, appeared very depressed. In their eyes, the stronger Zhang Ruochen was, the greater the threat he posed to them.

“First, he defeated Son of Darkness, then Supreme Saint Jinhui, and now, he has even defeated Yan Wushen. Zhang Ruochen has grown strong and become unstoppable now. It’s unlikely to turn the tide. In other words, his era of invincibility has arrived. I don’t know if anyone can replace him.”

Many felt great emotion as they recalled Zhang Ruochen’s recent achievements.

Chapter 2139: Comprehending Sword Technique at Luoshui

Although Fairy Tianchu’s training manor was inside the Nine Carols Star, it was like a fairyland. The manor was spacious and built using rare cultivation resources. There stood a sacred mountain full of exotic flowers and ancient trees. It was filled with dense light and abundant Saint Qi of heaven and earth.

Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged at the bottom of the sacred mountain. A rainbow-colored stream flowed past him, making the sound of flowing water.

Seven days later.

With the help of the Heaven Grade Sacred Pill and the Spring of Life, Zhang Ruochen’s injuries had mostly recovered.

“Yan Wushen’s Yama Naraka is really powerful. My Five-element Chaotic Body has almost reached the limit of a Supreme Saint, but it still can’t withstand it. If it was an ordinary Neverwither Supreme Saint, he would have already destroyed his immortal saint body.”

Fortunately, with the Spring of Life, my body could recover completely. Otherwise, I would have to re-condense the Five-element Divine Object and start from scratch. All my previous efforts would have been in vain.

Zhang Ruochen's body was as smooth as white jade, and his insides shone with brilliant divine light.

It was the Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi's Sun Leaf. It had turned into a divine sun and used his body as a lamp, continued to light up his body. While recovering his injuries, it also strengthened his non-immortalize brain and organs, even the Precept became thicker and more condensed under the light of the divine sun.

The benefits of divine medicine were endless.

Although the battle with Yan Wushen had severely injured Zhang Ruochen and almost shattered his internal organs, it was a blessing in disguise.

Zhang Ruochen vaguely sensed that traces of immortal light appeared in his internal organs. After he recovered, he was actually in a half-immortal state.

In this case, Zhang Ruochen naturally wouldn't let go of this good opportunity. He took out a Heaven Grade Sacred Pill that could help him cultivate the immortal saint body and swallowed it.

He delivered the medicinal power of the pill to his six internal organs and refined it repeatedly.

Heaven Grade Sacred Pills were rare for other Saint Kings. Each one was like a priceless treasure. But to Zhang Ruochen, they were just like candy.

It was such a luxury.

Another three days passed. Six of his internal organs were completely immortalized. Zhang Ruochen's strength had improved again.

Now, only Zhang Ruochen's five other internal organs—heart, liver, spleen, lungs, and kidneys—and his brain weren't immortalized yet.

If he could improve and cultivate his five internal organs to immortalized, he wouldn't be as badly injured as this time when he met Yan Wushen again.

'I should have been more seriously injured than Yan Wushen in this battle. Moreover, I had to use the Sundial to severely injure him.

'After Yan Wushen left, he will definitely look for the sacred artifact that can restrain the Sundial. Once he finds it, he will definitely come to the Eastern Region to fight with me again, hoping to defeat me or even kill me.'

Zhang Ruochen felt a sense of crisis in his heart.

With Yan Wushen's identity and the reasons to kill Zhang Ruochen, he could even borrow a half-divine artifact from the god of Infernal Court. Let alone a Regal Artifact or a Supreme Artifact.

If Zhang Ruochen lost the advantage of the Sundial, how could he defeat Yan Wushen?

Zhang Ruochen analyzed secretly and thought of a way to deal with it.

'When Yan Wushen fought with me, he didn't use various sacred artifacts. Instead, he used his own power.

'His attainments in the Path of Dimension were much better than mine. Not only did he cultivate more Precepts of Dimension, but his understanding of space and the dimensional saint technique he cultivated were both profound and mysterious.

'To break his Thousand Yama Shadows, is there any other way apart from using the Yanshen's leg? It consumes too much Saint Qi.

'Yan Wushen's most powerful move, Yama Naraka, could be based on the Path of Dimension and the Path of Origin. It could be combined with other Paths to draw upon the Precepts of heaven and earth and the Saint Qi of heaven and earth. It's a comprehensive technique.'

Zhang Ruochen let out a deep sigh. He had to admit that Yan Wushen was indeed amazing.

Neither the Thousand Yama Shadows nor Yama Naraka should be a technique that a Saint King could successfully cultivate. But he did it.

Zhang Ruochen didn't fear Yan Wushen because of this. Instead, he was filled with a fighting spirit. Only when Yan Wushen was strong enough could he motivate him to become stronger.

As he recalled the battle with Nether Demon, Nether Buddha, and Yan Wushen, Zhang Ruochen's heart suddenly throbbed.

Like a flash of inspiration, he seemed to have caught the most profound mystery in the world.

Out of thin air, the Ancient Abyssal Blade flew out and stuck in front of him. With the sword body as the center, circles of mystical circuits emerged and gradually spread out.

Soon, the entire training ground was covered by the circuits.

Swoosh!
Swoosh!
…

Illusory sword shadows rose around the Ancient Abyssal Blade. Thousands and thousands of them reaching infinite, covering every corner of the training manor.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen's inner world was also completely covered by sword shadows.

Just now, Zhang Ruochen sensed that when he used Sword Ten in the battle with Nether Demon and Nether Buddha, its sword comprehension was not complete. He felt like he had not perfected it yet.

It was like playing the zither. When he reached the last string, he realized that the zither music should not be broken here. He could continue playing and form a more beautiful tune. It would become a true sound of nature.

'Impossible. Sword Ten is only at the fifth realm. I have cultivated it to perfection.'

Zhang Ruochen found it hard to understand, so he began to comprehend Sword Ten again. At the same time, he tried his best to find the mystical feeling that he felt connected to.

Although he sat cross-legged next to the stream, meditating.

However, a human figure that looked exactly like Zhang Ruochen appeared. The figure pulled out an illusory sword stuck in the ground and begun to cultivate Sword Ten.

Then, a second human figure appeared. He also pulled out a virtual sword and cultivating Sword Ten.

A third human figure appeared.

…

These human figures were Zhang Ruochen's Sword Path consciousness.

Soon, thousands of Zhang Ruochen's phantom appeared in the entire training manor. They all held an illusory sword and cultivating Sword Ten repeatedly, performing various sword moves.

Sword Ten represented the "Ten Directions," which were: heaven, earth, east, south, west, north, life, death, past, and future.

Zhang Ruochen's Sword Path consciousness was cultivated for an unknown amount of time. Finally, he had a glimmer of understanding.

'Heaven, earth, east, south, west, and north. These six directions correspond to space.

'If I integrate the Path of Dimension into Sword Ten, will I create the sixth realm of Sword Ten?'

The fifth realm of Sword Ten was actually comprehended by the predecessors from the Wordless Sword Manual. Different people would naturally comprehend different versions of Sword Ten.

However, the predecessors might not have comprehended Sword Ten to the maximum.

Even the Wordless Sword Manual might not represent the maximum.

Zhang Ruochen wished to surpass the predecessors of Kunlun Realm, and even the genius who wrote the Wordless Sword Manual. Only in this way could he have a chance to become a true ruler forever and break the existing order and precepts of the world.

This was unprecedented enlightenment!

However, these were not new to Zhang Ruochen. Since he had created the "Realm of Sword", which was a combination of Path of Dimension and Sword Path.

The sixth realm of Sword Ten might be the higher form of the Realm of Sword. The two complemented each other.

…

While Zhang Ruochen was trying his best to comprehend the sword, Moyin and the Azure Dragon were sitting at the top of a temple in the Nine Carols Star. Both of them had transformed into human forms.

Moyin had a devilish and beautiful face. She had a graceful figure and wore a purple dress, like a demon concubine or a demon empress, poses in lazing manner.

On the other hand. the Azure Dragon was tall and sturdy. He wore dragon scale armor and his arms were thicker than a bucket. He looked like a brute force giant.

The two of them were comparable to first-level powerhouses. Being able to fight against a Neverwither Supreme Saint, their auras were naturally extraordinary.

Below them stood dozens of Saint Kings of the Rakshasa, both male and female. They were bound by the dragon breath that the Azure Dragon spat out and could not move.

The Rakshasa Princess, Luo Sha, was also standing below. She was bound by Zhang Ruochen's dimensional chains. She was staring coldly at Moyin and the Azure Dragon sitting above her.

As the most honorable Rakshasa Princess, Luo Sha had an extraordinary status. She could lead the Path Armada to attack a great world. Even some Supreme Saints had to give her face. When had she ever suffered such humiliation?

Great Prince Mara was even more miserable. The roots that extended from the Moyin's feet penetrated his body. A large amount of his cultivation was devoured and absorbed. He was miserable and weak, laid on the ground, dying slowly.

Luo Sha was as beautiful as Fairy Tianchu, Fairy of a Hundred Flowers, and the others. She had a noble aura and was about 1.8 meters tall. Her figure was flawless. Every line on her body was filled with charming beauty. Her snow-white skin and slender neck, her slim waist were like a water snake, and her pair of slender jade legs that even Moyin was jealous of. It was as if the heavens had carefully polished them, and no man in the world was worthy of her.

Luo Sha said, "You'd better let go of me immediately, or an unpredictable disaster shall fall upon you."

Moyin was very jealous of Luo Sha's beauty. She stood up and walked over seductively. She stretched out five sharp fingernails and brushed past Luo Sha's crystal clear face. She smiled and said, "I'm really scared. Your Highness, please don't scare Me."

Luo Sha's eyes turned cold.

Moyin snorted. "Yan Wushen, Nether Demon, and Nether Buddha were all scared off by my master. How dare you still put on the airs of a Princess? Do you believe that I'll suck all your life essence and turn you into an old ugly monster?"

Luo Sha wasn't afraid and she sneered. "Even Zhang Ruochen doesn't dare to be so arrogant. I didn't expect you to be so ignorant."

"Why you…"

Luo Sha immediately added, "Yan Wushen, Nether Demon, and Nether Buddha are indeed powerful, but they are only individuals. In a one-on-one fight, Yan Wushen is invincible except for Zhang Ruochen. But, wasn't he chased by The Four Heavenly Kings all over Kunlun Realm? No matter how powerful Zhang Ruochen is, he would probably die if he met ten Saint King powerhouses of the first level. "It's pretty easy for the Infernal Court to select ten powerhouses of the first level to deal with Zhang Ruochen."

Moyin was silent for a moment and said, "Do you think there are no powerhouses in the Celestial Court? And they would allow the Infernal Court to simply do as they wish with my Master?"

Luo Sha narrowed her eyes and smiled. "Haven't you had enough of ambushes by the cultivators from Celestial Court? There was a group of forces in the Celestial Court, who'd afraid that Kunlun Realm would rise again. Zhang Ruochen's defeat of Yan Wushen had touched their nerves and made them completely vigilant.

"Why do you want to go against me? Why don't you leave yourself a way out? If there's no place for you in the Celestial Court and Kunlun Realm in the future, I'm magnanimous enough to take you in."

The Azure Dragon said, "Don't let her bewitched you. Leave her for now. Let's deal with Great Prince Mara first."

Moyin stared into Luo Sha's eyes and snorted. She dragged her long dress and walked towards the dozens of Rakshasa Saint King captives.

They were all the subordinates of Great Prince Mara.

Moyin released a powerful Saint Aura, shocking all the Rakshasa Saint Kings, “I’d heard that the Rakshasa likes to eat meat, especially human meat. Originally, Master would never let you go, but now, he has decided to give you a chance to live.”

The dozens of Rakshasa Saint Kings knew that Celestial Court and Infernal Court were incompatible, and they were ready to die. Who would have thought that they would have a chance to live?

Hearing this, some of the Saint Kings were delighted.

Moyin said, “Great Prince Mara is an ace cultivator below the Supreme Saint. There shouldn’t be many strong cultivators as such in Rakshasa, right? If you eat his flesh, your cultivation would improve greatly and benefit immensely.”

“What? You want us to eat the Great Prince? Impossible, absolutely not possible. Why don’t you just kill us!” One of the Saint Kings who was loyal to Great Prince Mara roared.

“Alright then, as you wish.”

Moyin stretched out a hand and her fingers turned into sharp roots that pierced into the Saint King’s head.

As the Saint King screamed in pain, Moyin sucked him into a dried corpse.

The wind blew and turned the corpse into dust that scattered all over the ground.

The remaining Saint Kings was instantly frightened.

Moyin withdrew the roots and turned back into five jade fingers. She placed her snow-white index finger on her lips and gently licked it, she said, “I will let you go after you consume Great Prince Mara. If you don’t, I will be the one who eats you. Think carefully before you make the decision.”

The Rakshasa Saint Kings all stared at Great Prince Mara, their eyes turning blood red.

“How dare you! What are you trying to do?” Great Prince Mara roared as an unprecedented fear rose in his heart.

Luo Sha could not stand it any longer and said, “Isn’t this too much?”

Moyin said in a deep voice, “Too much? What you Rakshasa did have gone even further in Kunlun Realm, remember? We are giving them a taste of their own medicine. Your Highness, if you are willing to take a bite or two, I will let you go. Don’t you want to try?”

Although Luo Sha belonged to the Rakshasa, she did not cannibalize before. On the contrary, she detested the evil habit of cannibalism because humans and Rakshasa were similar in many ways.

To the Rakshasa, cannibalism felt like consuming one of their own.

Chapter 2140: Path of Swordsmanship: The Great Perfection
The Azure Dragon withdrew his dragon breath and freed the dozens of Rakshasa Saint Kings.

“Eat Great Prince Mara. This is your only way to survive,” Moyin said indifferently.

Dozens of Rakshasa Saint Kings fixed their eyes on Great Prince Mara. Most of them had a fierce glint in their eyes.

“Great Prince, you will definitely die if you fall into Zhang Ruochen’s hands. Why Don’t you help us and give us a chance to live?” one of the Rakshasa Saint Kings said in a deep voice.

Another Rakshasa Saint King said, “We have no choice now. I’m sorry, Great Prince!”

Dozens of Rakshasa Saint Kings moved in unison and approached Great Prince Mara slowly.

It was every man for himself.

Moreover, they were all ruthless beings. Forget about eating Great Prince Mara’s flesh; they would even dare to eat the flesh of a Rakshasa deity for the sake of survival.

Great Prince Mara’s eyes were filled with fear as he roared in a trembling voice, “Stop, d-d-d-don’t come over. I am the son of Majya. I am the Great Prince personally conferred by ma-ma-many deities. You all— Ahhh…”

Dozens of Rakshasa Saint Kings did not wait for him to finish his sentence and pounced over him. Large chunks of his flesh were torn off by few dozen mouths biting onto his body, blood dripping endlessly.

For a moment, Great Prince Mara's shrill screams sounded out in the palace hall. It was like the howls of evil ghosts in Hell, sending people shivers and goosebumps.

Seeing this scene, Luo Sha's pupils constricted. A look of pity appeared in her eyes. Although she was a Rakshasi, this was the first time she had seen a Rakshasa cannibalism.

Moyin cut off a piece of flesh the size of a palm from Great Prince Mara's body and slowly walked towards Luo Sha, saying, "Your Highness, I have chosen the most tender piece of meat for you. Please enjoy it."

Upon hearing this, Luo Sha was stupefied. She didn't want to eat even the flesh of a human, let alone the flesh of her kind.

Eating the flesh of Great Prince Mara was more tormenting than death to her.

Swoosh–

Just as Moyin was about to send the flesh into Luo Sha's mouth, a brilliant sword light suddenly burst out from Luo Sha's body.

Crack!

The Sword Light was so sharp that not only did it cut through Zhang Ruochen's Dimensional chain, it also broke the profound seal left by him.

An ancient sword hilt flew out and fell into Luo Sha's hand.

Driven by the evil energy, streaks of divine light flew out from the sword hilt and manifested countless Precepts of Swordsmanship. They interweaved and transformed into a slender sword body. The highly dense divine power spread out.

Without needing Luo Sha to do anything, the Precepts of Heaven and Earth revolved around the divine sword.

Rumble–

Under the influence of the divine sword, Luoshui suddenly stirred up huge waves. These waves come with sharp edges. They seemed to condense into thousands of razor-sharp swords.

“This is—”

Moyin’s expression changed slightly.

She had seen this ancient yet plain-looking sword hilt before in the Northern Region and knew that it was related to Sword Vault Palace.

Luo Sha took out this sword hilt back then and almost got her hands on Zhang Ruochen’s Toten Sword.

Before this, Moyin had searched Luo Sha’s body carefully, but she did not find the sword hilt. She had no idea where Luo Sha had hidden it.

Luo Sha fused all of her evil energy into the divine sword in her hand.

Tens of thousands of streaks of sword Qi appeared and turned into a terrifying torrent enveloping Luo Sha. It was as if she were in another space and time, where others could not get close to her.

Moyin wanted to stop her, but the vines she stretched out were crushed into pieces the moment they touched the torrent of sword Qi.

The torrent of Sword Qi also blocked the Dragonsoul Fire that Azure Dragon spat out.

BANG!

The torrent of Sword Qi was unstoppable; it instantly destroyed the palace hall. It pierced through the many Folded Dimensions and opened a passage leading out of Luoshui.

“S-S-Save me…”

Great Prince Mara called out in pain.

Although there was a pity look in Luo Sha’s eyes, she immediately stepped into the passage opened by the torrent of Sword Qi without hesitation.

It was not that she did not want to save Great Prince Mara but that she had no way to save him. Any delay would risk her chance to escape.

The sword hilt that she obtained from Sword Vault Palace was indeed extraordinary. However, with her current strength, she was unable to unleash its true power.

As Great Prince Mara saw Luo Sha did not hesitate to retreat, the last hope in his heart shattered. He fell into despair.

The moment Luo Sha stepped into the sword Qi passage, there was a sign of activity in Nine Carols Star. A profound Swordwill enveloped the entire Nine Carols Star.

The source of this Swordwill was the secret mansion where Zhang Ruochen practicing self-cultivation training in seclusion.

Swoosh–

In an instant, thousands of illusory images of Zhang Ruochen appeared on Nine Carols Star. They all looked solid. It was difficult to identify whether they were real or fake.

Each Zhang Ruochen's illusory image was brandishing his sword and performing profound sword techniques.

"What happened?"

The cultivators of the Tianchu Civilization having self-cultivation training on Nine Carols Star were all alarmed.

Terrifying power fluctuations appeared one after another. It was almost as if Nine Carols Star had encountered a powerful enemy's attack.

"Oh no!"

Luo Sha's expression changed slightly. She immediately retreated from the sword Qi passage at the fastest speed.

There was no other reason except that Zhang Ruochen's Swordwill had faintly evolved into an independent realm covering the entire Nine Carols Star. It had actually cut off the passage created by the sword hilt.

"Master has come out of seclusion. Luo Sha, you have no way to run!"

A hint of joy appeared in Moyin's eyes.

Luo Sha did not pay any attention to Moyin. Instead, she locked her gaze at the sky. A huge Saint Sword was floating there. It was 30,000 feet tall and looked like a heavenly sword-shaped mountain.

The Saint Sword emitted a brilliant nona-coloured light. Countless profound runes were imprinted on the sword. It looked like a sword of the highest quality that contained the true essence of Swordsmanship.

For a moment, countless Precepts of Heaven and Earth gathered wildly. The Saint Qi of Heaven and Earth condensed into numerous Saint Sword phantoms. The sword phantoms were all pointed at the 30,000-feet tall Saint Sword. The sight was akin to Convergence of Swords.

Buzz–

The sword hilt in Luo Sha's hand shook violently, and it showed signs of flying out of her hand.

"The Great Perfection of Swordsmanship," Luo Sha pronounced.

The realm where a Saint King successfully cultivated a million Precepts for a Path was called the Great Perfection.

Theoretically speaking, a Saint King could cultivate a maximum of one million Precepts for each Path. But in reality, very few of them could reach this stage.

Even for 100,000 Minor Paths, most could only cultivate a number of Precepts close to one million. Hence, they could not achieve the Great Perfection.

It was already hard for most to attain the Great Perfection in Minor Paths, let alone Major Paths, Paths of Supreme Saint, and Paths of the Ancients.

Never had Luo Sha expected Zhang Ruochen would successfully cultivate one million Precepts for Path of Swordsmanship—one of the seventy-two Paths of Supreme Saint—and triggered extraordinary phenomenon.

There was a huge gap between 999,999 Precepts and a million Precepts of a Path, despite the mere difference of one Precept.

Attaining the Great Perfection in a Path would bring unimaginable effects to many aspects of a cultivator's strength.

Among the several Paths that Zhang Ruochen mainly practiced, his attainment in Path of Swordsmanship had always been at the forefront. Before the seclusion, the number of his precepts for this Path had already been close to a million.

He had devoted himself to comprehending Sword Ten and finally achieved great advancement in his Path of Swordsmanship—the Great Perfection that countless sworders yearned to achieve.

Swoosh–

All illusory images of Zhang Ruochen combined, and the actual Zhang Ruochen appeared.

With a wave of his hand, the 30,000-meter-tall nona-colored Saint Sword directly entered his body.

The nona-colored Saint Sword might seem solid and not so different from a real Saint Sword from outer appearance. But its true form was actually the Saint Aspect of Swordsmanship that Zhang Ruochen had cultivated.

Then, all the strange phenomenon that enveloped Nine Carols Star quickly dissipated.

“Congratulations, Master. Your cultivation base has greatly improved and your Path of Swordsmanship has reached the Great Perfection.”

Moyin and the Azure Dragon immediately approached him to congratulate him.

Although they were both top elites at first-tier under Supreme Sainthood, they still felt tremendous pressure when facing Zhang Ruochen. It was as if they were facing a powerful Supreme Saint.

After attaining the Great Perfection in Path of Swordsmanship, Zhang Ruochen had undergone a significant change. The change was not something that one could observe by looking at his outer appearance. It was rather the type of change that occurred to his essence.

Especially for sword practitioners, they could sense Zhang Ruochen’s change clearly.

Zhang Ruochen landed on the dilapidated palace hall and looked at the ancient sword hilt in Luo Sha’s hand.

Although Luo Sha tried her best to resist, after Zhang Ruochen released a powerful Swordwill, the sword hilt flew out of her hand against her will.

“Return the hilt to me. It belongs to me.” Luo Sha’s beautiful eyes widened as she snorted.

Zhang Ruochen held the hilt and sized it up. He said, “This object is a property of Sword Vault Palace. It doesn’t belong to you.”

“Zhang Ruochen, you’re a bully. Why do you always steal my treasures? Sundial is mine, and so is the hilt.” Luo Sha’s eyes were full of resentment. She ground her teeth, her plump breasts panting.

Zhang Ruochen did not bat an eyelid. “You are wrong. Nothing belongs to you. Even your life is in my hands now.” His tone was flat

His words struck Luo Sha. She could feel a murderous intent from Zhang Ruochen.

Luo Sha knew very well that Zhang Ruochen had always been very cold and ruthless to the cultivators of Infernal Court, especially since Great Prince Mara had provoked him. She might get implicated.

“Zhang Ruochen, you will gain nothing from killing me. It will only bring you endless trouble.

“I know that you will say that you don’t care. But think of those who see you as a thorn in their side. They will be happy to see that happen.

“Anyway, you have already obtained the treasure of Sword Vault Palace. How about letting me go?” Luo Sha said quickly.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “I can give you a chance to live. Send a message to your kind—Rakshasa, ask them to send Saint Ancient Tea Tree that Great Prince Mara had snatched from us back to Kunlun.”

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen looked at Great Prince Mara. What he saw was only a skeleton with no flesh and blood as Rakshasa Saint Kings had eaten them up.

Even so, Great Prince Mara was not dead for real yet. His Sainthood Source and Saint Soul remained.

Zhang Ruochen reached out and grabbed Great Prince Mara’s Sainthood Source and sealed it off.

After being eaten alive by Rakshasa Saint Kings, Great Prince Mara's spiritual will was already in a state of collapse.

Even if he possessed a new body, he would become a useless Rakshasa with no potential to achieve greatness.

With a thought, Zhang Ruochen sent Great Prince Mara's Sainthood Source to Qiankun Realm so Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit could refine it.

Zhang Ruochen then put away Great Prince Mara's Saint Bones as well.

Mara's bones had already completed the transformation to Neverwither state. They were equivalent to the bones of a Neverwither Supreme Saint, which would have many uses.

At the same time, Moyin suddenly released many vines and pierced through the bodies of Rakshasa Saint Kings.

"Y-Y-You break your promise."

Rakshasa Saint Kings were filled with resentment.

They had already thrown all concerns away when they chose to devour Great Prince Mara's flesh and blood. Never had they expected they would still end up dead.

Moyin said coldly, "Keeping promises with the cultivators of Infernal Court is not a wise decision. There is no way I will let you go back and continue to devour the living beings in Kunlun."

Their fate had already been decided the moment they fell into her and Azure Dragon's hands.

Be it Great Prince Mara or these Rakshasa Saint Kings, they all played a part in slaying Art Sect. How could they let them go?

In a moment, all the spiritual Qi of the Rakshasa Saint Kings was devoured. They turned into dried corpses and dissipated as the wind blew.

'Elder Chu, you can rest in peace!' Zhang Ruochen said in his heart.

After experiencing powerlessness, pain, and sorrow, Zhang Ruochen's heart gradually became cold and not as kind as before.

Perhaps, this was the price to pay when one embarked on the journey to be more mighty and stronger in the pursuit of Emperorhood.

No matter what, after taking revenge for Chu Siyuan, Zhang Ruochen's mind became more ease.

The next thing he needed to do was take back Saint Ancient Tea Tree that belonged to Art Sect and help Divine Scripture Maiden revive Art Sect and Confucianism.

And all of these hopes were placed on Luo Sha.

Luo Sha's status as Rakshasa Princess was more respectful than Great Prince Mara's. If he could control her, he might be able to make Rakshasa compromise.

In fact, he could have just used Great Prince Mara to exchange for Saint Ancient Tea Tree.

However, Great Prince Mara was the murderer of Chu Siyuan. Since he had already captured Luo Sha, there was no need to keep Mara alive.

"You want to take back Saint Ancient Tea Tree so badly because of Divine Scripture Maiden, right? Zhang Ruochen, you pretend to be cold all the time, but you're actually very kind to those you care! Haha!" Luo Sha said.

Obviously, Luo Sha knew everything about Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen said coldly, "Do as I say if you don't want to die."

Zhang Ruochen released an even more terrifying murderous intent and an irresistible spiritual will that enveloped Luo Sha as he spoke.

"I'll send the message as you said. Why all the violence?" Luo Sha was shocked, her mouth twitching as she spoke.

She could feel that Zhang Ruochen was not joking. If she disobeyed him, she would suffer consequences far worse than imagined.

Luo Sha did not want to anger Zhang Ruochen for real, so she immediately began to write the content he wanted her to send.

After a short while, Luo Sha had completed drafting the message. Zhang Ruochen sent it out after reading it.

Luo Sha felt shame to ask her people to exchange Saint Ancient Tea Tree for her life, but she could do nothing about it. Zhang Ruochen became stronger and stronger. No matter how many tricks she had, none of them would work this time.

Even Yan Wushen, who was so insufferably arrogant, had been defeated by Zhang Ruochen. She being Zhang Ruochen's captive, should not be regarded as a disgrace.

In Luo Sha's opinion, not only had Zhang Ruochen's cultivation base changed, his state of mind had become flawless now.

He would do anything to achieve his goal.

This version of Zhang Ruochen was the most terrifying.

Chapter 2141: The Honor of the Eastern Region

Zhang Ruochen made a move and sealed Luo Sha once more. He handed her over to Moyin and the Azure Dragon and guarded her tightly, waiting for the Rakshasa to respond.

Zhang Ruochen had Moyin search Luo Sha's body and found all the hidden treasures to prevent any more accidents.

As the Rakshasa Princess, Luo Sha had countless treasures with her. Many Supreme Saints could not compare to her.

With these treasures, even a top-notch cultivator below the first level of the Supreme Saint might not be able to defeat her. Unfortunately, Luo Sha had met her nemesis this time. No matter how many trump cards she had, they would not work.

Sensing that someone was coming, Zhang Ruochen walked out of the dilapidated hall. Then, a tall and graceful figure caught his sight.

Every time he saw Fairy Tianchu, Zhang Ruochen's eyes would light up. He would be unconsciously attracted by her beautiful face and saint temperament.

"I'm sorry for making a mess of Nine Carols Star," Zhang Ruochen said apologetically.

Fairy Tianchu said, "No worries. The Nine Carols Star is protected by the Goddess of Luoshui's divine force. Even if it is damaged, it can recover quickly.

“Besides that, congratulations on completing the cultivation of Sword Path. It seems that your injury has healed.”

Recently, she had been guarding outside the training manor to protect Zhang Ruochen. She had never thought that Zhang Ruochen would come out of seclusion in this way.

“A small epiphany after healing is not worth mentioning.”

Zhang Ruochen had planned to cultivate Sword Ten to a higher level. It was entirely a surprise that the Precepts of Swordsmanship reached a million.

There were many geniuses in the world. There was no lack of people who could cultivate a certain kind of Path to the maximum. Only one Precept was needed to complete it. However, there were not many people who could actually cross it.

People like Zhang Ruochen who had cultivated for a short time and reached the completion of Sword Path were beyond common sense.

Fairy Tianchu lifted her head and looked at the vast sky. Her eyes were deeply immersed and calm. In a gentle voice, she said, “Will you walk with me on the Nine Carols Star?”

“Sure,” Zhang Ruochen replied immediately.

Zhang Ruochen put down all the things he was dealing with and walked side by side with Fairy Tianchu. They walked along the ancient stone path, breathing in the faint fragrance of the air. His state of mind gradually calmed down.

Compared to the previous meetings, this time, Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu were clearly much closer. They spoke more to each other.

Unknowingly, Zhang Ruochen’s heart had gradually opened up and he was closer to Fairy Tianchu.

There were many cultivators of the Tianchu Civilization on the Nine Carols Star. Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu strolled leisurely, attracting many people’s attention.

One was imposing, while the other was incredibly beautiful. Walking together, they were like a pair of an immortal couples. It was enviable.

“I’ve never seen Her Highness and being so close with a man. It seems that Zhang Ruochen has a chance to be the Prince Consort of our Tianchu Civilization,” the Butcher analyzed seriously.

The Fool laughed. “Only a heaven-chosen figure like Zhang Ruochen is worthy of the Her Highness. However, if those who pursue Her Highness know this fact, I wonder what will be the looks on their face.”

“So what if they knew? Who can compare to Zhang Ruochen? Her Highness is destined to take over the position of Tianzhu in the future. Ordinary people aren’t qualified to be her husband,” the Butcher snorted.

Obviously, the Butcher and the Fool were happy to see Fairy Tianchu and Zhang Ruochen tieing the knot.

With Zhang Ruochen’s great strength, Tianchu Civilization would be willing to accept him even if he had provoked many powerful enemies.

After all, Tianchu Civilization was strong and had never been afraid of anyone.

Standing in front of a divine river, Zhang Ruochen took out a brocade box and said softly, “There is a Supreme Saint Fruit in it. If you refine it, you will soon reach the pinnacles of the Saint King realm. When you break through to the Supreme Saint realm, your cultivation will be much easier.”

“Why do you have a Supreme Saint Fruit?” Fairy Tianchu’s eyes showed surprise.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You needn’t know about its origin. Just refine it.”

Hearing this, Fairy Tianchu couldn’t help but look at Zhang Ruochen for a moment. Then she reached out and took the brocade box.

As the fairy of Tianchu Civilization, she knew what the Supreme Saint Fruit was. The fruit could only be condensed after a Supreme Saint buried in a special place for tens of thousands of years. It had all sorts of incredible uses. It was more precious than the Sainthood Source of the Supreme Saint.

Through the brocade box, she could sense that the Supreme Saint Fruit in the box was not simple. It must have condensed the essence and inheritance of an extremely powerful Supreme Saint.

Fairy Tianchu's cultivation was not weak either. After receiving the inheritance from the Goddess of Luoshui, she had already cultivated to Heaven's Reach realm. It was only a matter of time before she broke through to the Precept Dominion realm with her talent.

Now that she had the Supreme Saint Fruit, it would be undoubtedly much easier.

Of course, how many Precepts she could cultivate in the Saint King realm depended on her talent and potential.

"Thank you," Fairy Tianchu said.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. "Humbleness is not necessary between us."

Hearing this, Fairy Tianchu couldn't help but smile. She hadn't expected Zhang Ruochen to say the exact same thing.

But this was undoubtedly a good thing. It meant that the distance between them was much closer.

Fairy Tianchu stared at Zhang Ruochen's eyes closely. Her red lips moved slightly.

"Do you have anything to say?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Fairy Tianchu shook her head slightly.

In fact, Fairy Tianchu had wanted to remind Zhang Ruochen that the hostile aura from his body was getting heavier. His state of mind had also changed greatly. He seemed to be in a state of going berserk.

However, Fairy Tianchu restrained herself when the words were about to come out of her mouth.

Should Fairy Tianchu persuade Zhang Ruochen to stop killing? That seemed impossible.

Perhaps Fairy Tianchu would also go berserk and would not restrain the killing intent in her heart if what happened in Kunlun Realm happened in the Tianchu Civilization.

After a long while, Fairy Tianchu said, "I know that because of the great pressure from the outside world, you will do whatever it takes to become

stronger. However, cultivation should be gradual. If you act too hastily, your state of mind will lack stability, leading to unpredictable consequences."

"I'll bear in mind about it!" Zhang Ruochen said.

For the next ten days, Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu were together. They chatted and strolled, talked about the comprehension of the fist technique, or discussed the improvement of the state of mind and self-cultivate. They were inseparable. Many cultivators of the Tianchu Civilization stared at them blankly.

Ten days later, Fairy Tianchu entered the golden divine gate and began to seclude herself for cultivation.

Zhang Ruochen left Luoshui along with Moyin and the Azure Dragon.

The Rakshasa had already given an answer. They were willing to trade the Saint Ancient Tea Tree for Luo Sha.

Only that Zhang Ruochen had been with Fairy Tianchu all this while and didn't ask about it.

There was no need to be too anxious about this. As long as Luo Sha was in his hands, Zhang Ruochen could perform the exchange at any time.

In addition, the Saint Ancient Tea Tree was already in the hands of the Rakshasa. Even if he could take it back, he had to prevent the Rakshasa from tampering with it.

To be on the safe side, he had to find someone very familiar with the Saint Ancient Tea Tree to do this.

Zhang Ruochen sent a message to Divine Scripture Maiden.

Divine Scripture Maiden quickly responded. She only needed to use a Confucian Sect's treasure to verify it.

Divine Scripture Maiden sent another message after a while, which made Zhang Ruochen very happy. It was that Luo Xu had reappeared. He would come to the Eastern Region Holy City with the Light Myriad Scroll to meet him.

Because of this, Zhang Ruochen chose to leave Luoshui and return to the Eastern Region Holy City.

With the stability of the Eastern Region Holy City, it was the most suitable place to conduct the exchange with the Rakshasa.

After a period of recuperation, Jiang Yunchong had almost recovered. Zhang Ruochen released him from the microworld's forest and went on the road with him.

Although Luoshui was very far from the Eastern Region Holy City, with Zhang Ruochen's current dimensional attainments, he did not break a sweat to rush there.

Previously, when Zhang Ruochen was comprehending the sword technique at Nine Carols Star. Not only he had cultivated the Sword path to completion but also greatly improved the Path of Dimension. After all, the key to comprehending the sixth level of Sword Ten was dimension.

The Eastern Region Holy City was very special. Although it was called the Holy City, it was actually a precious star with a diameter of more than 10,000 miles. In ancient times, it descended from the sky and stood on the land of the Eastern Region.

Even before Kunlun Realm was revived, the cultivation environment of the Eastern Region Holy City was excellent. It produced many spiritual crystals, saint stones, and all kinds of refining materials.

After Kunlun Realm was revived, the Eastern Region Holy City was able to produce a 100,000-year-old ancient sacred medicine every day. It attracted many powerhouses from the Celestial Court and Infernal Court to compete for it.

Unfortunately, Kunlun Realm lacked top-notch powerhouses, so most of the 100,000-year-old sacred medicine was obtained by powerhouses from Celestial Court and Infernal Court.

Otherwise, with so many cultivation resources, Kunlun Realm's strength would have increased by a lot.

Because of Yan Wushen's attack, the Eastern Region Holy City was already in a state of high alert. The border check for the eight ferries was much stricter than in the past.

Because of this, many Saint-level cultivators who wanted to enter the Eastern Region Holy City were very dissatisfied.

If the ancient inscriptions of the Eastern Region Holy City hadn't been repaired and the protection hadn't increased, these people wouldn't have registered at all. Instead, they'd forced their way in.

Zhang Ruochen had arrived at the Tiankun Crossing, one of the eight crossings, after a while.

It was as lively as the last time he was here. A large number of Saint-level cultivators were coming and going at all times. The White Dragon Ferry wasn't enough, so there was a long queue.

"I'm from the Cloudthunder Realm and a direct descendant of the Thunder Clan. Arrange the White Dragon Ferry immediately and let me enter Eastern Region Holy City."

"How dare you make me wait here for so long? Do you think that I'll not destroy the Tiankun Ferry?"

"It's so troublesome every time we enter the city. How do the cultivators of Kunlun Realm do their job here?"

…

Before they actually arrived at the Tiankun Crossing, Zhang Ruochen heard many impatient voices.

Kunlun Realm's cultivators in charge of registration all broke out in cold sweat and trembled with fear, faced with the terrifying pressure from so many Saint-level cultivators.

Swoosh
A silver-haired Saint King took action and lifted a half-saint of Kunlun Realm who was in charge of registration. It was as if he was lifting a chick.

"Do you take my words for granted? You have delayed my important matters. Ten deaths are not enough to atone for your sins," the silver-haired Saint King shouted coldly.

This person dared to attack at the ferry. He could be said to be extremely overbearing.

However, at this moment, the silver-haired Saint King suddenly felt his hair stand on end. He felt a huge threat.

His eyes moved. The silver-haired Saint King quickly locked onto the source of the threat.

“Zhang… Zhang Ruochen.”

The silver-haired Saint King opened his eyes wide. His eyes were filled with fear.

All the cultivators gathered at the Tiankun Crossing couldn’t help but look in the same direction.

As the saying goes, the more fearful a person’s name, the more protection you could get.

Not long ago, Zhang Ruochen had fought with Nether Demon and Nether Buddha in Luoshui, and then he had defeated Yan Wushen. His battle was glorious. Who wouldn’t be afraid?

Seeing Zhang Ruochen walk over, everyone quickly parted to make way for him. No one dared to stop him.

With Zhang Ruochen’s strength, he could probably kill all of them with a flick of his finger.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was getting closer and closer to him, the silver-haired Saint King could not help but become more nervous. He quickly put down the half-saint of Kunlun Realm in his hand.

Zhang Ruochen appeared very calm. He walked forward slowly but did not even glance at silver-haired Saint King.

Zhang Ruochen said calmly, “From this day forth, only 800 non-cultivators of Kunlun Realm will enter Eastern Region Holy City every day. There will be 100 quotas for each crossing. This is a ban from me, Zhang Ruochen, and I will not repeat it again.”

His voice was very soft, but it clearly entered everyone’s ears.

“What right do you have to restrict us from entering Eastern Region Holy City?” A cultivator immediately questioned.

Zhang Ruochen turned his gaze and said forcefully, “I am the Prince of the Eastern Region, everything in the Eastern Region is under my ruling.”

Now that Zhang Ruochen was powerful enough, he should really take on the responsibility of the Prince of the Eastern Region.

Especially now that Zhang Ruochen was in the limelight and everyone was afraid of him, he could take the opportunity to make some rules.

“Zhang Ruochen, you are too overbearing. The Eastern Region Holy City is not entirely yours.”

“Don’t go too far in everything. If you offend the public, you, Zhang Ruochen, can not bear it.”

“We must enter the Eastern Region Holy City. Do you really think you could stop us?”

…

Many cultivators spoke with dissatisfaction.

There were many opportunities in the Eastern Region Holy City. There was sacred medicine everywhere. How could they give up?

Many of them had great origins. Even though Zhang Ruochen was in the limelight, they weren’t afraid.

The Celestial Palace had already issued a rule forbidding internal strife. No matter how strong Zhang Ruochen was, he had to abide by it. Otherwise, he would be severely punished by the Celestial Palace.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You think there are too few spots, right? Then I’ll give you a chance. As long as you pay 10,000 Saint Stones, you can also enter Eastern Region Holy City.”

Hearing this, many cultivators became even more agitated.

As Saint-level cultivators, they indeed didn’t lack saint stones. Taking out 10,000 was nothing to them.

But with their status, how could they be willing to be subject to such rules?

Not to mention 10,000 saint stones, they would not even be willing to give one.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen set the rules so forcefully, the cultivators of Kunlun Realm were very excited. They had long been fed up with the bossy

outsiders, but they did not have enough strength. No matter how unwilling they were, they could only endure it.

Zhang Ruochen did not care about the opposing voices. He told the Azure Dragon, “Azure, you are in charge. Anyone who dares to cause trouble, suppress them, and they are not allowed to enter Eastern Region Holy City again.”

“Yes, Master.”

The Azure Dragon immediately bowed and accepted the order.

Then, the Azure Dragon swept a disdainful gaze across everyone present. His body emitted vast dragon might.

Many cultivators stepped back. Their eyes were filled with fear.

They naturally recognized the Azure Dragon. They knew that he had the strength of the first level below the Supreme Saint. He could suppress the heavily injured Great Prince Mara.

Many people realized that Zhang Ruochen wasn’t joking. He really wanted to set a rule and announce his dominance in the Eastern Region.

It was impossible for cultivators from each of Celestial Court’s realm to wantonly seize the sacred medicine born in the Eastern Region Holy City.

…

The powerhouses of the Middle Ages gradually woke up. Would Zhang Ruochen’s leadership in Kunlun Realm be replaced?

Chapter 2142: Return to Saint Court

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation **Editor:** EndlessFantasy Translation

The Azure Dragon took out seven Dragon Pearls. Each of them was left behind by the fallen Supreme Saint of the dragons. They contained the dragon soul and possessed the Neverwither power of the Supreme Saint.

The Azure Dragon dripped seven drops of sacred blood into the Dragon Pearls and fused seven wisps of its Saint Soul into them. It formed seven shadow clones and headed to the other seven ferries. His true body was stationed at the Tiankun Crossing.

It was enough to suppress most Nine-Step Saint Kings after activating its Neverwither power with Azure Dragon's current cultivation. Even if it was just a Dragon Pearl shadow clone.

If he really encountered a top-notch cultivator, he could just let his true body rush over..

Zhang Ruochen didn't stay long at the Tiankun Crossing. He took Jiang Yunchong and Moyin and headed to the Eastern Region Holy City on the White Dragon Ferry.

The Eastern Region Holy City was protected by ancient wards. Thus, no one could force their way in. Instead, they had to take this special ferry.

Even Yan Wushen had sneaked into the Eastern Region Holy City and attacked. After being attacked by the ancient wards, he had no choice but to retreat.

In a short time, Zhang Ruochen's order had spread across the eight ferries. It was written in holy prose. As long as one entered the eight ferries, they could see it.

"Zhang Ruochen is too overbearing. He actually restricted us from entering the Eastern Region Holy City and enforced on taking Saint Stones. Does he think that cultivators from all realms are easy to bully?"

"We can not compromise on this matter. We can not let Zhang Ruochen do whatever he wants. I don't believe that no one can suppress him."

"We cultivators from all realms have come to participate in the War of Merit. There is no place in Kunlun Realm that we can not enter. Even the so-called Central Imperial City, we can still enter. No matter how strong Zhang Ruochen is, his tyranny has its limit."

…

When the news spread, it immediately caused a huge fuss. Cultivators from all realms of the Celestial Court were resisting and putting pressure on Zhang Ruochen.

Although these people roared very loudly, no one dared to act recklessly because of the Azure Dragon guarding the eight ferries.

Standing on the White Dragon Ferry, Jiang Yunchong sighed and said, "The Eastern Region Holy City is one of the most mystical places in the

Eastern Region. It is a naturally precious planet. A large number of sacred medicine are born every day. There are also all kinds of rare treasures.

“Not long ago, the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb was found, which attracted a lot of top cultivators.

“The cultivation resources that have been born are mostly taken away by outsiders. Our local cultivators of Kunlun Realm have received very little, and we are being bullied everywhere. It is very gratifying that you have issued such a ban.

“However, this will definitely cause dissatisfaction from all sides. There might be a lot of trouble.”

Jiang Yunchong had been staying in Eastern Region Holy City and was very familiar with the situation. However, because he was a Re-Awakener, he kept a low profile and would not attack unless it was necessary.

Otherwise, with Jiang Yunchong’s strength, he could have taken the treasures.

Zhang Ruochen said calmly, “If I was afraid of trouble, I wouldn’t have agreed to be the Prince of the Eastern Region, and provoked the cultivators of the Heavenly Realm.”

No matter how big the trouble was, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t back down.

Sensing Zhang Ruochen’s calmness, Jiang Yunchong didn’t say anything more. Instead, he said, “With your current spiritual power, you can control the Seal of Flames. Let’s go to the Tower of Flames first and get the Seal of Flames from Yanruo.”

Zhang Ruochen had gotten the Seal of Flames from Chen Yuhua and became the new Prince of the Eastern Region. However, since his spiritual power hadn’t reached the 59th level, he couldn’t control it. Therefore, he asked Jiang Yunchong’s partner, Yanruo, to hold on to it.

While Zhang Ruochen was away from the Eastern Region Holy City, Yanruo was also in charge of restoring the ancient wards. Otherwise, the city wouldn’t have been able to resist Yan Wushen’s attack.

“I may not stay in the Eastern Region Holy City for too long. I’ll keep the Seal of Flames with Yanruo. Thank you for guarding the Eastern Region Holy City,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The current situation in Kunlun Realm was pretty grim. There had to be a top cultivator whose spiritual power had reached the 59th level. One had to be in charge of the Seal of Flames and stay in the Eastern Region all the time. Zhang Ruochen obviously could not do that.

Jiang Yunchong shook his head helplessly. “As the Prince of the Eastern Region, you have done it so easily. Well, since you have more important things to do, we will help you guard the rear.”

Not long after, the White Dragon Ferry flew over the inscripted ward above the Eastern Region Holy City and landed on the most prosperous Golden Rainbow Continent.

Once off the ferry, Jiang Yunchong part ways from Zhang Ruochen and hurried to the Tower of Flames.

Zhang Ruochen had thoroughly sensed that Jiang Yunchong’s cultivation should have been fully restored. He did not have the special aura of a Re-Awakener, so he did not give him the spring water of the Sun-Moon Dragon Spring.

As Jiang Yunchong said, because the ancient ward was activated in time, Yan Wushen did not cause too much damage to the Eastern Region Holy City. Only one or two urban areas on the Golden Rainbow Continent were affected, and during this time, the restoration was almost complete.

Compared to before Kunlun Realm became the Battlefield of Merits, the population of the Eastern Region Holy City had increased tenfold. Apart from the local cultivators who came to take refuge, there were also a large number of Saint-level cultivators from other realms. It was chaotic and very complicated to manage.

If anything went wrong, the casualties would undoubtedly be shocking.

Zhang Ruochen and Luo Xu had agreed to meet at the Saint Court, so he did not delay any longer and went straight to the seventh district where the Saint Court was located.

The cultivation environment of the Saint Court was excellent. With the revival of the Eastern Region Holy City, it became more of sacred ground for cultivation.

Speaking of which, it had been a long time since Zhang Ruochen had returned to the Saint Court. He wondered if there were any old friends in the Saint Court?’

Without alerting anyone, Zhang Ruochen quietly arrived at the heart of the Saint Court, the sacred mountain.

Then, he entered a valley full of pear trees.

Because of the revival of the sacred mountain, the 3,600 Spiritual Crane Pears grew more luxuriously. The trees were full of fruits, and the bottom of the trees was covered with snow-white pear flowers.

After passing through the pear garden, Zhang Ruochen came to a steep black cliff. He glanced at the waterfall that was falling vertically and finally locked his eyes on an irregular stone platform at the bottom of the cliff.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen saw an old man with a white beard and hair, dressed in a white robe smiling at him.

This was where he apprenticed to Elder Xuanji. It could be said that his path as a Sword Saint began here.

Zhang Ruochen was full of respect and gratitude for Elder Xuanji. Not only did he teach him the Sword Path, but he also saved him when Empress Chi Yao ordered him to be captured. After that, he even fought to the death with Sword Saint Jiuyou in Zhang Ruochen's place.

'I wonder where Master is now? What important things is he doing?' Zhang Ruochen whispered.

The so-called Nether Realm was a part of the Infernal Court and it's full of dangers. Zhang Ruochen was really worried that Elder Xuanji would be in danger.

Unfortunately, he still had many things to do in Kunlun Realm, so he could not rush to the Nether Realm.

Zhang Ruochen walked slowly towards the stone platform, his eyes were gloomy.

There was no news of his master, and only he and Qing Xiao were left among his fellow apprentices.

Thinking of Zhu Hongtao, Wan Ke, and Lingshu, Zhang Ruochen's heart ached. He was filled with guilt and endless anger.

Zhang Ruochen would never forget that Zhu Hongtao and the others' heads were hung on the gate of Yin-yang palace hall and exploded in front of him, but he could do nothing.

If Zhang Ruochen was strong enough, the tragedy might not have happened.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen walked out of the valley and came to the outside of the sacred mountain.

Zhang Ruochen still remembered that he apprenticed to Elder Xuanji here. He had fought with Ao Xinyan, who refused to accept him as captain here as well.

Ao Xinyan was the proud daughter of the Divine Dragon Halfling clan. She had the battle soul of a Divine Dragon, so she was very cocky.

Ao Xinyan had been defeated by Zhang Ruochen in that battle. From then on, she had been obedient to him.

Even though Ao Xinyan had become Princess Shenlong, she still addressed Zhang Ruochen as captain, just like before.

Some things had changed, but some things never.

Zhang Ruochen stood there for a long time. Images clearly appeared in his mind, as if it had just happened yesterday.

After many twists and turns, Zhang Ruochen arrived at the starting point of entering the Saint Court, the Stairway to Heaven.

Back then, Zhang Ruochen was only a warrior in the Tianji Realm. Half-saints and saints were unattainable in his eyes, and he needed to look up to them.

Many years passed in the blink of an eye, Zhang Ruochen now stood at the pinnacles below the Supreme Saint. Only he knew how much effort he had put in.

Zhang Ruochen stepped onto the Stairway to Heaven. Images of his past flashed through his mind. With his current cultivation and strength, the Saint Aura of the Stairway to Heaven couldn't affect him at all.

Before he knew it, Zhang Ruochen had reached the end of the Stairway to Heaven and entered the palace hall.

This palace hall was a special place. It held stone statues of saints who had walked out of the Saint Court for generations to be worship for eternity.

Only those who had become half-saints were qualified to enter.

There were many stone statues in the palace hall. They were densely packed and lifelike, exuding Saint Aura that was both strong and weak. In front of these stone statues, there was a stone platform. Some had tributes, while others were empty.

This was also a tradition of the Saint Court. Every saint would leave a treasure in the palace hall.

Zhang Ruochen looked around and saw a stone statue that belonged to him. However, this stone statue was ordinary and didn't have any saint power.

It was normal to think about it. After all, when the Saint Court carved this stone statue for him, his true body wasn't there.

Whoosh
Suddenly, as if there was some sort of feeling, Zhang Ruochen and the stone statue formed a miraculous connection. The heavenly and earthly precepts in the entire palace hall became active at this moment.

The ordinary stone statue suddenly added a sacred charm and gave off a powerful Saint Aura.

At this moment, the stone statue finally reached saint level.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the stone statue that looked exactly like him as if he was looking in a mirror. However, the aura that the stone statue gave off made him feel a bit unfamiliar. It was as if he didn't even know who he was anymore.

'It's just a stone statue.'

Zhang Ruochen dispelled the distracting thoughts in his mind. He took out a sacred artifact and placed it on the stone platform in front of the stone statue.

No matter what, he was still a member of the Saint Court. He could never forget his roots.

‘Since ancient times, the number of Saint-level cultivators born in the Saint Court must be enormous. There must be more than a few hundred of them.’

Glancing at the hundreds of stone statues in the hall, Zhang Ruochen could not help but whisper.

Zhang Ruochen had an idea. He released his spiritual power and carefully examined them.

This inspection really made him discover something. It turned out that there was a folded space in the palace hall. It was very hidden. Even ordinary dimensional cultivators could not find it.

“What a strong dimensional barrier. Even with my current dimensional attainments, I can’t break through it forcefully. It seems that this folded space is not simple. There must be a big secret hidden,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Saint Court had a deep foundation. It was common for them to have secrets. Although Zhang Ruochen was curious, he didn’t investigate rashly.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen turned around and looked at the entrance of Saint Hall.

There was a middle-aged man in his fifties with broad arms, bronze skin, and was full of power.

Zhang Ruochen moved and came in front of him. He bowed and said, “Greetings, Master.”

He was none other than Zhang Ruochen’s first master, Lei Jing.

As the saying went, once a master, always a master. Especially since Lei Jing had helped him a lot, Zhang Ruochen would never forget it.

When he first returned to Kunlun Realm, Zhang Ruochen had met Lei Jing once. At that time, Lei Jing was only a half-saint in the branch of the Martial Market Bank in Qianshui Commandery.

He did not expect to see him in the Saint Court this time. Moreover, Lei Jing had already condensed the Sainthood Source and become a real saint.

Perhaps that was why Lei Jing could return to the Saint Court from Qianshui Commandery.

Lei Jing quickly helped Zhang Ruochen up and teased him, “You are now the strongest cultivator below the Supreme Saint. I can’t afford to have you bow to me.”

“No matter how strong I am, I am still your disciple. Or is Master still not satisfied with me?” Zhang Ruochen stood up and teased.

Lei Jing couldn’t help but laugh. “Yes, how can I not be satisfied? Having you as my disciple is the proudest thing in my life. Besides, what do you mean? Still think of yourself as the disciple years ago?”

Zhang Ruochen laughed.

“The people who used to look down on me have completely changed their attitude. I went to the Martial Market Bank in Qianshui Commandery because I couldn’t stand them. It was not until I broke through to the Saint-level that I returned to the Saint Court.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but laugh. “If not, how could I meet you in the Saint Court? I’d like to congratulate you on becoming a Saint.”

“It’s all thanks to the Sainthood Source you left last time. Otherwise, I don’t know how long it would have taken me to become a saint. I couldn’t ask for more after becoming a saint.” Lei Jing’s eyes were full of joy.

Lei Jing walked into Saint Hall and waved his hand to take out a stone statue that belonged to him. He also left a treasure.

“I, Lei Jing, can finally leave my name in the history of the Saint Court.” Lei Jing’s eyes were full of excitement.

To leave a stone statue in Saint Hall was a supreme honor for every disciple of the Saint Court.

Swoosh
Suddenly, a beam of saint light flew from the sky.

Zhang Ruochen reached out a hand and grabbed it. It was a Communication talisman sent by Luo Xu.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at it and said to Lei Jing, “Master, I have something to discuss with Principal Luo. I’ll accompany you after I’m done… forget it. Haha, we’ll have a few drinks then. I have a lot of good wine.”

“Let’s get down to business first. Don’t keep Principal Luo waiting. I have plenty of time.” Lei Jing nodded. The smile on his face grew brighter.

Unlike others, no matter how strong Zhang Ruochen became, Lei Jing didn’t feel any pressure. He knew what kind of person Zhang Ruochen was.

Without any further delay, Zhang Ruochen used Great Dimensional Shift and left. Since Luo Xu had arrived in Eastern Region Holy City, it was time to exchange for the Saint Ancient Tea Tree.

Chapter 2143: Summoning Han Qiu

Outside the sacred mountain, there was a wide river. It was surging nonstop, and the dense Saint Qi of Celestial Court and the earth were rising, forming a snow-white fog. It looked surreal.

In the Saint Court, this river was known as the sacred river. It was as famous as the sacred mountain and very mysterious. Since Kunlun Realm was revived, a very long-lived sacred medicine was born almost every day, and there were even 100,000-year-old sacred medicines.

A scholar in cyan stood by the river. His entire body was in perfect harmony with the river’s rhythm.

Zhang Ruochen appeared behind the scholar in cyan. He cupped his hands and said, “Greetings, Principal Luo.”

Zhang Ruochen had always been very grateful and respectful to Luo Xu. Even though he was now stronger than Luo Xu, he hadn’t changed.

Seeing that Luo Xu was safe and sound, Zhang Ruochen was finally relieved.

He could sense that Luo Xu was shrouded in a mysterious aura that even he could not see through.

Although he did not know where Luo Xu had gone after he was seriously injured by Great Prince Mara, Zhang Ruochen guessed that he must have gotten an extraordinary opportunity and become more unpredictable.

Luo Xu turned around and looked at Zhang Ruochen. “Thank you.”

“Senior Chu has done me a favor. How could I just sit back and do nothing to return the favor?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Luo Xu sighed. “Chu Siyuan was too stubborn. For the integrity of the Path of Confucianism, he protected the Saint Ancient Tea Tree with his life. Unfortunately, I was not strong enough to save him. I could only watch as Great Prince Mara cut off his flesh and blood and dyed the Saint Ancient Tea Tree red with his Saint Blood.”

Even though a long time had passed, the bloody scene still lingered in Luo Xu’s mind. It was like it had happened yesterday.

“Principal Luo, don’t blame yourself. Senior Chu sacrificed his life for us. His deed will be remembered forever. What we need to do is fulfill his wish and take the Saint Ancient Tea Tree back from the Rakshasa,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Luo Xu nodded. “The Saint Ancient Tea Tree is of great significance to the Path of Confucianism. If we can take it back, the entire Path of Confucianism will owe you a huge favor.”

To be honest, Luo Xu admired Zhang Ruochen. Before this, he didn’t dare to think about taking back the Saint Ancient Tea Tree.

After all, the Saint Ancient Tea Tree was not something common. Since it had fallen into the hands of the Rakshasa’s gods, it was almost impossible for them to return it.

However, Zhang Ruochen had captured the respected Rakshasa Princess. The Rakshasa had no choice but to compromise.

Zhang Ruochen did not care about the favor of the Path of Confucianism. He only acted according to his heart without any guilty conscience.

Since he had already met with Luo Xu, Zhang Ruochen did not delay any further. He directly asked Luo Xu to send a message to the Rakshasa to exchange the Saint Ancient Tea Tree as soon as possible.

It didn’t take long for both sides to reach an agreement. The decision made was to hand over the person and the Saint Ancient Tea Tree at Mount Purple Cloud near the Eastern Region Holy City three days later.

To make sure nothing went wrong, Zhang Ruochen summoned Blackie over from Royal Mountain.

Zhang Ruochen was very powerful. He wasn't afraid of anyone below the Supreme Saint realm. But this time, he was facing the Rakshasa, not just one person.

Although the Ten Clans of Infernal Court were divided into the Supreme Clan, the Upper Three Clans, the Mid Three Clans, and the Lower Three Clans. However, the higher the clan, the fewer the clan members.

The lower the clan, the more the clan members.

Therefore, the overall strength of each clan was roughly the same. At the very least, the strength of those below the divinity could be said to not be absolutely superior, nor was it absolutely weak.

Since the Nether Clan had so many powerful cultivators, the Rakshasa was certainly not weak.

If not, how could the Infernal Court fight against the Celestial Court and the rest of the world at the same time?

When it came to Princess Rakshasa and the Saint Ancient Tea Tree, the Rakshasa must have attached great importance to it. Who knew how many powerhouses they would send?

Zhang Ruochen and Luo Xu were preparing to exchange the Saint Ancient Tea Tree. Meanwhile, the news of Zhang Ruochen's ban spread like wildfire across the entire Eastern Region Holy City, causing a huge uproar.

The foreign cultivators were naturally unwilling to comply with the ban, so conflict was inevitable.

However, after the Azure Dragon attacked and suppressed more than a dozen top-notch Nine-Step Saint Kings, all the cultivators quieted down. They didn't dare to rashly challenge Zhang Ruochen's authority.

As a result, the number of cultivators entering the Eastern Region Holy City every day was greatly reduced. After all, many people cared about their reputation and weren't willing to pay the entrance fee of 10,000 Saint Stones.

As for the foreign cultivators who were in Eastern Region Holy City, they didn't leave the city easily. They didn't want to be blocked outside the city when they came again.

The cultivators were displeased that the Azure Dragon guarding the eight ferries. It also entered Eastern Region Holy City to seek opportunities and took two 100,000-year-old ancient sacred medicines.

In addition, the powerful cultivators from the Infernal Court who intruded Eastern Region Holy City chose to stay hidden and didn't dare to reveal themselves.

With the presence of Zhang Ruochen, the Scion of Time and Space, if they left their trails behind, they would not be able to hide anymore.

Outside the Saint Court, a tall and graceful figure slowly walked out of the dark. She wore tight black clothes, revealing her well-proportioned figure.

She was none other than Han Qiu, who possessed the body of Darkness.

At this moment, there was a slight fluctuation in space. Zhang Ruochen appeared in front of Han Qiu out of thin air.

"Your Highness, you finally summoned me. I thought you had forgotten about me!" Han Qiu's eyes were full of resentment.

Zhang Ruochen said seriously, "I summoned you because I have something important to ask you to do."

"Who do you want to kill, Your Highness?" Han Qiu asked.

She was now a contract killer of the Fane of Death. She had been carrying out all kinds of assassination missions. As a result, she had devoured the essence and the Precepts of many powerhouses. Her cultivation had improved very quickly.

The Path of Darkness was best at devouring and plundering. It could transfer the Precepts of others into its own. The speed of cultivation was beyond imagination.

Zhang Ruochen said, "This time, I'm not going to kill anyone. I want you to take charge of the Eastern Region Holy City and gather the cultivators who wish to join me. I believe it won't be difficult for you."

Ever since Zhang Ruochen came to Eastern Region Holy City, there had been cultivators of Kunlun Realm who had sought out the Azure Dragon to join him.

This was not surprising, as Kunlun Realm was in turmoil now. Many people were living precarious lives. Naturally, they would want to find a strong backer.

Zhang Ruochen had realized that he could not fight against the Infernal Court alone. He had to gather all kinds of power.

Since many wanted to rely on him, Zhang Ruochen had the idea of cultivating many strong cultivators. Since he had obtained a lot of cultivation resources on True Dragon Island, he could make use of them.

However, he clearly did not have time to care about these things. That was why he had called Han Qiu back.

Han Qiu had strength, means, and ambition. She was the best candidate.

Hearing this, Han Qiu's heart skipped a beat. "Your Highness, are you planning to cultivate a force in the Eastern Region Holy City? Hehe, interesting. Leave this to me."

Obviously, Han Qiu was very interested in doing this.

This was a great opportunity for her. Perhaps it would help her reach her goal of becoming a member of the Shengming royalty sooner.

Zhang Ruochen flipped his hand and took out a Ring of Dimensions. "The cultivation resources in this are very precious. You can decide on how to use them."

Han Qiu immediately took it. She was about to say that building a force would consume a lot of resources, but Zhang Ruochen had already prepared it.

Then, Zhang Ruochen took out an object. It was a black Saint Bell the size of a fist. The divine ancient artifact containing the divine force of Darkness that he had taken from Son of Darkness.

Han Qiu's eyes lit up when she saw the black Saint Bell. The Power of Darkness in her body was released involuntarily.

"Your Highness, this…" Han Qiu looked at Zhang Ruochen eagerly.

Zhang Ruochen said, “This object comes from the Fane of Darkness. If you can refine it, I will bestow it to you.”

Han Qiu was overjoyed. She immediately mobilized the Precept of Darkness in her body and wrapped it around the black Saint Bell with the Power of Darkness.

Although Han Qiu had a body of Darkness, she couldn’t enter the Fane of Darkness, so she could only rely on herself to explore the Path of Darkness. It was extremely difficult for her to achieve great achievements.

Now that a divine ancient artifact containing the Path of Darkness had appeared, it undoubtedly gave Han Qiu a glimmer of hope. No matter what, she had to seize this opportunity.

It might contain the knowledge left behind by the God of Darkness.

Buzz
The black Saint Bell vibrated slightly. The inscriptions of Darkness emerged clearly and flew toward Han Qiu.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but nod. As he had expected, Han Qiu was indeed recognized by the black Saint Bell as Master of Darkness.

There was no doubt that the genius of the Fane of Darkness who created the black Saint Bell was also a Master of Darkness, instead of a cultivator of Darkness.

It didn’t take long for the black Saint Bell to enter Han Qiu’s glabella. It had already completed the preliminary refinement.

“Thank You, Your Highness.” Han Qiu thanked him sincerely.

With a powerful divine ancient artifact, her strength would skyrocket, and she would be able to use the Path of Darkness more easily.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I mentioned before, as long as you work well for me, you will get everything you want.”

After saying this, Zhang Ruochen used the Great Dimensional Shift and disappeared from the spot.

“Including becoming the Crown Princess? Or become Empress of Shengming? Tsk, he left so quickly.”

Han Qiu's lips curled up slightly, and joy appeared in her eyes. She believed that in the end, the woman accompanying Zhang Ruochen would be her.

Three days passed quickly.

Zhang Ruochen and Luo Xu quietly left Eastern Region Holy City. They didn't alarm anyone and went straight to Mount Purple Cloud.

Purple clouds shrouded Mount Purple Cloud all year-round, so that's how it got its name. It occupied a radius of thousands of miles, and many savage beasts were living there.

"Zhang Ruochen, you're finally here!"

With a cold voice, a very tall figure slowly walked out of the thick clouds.

He was over ten meters tall and had the standard form of a Rakshasa. What was different from an ordinary Rakshasa was that the bone wings on his back were bright red as if they had been dyed red by blood.

Streams of blood-red air swirled around this Rakshasa, causing the surrounding space to distort slightly.

"Great Prince Bloodwing has arrived." Luo Xu's eyes narrowed slightly.

Great Prince Bloodwing was born with a pair of special blood-colored bone wings. The wings were extremely hard, had an astonishing sharpness, and could cut through saint weapons and kill countless creatures.

Among the Rakshasa, Great Prince Bloodwing was below the Supreme Saint. He was one of the most powerful cultivators, even stronger than Great Prince Mara.

In terms of ferocity, Great Prince Bloodwing was no weaker than Yan Wushen. He had slaughtered many in the Battlefield of Merits.

Zhang Ruochen was also observing Great Prince Bloodwing. He could feel the monstrous murderous aura emanating from his body. He could not help but feel a strong sense of disgust.

Great Prince Bloodwing stared at Zhang Ruochen. He did not hide his killing intent at all. He said, "Hand over the Princess."

“As long as I see the Saint Ancient Tea Tree, I will naturally let her go,” Zhang Ruochen said lightly.

Great Prince Bloodwing’s eyes grew colder. The Rakshasa had never been threatened like this before.

But he didn’t flare up because he had been ordered to bring Luo Sha back to the Infernal Court safely.

After staring at Zhang Ruochen for a moment, Great Prince Bloodwing took out a bright yellow holy box.

The holy box was a spatial treasure. It opened slowly, and a 30,000-meter-tall tea tree flew out of the box as if it had intelligence and spirituality.

As soon as the Saint Ancient Tea Tree landed on the ground of Kunlun Realm, its roots drilled into the soil like a horned dragon.

It was unwilling to leave after returning to its homeland.

All the tea leaves on the tree had been plucked. It was bare, but it still exuded a strong aura of life and great spirit as if they were the incarnations of a saint scholar of Confucianism.

This was the Saint Ancient Tea Tree that the ancestor of Confucianism had personally planted. It had grown for millions of years and had always maintained a vigorous vitality.

Mysterious characters grew naturally on the tree trunks and branches as if they were records of the greatest path and precept in the universe.

In the eyes of the gods, the Saint Ancient Tea Tree was priceless. The mysteries it had nurtured over millions of years could help them comprehend the Supreme Divine Precepts.

Great Prince Bloodwing said, “The Saint Ancient Tea Tree is here. Release the Princess.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t say anything. He flipped his hand and took out an Exquisite Dimensional Orb. He then released Luo Sha who was trapped inside.

Luo Sha didn’t seem to have any restraints, but all of her power, including her spiritual power, had been completely sealed. She was no different from an ordinary person.

Seeing Great Prince Bloodwing, Luo Sha couldn't help but look resentful.

Luo Sha had always been proud and could plan everything well. She did not expect it to fall into Zhang Ruochen's hands this time. She was naturally unhappy that the clan had to send a superior to exchange treasures.

Great Prince Bloodwing saw Luo Sha's incomparably beautiful and noble figure, and his eyes showed hospitality. He urged, "Exchange immediately. I don't want to waste time with you here."

Zhang Ruochen didn't respond. Instead, he turned to look at Luo Xu.

Luo Xu immediately understood. He took out a long wooden box, took out a scroll from it, and slowly opened it.

The Light Myriad Scroll was extremely long. With Luo Xu's current cultivation, he could only open it 10 meters.

In fact, even a top-notch Supreme Saint couldn't fully open the entire Light Myriad Scroll.

Even though it was only ten meters opened, the painting still emanates a shocking ancient aura. It felt as if they had returned to the uncivilized ancient times.

Like the Portrait of Seven Lives and Seven Deaths, the Light Myriad Scroll was one of the great treasures of the Art Sect. It could completely detect whether there was a problem with the Saint Ancient Tea Tree.

The painting was activated with Saint Qi, specks of light flew out and turned into thousands of lanterns as if they wanted to dispel all the darkness.

Seeing Luo Xu's actions, Great Prince Bloodwing could not help but frown slightly, but he did not stop him.

Whoosh.
The branches of the Saint Ancient Tea Tree resonated with the Light Myriad Scroll. It swayed and sprinkling down a sparkling saint light.

Seeing this, Luo Xu revealed a faint smile, and he secretly heaved a sigh of relief.

Luo Xu was worried stiff that the Rakshasa had tampered with the Saint Ancient Tea Tree. No matter what, he didn't want anything to go wrong with the last Saint Ancient Tea Tree.

Chapter 2144: Who Would Enter Hell if I Do Not Do So?
Seeing that Luo Xu had finished his investigation, Great Prince Bloodwing urged Zhang Ruochen in a low voice, "Zhang Ruochen, stop stalling. Release Her Highness immediately!"

"As you wish," Zhang Ruochen said flatly and walked forward with Luo Sha.

Seeing this, Luo Xu did not hesitate and immediately followed him. The Light Myriad Scroll was hovering above his head. He was ready to launch an attack at any time.

Great Prince Bloodwing's eyes were fixed on Luo Sha. He wanted nothing more than to take Luo Sha back by any means.

Zhang Ruochen stopped when he was 30 meters away from Great Prince Bloodwing. Saint Ancient Tea Tree was within reach.

However, Zhang Ruochen could sense that the bright yellow Holy Box in Great Prince Bloodwing's hand had a binding force on Saint Ancient Tea Tree. It was not that it could take away Saint Ancient Tea Tree so easily.

Their eyes met and understood each other's thoughts.

Zhang Ruochen lifted the binding on Luo Sha and gently pushed her out, while Great Prince Bloodwing slowly closed the Holy Box.

For a moment, the atmosphere at the scene turned very serious.

Finally, Luo Sha was near Great Prince Bloodwing. The binding of the Holy Box on Saint Ancient Tea Tree completely disappeared.

Swoosh
Zhang Ruochen and Great Prince Bloodwing made their moves simultaneously. One enveloped Saint Ancient Tea Tree with power, while the other wrapped Luo Sha with power.

A giant Dimensional Vortex appeared. It released a powerful suction force and sucked Saint Ancient Tea Tree in.

After that, Saint Ancient Tea Tree appeared in the Microworld of the jungle. It quickly moved all its roots and penetrated them into the fertile land.

“Zhang Ruochen, no one dares to threaten the Rakshasa. You must die today.”

At this moment, Great Prince Bloodwing shouted coldly and ordered the Rakshasa cultivators hiding nearby, “Attack!”

Whoosh
All the clouds enveloping Mount Purple Cloud dissipated instantly. Countless air currents in dark red appeared and gathered. They covered more than half the sky and turned into a ferocious claw charging at Zhang Ruochen.

The ferocious claw gave off an extremely menacing aura. Its attack power was on par with that of a terrifying Supreme-Saint level beast, which was not something a Saint King could hold candle to.

Nevertheless, Zhang Ruochen remained calm. He was not panic the slightest. Behind him, a shocking wave of power emerged.

A Ninth Stratum Array appeared. It gathered endless power and released a streak of bright Saint Light. It was like a divine sun in the sky, so dazzling that no one could open their eyes.

Boom
The Saint Light collided with the ferocious claw, triggering a burst of incredible impact.

The destructive power spread crazily in all directions. Everything was destroyed wherever it passed.

Even a peak ninth-step Nine-Step Saint King could not withstand the impact.

Due to the impact, the vast and continuous mountain chain—Mount Purple Cloud—collapsed, one mountain after another. Enormous dust rose, covering the sky and sun like thick smoke. Eventually, the entire area was covered in darkness.

Light Myriad Scroll floated above Zhang Ruochen and Luo Xu. It turned into a large and majestic map, protecting them from any impact.

On the other side, other than Great Prince Bloodwing and Luo Sha, many Rakshasa elites appeared.

There were a total of 81 Rakshasa elites. Their strength was all above that of Nine-Step Saint Kings. It was them who had formed a formation and launched that powerful attack.

Zhang Ruochen was not surprised at all. With his current reputation, he had never believed that the Rakshasas would let Great Prince Bloodwing come to trade alone.

81 Nine-Step Saint King, and among them, there were quite a few top elites. For them to deploy such a powerful troop, obviously, they wanted Zhang Ruochen dead.

Blackie revealed itself and chuckled. “Zhang Ruochen, how about I set up an Extermination Array? It will be a piece of cake to wipe out these Rakshasas.”

Upon hearing Blackie’s smug words, Great Prince Bloodwing’s face darkened.

Great Prince Bloodwing thought that he had made enough preparation this time. He assumed that even if Zhang Ruochen had taken precautions, he would still get the upper hand. However, never had he expected this outcome.

From the collision just now, Great Prince Bloodwing knew there was no way they could gain the upper hand with the presence of Blackie—a High-Saint Array Master.

Fortunately, he had successfully rescued Luo Sha and completed the mission the deity of their clan had assigned.

“Zhang Ruochen, I’ll leave Saint Ancient Tea Tree with you for the time being. It won’t be long before it falls into the hands of Rakshasa,” Great Prince Bloodwing said coldly.

As soon as Great Prince Bloodwing finished his words, he prepared to retreat along with his men. He did not want to drag on when facing Zhang Ruochen.

After all, this place was close to Eastern Region Holy City. If some powerful elites from the enemy were drawn here, the situation would be unfavorable for the Rakshasas.

“You can’t get away that easy.”

Zhang Ruochen's glabella lit up. Ancient Abyssal Blade flew out from it to his hand.

Zhang Ruochen instantly activated a million Precepts of Swordsmanship. Ancient Abyssal Blade drew strange trajectories and activated the Precepts and Saint Qi of heaven and earth within a radius of 10,000 miles. As a result, an unparalleled mysterious Swordwill was released.

The next second, the Swordwill cut off a large dimension where Great Prince Bloodwing was. As a result, the dimension was isolated from the outside world. It was as though it belonged to another Time and Space.

It was the sixth realm of Sword Ten developed by merging Path of Dimension with swordsmanship. It was an extended version of Realm of Swords.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen attack, the 81 Rakshasa elites immediately activated the battle formation. They condensed enormous evil Qi into a dark red demonic mountain in the sky. The mountain then moved down.

"You scoundrels of Rakshasa, I am your opponent. Let me show you what a real Ninth Stratum Array is!" Blackie roared.

Blackie activated the Ninth Stratum Array. It condensed dozens of dragon-shaped squalls, each of which was more than 100 miles in diameter and came with a terrifying force that could crush everything.

The Ninth Stratum Array Blackie had originally cultivated only thirty-six formation flags, but now it had doubled to seventy-two. The formation's power naturally became even stronger, and it also had many changes.

Boom
The dozens of dragon-shaped squalls were unstoppable. It was as if an actual dragon was going to descend. All of them crashed into the dark red demonic mountain.

A grave expression appeared in Great Prince Bloodwing's eyes. While he was protecting Luo Sha, he took out a dark red battle spear and fused it with his potent evil energy.

Hundreds of thousands of Supreme Inscriptions emerged from the dark red spear and released powerful Supreme Power.

Zappp–

Great Prince Bloodwing shook the dark red spear and charged quickly as lightning.

An unimaginable blood-red sharp light burst out. It was invincible, wanting to pierce through the sword world created by Zhang Ruochen.

“Six Directions: Slay.”

Zhang Ruochen’s indifferent voice came.

In an instant, six silver sword lights appeared in six directions: zenith, nadir, east, south, west, and north. They were charging at Great Prince Bloodwing at the same time, sealing off all his escape routes.

Great Prince Bloodwing’s eyes narrowed. At this moment, he truly felt a great threat. He quickly switched from offense to defense mode, trying his best to block the six swordlights.

Boom

The space within a hundred miles was completely shattered. Countless sharp sword Qi flooded over Great Prince Bloodwing.

Roar

Great Prince Bloodwing let out an earth-shattering roar. He unleashed his power without holding back.

After spending a lot of energy, Great Prince Bloodwing finally broke free from the shattered space. He was covered in blood and looked extremely pathetic.

“How can Zhang Ruochen be so powerful?”

Great Prince Bloodwing’s heart sank.

Of course, he knew that Zhang Ruochen had defeated Yan Wushen in Luoshui not long ago, but he did not expect that Zhang Ruochen would be this powerful.

After all, he was one of the top elites below Rakshasa Supreme Sainthood . He was not much weaker than Nether Demon and Nether Buddha. He could not even withstand a single attack from Zhang Ruochen. This undoubtedly made him feel a strong sense of defeat.

Under the protection of Great Prince Bloodwing, Luo Sha did not suffer any harm. At this moment, her eyes were also filled with shock.

She had seen the battle between Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen with her own eyes. She could confirm that at that time, Zhang Ruochen was definitely not as powerful as he was now. His strength had definitely increased greatly.

'The Great Perfection of Swordsmanship is indeed powerful,' Luo Sha thought to herself.

Since ancient times, achieving Great Perfection in one of the 72 Paths of Supreme Saint at Saint Kinghood was something that very few cultivators had been able to do.

Great Prince Bloodwing did not hesitate at all. He immediately brought Luo Sha into the battle formation formed by the 81 Rakshasa.

Swoosh–
The battle formation turned into a streak of dark red light and sped away.

Zhang Ruochen did not chase after them. The Rakshasa clan was well-prepared. Therefore, it was unlikely to be able to keep them here. There was no need to waste efforts.

'I've just comprehended the sixth realm of Sword Ten. It's not considered perfect yet. Otherwise, it would be even more difficult for Great Prince Bloodwing to break free,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

It was not easy to create the unprecedented sixth realm of Sword Ten on his own. It was impossible to achieve it in one go. He still needed to develop more insights to combine the Path of Dimension and Path of Swordsmanship perfectly.

Overall, Zhang Ruochen was quite satisfied with the effect of the new sword strike he had tested on Great Prince Bloodwing.

After all, it could severely injure a top elite like Great Prince Bloodwing with just one strike. It was an outcome that one could not simply achieve.

"Let's go."

Zhang Ruochen did not stay in the same place for long. He used the Dimensional Shift and rushed to the Eastern Region Holy City with Luo Xu and Blackie.

Not long after they left, a few figures appeared at the edge of Mount Purple Cloud.

Looking at the shattered mountains, these mysterious elites were in shock. Their eyes widened.

“Zhang Ruochen is too strong. He could seriously injure Great Prince Bloodwing with one sword strike. Who can be his opponent?”

“It seems that Zhang Ruochen is truly invincible below the Supreme Sainthood and has completely replaced Yan Wusheng. As long as he’s in Eastern Region Holy City, we’d better keep a low profile and not provoke him.”

“His invincible strength and unscrupulous methods of doing things are really terrifying.”

..

News about what had happened at Mount Purple Cloud traveled at high speed. Everyone was shocked and became more fearful of Zhang Ruochen.

For a time, all the foreign cultivators entrenched in Eastern Region Holy City stayed low. The spies of Infernal Court also disappeared, afraid of being targeted by Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen, on the other hand, appeared calm as if nothing had happened, returning to Saint School.

With a flip of his hand, Zhang Ruochen took out an Exquisite Dimensional Orb and handed it to Luo Xu. “I’ve planted Saint Ancient Tea Tree inside it. Please deliver it to Divine Scripture Maiden.”

Luo Xu quickly reached out and took the Exquisite Dimensional Orb. His eyes were filled with mixed emotions. He was both happy and sad.

Saint Ancient Tea Tree had been recovered, but they had lost Chu Siyuan forever.

“Okay, I’ll leave immediately.”

Luo Xu quickly collected his thoughts and said.

Taking back Saint Ancient Tea Tree was a huge matter for the entire Confucianism sect. They still needed to discuss how to settle it.

After seeing Luo Xu off, Zhang Ruochen returned to the hall building at the end of Stairway to Heaven because Lei Jing was still waiting for him there.

The hall was an excellent place for practicing self-cultivation. The Precepts of Heaven and Earth were very active, and the Saint Qi was very rich.

For Lei Jing, who had just reached Sainthood, practicing self-cultivation at the hall for some time would be very beneficial.

“Have you settled things with Principal Luo?” Lei Jing asked.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Yes, there’s nothing else now. We can have a few drinks.”

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen took out many jars of wine from the Microworld of the jungle.

Xuankong was a good wine collector. He had collected plenty of jars of wine in the Microworld of the jungle. Now, he could treat Lei Jing with them.

While drinking, Zhang Ruochen and Lei Jing talked about their recent encounter.

Since his return to Kunlun, although it hadn’t been long, a lot of events had happened, putting him in the middle of the storm.

Although Lei Jing had heard of those incidents before, he was still shocked to hear it from Zhang Ruochen in person. He could not help but feel sorry for Zhang Ruochen.

Lei Jing felt that it was unfortunate that he was too weak. Sainthood could be the furthest cultivation realm he could reach in this lifetime, so there was nothing he could do to support Zhang Ruochen.

After drinking a few jars of wine, Lei Jing felt a little drunk. He sighed and said, “Time flies. In four days, it’s the death anniversary of Qianshui Commandery royal family again. You and Yanchen… sigh.”

Lei Jing did not want to comment much about things between Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen. He just felt very regretful.

Lei Jing's words struck Zhang Ruochen. Because of him, the immortal vampires had attacked Huang Yanchen's relatives. Other than Huang Yanchen's parents, almost everyone else had died. This made him feel very guilty.

After that, Huang Yanchen's parents had died at the hands of a powerful elite of Ghost clan. All Zhang Ruochen could do was ask Le to kill that Ghost Lord.

Zhang Ruochen had thought that Huang Yanchen was dead, so he put the past behind him.

Nevertheless, never had he expected to see her again at Xianji Mountain in North region. At that time, Huang Yanchen had appeared in new identity—candidate of Scioness to the Fane of Destiny.

Zhang Ruochen had tons of questions in his mind, but he did not know who to ask.

"Master, I vaguely remember that you mentioned her last time. Could you tell me more about it?" Zhang Ruochen asked in a serious expression.

Last time, when Lei Jing mentioned Huang Yanchen, the master and disciple duo was too wasted after drinking. Zhang Ruochen could only recall some fragmented memories after he had sobered up.

Lei Jing said, "It's nothing. Before Huang Yanchen disappeared, she had returned to Qianshui Commandery, visited Yunwu Commandery, and even gone to West Campus. At that time, it seemed that she was having moments in reminiscing and longing for the past.

"I met her once and saw her crying in silence. She muttered that she was going to enter Death's Door to change destiny.

"She also said… Once she did so, it meant she would live a second lifetime. She had to leave her past behind, cut ties with people and things, and forget the joys as well as sorrows she had experienced in the mortal world.

"I heard she say, 'Who would enter hell if I don't do so?' But her words don't make sense to me. Since then, I never saw her again."

'Who would enter hell if I don't do so?'

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen frowned deeply. Within his heart, a relentless turbulent stirred. He muttered to himself, “Death’s Door. Is it the one above Ever-white Planet?”

Chapter 2145: The Good and Evil Yan Wushens

Outside a city in Qianshui Commandery, there was a huge ancient mountain called Mount Cyromist. Like Yunwu Commandery’s Royal Mountain, it had been a burial site for the royal family of Qianshui Commandery.

However, unlike Royal Mountain, Mount Cyromist was very plain and had nothing unusual. Ever since the royal family of Qianshui Commandery was massacred, the place had become desolate. It was rare to have visitors.

Suddenly, slight ripples emerged in the quiet space of Mount Cyromist. The next moment, Zhang Ruochen appeared out of thin air.

Zhang Ruochen had learned from Lei Jing about things that Huang Yanchen had said before she disappeared. Initially, he had wanted to go to Death’s Door on Ever-white Planet to investigate the matter immediately, thinking that he would not be refused entry again with his current cultivation base.

However, in the end, he chose to visit Mount Cyromist first to pay tribute to those who had died because of him.

In the past, Lei Jing had been helping him with this matter. Now that he was in Eastern Region, he should not let others do so in his stead.

In front of Zhang Ruochen, there were a large number of new graves. There were hundreds of them. They had only been there for a few years.

Standing in front of these graves, Zhang Ruochen could not help but felt strong emotion. To be precise, it was guilt. In the past, the Immortal Vampires had really gone all out to harm him.

He hated that he was too weak to protect these innocent people.

Splash!
Zhang Ruochen flipped his hand and took out a jar of wine. He tore off the wine seal and poured it in front of the graves.

After stopping for a long time, Zhang Ruochen suddenly said, “Come out. I know you’re nearby. It’s meaningless to hide in front of me.”

Tap, tap-
Light footsteps sounded, stepping on the fallen leaves.

A graceful figure slowly emerged from afar. Her tight black dress accentuated her exquisite and perfect figure. Her legs were slender, and she exuded an indescribable demeanor. She looked elegant, and her beauty was otherworldly. People would want to worship her like a goddess.

The beauty who appeared was none other than Pan Ruo, one of the three Scioness candidates for Fane of Destiny in Infernal Court.

If a cultivator of Infernal Court saw her here, they would be greatly surprised and think why the high and noble Pan Ruo was here and feel that she was audacious to dare to face the famous Zhang Ruochen alone.

Zhang Ruochen turned around and looked at Pan Ruo.

Even though he was mentally prepared, his emotions were plunged into turmoil when he saw Pan Ruo.

The main reason why Zhang Ruochen came to Mount Cyromist to pay his respects was that he thought there could be a chance to run into her. He wanted to meet her because he had too many questions that needed answers.

Zhang Ruochen had already put down many things, so he did not mind meeting her.

“Should I call you Pan Ruo or Huang Yanchen?” Zhang Ruochen regained his composure quickly and asked calmly.

Pan Ruo approached him and said, “Huang Yanchen no longer exists. There is only Pan Ruo now.” Her tone was indifferent.

Her words struck Zhang Ruochen. When he thought of what Lei Jing had told him, he was curious. ‘What did she go through?’

“Are you okay?” Zhang Ruochen suddenly asked.

Pan Ruo stared at the graves. “Not good,” replied the beauty.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes flashed with light. “Then come back, since you are not happy. Let the past go with the wind.”

“Come back? To where? I’m the Scioness candidate of Fane of Destiny in Infernal Court. I enjoy a much higher status now, and you expect me to return?” her voice was cold.

Yet, there was a hint of self-mockery in her tone.

Zhang Ruochen exhaled and stared at her. “Did you end up this way because of Death’s Door in the skies of Ever-white Planet? What do you want to do in Infernal Court? Did Chi Yao order you to do so?”

Zhang Ruochen had some speculations. He believed that Huang Yanchen, who joined Infernal Court with a completely different appearance, must have a big secret.

Huang Yanchen was not the first Kunlun cultivator who entered the realm of Infernal Court. To his knowledge, there were Empress of Thousand Bones and elder Xuanji.

Neither Empress of Thousand Bones nor elder Xuanji came back once they entered the netherworld of Infernal Court. No one knew what they were doing?

“I can’t answer these questions, and I have no reason to answer you.” Pan Ruo continued after a short pause, “Instead of caring about me, why don’t you worry about yourself first? How about I ask you a question?”

“Go ahead!”

Zhang Ruochen’s locked his gaze at Pan Ruo’s, wanting to see through her and find out what she was thinking deep down inside her mind.

“As far as I know, Yan Wushen has abducted Chi Kunlun. You should know who is Chi Kunlun, right? I’m curious, how can you act as if it doesn’t bother you a bit?” Pan Ruo asked.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed slightly. “How did Chi Kunlun end up in Yan Wushen’s hands?”

He remembered clearly that he had seen Chi Kunlun in a special place within the second level of Endless Abyss—Blood Empress’s territory. No matter how strong Yan Wushen was, there was no way he would never go there and abduct Chi Kunlun.

Pan Ruo said, “It’s pointless to ask me. You have to ask Yan Wushen.”

Zhang Ruochen thought carefully, and his heart sank.

‘Will she lie to me again?’

A thought flashed through Zhang Ruochen’s mind. Perhaps this was a trap set by Pan Ruo, Yan Wushen, and even some prominent elites of Infernal Court.

He thought Chi Kunlun being caught could be a lie, a bait to lure him into a trap.

‘Should I trust Blood Empress or her? Can I still trust her? Sigh! I’ve already said that I’ve completely let it go. Why can’t I let it go?”

Zhang Ruochen let out a long sigh. Somehow, a strange feeling cropped up in his heart, and he made up his mind. It was an irrational decision—he chose to trust his ex-wife again, even if it was a trap.

If she deceived him again, this meant the complete end to their relationship.

If that happened, they would be enemies when they met again.

If what Pan Ruo said was true, at least it showed that she did not join Infernal Court for real and something else going on.

Zhang Ruochen had not really come into contact with Chi Kunlun in the second level of Endless Abyss, so Pan Ruo’s words might be true.

However, Zhang Ruochen did not understand why Blood Empress would trick him with a fake Chi Kunlun. Was it just to lure him into Endless Abyss?

There was no doubt that Yan Wushen must have known Chi Kunlun’s identity—the son of Zhang Ruochen and Empress Chi Yao. Hence, this was not good news and could be a terrible one.

Pan Ruo could see that Zhang Ruochen did not completely buy her words, but she did not mind about that. After all, this was the price she had to pay after lying to him once.

It takes a lot of truth to gain trust, but just one lie to lose it all.

Despite feeling sad and bitter, she did not show it on her face. “Yan Wushen has taken a fancy to Chi Kunlun’s physique—True God’s Body—

and his cultivation status as a Master of Dimension. He wants to take him as a disciple," said the beauty flatly.

"Yan Wushen is temperamental. How dan Chi Kunlun be safe with him?" Zhang Ruochen's brows were tightly knitted.

If he had known that Chi Kunlun was in Yan Wushen's hands, he would not have let Yan Wushen leave so easily.

Pan Ruo asked, "How much do you know about Yan Wushen?"

Zhang Ruochen knew that Pan Ruo seemed to have some intel to share, so he asked, "I've only fought him once. I don't know much about him."

"The Yan Wushen you fought with was not the real Yan Wushen. It was just a part of him," said Pan Ruo in a serious look.

Zhang Ruochen found it hard to understand. "What do you mean?"

"There are actually two Yan Wushens. Or rather, Yan Wushen was splitted into two entities, each with individual personality—one good and one evil. The entity you defeated is the evil Yan Wushen. The other who abducted Chi Kunlun is the good one."

Zhang Ruochen's state of mind had matured and toughened over the years. Yet, her explanation managed to stir up great waves within him.

If he had not made up his mind to believe her again, he would have thought she was making up a story.

"How can there be two Yan Wushens?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Pan Ruo pondered for a moment. "There are two sides in every living being: good and evil sides. Even the bodhisattvas and Buddhas in Buddhism are no exception. That is why there is a saying 'it takes just a thought to become a Buddha or a demon'. There is no absolute good or evil in the world; it depends on the weight of the side that tipped the balance."

"In Buddhism, the saying 'Put down the butcher's knife and become a Buddha' actually means that the good side overrides the evil side."

"In the past, during the ancient times, there was a Saint-level Buddha in Buddhism sect. He had developed a special cultivation method where he infinitely magnified his own good and evil sides. As a result, he was kind

the daytime but evil in the night. By constantly switching between good and evil personalities, he could explore the deepest depth of human nature, with the aim to attain an eternal Buddha Nature."

"Such practice is too dangerous. Even a Saint-level monk with profound Buddhist skills could fall into demonic path forever. That is why it has been deemed a taboo in Buddhism sect. No one knows about it anymore."

Zhang Ruochen listened quietly, but his mind was turbulent. Never had he heard of such a strange cultivation method in the world.

It was easy to lead a demonic path, but it was extremely difficult to become a Buddha. No matter how strong one's will was, they might not be able to hold back the temptation.

"Did Yan Wushen practice this ancient forbidden method of Buddhism sect?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Pan Ruo slightly shook her head and replied, "Yan Wushen went beyond. He has taken a step further on this foundation. He has completely separated his good and evil sides, becoming two separate entities—one good and one evil, just like Yin and Yang.

"However, there is no purity in human nature. Even if Yan Wushen's good side is separated from his evil counterpart, that doesn't mean the good side was definitely a kind person. Just like Tai Chi, there is Yang in Yin and Yin in Yang.

"In such state, both Yan Wushens—good and evil—can have no scruples in their actions. In addition, both entities can develop insights that ordinary cultivators can't achieve. When both entities merge, his cultivation attainment will reach the pinnacle and surpass that of legendary figures."

'Just an entity of good or evil alone is this invincible when he supresses his cultivation base to level below Supreme Sainthood. If both good and evil entities combined, how powerful will Yan Wushen become?'

Even though Zhang Ruochen's cultivation had improved greatly, he felt pressured upon hearing this news.

Obviously, he had to become stronger if he wanted to defeat Yan Wushen for real.

In fact, Zhang Ruochen admired Yan Wushen's bravery. He dared to embark on such a dangerous path of cultivation. Ordinary people would not even dare to think about it.

"Now, both good and evil entities of Yan Wushen are present in Kunlun. This is an unprecedented event. Perhaps he will take the most crucial step—merging two entities into one—in Kunlun," Pan Ruo continued.

Only a few people in the entire Infernal Court held such intel about Yan Wushen. Pan Ruo had access to such confidential info because she was favored by the prominent figure of Fane of Destiny.

When Pan Ruo was talking to Zhang Ruochen, the vessel spirit of Emperor Ming's Hundred Dragon Cuirass—Gold Dragon—hid behind a rock not far away. With its extraordinary concealment technique, it managed to hide its presence from Zhang Ruochen completely.

Gold Dragon really wanted to eavesdrop on Pan Ruo and Zhang Ruochen's conversation. Unfortunately, it failed to do so due to some tricks used by Pan Ruo.

Gold Dragon could do nothing about it. It could only chew the jerky of a Saint-King beast.

After leaving the Darkmourn Mountains, Gold Dragon had killed many Saint-King beasts, so its food reserves had increased greatly.

The only thing that made it unhappy was that it could not find any Supreme-Saint beasts in Kunlun, so it could only make do with Saint-King beasts.

"That's right. This kid is indeed a descendant of Zhang Clan, and his bloodline is so strong. It seems that Zhang Clan's situation isn't too bad." Gold Dragon kept nodding while staring at Zhang Ruochen.

It then paused and curled its lips. "If this kid can marry thousands of wives like Crownsnatcher did, there is no need to worry about the prosperity of Zhang Clan. I really miss those days!"

As the vessel spirit of a Supreme Artifact owned by Zhang Clan, Gold Dragon was very familiar with the Zhang Clan's bloodline.

Gold Dragon really wanted to go over and talk to Zhang Ruochen. However, the moment it recalled what Pan Ruo had told it earlier, it had to give up the thought.

Besides, no matter how strong Zhang Ruochen was, he was not qualified to inherit Emperor Ming's Hundred Dragon Cuirass unless he was a Supreme Saint.

After a long silence, Pan Ruo said, "You can leave now. I want to stay here alone for a while."

Zhang Ruochen stared at her for a moment. He had wanted to say many things. Nevertheless, he swallowed the words that were about to come out of his mouth back to his heart.

Keeping his complicated emotions in check, Zhang Ruochen said in a low voice, "I hope we won't meet on the battlefield."

Now that they were on opposite sides, they could only be enemies once they met on the battlefield.

After saying this, Zhang Ruochen used Dimensional Shift and disappeared into thin air.

Pan Ruo was slightly stunned, and a faint smile appeared in her eyes.

But soon, her eyes dimmed again. She sighed and shook her head.

Swoosh–
Gold Dragon appeared beside Pan Ruo and asked, "Who was that kid just now? Did you get Emperor Ming's Hundred Dragon Cuirass from him?"

However, Pan Ruo ignored it and only looked at the hundreds of graves in front of her. She had been in her second lifetime, yet it was not easy to cut ties with the past.

..

In a remote small city in the central region, Yan Wushen and Chi Kunlun sat in a restaurant, drinking wine leisurely. They did not care about what was happening in the outside world.

Ever since the Four Heavenly Kings of the Celestial Palace had left, Yan Wushen could finally be in a carefree state. He no longer had to be on the run.

Suddenly, Yan Wushen's expression changed. He waved his hand and stored Chi Kunlun into a Dimensional artifact. Then, he left the restaurant using Dimensional Shift.

The next moment, Yan Wushen appeared on a hill outside the city.

There was a person opposite him. That person shared the exact same facial features he had but emitting a completely different aura.

It was the reunion of Yan Wushen's good and evil entities.

"The name Yan Wushen no longer represents invincibility," the Evil Yan Wushen said with a solemn voice.

The Good Yan Wushen asked calmly, "Did someone defeat you?"

"Not long ago, I fought Zhang Ruochen and both of us were injured," said Evil Yan Wushen.

Others could not see Zhang Ruochen's true strength, but the Evil Yan Wushen had Divine Eye of Origin. Hence, he could see that Zhang Ruochen had also taken serious damage and did not gain the upper hand.

The Good Yan Wushen smiled faintly. "Zhang Ruochen? This Scion of Space and Time has finally grown up. I'm looking forward to fighting with him. I hope he won't disappoint me. It's too lonely to live without an opponent."

Compared to his evil counterpart, the Good Yan Wushen was actually more powerful. He was the dominant one and held extraordinary artifacts.

Zhang Ruochen had been able to fight with his evil counterpart to the point where both sides were injured. In other words, Zhang Ruochen was worthy of being his opponent.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen was unaware of it.

He returned to Royal Mountain with a heavy heart. He made up his mind to go to Death's Door to verify certain things and solve the doubts he had in his mind.

He had taken the special dimensional teleportation array connecting Ever-white Planet back from Ao Xinyan so that he could leave at any time.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to go alone, but Blackie immediately asked to tag along when it heard him.

Speaking of which, they—he, Huang Yanchen, and Blackie—were the ones who had arrived at Ever-white Planet together. It was a secret shared among the three of them.

Of course, another person on the list was Chi Yao.

Anyone would be very curious and want to explore such a mysterious Death's Door when they saw it.

"Don't worry. I have already made Royal Mountain impregnable. In addition, that elusive old gramps is here, so no one will dare to to foot in Royal Mountain and cause ruckus," Blackie said confidently.

Even so, Zhang Ruochen decided to leave Moyin here because he felt that the old gramps who claimed himself to be the ancestor of Zhang Clan was unreliable.

When everything was set, Zhang Ruochen took out the special dimensional teleportation array and placed it in the valley where the key of the World Gate was.

'Death's Door, let's see what is so mysterious about you?" Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

Whoosh–
The dimensional teleportation array was activated. A white light flashed, enveloped Zhang Ruochen and Blackie, and disappeared along with them in an instant.

Chapter 2146: Empress of Thousand Bones
Ever-white Planet was a huge planet filled with white sand and white rocks. It was situated in a faraway unfamiliar space from Kunlun Realm, next to the vast and demonic milky way of styx.

The dimensional teleportation array which was silent for a long time suddenly burst out with a ray of bright white light. Then, two figures appeared.

After many teleportations, Zhang Ruochen and Blackie finally arrived at Ever-white Planet again.

It was daytime at the moment. As they looked up, they could see a giant light door dazzling like the bright sun.

Zhang Ruochen raised his head and stared at the light door. He was now much stronger than he was before and could see that there was something unusual about this space.

Logically speaking, the light door was so unique that anyone in Kunlun Realm should be able to see the light it emitted.

Countless deities of Celestial and Infernal Courts were aiming at Kunlun Realm since it became the Battlefield of Merits a long time ago. Yet, this place was never discovered. There was something weird about this.

The only explanation was that someone had hidden this space with a powerful technique, so even the deities couldn't sense it.

The person most likely to do this was undoubtedly Saint Monk Xumi.

There must be a shocking secret hidden here for Saint Monk Xumi to spend so much effort in setting up this place. It might be related to the great battle from one-hundred thousand years ago.

With his previous experience, Zhang Ruochen adjusted the dimensional coordinates and activated the array.

Ripples appeared in the space about twenty thousand miles away from the light door.

Zhang Ruochen and Blackie walked out from the center of the ripples. They stood in the void space and looked ahead.

Even though he had seen it once, Zhang Ruochen's heart still stirred violently when he looked at the light door up close. He felt suffocated.

"What a huge door. The stars are like dust in front of it. It's really a miracle." Blackie couldn't help but exclaim.

Blackie's cultivation and strength had once been close to that of a deity. Its methods were very impressive, but it still wasn't able to make such a big move.

The light door erected quietly in the void space. No one knew how long it had existed.

Zhang Ruochen and Blackie both felt the terrifying aura which was emitted from the light door as they were so close to it. It felt as if it wanted to shatter their bodies and saint souls.

‘Its dimensional structure is so complicated:Endless void spaces are stacked on top of each other. This phenomenon was caused by the power of the Death’s Door. Could it be Saint Monk Xumi who refined the Death’s Door?’ Zhang Ruochen muttered.

Saint Monk Xumi’s cultivation was unfathomable. He was good at refining treasures such as the Sacred Qiankun Wooden Picture Scroll and the Chaotic Space-time Lotus. It wasn’t impossible to say that he was the one who refined the Death’s Door.

This was especially so since the dimensional teleportation array here was also set up by Saint Monk Xumi. Everything seemed to match.

“I don’t think so,” Blackie shook his head. “I can feel that the aura emitted by the Death’s Door is extremely ancient. It is comparable to the Light Myriad Scroll. It’s very likely that it was a product of the ancient times. At that time, Saint Monk Xumi was not even born yet.”

“Also, I used the Supreme Saint’s Eye just now and saw some patterns on the Death’s Door. They’re familiar. I think I’ve seen them somewhere before. Let me think about it.”

Blackie held its head on its wings and thought seriously.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t disturb Blackie. He opened the Heaven’s Eye between his brows and observed the Death’s Door carefully. He wasn’t in a hurry to get close.

Even if he really wanted to break through the Death’s Door, he had to understand it better first.

There were indeed many patterns on the Death’s Door. They were complex and mysterious, as if they contained all kinds of principles of heaven and earth.

It was undoubtedly a huge project for someone to carve so many patterns on such a huge door. It was not something an ordinary person could complete.

Even with Zhang Ruochen’s current cultivation realm, he still had no idea what those patterns meant.

“I remember now,” Blackie suddenly exclaimed. “There are similar patterns in Nether Dungeon and Sword Pavilion. Could it be that these three objects were all refined by the same person?”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen's heart skipped a beat. He quickly recalled that he had entered both Nether Dungeon and Sword Pavilion before so he was no stranger to those places.

He hadn't paid much attention to it previously, but now that Blackie mentioned this, Nether Dungeon and Sword Pavilion did indeed have complicated patterns formed naturally.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the Death's Door and said, "There are eighteen levels in the Death's Door, and so is Nether Dungeon. It's rumored that Sword Pavilion has eighteen levels too. Could there really be a connection between the three?"

There was only one Death's Door in front of them, but that mysterious gatekeeper had said that there were eighteen levels in the Death's Door. Only by going through them could one finally enter Infernal Court.

Nether Dungeon and Sword Pavilion were both very mysterious. No one could tell what their origins were.

It was said that even a deity could be suppressed in Nether Dungeon.

After all, an elite like Lord Ming whose powers were infinitely close to a deity, was only imprisoned in the fifteenth level of the Prison Realm.

On the other hand, Sword Pavilion which stored the Wordless Sword Manual, was the Supreme Sanctum for sword cultivators.

Apart from having the same number of levels, Nether Dungeon and Sword Pavilion had another similarity — they were both dimensional treasures that contained the universe. Sword Pavilion even contained the power of time. The higher the level, the greater the ratio of the flow of time to the outside world.

'Only a Master of Time and Space can combine the power of time and space perfectly to refine a mysterious treasure,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

Since ancient times, Kunlun Realm had only produced three Masters of Time and Space, including Zhang Ruochen.

According to Blackie, Saint Monk Xumi was not good at refining weapons, so the person who refined Sword Pavilion was most likely the mysterious first Master of Time and Space.

Even as a Scion of Time and Space, Zhang Ruochen still knew nothing about the first Master of Time and Space because that person existed too long ago. Only a few of his stories were left for the later generations.

The only thing Zhang Ruochen knew was that the first Master of Time and Space was known as the time and space ancestor. He was one of the oldest powerful figures in Kunlun Realm.

After thinking for a long time, Zhang Ruochen used the Great Dimensional Shift and quickly approached the Death's Door with Blackie.

In a moment, Zhang Ruochen and Blackie were less than one-thousand miles away from the Death's Door.

Facing the Death's Door at such a close distance, the impact it had on his mind was undoubtedly stronger.

"Eh? There's actually a palace here. Zhang Ruochen, does the mysterious gatekeeper you mentioned live inside?"

Suddenly, Blackie found the small palace in the lower right corner of the Death's Door.

Of course, the so-called small was relatively speaking. The palace was actually very magnificent. It was thousands of feet tall, like an ancient divine beast entrenched in the void space.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the palace. Last time, he wanted to break into the Death's Door by force, but a huge hand that was thousands of miles long extended from the palace and slapped him back to Ever-white Planet.

Now that he thought about it, that hand owner's cultivation must be extremely high for him to have such a terrifying technique.

"Young man, here you are again."

As he was thinking, a wave of spiritual power came out from the palace.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but smile when he received this familiar spiritual power wave, "After so many years, I didn't expect that you could still remember me."

At that time, Zhang Ruochen hadn't even reached the saint level yet and was very weak. He was surprised that he could still remember him.

“I’ve lived for a long time, but my memory is good. Young man, it’s good that you’ve reached the peak of Saint Kinghood in such a short time. Are you here to break through the Death’s Door?” The spiritual power came again.

Before Zhang Ruochen could answer, Blackie stepped in and asked, “Who are you? Why are you here?”

“I’m just a forgotten person. It’s meaningless even if I tell you. Do you want to break through the Death’s Door?” The hermit who called himself the gatekeeper asked again.

Zhang Ruochen thought about it and said, “Now that I have acquired a stronger cultivation base and strength, am I qualified to know some secrets about the Death’s Door? Please explain it to me.”

Last time, Zhang Ruochen had asked a lot of questions, but this hermit who called himself the gatekeeper, did not tell him anything because his cultivation was too weak.

Although he had some guesses, he still wanted to get specific answers from the hermit.

“Tell me quickly, what is the origin of the Death’s Door? Who Made It? I have never heard of it in the Middle Ages,” Blackie said anxiously.

It thought that it was knowledgeable and knew many secrets, but it knew nothing about the Death’s Door.

The hermit thought for a moment and said, “The peace of Kunlun Realm has been broken again. Many secrets will be revealed by people sooner or later. It doesn’t matter if I tell you.”

“Do you see the galaxy behind the Death’s Door? That is Infernal Court, a powerful civilization whose goal is destruction. Kunlun Realm was almost destroyed by Infernal Court a hundred thousand years ago.”

“Back then, the deities of Infernal Court used their supreme divine power to control the entire space and crush the piece of sky where Kunlun Realm was located. If not for the almighty who used the supreme divine weapon which turned into the Death’s Door at the critical moment and blocked the void space, Kunlun Realm and many other microworlds may have been swallowed up long ago.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen felt a sense of suffocation. He was extremely shocked. The collision of the spaces was incredible just thinking about it.

Who was that almighty that blocked the void space? Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations? Lord of Nephilim Island? Dragon Lord Jiwang? Or is it someone else?

“Which of the Ten Greatest Divine Artifacts is the Death’s Door? Who is that almighty?” Zhang Ruochen asked quickly.

Although he didn’t know much about the Ten Greatest Divine Artifacts, he knew that there weren’t any door-shaped Divine Artifacts among them.

At the same time, he was also very curious about the almighty who blocked the void space. This person’s strength must be extremely powerful and he must have a great reputation.

Unfortunately, everything relating to that event a hundred-thousand years ago was erased by an invisible force. Even the deities of Kunlun Realm were mostly unknown to the future generations.

After waiting for a long time, nothing was spoken from the hall.

Since he received no reply, Zhang Ruochen did not continue to ask any more questions. He didn’t want to upset him.

After thinking for a while, Zhang Ruochen extended an index finger and gently tapped in the void space. Suddenly, Huang Yanchen’s shadow condensed in front of his fingertip. He asked, “Senior, has she been here before?”

“Yes. After entering the Death’s Door, she never came out again,” said the mysterious hermit.

Zhang Ruochen was slightly shocked. It seemed that his guess was right. All of Huang Yanchen’s changes were indeed caused by the Death’s Door.

However, he had a vague feeling that it was not that simple. Huang Yanchen could not have entered Infernal Court for no reason. Moreover, how could she break through all eighteen levels of the Death’s Door with her strength at that time?

After all, the mysterious hermit had said that one needed to be at least a saint king to be qualified to break through the Death’s Door.

“After asking so many questions, do you want to break through the Death’s Door?” The mysterious hermit asked.

Zhang Ruochen came back to his senses and looked at the palace. There was a strange light in his eyes. Who was this gatekeeper? Why was he guarding the Death’s Door? Was everything he said true?

Thinking of this, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but say, “Actually, I’m more interested in you rather than the Death’s Door. I hope to ask you something in person.”

With that, Zhang Ruochen made a bold move. He used his bodily movement and turned into a streak of light. He rushed toward the magnificent palace in the lower right corner of the Death’s Door.

Bang.

When he was five hundred miles away from the palace, Zhang Ruochen was blocked by an invisible barrier. He had to stop.

“Young man, this is not the place for you to come. If you don’t want to break through the Death’s Door, you can leave,” the gatekeeper said lightly.

Blackie also flashed over and curled its lips. “Why are you acting so mysterious? I want to see who you really are.”

Swish.

Seventy-two array flags flew out and instantly formed a mysterious Ninth Stratum Array.

The Ninth Stratum Array revolved and condensed into a hundred thousand feet long Divine Sword. It emitted billions of sharp Sword Qi and slashed towards the palace like lightning.

Crack.

A terrifying power came out of the hall and directly shattered the Divine Sword. All Sword Qi was destroyed instantly.

Even the Ninth Stratum Array disintegrated in an instant. Cracks appeared on some of the array flags, and Blackie himself retreated backward.

But Blackie didn't pay much attention to that. He stared at the palace with shock in his eyes, as if he had discovered something incredible.

"What's wrong?" Zhang Ruochen asked, confused.

Blackie said emotionally, "He used the power of God's Fall. Only those who cultivated God's Fall can practice this power."

God's Fall was one of the six great tomes of Kunlun Realm. It was a secret of Nephilim Island. Usually, only members of Nephilim Clan could practice it.

During the Middle Ages, Nephilim Clan was extremely powerful. They had Lord of Nephilim Island, one of the strongest powerhouses in Kunlun Realm. On top of that, Empress of Thousand Bones was also from Nephilim Clan.

Lord of Nephilim Island was extremely powerful. He was on par with Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations, Saint Monk Xumi, and Dragon Lord Jiwang. He had powerful Canon and the power to slaughter gods.

Unfortunately, after the Middle Ages, Nephilim Clan retreated back to Nephilim Island and disappeared. Many people had long forgotten about their existence.

Only Blackie was very familiar with Nephilim Clan. It managed to find Nephilim Island in the vast sea and bring Han Xue to receive the inheritance of God's Fall.

"Who are you? How did you receive the inheritance of God's Fall? Do you have anything to do with Nephilim Clan?" Blackie asked anxiously.

Now, Blackie wanted to rush into the palace more than Zhang Ruochen to find out the identity of the mysterious hermit. It was concerned with anything that had to do Nephilim Clan.

'Could it be Lord of Nephilim Island who was left at the Death's Door?' Zhang Ruochen guessed.

The mysterious hermit said, "It doesn't matter who I am. Don't try to make trouble here. Leave quickly."

Obviously, Zhang Ruochen and Blackie had offended the gatekeeper and upsetted him.

Zhang Ruochen was about to say something when he suddenly sensed something. He couldn't help but turn his head and look at the distant sky.

'What is that? A person?'

A blurry figure came into Zhang Ruochen's sight.

She carried a sword on her back and stepped on the void space. It looked as if she was walking slowly, but every step she took was ten-thousand miles apart.

This figure walked in a straight line. She seemed to be walking and enlightening the Canon and mystery of all heaven and earth at the same time.

A huge star appeared in front of this person, blocking her path. However, before it could get close to her, the star was penetrated by an invisible force and split in all directions. It couldn't deviate her direction at all.

Zhang Ruochen's mind trembled. He vaguely sensed that what penetrated the star seemed to be… a streak of Sword Qi. Yet when he sensed carefully, it seemed that there was no Sword Qi at all. Everything seemed to be his illusion.

In Saint King Realm, Zhang Ruochen had already practiced the Sword path to Great Perfection. He thought that he had a deep understanding of the Sword path.

However now, he felt like he didn't understand Sword at all. Perhaps he hadn't even remotely come into contact with the essence of the Sword path.

There was only one thing that Zhang Ruochen could be sure of: this person must have cultivated the Wordless Sword Manual, but she had already attained a realm which he couldn't understand.

In the blink of an eye, the figure crossed boundless void space and entered the palace where the mysterious hermit was.

ROAR!

At this moment, Blackie suddenly howled. It seemed extremely excited, and it rushed towards the palace without a thought.

Strangely, at this moment, the obstacle did not exist anymore.

“Empress, is that you? I am Tu Tian. Don’t you remember me?” Blackie shouted loudly.

Zhang Ruochen immediately followed after him. He changed into a strange expression, “Blackie, now I know that your real name is Tu Tian. Ha ha… wait, Empress? Did you just say that she’s Empress of Thousand Bones?”

Zhang Ruochen realized all of a sudden.

“Although I didn’t see her face clearly, I can feel her demeanor. She must be the Empress. I knew she was still alive.” Blackie was getting more and more excited.

Zhang Ruochen frowned slightly. Could that person be Empress of Thousand Bones? He still had lots of doubts in his head.

Empress of Thousand Bones had disappeared for a hundred thousand years and entered into the depths of Nether Realm. Even if she was still alive, why would she be here?

Identifying someone based on that person’s demeanor was obviously problematic.

Moreover, given Blackie’s relationship with Empress of Thousand Bones, if that person really was Empress of Thousand Bones, she had no reason to ignore Blackie.

Chapter 2147: Destiny Pool

Outside the palace, there was an open square paved with taupe slabs of stone, and each slab of stone was covered with mottled patterns. They seemed to be natural yet man-made, exuding a mysterious aura.

Zhang Ruochen and Blackie landed on the square one after another. However, they were blocked by an invisible force when they tried to enter the palace again.

“Empress, I am Tu Tian. Please allow me to follow you wherever you go,” Blackie shouted loudly.

It was sure that the mysterious powerhouse who just appeared was the Empress of Thousand Bones who had been missing for 100,000 years. It wanted to enter the palace desperately.

“Calm down. If that person is really the Empress of Thousand Bones, you will definitely meet her in the future even if you can’t meet her now. You

have waited for 100,000 years, so there's no need to rush," Zhang Ruochen comforted Blackie.

But at this moment, Blackie couldn't take in anything. It pounced towards the palace, again and again, howling like a maniac.

Seeing this, Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but shake his head. Usually, Blackie was always carefree, acting like it had its nose in the air. But when it came to the Empress of Thousand Bones, its emotions would go out of control. It couldn't control at all.

At this time, no matter how much he said, it was useless. He could only wait for Blackie to calm down.

While looking around, Zhang Ruochen suddenly spotted a pool at the left corner of the square. It was oval and only 10 square feet, making it inconspicuous.

Having such a small pool in an empty wide square, no one would believe that there was nothing special about it.

Zhang Ruochen took a step forward and appeared by the pool that was over a hundred miles away.

The pool water was very clear. It was still and did not move at all. It looked like a mirror.

Zhang Ruochen stood by the pool and looked into it. He could not help but look surprised because the pool water did not reflect his figure.

But when he stared at the pool water, he actually felt that the Saint Soul was about to leave his body. There was a mysterious power that enveloped him.

For a moment, the pool seemed to turn into a terrifying black hole that wanted to swallow his mind and soul.

Boom! Boom! Boom!
Zhang Ruochen quickly took a few steps back, a look of fear in his eyes.

It was just a pool and yet it was so terrifying. Even with his powerful state of mind, he almost lost his defense.

Thinking about it, it seemed that the situation would not be good for an ordinary Supreme Saint powerhouse.

‘What is the origin of this pool?’ Zhang Ruochen was very curious.

At this moment, the voice of the mysterious hermit suddenly sounded. “This is the Destiny Pool. It can reflect the ultimate fate of the person you care about the most. Since you are here, I will give you a chance to see it.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen was moved and appeared to be astonished. He thought he had heard wrongly.

He was considered to be experienced and knowledgeable, but he had never heard of the Destiny Pool. It was too incredible to mirror fates. Even the Fane of Destiny might not have such an ability.

However, this mysterious hermit would not have any reason to make up such a lie and deceive him.

“Who do I care about the most?” Zhang Ruochen asked himself in a low voice.

There were many people that Zhang Ruochen cared about, such as Emperor Ming, Concubine Lin, Mu Lingxi, Kong Lanyou, and so on. They were all very precious to him, but who was the one he cared about the most?

He couldn’t even tell himself.

Phew.
Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath and walked forward.

Finally, Zhang Ruochen stood by the pool again and looked into it.

This time, he did not resist the power of the pool anymore. He let the strange power penetrate his mind and spirit.

For a moment, Zhang Ruochen felt like the world was spinning. Time and Space seemed to be mixed up. All his senses became blurry.

All of a sudden, the calm pool slightly rippled. Mysterious marks containing the principles of Heaven and Earth emerged clearly. They intertwined and released a soft Divine Light. Then, they formed a light shield enveloping Zhang Ruochen.

Rumble.
The void exploded. A black lightning shot towards Zhang Ruochen.

It was taboo to pry into the fate of others. The Precepts of Heaven and Earth did not allow it.

The black lightning was so powerful that it seemed to be able to destroy everything. Even a top-tier Supreme-Saint might not be able to withstand it.

If it wasn't for the light shield's protection, Zhang Ruochen's body and soul would have been completely destroyed by the black lightning.

Hundreds of cracks appeared one after another in the void. Countless Precepts of Heaven and Earth appeared. They materialized and poured down crazily.

Zhang Ruochen had entered a mystical state. No matter how loud the outside world was, it could not affect him at all.

After a period of time, some images were reflected on the pool. They were clearly reflected in Zhang Ruochen's eyes and especially in his mind.

The moment he saw it, Zhang Ruochen's pupils constricted. It was as if he had seen something terrible. He could not help but stepped back.

It was obvious that Zhang Ruochen was trembling slightly. It was not because of fear, but because he could not control his emotions.

"How could… No, this is impossible!" Zhang Ruochen shouted uncontrollably.

With Zhang Ruochen's current state of calm, such an intense emotion was surprising. It was hard to imagine what he had seen.

"Everything you have seen will happen in the future. No one can change it." The mysterious hermit sounded.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen kept shaking his head. No matter what, he was reluctant to believe that she was destined to be like that. It couldn't be like that.

'Why?'

'Why Her?

'Why would it end like this?'

Zhang Ruochen kept questioning himself. Veins bulged on his face, his hair flying in the air, it was as if he had been possessed.

At this moment, the Destiny Pool had returned to its original state. The outside world had also returned to a peaceful state. It was as if nothing had happened before.

“Many years ago, the woman you were looking for came here and saw the image in the Destiny Pool. She had reacted just like how you did. After that, she entered Death’s Door without hesitation,” said the mysterious hermit.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen was shocked. ‘Did Huang Yanchen see the fate of the person she cared about the most? Who was that person? Could it be him?’

‘Could it be that Huang Yanchen entered the Infernal Court because she saw the fate of the person she cared about the most? But why did she make such a choice? What would be the reason and secret behind her decision?’

The mysterious hermit asked again, “Young man, are you going to pass through Death’s Door?”

Zhang Ruochen could not take in anything else at the moment. He kept thinking about what he had just seen and Huang Yanchen’s matter.

“If you don’t want to enter, then leave.”

As the voice of the mysterious hermit sounded, a hundreds-miles-long hand reached out from the palace.

BANG!
Before Zhang Ruochen and Blackie could react, they were hit by the huge hand. They could only feel their vision went black, then fell into a state of dizziness.

“F*ck… I haven’t seen it yet…” Blackie cried out.

The next moment, the two of them appeared 3,000 meters above the Ever-white Planet out of thin air. Their bodies fell rapidly, completely out of their control.

BOOM! BOOM!
With two loud bangs, Zhang Ruochen and Blackie both fell to the ground, creating two big pits.

With the strength of Zhang Ruochen and Blackie's bodies, this little bit of impact wouldn't cause them any harm.

After a big hit from the fall, Zhang Ruochen came back to his senses. He raised his head and looked at the magnificent Death's Door.

"I don't believe in the existence of fate in this world. If everything is predestined, what's the point of cultivators training long and hard? Even if it really exists, I will break it." Zhang Ruochen's eyes became firm again.

"Who did you see? What did you see? Why did you go crazy just now?" Blackie asked.

Zhang Ruochen clenched his fingers and didn't say a word.

After what had happened just now, he had lost interest in breaking through Death's Door.

Especially when he thought of Huang Yanchen's changes, Zhang Ruochen had an inexplicable rejection towards Death's Door.

Moreover, Death's Door was created by a supreme God. With his current cultivation and strength, it was far from enough to solve all the secrets.

Moreover, he still had a lot of things to do in the Kunlun Realm. He could not stay here for too long.

In any case, this trip had finally solved many mysteries. It was not a wasted trip.

"Blackie, let's go," said Zhang Ruochen.

Blackie shook his head repeatedly and said, "I'm not leaving. I want to stay here. I want to wait until the Empress comes out to meet me. She will never forget me."

Seeing Blackie's insistence, Zhang Ruochen did not say anything more. It is just that, could that person really be the Empress of Thousand Bones?

Back then, the Empress of Thousand Bones could kill gods with a sword even when she had not transformed into a god.

Now, 100,000 years had passed. If the Empress of Thousand Bones returned, how powerful would she be?

Leaving Blackie alone in Ever-White Planet, Zhang Ruochen reversed the array and set off on his departure. After several teleportations, Zhang Ruochen returned to the hidden valley in the Royal Mountain.

“It’s time to go to the Endless Abyss,” said Zhang Ruochen with narrowed eyes.

Although there were people that he did not want to see in the Endless Abyss, but this time, he must go.

With the dimensional teleportation array left behind by Saint Monk Xumi, it was easy to get to the Endless Abyss.

Back when he was in the Divine Dragon Halfling clan, Zhang Ruochen had used this dimensional teleportation array to teleport directly to the Northern Region.

With Zhang Ruochen’s current attainments in the Path of Dimension, although it is non-fixed-point teleportation, the deviation shouldn’t be too big.

Not long after, Zhang Ruochen finished setting the dimensional coordinates. Without any delay, he teleported immediately.

A thousand miles away from the Sect of the Blood God, the space rippled violently. Zhang Ruochen appeared out of thin air.

The area around the Sect of the Blood God had turned into a giant pit because of the battle.

But now, the giant pit had disappeared and turned into a vast plain.

Unsurprisingly, all of this should have been done by the Sect of the Blood God’s cultivators.

After all, the fact that the sect’s door was standing in a huge pit, this really damaged the Sect of the Blood God’s prestige as one of the seven ancient religions.

After that battle, especially the attack of Xue Lingxian, everyone knew that there was something strange about the Sect of the Blood God. Therefore, no one dared to have any ideas about the Sect of the Blood God.

However, there were still many cultivators spying around the Sect of the Blood God, but they were all very low-key. No one dared to be over ostentatious.

Naturally, Zhang Ruochen had noticed, but he didn't care about it. The Sect of the Blood God was protected by the Ancient Divine Mark. It was impregnable.

"Why did Zhang Ruochen come to the Central Region all of a sudden? Is he making a big move again?"

Seeing Zhang Ruochen, the cultivators around the Sect of the Blood God were all shocked.

There was nothing they could do. According to the usual patterns, wherever Zhang Ruochen appeared, something big would happen. Blood would flow like a river. Some powerhouses might even die.

Many people avoided him, especially now that he was invincible under the Supreme Saint.

Zhang Ruochen didn't return to the Sect of the Blood God. Instead, he headed straight for the Endless Abyss. He had to figure out some things as soon as possible.

The Endless Abyss was as peaceful as ever. Perhaps it was restricted by the Blood Empress, now there were no more Bloodbeasts coming out.

Zhang Ruochen was familiar with the way. He descended to the first level of the Endless Abyss.

Just as he was about to head to the entrance of the second level, two behemoths suddenly appeared. They were two Bloodbeast Kings who had Ninth-step Saint King level's ability.

A graceful figure stood on the head of one of the Bloodbeast Kings. Zhang Ruochen was very familiar with it. It was the Beguiler Demon, Qiu Yichi.

Qiu Yichi bowed to Zhang Ruochen and said with a smile, "The master knows that Your Highness has come, and specially ordered me to welcome you. Your Highness, please."

Zhang Ruochen did not say a word. He moved and appeared on the head of the other Bloodbeast King.

Because she practiced the Path of the Mind, Qiu Yichi could clearly sense that Zhang Ruochen's mood was a little unstable. Therefore, she did not dare to be careless.

The two Bloodbeasts flapped their huge wings and flew into the passage leading to the second level.

Zhang Ruochen could sense that the number of Bloodbeasts living in the second level didn't increase much, but their quality had greatly increased. There were more Saint-King-level Bloodbeasts.

Soon, the two Bloodbeasts landed on the top of the mountain that was soaked in Divine Blood.

Just as he jumped off the head of the Bloodbeasts, a beautiful woman in a dark green palace dress came up to him with a gentle smile. If it wasn't the Blood Empress, who else could it be.

"Chen'er, you're here. Let Mother take a good look at you."

The Blood Empress's eyes were gentle. She reached out a hand, wanting to take Zhang Ruochen's hand.

Zhang Ruochen took a step back. His eyes were cold and said: "I'm only here to ask you about something."

"What is it, Chen'er?" The Blood Empress's tone was still gentle.

Zhang Ruochen looked straight into the Blood Empress's eyes. "Where is Chi Kunlun?"

Hearing this, the Blood Empress was sure that Zhang Ruochen must have known that Chi Kunlun was fake.

No matter how vivid Chi Kunlun's fake body was, ultimately, it was still fake. Once they met, it couldn't hide from Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

Exhaling lightly, the Blood Empress said, "It looks like you already know that Kunlun isn't in the Endless Abyss. He has fallen into Yan Wushen's hands."

At this, a cold light flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes. The aura around him became colder and colder. He hated lies the most in his life.

“Master didn’t mean to lie to you, but she was worried that you would be at a disadvantage in Yan Wushen’s hands. After all, back then you weren’t as powerful as you are now.”

“Master once asked me, Xuemo, and Yan Liren to work together and deal with Yan Wushen. We wanted to take back Chi Kunlun. Unfortunately, Yan Wushen was too cunning and made our plan fail.”

Seeing that the atmosphere was not right, Qiu Yichi quickly explained.

Chapter 2148: Abyss Transcending Tribulation

The two blood beasts shivered when they felt the cold aura from Zhang Ruochen. They stepped back, lowering their heads and prostrating on the ground.

Qiu Yichi was also shocked. She truly felt how powerful Zhang Ruochen was. The impact on her mind was no less than when she had faced Yan Wushen’s good side. It was even stronger.

Blood Empress looked at Zhang Ruochen gently and said, “My son, I didn’t mean to deceive you. I just didn’t want you to put yourself in danger. Chi Kunlun is my grandson. How could I not care about him?”

No matter what, Blood Empress wouldn’t want to distance herself from Zhang Ruochen again because of this.

Everything she did was to make up for what she had done to Zhang Ruochen. She hoped that Zhang Ruochen would accept her and call her mother.

Zhang Ruochen slowly restrained his aura, and his eyes became much gentler.

He wasn’t an unreasonable person. After thinking for a while, he understood Blood Empress’s intentions.

Zhang Ruochen had just broken through to the Precept Domain realm in the battle with Shang Ziyi at Peacock Manor. His strength was at most comparable to the third level below the Supreme Saint. If he went to find Yan Wushen, it would be like hitting a stone with an egg.

“I will take care of Chi Kunlun. No one can hurt him,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Blood Empress took a step forward and said, “Yan Wushen is the most outstanding genius of the Yuan Conference in the Infernal Court. He is not

easy to deal with. If we want to save Kunlun, we can ask Xuemo and Yan Liren to lend a hand."

"There's no need for that. I will take care of it myself," Zhang Ruochen said.

After a pause, Zhang Ruochen continued, "If possible, I hope you can let go of Yan Liren's cocoon body. After all, he is the Empyrean Pavilion of the Guardian Dragon Pavilion's master."

"Okay. As long as you are happy, I will do as you say," Blood Empress said with a gentle smile.

It was rare for Zhang Ruochen to open his mouth to her. No matter what his request was, Blood Empress would do her best to satisfy it.

After a moment of silence, Zhang Ruochen said, "I want to meet Lanyou."

There is a reason why Zhang Ruochen came to Endless Abyss to meet Kong Lanyou. He wanted to hand over some treasures obtained from True Dragon Island personally to Kong Lanyou. Especially the quasi-Emperor-Grade Sacred Pill that was the true form of the Lord of Elixir.

"There is a secret spot in the second level of Endless Abyss, that Lanyou could rebuild her immortal Saint Body once more. She is already in the Endless Abyss, so she can't come out to meet you yet," Blood Empress said.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't surprised. Kong Lanyou had chosen to stay in Endless Abyss for this opportunity.

"Take me to that secret spot. I want to see her with my own eyes," Zhang Ruochen said.

"Alright, I will take you," Blood Empress said with a nod.

Immediately, Blood Empress released a wave of power that wrapped around Zhang Ruochen, it turned into a streak of light and they left the mountain's peak.

The Death Valley was one of the most mysterious places in the second level of Endless Abyss. Even Blood Empress couldn't fully understand its secrets.

Zhang Ruochen was brought to the outside of Death Valley by Blood Empress in the blink of an eye.

From the outside, the Death Valley wasn't big, and there was nothing special about it.

But according to Blood Empress, a dimension lies within Death Valley. It was enormous and deep. Like a passage to a mysterious and unknown place.

The Death Valley was filled with grayish gas, which hindered his vision greatly.

Zhang Ruochen stood at the entrance of the valley. He could not see Kong Lanyou, nor could he sense her aura.

Zhang Ruochen could not help but step forward, wanting to enter the valley.

Blood Empress immediately stopped Zhang Ruochen and said, "Don't act rashly. The Death Valley is filled with thick Qi of death, which can erode the vitality of the living. The deeper you go, the more terrifying it is. Even a god might not be able to resist it."

"Lanyou didn't go too deep into the Death Valley. She's just cultivating at the border."

Whoosh
As she spoke, Blood Empress waved her hand casually. The grayish gas in the valley dispersed.

A thin figure appeared about 300 meters away from the valley entrance. Dressed in white and had white hair. It was none other than Kong Lanyou.

However, Kong Lanyou's current state doesn't look good. She had lost a lot of weight. Her skin had become dry, dull, and gray.

Kong Lanyou sat cross-legged quietly as if she had been petrified. No one knew what kind of state she was in.

Seeing Kong Lanyou's lifeless look, Zhang Ruochen's heart ached, but there was nothing he could do.

Rebuilding the immortal Saint Body was like changing one's fate. Without great willpower and luck, it was impossible to succeed.

Blood Empress said softly, “The Death Valley can dig out all of Lanyou’s potential and eliminate the effect of breaking the immortal Saint Body. Only in this way can she have hope to rebuild it.”

“I have explained everything to Lanyou in advance, but she still chose to build a future full of hope for herself.”

Rebuilding the immortal Saint Body was too difficult. Since ancient times, only a handful of people have succeeded. Even the most talented could only end in disappointment.

Zhang Ruochen knew very well that with the treasures and a quasi-Emperor-Grade Sacred Pill obtained from True Dragon Island, the success rate of helping Kong Lanyou rebuild the immortal Saint Body was still very low.

It was like a Curse. Without a heaven-defying opportunity, it was almost impossible to break.

With such an opportunity lies in front of Kong Lanyou, she would fight with all her might. Even if she was in danger of being perished.

“My son, if you don’t want Lanyou to be in danger, I can take her out. However, she will lose the opportunity here. It will be a hundred times more difficult for her to enter again in the future,” said Blood Empress.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head slightly and said, “It is not necessary. This is Lanyou’s own choice and I can’t stop her. I also believe that she will succeed.”

Zhang Ruochen already understood Kong Lanyou’s determination. He could only support her and not stop her.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Blood Empress. He was conflicted. He didn’t know how to face his Immortal Vampire mother who was born at Infernal Court.

If Blood Empress was an evil demon from Infernal Court and a cold, heartless vampire. Zhang Ruochen could easily deal with their relationship.

Even if they were mother and son, it couldn’t affect Zhang Ruochen’s will.

But Blood Empress wasn’t that kind of person.

After standing outside the Death Valley for a long time, Zhang Ruochen sighed and finally decided to turn around and leave. There were still many things waiting for him to do.

Before he left, he gave the quasi-Emperor-Grade Sacred Pill that was the true body of the Lord of Elixir to Blood Empress. He kept it for Kong Lanyou in case she needed it.

After returning to the first level of Endless Abyss, Zhang Ruochen halted. He wasn't in a hurry to go out.

He had a thought, the Ancient Abyssal Blade flew out from between his eyebrows. The black blade shone with a strange light.

"Abyss, are you ready?" Zhang Ruochen asked softly.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade glowed. A very handsome youth in black appeared and his features were similar to Zhang Ruochen. He was the sword spirit of the Ancient Abyssal Blade.

The Abyssal sword spirit said, "My accumulation was enough. Now that your Path of Swordsmanship has fully reached the Saint King realm, the combination of Swordwill has made my Origin stronger. I'm confident that I can transcend the heavenly tribulation."

"Then you can transform into a regal weapon here," Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhang Ruochen had come to Endless Abyss not only because of Chi Kunlun and Kong Lanyou. He also wanted the Ancient Abyssal Blade to transcend the King's Calamity.

If one wished to become a regal weapon, either through growth or refinements, one had to go through the trials of tribulations and get recognition from the heavenly and earthly precepts regardless.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade had refined a large number of precious sacred artifacts. It had long reached the limit of a Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact. It was fit to transcend the heavenly tribulation, but it had been suppressing itself to make its accumulation more vigorous and ensure that it could transcend the heavenly tribulations.

Zhang Ruochen had cultivated the Path of Swordsmanship to completion, which became an opportunity for the Ancient Abyssal Blade to transform.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade meant a lot to Zhang Ruochen. Even a Supreme Artifact could not compare with it. It grew with him, allowing him to perfectly display his Path of Swordsmanship.

Once the Ancient Abyssal Blade advanced to a regal weapon, Zhang Ruochen's Path of Swordsmanship would be greatly enhanced.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade flew into the air and stopped its suppression. All 129,599 inscriptions surfaced.

In the next moment, a brand new inscription condensed. The Ancient Abyssal Blade has reached Class 1.

All of a sudden, all the inscriptions and their essence began to change. They changed from ordinary to Regal inscriptions.

It was also at this moment that the unseen Precepts began to be induced.

Rumble
Intense energy undulations appeared in the sky above Endless Abyss. A vast amount of precepts of heaven and earth and Saint Qi of heaven and earth gathered.

In the blink of an eye, a huge black vortex formed, releasing an extremely terrifying pressure. A destructive aura spread out and the air became unbreathable.

If it had been anywhere else, such a huge commotion would have alarmed many powerful cultivators.

This was also why Zhang Ruochen had chosen Endless Abyss as the spot to perform the transcendence of heavenly tribulation. He didn't want anyone to disturb him, and at the same time, he didn't want to reveal the Ancient Abyssal Blade had become a regal weapon.

Whoosh
Countless gales flew out of the black vortex and swept toward the Ancient Abyssal Blade.

The gales were shapeless but extremely sharp. Wherever they passed, space was torn apart and countless pitch-black cracks appeared.

This was the power of the heavenly tribulation. No matter how special Endless Abyss was, it couldn't be eliminated.

In an instant, the Ancient Abyssal Blade was enveloped by violent gales. The gales continuously collided with the blade, giving off crisp sounds.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade did not resist. It allowed the gales to attack so that it could temper itself to become more powerful.

No matter how the gales attacked, the Ancient Abyssal Blade was still motionless. On the contrary, the speed of the inscription's transformation was accelerating.

It was not that the power of the wind tribulation was too weak, but the essence of the Ancient Abyssal Blade was too strong. It was completely refined from the Iron of Creation and was almost indestructible. Moreover, the sword spirit had created the most perfect form, and it had accumulated power, it was already comparable to the vessel spirit of an ordinary regal weapon.

'According to the records, the King's Calamity is divided into four tribulations: wind, fire, water, and thunder. Each tribulation is more terrifying than the last. Most can transcend the first three tribulations, but can't last until the final tribulation. However, with Abyss's accumulation, there shouldn't be a problem,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

The probability of surviving the King's Calamity was very low. It was only 10%. That meant that only one out of ten sacred artifacts could succeed.

One couldn't interfere with the sacred artifact's tribulation. Otherwise, it would only make the heavenly tribulation more terrifying.

'The heavenly tribulation could refine the regal weapon. Maybe it can help me immortalize my internal organs faster.' A surprised look flashed in Zhang Ruochen 's eyes.

Thinking of this, Zhang Ruochen didn't hesitate. He immediately took action and absorbed a small amount of the heavenly tribulation power into his body.

It could only be said that he was truly skilled and bold. He dared to do such a crazy thing. If he was not careful, he would turn into a pile of ashes.

Zhang Ruochen activated the Empyrean Emperor Ming's Scripture with all his strength. He let the power of the heavenly tribulation merge into his internal organs and refine them repeatedly.

“It’s working. The strength of the internal organs is slowly increasing. Keep going.” Zhang Ruochen was surprised by his bold move.

Zhang Ruochen managed to calm down and continue to absorb the power of the heavenly tribulation.

Of course, he was being careful. He only absorbed the scattered power to avoid interfering with the Ancient Abyssal Blade’s heavenly tribulation.

For a moment, Zhang Ruochen was completely immersed in cultivation. To him, the King’s Calamity was a great opportunity.

After six hours, the wind tribulation stopped. The Ancient Abyssal Blade was safe and sound. Its color became darker and more reserved. A strange mark of wind appeared on its surface. It was marked naturally and contained an extremely mysterious conception.

Then came forth the endless Heavenfires. Like fire dragons, roaring as they pounced on the Ancient Abyssal Blade.

After a while, the Heavenfires turned into a bronze furnace of heaven and earth, enveloping the Ancient Abyssal Blade. It tried its best to refine the blade, wanting to burn it into ashes.

After being burned by the blazing Heavenfires, the pitch-black sword gradually turned fiery red, as if it was about to melt away.

Even so, the Ancient Abyssal Blade still did not make its move. Instead, it took the initiative to absorb the Heavenfires and extract the impurities from itself.

During the growth of the Ancient Abyssal Blade, it had refined too many sacred artifacts, so its power was inevitably a little mixed. Now, it could use the power of the heavenly tribulation to sort it out.

Similarly, the fire tribulation lasted for six hours, and then came the water tribulation.

There was a saying that artifact refinement required the most intense fire and the coldest water. Hence, in the King’s Calamity, the water and fire tribulations were especially important to the refinement of a sacred artifact.

As time passed, the Ancient Abyssal Blade successfully passed the wind, fire, and water tribulations. Its body had already become clear and flawless, and even the inscriptions had all turned into Regal inscriptions.

As long as it passed the final lightning tribulation, it would be able to become a true regal weapon.

Boom
A thirty thousand meters long lightning bolt suddenly slashed out from the black whirlpool and struck the Ancient Abyssal Blade.

Buzz
The Ancient Abyssal Blade trembled slightly and tried its best to absorb the lightning.

As the lightning was absorbed, a blurry lightning mark slowly formed on the Ancient Abyssal Blade.

Without a moment's delay, the second bolt of lightning struck down. Its power far surpassed the first Bolt.

Just like that, bolt after bolt of lightning struck down, seemingly not giving up until the Ancient Abyssal Blade was destroyed.

Even with the stability of Endless Abyss space, it was all shattered by the lightning bolts, forming terrifying spatial turbulence.

Every time it absorbed a bolt of lightning, the lightning seal on the Ancient Abyssal Blade would become clearer and more complex.

Rumble
The black whirlpool collapsed and all the power gathered together, turning into the most terrifying bolt of lightning.

BANG!
The destructive lightning struck the Ancient Abyssal Blade and pressed down like a Primordial Divine Mountain, causing the Ancient Abyssal Blade to fall rapidly. The sword trembled as if it couldn't withstand this power.

"Absorb!"

The Sword Spirit of Ancient Abyssal Blade roared.

Immediately, the Ancient Abyssal Blade released a dazzling sword light. Over 100,000 Regal inscriptions appeared and wrapped around the destructive lightning.

This was the ninth lightning, and it was also the most terrifying lightning. Its power was even stronger than the previous eight combined. An ordinary immortal Saint Body would probably be destroyed if came in contact.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade used all of its abilities and spent quite a long time before it was finally able to completely absorb it.

At this moment, the incomparably profound lightning seal had finally appeared clearly on the sword. It appeared to be filled with spirituality and seemed to come to life.

The frightening pressure that covered Endless Abyss disappeared without a trace. Everything returned to normal as though nothing had happened.

At this point, the King's Calamity came to an end, and the Ancient Abyssal Blade was successfully promoted to the regal weapon.

Chapter 2149: The Arrival of Infernal Court's Army of 30 Million Cultivators

After the king's calamity dissipated, Zhang Ruochen ended his cultivation and came near Ancient Abyssal Blade. He couldn't help but smile.

Zhang Ruochen had a special relationship with the Ancient Abyssal Blade. They had grown up together and were the most compatible partners. They only recognized each other.

Now, Zhang Ruochen had become the top-notch cultivator below the Supreme Saint. The Ancient Abyssal Blade had become a regal weapon. No one was left behind.

Glancing at the Ancient Abyssal Blade, Zhang Ruochen realized that although the blade had just transcended the tribulation, the Regal inscriptions inside had increased by 20,000 to 150,000.

It had been a long and deep accumulation.

At the same time, the Violet Godstone inlaid on the hilt of the blade was more closely integrated with the Ancient Abyssal Blade. It had truly merged into one, causing some indescribable and strange changes to the Ancient Abyssal Blade.

This Violet Godstone was not simple. It was suspected to be related to the Stone Clan. It was a rare treasure with endless magical uses to be excavated.

One had to admit that the heavenly tribulation was truly amazing. It could transform ordinary inscriptions into Regal inscriptions. It could also perfectly merge the Violet Godstone with the Ancient Abyssal Blade. It wasn't something humans could do.

The transformation of the inscriptions was even more amazing. It completely overtook its natural state. It was completely different from what humans had carved. It contained a unique aura.

'No wonder so many people want to obtain a sacred artifact that can grow continuously. It can have such an extraordinary transformation just by becoming a regal weapon. If it becomes a Supreme Artifact in the future, the transformation will be amazing,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the four mystical marks on the blade. They were imprinted after the Ancient Abyssal Blade absorbed the powers of the heavenly tribulation. They contained the principles of heaven and earth and were extremely complicated.

Zhang Ruochen had come into contact with many regal weapons, but he had never seen such marks. Such marks were not easy to get.

It must be because the Ancient Abyssal Blade was made of special material and had absorbed all the power of the four tribulations during the process of transcending the heavenly tribulation.

'The marks containing the mysteries of the heavenly tribulation are indeed obscure and difficult to understand. If I can activate them, I wonder what effect it will have.' Zhang Ruochen thought.

No matter what, the Ancient Abyssal Blade would benefit from the four marks.

At this moment, the Abyss Sword Spirit revealed itself. It had grown a lot, and its temperament was more similar to Zhang Ruochen's.

"Zhang Ruochen, I need to seclude myself for some time to comprehend the four marks," Abyss said.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, "It just so happens that my body also needs some training."

He had absorbed part of the powers of the heavenly tribulation to refine his internal organs and brain. The outcome was obvious, but he hadn't reached his target yet.

While Abyss was comprehending the marks of the heavenly tribulation, Zhang Ruochen planned to cultivate his body to the maximum of the Saint King realm.

Zhang Ruochen flipped his hand and took out a Heaven Grade Sacred Pill to help him become immortal. He took it and started cultivating again.

Ten days passed in the blink of an eye. Zhang Ruochen and Abyss finished their cultivation one after another.

Abyss roughly digested what it had learned from the heavenly tribulation. It comprehended the initial secrets of the heavenly tribulation's four marks and could use its power freely.

"I'm still a little lacking. The brain and heart are still not immortalized." Zhang Ruochen sighed slightly.

The immortalization of the body was more difficult the further one went. Usually, the brain and heart were the last ones to immortalize.

It wasn't that Zhang Ruochen had no way to make these two immortal. It was just that it was difficult to control his power. If he wasn't careful, he could break through his cultivation and enter the Supreme Saint realm.

He was only one step away, so Zhang Ruochen wasn't anxious at all.

Perhaps when he cultivated the Precept to the fullest, his body would naturally reach the maximum.

With a thought, Zhang Ruochen kept the Ancient Abyssal Blade into the Divine Light Sea of Qi. He didn't stay any longer. With a few leaps, he'd left the Endless Abyss.

Now that he was sure that Chi Kunlun had fallen into Yan Wushen's hands, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't sit still. He had to save him as soon as possible.

According to Pan Ruo, Yan Wushen had taken Chi Kunlun and wanted to make Chi Kunlun his disciple. However, Zhang Ruochen thought otherwise.

However, Yan Wushen's whereabouts were unknown. It was not easy to find him.

Under the guidance of the Sect of the Blood God's top cultivator, Zhang Ruochen passed through three interlocking Ninth Stratum Array and entered the Sect of the Blood God.

Recently, the Sect of the Blood God had been very low-key. They sealed their doors and tried to improve their strength.

Knowing that everyone in the Sect of the Blood God was cultivating in seclusion, Zhang Ruochen did not disturb them. He only summoned Elder Yuanxing to ask for some information.

As one of the seven ancient sects, the Sect of the Blood God had disciples all over the nine states in the Central Region. They had an enormous intelligence network.

“My lord, something big has happened in the Central Region recently,” Elder Yuanxing said.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “What is it?”

“Just three days ago, Infernal Court mobilized the army of 30 million Saint-level cultivators to the Central Region and surrounded Central Imperial City. All ten clans of the Infernal Court sent more than one first-level Supreme Saints,” Elder Yuanxing said.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but frown. It was unexpected for the Infernal Court to suddenly make such a big move.

“The army of 30 million Saint-level cultivators. How did Infernal Court manage to transferred so many soldiers into Kunlun Realm?” Zhang Ruochen was very confused.

At this stage, the war with Infernal Court was still concentrated in various Battlefield of Merits in the five regions. It was blocked by the dimensional barrier and the army of Celestial Court. There were only a few cultivators from Infernal Court who could enter Kunlun Realm.

Before this, the scale of the war in Kunlun Realm was not large. The army of Infernal Court was not more than a million.

If not for this, Kunlun Realm would have become a purgatory.

It was strange that the army of 30 million Saint-level cultivators suddenly appeared. Logically speaking, it was impossible for there to be no signs.

Either Infernal Court had been plotting for a long time and was fully prepared, or there was something wrong with the Battlefield of Merits.

“Central Imperial City represents the imperial court. It seems that Infernal Court wants to tear it apart in one fell swoop. If that happens, Kunlun Realm will be in chaos and disarray, and it will be on its way to destruction. However, this should be only one of the reasons. They must have an even bigger plan.”

Elder Yuanxing said, “In fact, a few months ago, there were already signs of it. Cultivators from Infernal Court appeared out of thin air in the Central Region, and the number was increasing. It’s just that the leaders of the Celestial Court in Kunlun Realm were not taken seriously. That’s why today’s disaster happened.”

“Kunlun Realm is not their homeland. Of course, the leaders of the Celestial Court won’t take it seriously. To them, after Kunlun Realm is destroyed, there will be other Battlefield of Merits opened up. How is the situation in Central Imperial City now?” Zhang Ruochen asked in a low voice.

Elder Yuanxing said, “Central Imperial City is protected by layers of arrays and is safe for the time being. However, Infernal Court has sent 10 High-Saint Array Masters who are experts in breaking the arrays. The situation does not look pleasing.”

’10 High-Saint Array Master… They are generous.’

Zhang Ruochen was not surprised by this. As the imperial court’s headquarters, Chi Yao must have made many arrangements and could not be easily broken through.

The imperial court had played an important role in maintaining the relatively stable situation in Kunlun Realm. It was hard to imagine what Kunlun Realm would be like without the imperial court.

Moreover, if Central Imperial City’s defense broke through, there would be no safe place in Kunlun Realm. Eastern Region Holy City was no exception. The hearts of the people would be completely thrown into chaos.

Zhang Ruochen was still not on good terms with Empress Chi Yao, but the truth is, he could see it more clearly than anyone else. In the face of the enemy, no matter how deep the grudges were, they had to put them down first and face the outsider together.

A High-Saint Array Master had the power to overturn rivers and seas.

With ten of them together, even the array formation of Central Imperial City might not be able to hold them off.

Moreover, the army of 30 million Saint-level cultivators made people's hearts tremble just thinking about it. Even if a hundred Supreme Saints were sent to the frontline, they would probably have to retreat.

This was a true all-out war, a clash between the ten clans of Infernal Court and Celestial Court's Macroworlds and Microworlds.

In the face of such a situation, an individual's power was insignificant. Not to mention Zhang Ruochen, even ten Zhang Ruochens would be beaten to death.

'Since the ten clans of Infernal Court are working together, Yan Wushen should not be absent,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

He was worried about where to find Yan Wushen. Waiting in Central Imperial City might be the best choice.

Even if Central Imperial City was in a precarious situation and no one could stop it, Zhang Ruochen still had to go.

'Even if we want to break through the Central Imperial City, it should be the Shengming's army, not the Infernal Court's army.'

After thinking for a while, Zhang Ruochen carved a few Communication talismans and sent them out. Now that the storm had arrived, the hidden forces of Kunlun Realm should be mobilized.

Zhang Ruochen left the Sect of the Blood God and quietly rushed to the nearest Sub-Terminal of Merit.

Before entering the Sub-Terminal of Merit, Zhang Ruochen performed the Thirty-six Formless Transmogrification. He changed his appearance and turned into a delicate scholar. He was gentle and elegant, similar to the Divine Scripture Maiden who disguised as a man. Even his temperament was the same.

The Thirty-six Formless Transmogrification was very mysterious. Zhang Ruochen deliberately spent a lot of time comprehending it. With the practice of the fourth volume of the Four-Nine Mystic Arts, he had already grasped part of the essence of it.

Especially the change of his human form, Zhang Ruochen had reached a perfect state. The chances of seeing through his true form are very low.

The situation in Central Imperial City was very complicated. Zhang Ruochen did not want to swagger forward and let everyone know that. It was more convenient for him to do many things when he was in the dark while the enemy was in the light.

Through the dimensional teleportation array at the Sub-Terminal of Merits, Zhang Ruochen first arrived at Tianquan's Grand Terminal of Merits.

The main reason was that the situation in Central Imperial City was very critical. To be safe, the Sub-Terminal of Merits could no longer be directly transferred to Central Imperial City. They had to go to the Grand Terminal of Merits for transit.

As soon as he arrived at the Sub-Terminal of Merits, Zhang Ruochen saw a sea of people.

The Celestial Court naturally had to respond to the siege of the Infernal Court's army. They had already dispatched a large number of Saint-level cultivators to the Central Imperial City as fast as they could.

"I heard that the Infernal Court is still dispatching troops. They are close to 35 million now. I'm afraid the Central Imperial City will be difficult to defend."

"From the moment the membrane wall of Kunlun Realm was breached by Infernal Court, it was destined to be destroyed. It's just a matter of time. Infernal Court wants to end the battle swiftly. They didn't want to give Kunlun Realm any chance to resurge."

"Although the battle hasn't started yet, the top-notch cultivators of both sides have already fought dozens of times. The ones who fought were all at the strongest three levels below the Supreme Saint. We seem to have suffered a loss. Several top-notch cultivators were lost."

…

Listening to all kinds of discussions, Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but feel a little emotional.

Zhang Ruochen lifted his head and looked at a light screen above the Grand Terminal of Merits. The light screen was showing the scene inside and outside of Central Imperial City.

This was a reflection of the battlefield specially created by the Fane of Merit. It was used to constantly monitor the situation in Central Imperial City.

Tens of millions of Saint-level cultivators of the Infernal Court surrounded the huge Central Imperial City. There is no gap for anyone to enter or leave.

Fortunately, countless array patterns appeared and protected Central Imperial City firmly. Ten High-Saint Array Masters of the Infernal Court was unable to land a hit.

“Look, Nie Xiangzi, one of the Ten Divine Scions of the Fane of Truth, has left the city. I wonder who he will fight.”

Suddenly, there was a commotion in the Grand Terminal of Merits.

Through the reflections, Zhang Ruochen could see a valiant man in silver armor walking out of the Central Imperial City and calmly facing the powerful army of the Infernal Court.

A person who was that strong and humble could only be, Nie Xiangzi.

Among the Ten Divine Scions of the Fane of Truth, the only one Zhang Ruochen was familiar with was Nie Xiangzi.

When he was in the Celestial Domain of Truth, he had been schemed against by Shang Ziyan. Nie Xiangzi had helped him.

After Nie Xiangzi left the city, a powerful cultivator walked out of the Army of the Infernal Court. He was nearly ten feet tall and wore blood-red armor. His facial features were unusually handsome, and he had a malicious grin on his face.

“It’s Lord Xue Chen of the Immortal Vampires. He’s the most powerful cultivator below the Supreme Saint of the Bloodysky Clan. He came to Kunlun Realm.” A cultivator recognized the powerful cultivator of the Infernal Court. He was shocked by what he saw.

Among the Ten Clans of the Infernal Court, Zhang Ruochen was undoubtedly most familiar with the Immortal Vampires. He had interacted with them since he was very young.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn’t know much about the situation of the Immortal Vampires of Infernal Court. The strongest person he had come

into contact with was Xuetu, who had reached the second level below the Supreme Saint.

Zhang Ruochen only knew that the Immortal Vampires of Infernal Court were divided into ten clans. Each clan was huge and had many geniuses.

Xuetu was so powerful that his danger level was ten out of ten. The second-level top cultivator below the Supreme Saint could only be ranked in the top five among the Immortal Vampires in the Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans.

Of course, those who were below the first level of the Supreme Saint were all extremely dangerous. Most of them were not recorded in the Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans.

Among the Immortal Vampires, they were granted lordship for those of Supreme Saint realm top cultivators. In the Saint King realm, only those who had reached the first level of the Supreme Saint realm were qualified to be a Lord.

Speaking of which, Xuetu was also from the Bloodysky Clan and was the son of a deity. However, he was suppressed by Lord Xue Chen. Even though he had the Seamless Purgatory Tower, he was still unable to fight against Lord Xue Chen.

Of course, Lord Xue Chen's origin wasn't bad either. He was the descendant of Wargod Bloodximius. He had cultivated for hundreds of years and his strength was unfathomable.

Hearing the discussions around him, Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but think, "He's Bloodximius's descendants."

Bloodximius was a powerful deity from the Bloodysky Clan of the Immortal Vampires. He held a high position and had many descendants.

Most importantly, Blood Empress was the daughter of Bloodximius.

In other words, Bloodximius was Zhang Ruochen's grandfather in his previous life.

In this way, Lord Xue Chen was undoubtedly Zhang Ruochen's cousin.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen never admitted that he had any relationship with the Immortal Vampires. Naturally, he would not acknowledge this so-called cousin.

However, it had to be said that the bloodline of Bloodximius was terrifying. There were too many talented cultivators being born of his bloodline. Lord Ming and Blood Empress were both peerless figures. Now, there was Lord Xue Chen.

Chapter 2150: Returning to Imperial City

Outside Central Imperial City, Nie Xiangzi and Lord Xue Chen stood facing each other. The army of the Immortal Vampires had already retreated, leaving enough space for the two of them to fight.

“I’ve long wanted to meet the Ten Divine Scions of Fane of Truth. Nie Xiangzi, I hope you won’t disappoint me.” Lord Xue Chen’s smiling eyes were filled with malicious intent, and his body emitted a strong fighting spirit.

Nie Xiangzi was not bothered by his provocative words at the slightest. “Just attack,” he said flatly.

“Nie Xiangzi—the scion that has been known for his indifferent personality, I want to see how long you can maintain your attitude.” Lord Xue Chen’s aura suddenly soared.

As Lord Xue Chen waved his hands, a majestic blood Qi surged out and turned into a vast sea of blood rolling toward Nie Xiangzi.

Nie Xiangzi did not retreat. He raised his hand, used his powerful Saint Qi to form a ten-thousand-foot-long handprint that carried unparalleled power, and launched it.

Boom!

The handprint and the sea of blood collided violently. Immediately, a heaven-shaking and earth-shattering phenomena appeared. Terrifying ripples of power spread in all directions.

As top elites at first-tier below Supreme Sainthood, both of them were powerful. It was as if two Supreme Saints were fighting, or perhaps, even more intense than that.

At this moment, Celestial Court and Infernal Court were paying close attention to the battle between Nie Xiangzi and Lord Xue Chen.

In the face of such a situation, individual strength was insignificant.

However, the outcome of a battle between top elites could impact the morale of both sides.

The current situation was clearly disadvantageous to Celestial Court. They urgently needed to secure a few victories. It would be best if they could kill the elites from Infernal Court to boost their morale.

On the city wall, many disciples—including Divine Scions and True Disciples—from Fane of Truth stood. The ones in the lead were five of the ten Divine Scions.

Including Nie Xiangzi, six of the ten Divine Scions from Fane of Truth had come. This was a rare sight.

This battle concerned Fane of Truth's reputation. Everyone could not help but feel nervous.

At the Grand Terminal of Merits, Zhang Ruochen's eyes were fixed on the Projection Screen. He was also watching the battle between Nie Xiangzi and Lord Xue Chen.

A few years ago, Nie Xiangzi—a legendary figure—was someone he had to look up to. Now, he stood at the same or even higher position.

The Fane of Truth's Ten Divine Scions were all extraordinary. They were prominent figures from many Microworlds. Even the weakest among them could achieve the top three tiers below Supreme Sainthood.

Nie Xiangzi possessed the top combat power of first-tier below Supreme Sainthood. He could be ranked as one of the leading elites among the Ten Divine Scions. His cultivation base was unfathomable.

Outside Central Imperial City, Nie Xiangzi and Lord Xue Chen were engaged in a fierce battle. They fought for hundreds of rounds and were evenly matched.

Suddenly, Lord Xue Chen's aura changed. His body emitted a profound and mysterious aura. A strange door of light appeared behind him. It was formed by hundreds of thousands of Precepts of Destiny. It was none other than the Gate of Destiny.

Nie Xiangzi's expression remained indifferent and calm. A large number of Precepts of Truth emerged from his body and interweaved with each other. They formed a shadowy realm behind him.

Billions of words—almost all the words in the universe—were sighted dancing within this realm. They collided with each other, expressing the truth of the world.

“The Realm-frame of Truth.” Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed.

In Fane of Truth, only Divine Scions could learn secret techniques enabling them to condense the Realm-frame of Truth.

Once they could form the Realm-frame of Truth, they would be able to utilize power from Path of Truth at will. In other words, they could increase the attack power of various Saint Techniques without having to take time for activation.

Zhang Ruochen’s attainment in Path of Truth was very high. His level could be even higher than the Ten Divine Scions from the Fane of Truth. Currently, he could increase attack power by nine times.

Unfortunately, he had not joined Fane of Truth, so he did not have the chance to learn secret techniques.

If he wanted to condense the Realm-frame of Truth, he had to rely on himself. Hence, he was not entirely confident.

Of course, it did not mean that he could condense the Realm-frame of Truth for sure by just merely learning the secret techniques. On top of that, he had to achieve high attainments in his cultivation for Path of Truth. He should at least be able to amplify an attack by six times.

‘I’ve cultivated more than 800,000 Precepts of Truth. But if I can’t condense the Realm-frame of Truth, I can’t amplify my attack power by ten times. Unless my cultivation for Path of Truth could achieve Great Perfection, then I’ll be able to make a breakthrough,’ Zhang Ruochen thought.

However, Zhang Ruochen knew very well that compared to condensing the Realm-frame of Truth, it was more challenging to reach Great Perfection of Path of Truth.

Even in the history of Fane of Truth, very few people could do that.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen currently held 0.39 percent of Canon of Truth. Hence, he could utilize power from Path of Truth more easily. It gave him a significant advantage.

Power from Path of Truth allowed a cultivator to amplify his attack power. On the contrary, the power from Path of Destiny could weaken the attack power of an opponent. The two just happened to counteract each other’s effects.

Obviously, the key to the result of this battle lay in Nie Xiangzi's cultivation in Path of Truth and Lord Xue Chen's cultivation in Path of Destiny—whose attainment was higher and who could restrain the attack of another.

"Nie Xiangzi is so strong. With power from Path of Truth, he can unleash an attack nine times powerful. For sure he will win this battle," some cultivators said excitedly.

Zhang Ruochen was calm. 'How can the Ten Divine Scions nurtured by Fane of Truth with tremendous efforts be this weak?'

Hence, unlike the cultivators around him, Zhang Ruochen was not optimistic about the battle. 'I have no doubt about Nie Xiangzi's strength. He is indeed strong, but somehow this Lord Xue Chen gives off an unfathomable vibe.'

'Among the Paths of the Ancients, Path of Destiny is the most obscure and difficult to comprehend, and yet Lord Xue Chen can practice it to such a high level. I bet there are only a few people below Supreme Sainthood in the Fane of Destiny who can hold a candle to him. Therefore, this will be a difficult battle for Nie Xiangzi to win.' Zhang Ruochen frowned slightly.

Zhang Ruochen had to admit that although this 'cousin' of his—Lord Xue Chen—was very arrogant, he had real talent. No wonder this 'cousin' could suppress all prodigies of Bloodysky Clan.

At this moment, Nie Xiangzi and Lord Xue Chen had already skillfully used their power in the Paths of the Ancients to the extreme, yet their fight was in a stalemate. No one was able to gain the upper hand.

After almost 2000 rounds of fight, Lord Xue Chen seized an opportunity and sent Nie Xiangzi flying with a palm.

"How could… Nie Xiangzi lost!"

Many cultivators found it hard to accept the result.

Anyone could see that Nie Xiangzi and Lord Xue Chen's strengths were on par with each other. Nevertheless, it took only one key moment to determine the winner, and Nie Xiangzi had failed to seize that opportunity.

Nie Xiangzi's defeat sent a heavy blow to the morale of Celestial Court.

On the other hand, the morale of Infernal Court was high as they cheered for Lord Xue Chen.

“We’ve lost again. Why haven’t the Four Heavenly Kings, the Archangel King Michael, and Ao Xukong made a move yet?”

“What about Zhang Ruochen? Isn’t he at Central Imperial City? If he comes forward, who could defeat him in a one-on-one fight?”

“Do you expect Zhang Ruochen to come forward to face 30 million Infernal Court soldiers of Saint level?

“True. Infernal Court hates Zhang Ruochen to the core. If he dares to show himself at Central Imperial City, the army of Infernal Court will certainly cut him into pieces. He must have found a place to hide now. Maybe he has already left Kunlun secretly.”

All kinds of voices sounded in Grand Terminal of Merits. Most of them were angry.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. He did not expect himself to be the center of discussion at this time. So many were targeting him as if they had a deep hatred for him.

If nothing went wrong, most of the people who sneered at him were sided with Heavenly Realm. They would not let go of any opportunity to mock him.

After waiting for a long time, Zhang Ruochen finally entered the dimensional teleportation array.

A white light flashed, Zhang Ruochen and a large group of Celestial Court cultivators disappeared from Grand Terminal of Merits.

When they could see their surroundings clearly, they were already in the Sub-Terminal of Merits in Central Imperial City.

Fortunately, they had built a Sub-Terminal of Merits in Central Imperial City. Otherwise, Central Imperial City would have been completely isolated from the outside world.

“Central Imperial City.” Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed as he had mixed feelings.

This was the second time he had set foot in Central Imperial City since his rebirth. Even though it had been many years, the things that had happened last time were still vivid in his mind, just like yesterday.

At that time, Chi Yao had used him to perfect her state of mind, so she could overcome her final tribulation—the Love Tribulation—to attain godhood.

In a fit of anger, he had rushed to the gate of Ziwei Palace and defeated the nine Realm Bearers by himself.

It was also at that time that he had cut off his ties with Huang Yanchen. Since then, they had become strangers.

As Zhang Ruochen arrived at Central Imperial City again, he could not help but feel emotional. His calm mind was shaken. There were many things that he could not let go.

Walking out of the Sub-Terminal of Merit, Zhang Ruochen saw a bleak scene.

The prosperous scene of the past had disappeared. A stifling atmosphere enveloped the entire imperial city. It was suffocating.

Central Imperial City was huge. Over the past 800 years, it had been continuously expanded and divided into dozens of districts. Each district was comparable to a metro city inhabited by hundreds of millions of people.

But now, Central Imperial City seemed to be relatively desolate. The reason was that in order to prepare for the war, those who were yet to attain Sainthood had been relocated.

After all, there were more than 30 million soldiers at Sainthood surrounding the city. Once the city was breached, those who had not attained Sainthood would not be able to resist at all. They would only be sending themselves to their deaths in vain.

There were not many Saint-level cultivators in Kunlun to begin with, so Central Imperial City had almost become the world of cultivators from different Macroworlds and Microworlds of Celestial Court.

“The sacred medicine is mine. No one should take it.”

Just as he was thinking, a huge commotion appeared not far away.

Zhang Ruochen turned his head and saw a group of Saint-level cultivators fighting for a brilliant and lustrous sacred medicine.

Central Imperial City was the gathering place of all the spiritual veins in Kunlun. It was a place to seize the treasures of heavens and earth. Since the re-awakening of Kunlun, a large number of rare and valuable medicinal herbs were born every day, including many very old sacred medicine. There were even 100,000-year-old ancient sacred medicine and Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herbs.

In the past, Central Imperial City was still under the control of the imperial court. Although there were cultivators from Celestial Court managed to enter the place, most of the treasures were seized by the imperial court.

However, as the situation in Kunlun changed, with increasing number of cultivators from Celestial Court at Central Imperial City. The treasures that the imperial court could seize became fewer and fewer.

Not long after, a Six-Step Saint King had snatched the 70,000-year-old sacred medicine.

“Once I refine this sacred medicine, my cultivation will be greatly improved. This trip was not in vain.” The Six-Step Saint King who had obtained the sacred medicine could not help but laugh.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but shake his head slightly. ‘Most of the cultivators of Celestial Court are here for the treasures of Kunlun. How many of them are sincerely fighting against Infernal Court?’

It was a pipe dream to rely on the cultivators of Celestial Court to protect Central Imperial City and the entire Kunlun.

To put it bluntly, most of the cultivators of Celestial Court, like the cultivators of Infernal Court, were plunderers who plundered the resources of many macroworlds.

Those cultivators from powerful realms did not care about the inferior realms’ life and death. They were happy to make these realms Battlefields of Merits one after another so that they could plunder more resources.

Many macroworlds joined Celestial Court to seek protection from Celestial Court. However, in the end, they became sacrifices.

For example, the ancestral spirit world, which had been broken into pieces, was chosen by the Heavenly Court world as the battlefield to fight against Infernal Court. Billions of lives were buried, and even deities died.

In Western Universe alone, there were ten World Battlefields. After one was broken, a new one would be created.

After so many years, countless macroworlds had been shattered into cosmic dust.

This was the law of the jungle. All the rules were set by the strong. The weak could not resist. Struggling to survive was their only choice.

Unknowingly, Zhang Ruochen arrived in front of Ziwei Palace in the center of the Imperial City.

He did not come here to reminisce about old times. He wanted to see Divine Scripture Maiden so he could get a better picture of the current situation.

Of course, he also came here to see Chi Kongyue.

If possible, Zhang Ruochen wanted to take Chi Kongyue away so that she could stay far away from any harm.

Swoosh–
At this moment, a bright Saint light cut through the sky and flew directly toward Ziwei Palace.

In the blink of an eye, the Saint light appeared in front of Ziwei Palace. It was an ancient Saint Chariot with colorful lights. It gave off an extremely holy vibe, as if it had been used by a deity.

Zhang Ruochen then saw a handsome and charming man walk out of the Saint Chariot. He was donned in a brocade robe made of natural silk with a jade fan in his hand; he had a noble demeanor. Anyone who stood in front of him would feel inferior.

Then another person walked out. It was a stunning beauty. Her skin was flawless, her body statuesque. It was as if she were a sculpture made of crystal clear jade. Her scent was alluring, her temperament gentle and elegant.

“The Nine-heavens Maiden.”

It was not the first time Zhang Ruochen had seen the Nine-heavens Maiden—the single entity merged by nine maidens. He was very familiar with her.

Central Imperial City was in a critical situation. Hence, instead of becoming nine individuals, the Nine-heavens Maiden had to stay as a single entity, so she was powerful enough to handle any unexpected situations.

The leading ‘personality’ of the Nine-heavens Maiden now was obviously Divine Scripture Maiden. She had a refined temperament that was not found in the other eight maidens.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the handsome gentleman. He was quite curious about the man’s identity and background, as well as the reason he was with the Nine-heavens Maiden.

Chapter 2151: Fish in Troubled Waters

In front of the colorful ancient Saint Chariot, a handsome man of great radiance stood opposite the graceful Nine-heavens Maiden. Both of them had a sacred and noble temperament. Together, they looked like a great couple.

The handsome man’s warm smile made people feel comfortable. “Miss Nalan, I am sincere. My words are as true as the needle to the pole. I believe that Kunlun needs our help at this time. I hope that you will consider my proposal carefully,” said the man.

As he spoke, the handsome man reached out his hand, wanting to hold the Nine-heavens Maiden’s hand.

The Nine-heavens Maiden slightly turned away from the handsome man and avoided his hand. She replied with a faint smile, “Now that I’m aware of your feelings, the nine of us will definitely consider your proposal seriously. I will give you a satisfactory answer.”

“That would be great. Please be rest assured, Miss Nalan. We have already mobilized an army with the cultivational rank of Sainthood. It will arrive at Kunlun very soon. We will definitely be able to protect the imperial city.” The handsome man retracted his hand with a smile on his face.

The Nine-heavens Maiden said, “Thank you, Akash.”

“We have been on good terms with Kunlun for generations, so we will not watch Kunlun destroyed by Infernal Court. Moreover, you don’t have to be this polite with me.” The smile on the handsome man’s face became even brighter.

After saying a few more words, the handsome man bade goodbye to the Nine-heavens Maiden. He unhurriedly got into the ancient Saint Chariot and left.

The handsome man had never given Zhang Ruochen, who disguised as a gentleman, a glance. He basically ignored his presence.

The Nine-heavens Maiden, on the other hand, had a change in her expression the moment she saw Zhang Ruochen. She seemed to have noticed him.

Zhang Ruochen only exchanged a glance with the Nine-heavens Maiden. Then, he performed some techniques and left quickly.

Seeing this, the Nine-heavens Maiden hesitated for a moment and then chased after him.

Zhang Ruochen stopped by a clear stream dozens of miles away from Ziwei Palace, standing under a green willow tree.

It was very quiet here. There was no one around. It felt like he was no longer in the imperial city.

“You’re finally here.”

A soft and tender voice came from behind Zhang Ruochen.

The saintly and flawless-looking Nine-heavens Maiden appeared. She came over like a goddess descending to the mortal world.

Apparently, the Nine-heavens Maiden had recognized Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen turned around and looked at the Nine-heavens Maiden. “How could I not come? Why didn’t you send me a message earlier?”

“I just didn’t want to make things difficult for you,” the Nine-heavens Maiden sighed.

She knew that for Zhang Ruochen, Central Imperial City was filled with sad memories. It was likely the last place in Kunlun that he would want to go.

Of course, she also knew that as long as she sent him a message, he would rush here without hesitation, even if he was against Imperial Court.

Zhang Ruochen did not continue to dwell on the matter. Instead, he asked, “Who was that person just now?”

There were many talented cultivators of Celestial Court who lay low. No one knew how many talents there were, and it was even more impossible to recognize all of them.

The handsome man who was with the Nine-heavens Maiden just now had a very deep cultivation base and outstanding temperament. He was definitely not an ordinary person. However, Zhang Ruochen did not have the slightest impression of him. He was most likely a talented cultivator who lay low in a certain Microworld.

Hesitation appeared in the Nine-heavens Maiden’eyes. After a moment of silence, she said, “In Celestial Court, he is known as Akash. He comes from Megrez and is the descendant of Navagraha.”

Megrez, a Macroworld, was no small fry. It was ranked in the top five among the many Macroworlds in the Western universe. It had an extremely deep foundation.

Navagraha was a prominent legendary figure in the history of Megrez. He was the only one in the universe who could cultivate energies of the Sun, the moon, Rāhu, Ketu, Venus (metal), Jupiter (wood), Mercury (water), Mars (fire), and Saturn (earth) to their perfection and become a Master of cultivational Path in Megrez. He was invincible.

However, the war of gods 100,000 years ago was too tragic. Thousands of Macroworlds had been destroyed, and more than half of the deities in Celestial Court had died, including Navagraha.

“Is he here for Navagraha’s Tears?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Legend said when Navagraha died, nine drops of tears fell and turned into meteors, falling on Kunlun. They were then known as Navagraha’s Tears.

Since Akash was the descendant of Navagraha, it was inevitable for Zhang Ruochen to associate him with Navagraha’s Tears.

Especially when Akash had directly approached the Nine-heavens Maiden, his objective was even clearer.

Navagraha’s Tears was a legacy left behind by Navagraha. It was of great importance. Megrez certainly would not want it to continue to be away from them, not to mention to allow it to be snatched away by Infernal Court.

Zhang Ruochen had noticed that the Nine-heavens Maiden had different physiques. Although nine separate entities were practicing different powers, they could merge into a single entity. It was very likely that they had obtained the legendary Navagraha's Tears.

The Nine-heavens Maiden nodded and said, "Yes, he wants to take back Navagraha's Tears."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen frowned slightly.

He could see that Akash was very powerful. In addition, he was backed by a huge force—Megrez. Hence, it should not be difficult for them to take back Navagraha's Tears.

However, Akash did not snatch it away from the Nine-heavens Maiden by force. Instead, he tried to please her attentively. He must have some other motives.

"What exactly does Akash want you to consider?" Zhang Ruochen asked seriously.

The Nine-heavens Maiden did not answer immediately. Instead, she walked to the stream step by step and stood quietly for a long time with a complicated look in her eyes. "Actually, it's nothing. You don't need to worry. I can handle it," she said.

"Since you don't want to tell me, I'll have to ask Akash myself," Zhang Ruochen said.

"Why would you do that?"

The Nine-heavens Maiden turned around. "Okay, I'll let you know. He wants to tie knot with the nine of us. If we say yes, not only that he will not take back Navagraha's Tears, Megrez world will give Kunlun support."

Zhang Ruochen said, "How 'generous' Akash is. He wants both Navagraha's Tears and women. What a good plan."

Seeing that Kunlun was in imminent danger, Akash wanted to take advantage of it. His methods were extremely despicable.

One would never expect that a legendary figure like Navagraha would have such as shameless descendant.

In fact, it was normal. The Nine-heavens Maiden's beauty, temperament, and talent were outstanding that many would be tempted. Taking nine women as wives at the same time would be like a dream come true for any man.

Moreover, the Nine-heavens Maiden had outstanding talent in cultivation. If she joined Megrez, they could nurture her to become their powerhouses. This would greatly increase the strength of Megrez.

After all, the nine of them had the potential to attain Godhood in the future with the magical power of Navagraha's Tears and their own talents.

"What are you going to do? Did you agree to his conditions?" Zhang Ruochen asked again.

The Nine-heavens Maiden pondered for a long time. She stared at Zhang Ruochen with her beautiful misty eyes and said, "Am I that stupid in your eyes?"

Then, she continued, "The ruler of the Western universe is Heavenly Realm. Even if we agree with Akash's conditions, how much support can Megrez give Kunlun? Even if they were not afraid of offending the Heaven World, they still had to consider their own losses. He just wanted to take gain—Navagraha's Tears and the nine of us—without bloodshed."

"I would rather marry you than marry him."

Zhang Ruochen did not have any other thoughts after hearing the last sentence. He knew that those words were blurted by Divine Scripture Maiden or the Nine-heavens Maiden out of anger.

"Navagraha's Tears have already merged with our Saint Souls. It can only be taken away from us when we are dead.

"For now, we can still pretend to be subservient to him. When the time comes for a showdown, there will be an end to this." The Nine-heavens Maiden sighed faintly.

When Zhang Ruochen heard her, his heart sank. He had not expected Navagraha's Tears would mean life or death for the Nine-heavens Maiden.

There could be only one "ending".

Since they would not submit themselves to Akash, they could only die.

The decision was either dead or alive. No wonder Akash was so confident. It turned out that he was using the Nine-heavens Maiden's life and the fate of Kunlun as his bargaining chip.

"Why didn't you tell me? You should know that there is no way I will stand idly by if you are in trouble."Zhang Ruochen stared at her.

The Nine-heavens Maiden's heart trembled slightly. "Please don't do anything reckless. Megrez is a very powerful Macroworld dominated by the descendants of Navagraha. Don't you think you have enough enemies on your plate? I have a way to deal with him. You don't have to interfere," she said.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the Nine-heavens Maiden's soft hand and pulled her to his side. He pulled her so hard that she leaned against his chest, standing on her tiptoes. He squinted and looked at her, "So what if he is the descendant of Navagraha? So what if he is from Megrez? He can't have his ways in Kunlun."

The Nine-heavens Maiden couldn't break free from Zhang Ruochen, so she could only give up and glare at him resentfully.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen realized that he had been too impudent as he had been emotional just now. He quickly let go of her hand and said softly, "I'm sorry… How are things in Central Imperial City?"

"Not too good. Although the imperial city is protected by layers of Arrays, the ten High-Saint Array Masters of Infernal Court are all very powerful. They might be able to break the Arrays if they have enough time."

"Moreover, the imperial city is filled with mélange of cultivators—good and bad people. The hidden crisis was big," the Nine-heavens Maiden said with a serious look in her eyes.

Zhang Ruochen understood her words clearly. There were Infernal Court cultivators lurking in Eastern Region Holy City. Central Imperial City was probably no exception.

Of course, the threat did not only come from the lurking cultivators of Infernal Court, but also from the forces hostile to Kunlun. If they did something at this time, it might bring a fatal blow to Central Imperial City.

Thinking of this, Zhang Ruochen was even more worried about Chi Kongyue. "I want to meet Chi Kongyue," he said.

“Kongyue is not in Ziwei Palace, but has gone to Prime Minister’s Syzygy Mansion. A meeting will be held in a day or two. Leaders from all walks of life will attend to discuss strategies to deal with the enemy.”

“During the meeting, young prodigies from different realms will gather and exchange ideas. Kongyue wants to use this opportunity to try to improve her strength,” said the Nine-heavens Maiden.

Zhang Ruochen was deep in thought. There would probably be many leaders of realms attending the meeting. None of them would be weak. Even Wang Shiqi, the Prime Minister, might not be able to control the situation if something happened.

When one was not powerful enough, they were destined to have no voice in any matters. At that time, Imperial Court and even Kunlun could be put in a submissive position.

In fact, at this stage, Imperial Court no longer had the magisterial authority. In the entire Central Imperial City, cultivators from different realms could enter all places at will except for Ziwei Palace.

After sending the Nine-heavens Maiden back to Ziwei Palace, Zhang Ruochen left for Syzygy Mansion, wanting to meet Chi Kongyue as soon as possible.

It had been a long time since he had last seen Chi Kongyue in the Celestial Domain of Truth. He had made a promise to Chi Kongyue but he had yet to fulfil it.

Because the council was about to begin, the door of Syzygy Mansion was open to welcome leaders from all Celestial Court realms.

As soon as he arrived outside Syzygy Mansion, Zhang Ruochen saw many glamorous carriages coming in an endless stream. Some of them were even pulled by sacred beasts with the cultivation level of Saint Kinghood. Their cultivation levels were on par with Nine-Step Saint King’s. In other words, the figures inside these carriages were of high status.

Of course, there were also some cultivators who did not care about ostentation and directly came to Syzygy Mansion.

Those who were qualified to participate in the council were all leaders of the top powerful realms. Each of them had extraordinary strength. It was a rare occasion to have so many important figures gathered together.

Only Kunlun, an eternal Macroworld, had a strong attraction to foreign cultivators. Not only that it had attracted cultivators from ordinary and weak realms, it had also attracted those powerful Macroworlds' top elites yearning for fortuitous encounters.

Zhang Ruochen performed a Dimensional technique and quietly entered Syzygy Mansion without leaving any trace behind.

Before long, Zhang Ruochen found Chi Kongyue's location.

Apart from the nine grand halls, Syzygy Mansion also had many pavilions. They were mainly scattered around a Spiritual Lake. Along with the mist, they created a dreamlike scenery.

The location where all the young talented cultivators from all realms exchanged ideas was above the Spiritual Lake.

Despite being young age, their cultivation level was above the Saint Kinghood. According to their cultivation, these young geniuses were scattered on small islands.

Swoosh–
Zhang Ruochen appeared on one of the small isles. As if he were invisible, his presence did not draw any attention from cultivators.

Dozens of young masters had gathered on this small isle, including Chi Kongyue.

Compared to when she was in the Celestial Domain of Truth, Chi Kongyue had changed a lot. She was no longer an 11 or 12-year-old girl. Instead, she was graceful, her slender body emitting Saint light. She was a beautiful teenage girl. She bore some resemblance to young Chi Yao.

Needless to say, Chi Kongyue must have entered Seal of the Celestial Wheel for self-cultivation so she could grow up faster.

Zhang Ruochen could imagine that Chi Kongyue must have gone through a lot of hardships to attain her current achievements.

At this moment, Chi Kongyue was sitting alone in front of a jade table. There was no one around her, so she looked quite lonely.

The dozens of geniuses were chatting happily, but none of them was willing to talk to Chi Kongyue. Even though they often looked at her, their eyes were full of ridicule and disdain.

Seeing this, Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but feel sorry for her. He really wanted to show himself and take her away.

At this moment, three young geniuses entered the pavilion. Their looks varied widely as they were of different clans: angel, giant, and elf.

Apparently, these three talented cultivators were from Heavenly Realm.

Seeing the three of them, many cultivators in the pavilion immediately stood up to welcome them.

"Bolan, Pallas, and Fairy Yan Yu, you've finally arrived. We've been waiting for you for a long time."

The group of talented cultivators put on smiles on their faces and seemed very polite.

Putting aside the background of the trio, their strength alone was enough to make people revere them.

This was especially true for Bolan. He was a Scion with a powerful bloodline and extraordinary talent. He had unlimited potential.

Bolan was handsome. His long blond hair flowing in the wind; his pupils were golden as well; he had two pairs of platinum wings on his back, exuding a holy radiance. There was also an indescribable noble temperament that made people feel inferior about themselves.

Bolan smiled and said, "I've just returned from the Battlefield of Merits. Sorry for the wait."

"With your strength, you must have killed many Infernal Court elites this time. It's only a matter of time before you make it onto Saint King Merit List."

"That's for sure. Bolan is a rare prodigy among Angels. If he was born a hundred years earlier, he would have become the most powerful elite below Supreme Sainthood, and his fame would spread throughout Celestial Court and Infernal Court."

Everyone started to speak. All they said were compliments.

When Bolan heard these words, the smile on his face became even brighter. It was obvious that he enjoyed listening to them.

Turning his gaze, Bolan suddenly saw Chi Kongyue sitting alone at the side. Malice flashed in his eyes. He smiled and walked over.

Chapter 2152: Mocker Asking for Insult

In the blink of an eye, Bolan walked up to Chi Kongyue and looked down at her with a smirk in his eyes.

Chi Kongyue was still sitting at the same place, quietly drinking her tea, ignoring Bolan's presence.

"How insolent. How dare you not stand up to greet Bolan when you see him coming over. You have no manners at all," a cultivator behind Bolan berated.

Bolan waved his hand and said, "Don't bother about it. We don't expect a bastard to know manners."

"Who are you calling a bastard?"

Chi Kongyue stood up and looked straight at Bolan.

Bolan did not bat an eyelid. "Who doesn't know that you are the bastard child of Zhang Ruochen and Empress Chi Yao?" he sneered and said. "You do really look like Zhang Ruochen."

"Not only does she look like Zhang Ruochen, but she also has the same physical condition as Zhang Ruochen. Five-element Chaotic Body is rare. Too bad she's a bastard child." Pallas, the giant beside Bolan, nodded.

Hearing this, Chi Kongyue could not help but feel angry no matter how good her manners were. Streaks of Five-element Chaotic Qi flowed out of her body. Each of them was extremely heavy, as if it was going to collapse the surrounding space.

Seeing Chi Kongyue's reaction, Bolan sat down leisurely and said with a faint smile, "How could a high and mighty God commit herself to a low-rank Saint and give birth to a bastard? What a big joke."

"I really 'admire' Empress Chi Yao for being that desperate. Did all men in Kunlun die?"

Supposedly, Bolan would not have dared to say such blasphemous words, but now that Kunlun had become a Battlefield of Merits, the deities were forbidden to interfere.

Moreover, Empress Chi Yao must have too many things on her plate. She did not have the time to find out if someone was blaspheming.

“Hahaha.”

All of a sudden, the geniuses behind Bolan burst into laughter.

Chi Kongyue’s body could not help but tremble slightly. It was not because of fear but because of anger.

She could not tolerate being called a bastard child and the insults against her most respected father and mother.

Ever since she met Zhang Ruochen in the Celestial Domain of Truth, Chi Kongyue had seriously investigated her origin. She was almost certain that her biological mother was her most respected mentor, Empress Chi Yao. She just did not have the courage to meet her mother.

Or rather, Empress Chi Yao did not want to admit it.

“Shut up.”

Chi Kongyue growled. She gathered streams of Five-element Chaotic Qi in her hand and launched a palm strike at Bolan.

Seeing this, Bolan raised his eyebrows. “You want to fight? A bastard like you dare to compete with me. C’mon, I can even defeat your dad Zhang Ruochen at the same cultivation rank,” he snorted.

As he spoke, Bolan mobilized the Saint Qi in his body and condensed Saint light to meet her palm strike directly.

The geniuses behind Bolan retreated one after another to keep a distance from the two to avoid being affected.

BANG!
The Five-element Chaotic Qi and the Saint light collided, releasing a powerful impact that spread in all directions.

Fortunately, the array formation set up at the Spiritual Lake was powerful that even a Nine-Step Saint King would find it difficult to destroy it.

After the impact, there was no damage on the pavilion building. However, all tables and chairs inside had been turned into ashes.

Swoosh!
Chi Kongyue and Bolan rushed out of the pavilion at the same time and appeared on the misty Spiritual Lake. They stood facing each other, emitting powerful auras.

At this moment, Chi Kongyue stood on the Spiritual Lake. Her purple clothes fluttered in the wind, and Jade Swallow Pendant on her neck emitted a strange glow. She had a cold and dignified temperament similar to that of Empress Chi Yao, radiating ruler demeanor.

A dense Five-element Chaotic Qi surged out from Chi Kongyue and gradually submerged her body. It was as if she wanted to merge with the five elements of the world completely.

Meanwhile, the majestic power of Light emerged from Bolan's body. Two pairs of platinum wings spread out, and each feather emitted a holy radiance.

"Bolan, teach this bastard a good lesson. Let her understand that she has to respect us, the cultivators from Heavenly Realm. Even if she were Empress Chi Yao, she had to revere Heavenly Realm," said Pallas, the giant, in a rough voice.

Bolan stared at Chi Kongyue. He said contemptuously, "Kunlun is already at the verge of its doom. It has to rely on Heavenly Realm to survive. You bastard, you don't know where your place is. Kneel down immediately and serve me as your master, so you can still live even after Kunlun is destroyed."

Most of the cultivators in the pavilion were gloating. A few of them remained silent and shook their heads.

Anyone could see that Bolan was deliberately looking for trouble with Chi Kongyue. He was trying to provoke her by humiliating her.

It could not be helped because Zhang Ruochen had offended Heavenly Realm too much and caused them a great loss. Empress Chi Yao, similarly, did not submit to them.

Heavenly Realm could not do anything to Zhang Ruochen and Empress Chi Yao for the time being, so they could only vent their anger on Chi Kongyue.

Although some people sympathized with Chi Kongyue, they did not dare to say anything. With the current power of Heavenly Realm, not many dared to offend those cultivators.

Since Bolan had already made his move, Chi Kongyue would probably be at a disadvantage.

Bolan was now a Five-Step Saint King. He had a strong physique. It was a True God's Body and Supreme Perfection Physique at the same time. On top of that, he was a cultivator of Path of Light.

Chi Kongyue had just become Four-Step Saint King not long ago. Although she owned a Supreme Perfection Physique, her cultivation base was far inferior to Bolan.

Bolan had never lost in any single fight against others at the same cultivation rank, let alone Chi Kongyue whose cultivation rank was lower than his.

Thus, no matter how one looked at it, Chi Kongyue was bound to lose this battle. Although Bolan would not kill her, he would definitely make her suffer.

Chi Kongyue's aura grew more intimidating. "Kunlun was eternal and indestructible. Compared to ours, your Heavenly Realm is nothing. My father alone can make your Heavenly Realm suffer. You'll have to pay the price for what you've said." Her tone was icy cold.

"Zhang Ruochen is just a clown. If I was born in the same era as him, I could easily defeat him with one hand." Bolan was disdainful.

Chi Kongyue did not say further. With a wave of her hand, a large amount of Five-element Chaotic Qi flew out and condensed into a majestic five-colored sacred mountain and pressed down on Bolan.

"Petty tricks."

Bolan smirked. His majestic Light power transformed into a Saint light sword and slashed toward the five-colored sacred mountain.

Crack!
The sword of Light was invincible. It easily cut the five-colored sacred mountain into two.

At this moment, ripples suddenly appeared on the calm lake. A huge whirlpool emerged under Bolan and released a terrifying suction force.

At the same time, the green and white Divine Purification Flame was released from Chi Kongyue's body. It turned into a fire dragon and roared toward Bolan.

Seeing Chi Kongyue's technique, Zhang Ruochen could not help but nod. He was very proud of her.

The unique feature of Five-element Chaotic Body was that it allowed the cultivator to control the five elements and practice all kinds of Saint Techniques of the five elements.

Chi Kongyue was a rare talent for being able to advance Divine Purification Flame to Envoy level so quickly. She was not any less than Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen did not plan to make a move for the time being. Bolan was just a Scion of Angels. He believed that Chi Kongyue could handle him.

After more than a hundred rounds, Chi Kongyue had the upper hand. Moreover, she had only relied on her Five-element Chaotic Body instead of the power of Time.

Suddenly, a world phantom appeared behind Chi Kongyue. It was formed from the Five-element Chaotic Qi.

Instantly, the entire space of the Spiritual Lake was locked down.

Chi Kongyue mobilized her Precepts and Saint Qi to condense a palm strike made of five elements. It was as if she had controlled all five elements of heaven and earth with just one hand.

Bolan's expression changed slightly. He quickly retracted his platinum wings to protect himself.

BANG!
The five elements palm strike hit the platinum wings and forced Bolan to take a few steps backward. The wings could still block the attack.

Just as Bolan was about to heave a sigh of relief, the palm strike's attack power suddenly increased by several times.

"Path of Truth." Bolan was shocked.

Whack!
The platinum wings were broken, and a large amount of Saint blood splashed out. Feathers flew all over the sky.

“Ahhhhhhhh—”

Bolan let out a painful scream. Like a kite with a broken string, he flew backward.

In the end, Bolan crashed into a pavilion and finally stabilized his posture.

Bolan was covered in blood. His wings were broken, his arms were crushed, and there was a dent in his chest. Blood kept spurting out of his mouth, mixed with many pieces of his internal organs.

“How could she be so strong?” Bolan stared at Chi Kongyue, his eyes full of resentment and fear.

Ever since he was born, he had never been defeated. He was said to be invincible among those of the same cultivation rank. Never had he expected he would be defeated by a “Bastard” whom he looked down upon.

Bolan could not accept this outcome. He was almost driven mad by hatred.

He had wanted to humiliate Chi Kongyue, but he was the one who got defeated in the end. No matter how it seemed, he was the one asking for insults.

“How is it possible? Bolan lost!”

“It’s Path of Truth. She can sextuple the attack power of a Saint Technique. Is she going to become the next Zhang Ruochen?”

…

The geniuses watching the battle were all shocked.

Thinking of how they had mocked Chi Kongyue before, they could not help but tremble.

No matter where you were, strength was the most important. It was a fact that would never change.

Swoosh

Pallas and Yan Yu—the elf at Saint Kinghood—showed up beside Bolan in a flash.

“You’ve gone too far!”

Pallas, the giant, shouted. He took out a 30-meter-long giant ax and chopped it down.

Yan Yu held a staff made of Saint Jade in her hand and chanted an incantation. She mobilized the energy of Frost and made the entire Spiritual Lake frozen in an instant.

Thousands of frost blades appeared. Each of them was extremely sharp and could cut through everything. They charged at Chi Kongyue in all directions.

Chi Kongyue was not afraid of the furious attacks of the two. She raised both of his hands and released Divine Purification Flame.

The giant ax was burnt red by Divine Purification Flame. It was so hot that Pallas had no choice but to let go.

The frost blades that filled the sky were all melted and then evaporated.

Divine Purification Flame condensed into two pillars of fire and attacked Pallas and Yan Yu respectively.

Bang!

Pallas and Yan Yu were sent flying at the same time. Their bodies were burnt by Divine Purification Flame. Their injuries were no less severe than Bolan’s.

Seeing Chi Kongyue walking over step by step, Bolan and the other two were terrified.

“What are you trying to do? If you dare to touch us, no one will be able to protect you.” said Bolan who put on a stern face while his heart was trembling in fear.

The other geniuses were also very nervous. If Chi Kongyue accidentally killed Bolan and the other two, everyone present would probably be implicated.

A powerful force appeared and enveloped Bolan and the other two. It gathered together and restricted their strength and mobility.

Slap! Slap! Slap!
Instantly, Chi Kongyue swung her palm and gave the three of them a hard slap on their faces as soon as she approached them.

“So what if you are the geniuses of Heaven Realm? My father can suppress you till you are out of breath, so can I. Kunlun is not a place where you can act as you please.”

Chi Kongyue slapped them while shouting at them coldly.

In the blink of an eye, Bolan and the other two had been beaten until their mouths were bleeding and their teeth were falling out. Their faces were swollen, as big as those of pigs.

Bolan and the other two’s eyes were filled with hatred and anger. However, they were helpless and unable to fight back at all.

Finally, Chi Kongyue paused. She stopped slapping them. However, a Saint Sword appeared in her hand.

Swing!
Chi Kongyue’s eyes were cold. She suddenly wielded her sword, and thousands of streaks of sharp Sword Qi burst out.

Snikt!
Pallas’ body was shattered into a rain of blood.

“Serve you right for your blasphemy against a deity,” Chi Kongyue said coldly.

Then, Chi Kongyue pointed the Saint Sword at Bolan and Yan Yu, emitting a terrifying murderous intent. Her temperament at this moment bore more resemblance to Empress Chi Yao’s.

“Kneel down immediately and apologize. Otherwise, you will die.”Chi Kongyue looked at Bolan and Yan Yu coldly. Her face was emotionless like a reaper.

Bolan dared to humiliate her and her parents in public. His action was unforgivable even if he were a deity from Heavenly Realm, let alone he was just a Scion.

In the pavilion, everyone was stunned. They could not believe what they had just witnessed. She had killed a talented cultivator from Heavenly Realm, and now she was forcing them to kneel. Just how insane she was.

‘She is indeed Zhang Ruochen’s daughter.’

Many people thought to themselves.

Zhang Ruochen and Chi Kongyue were both so unscrupulous and decisive. No one would believe that they were not father and daughter.

Bolan and Yan Yu were both angry and shocked. They had never thought that Chi Kongyue would actually dare to kill them. It made their blood froze.

However, it was impossible for them to kneel down in public and apologize to Chi Kongyue. It would be a shame to Heavenly Realm.

“Eh?” Chi Kongyue suddenly sensed something and moved away.

At this moment, a powerful aura emerged beside Bolan and Yan Yu.

This person was a middle-aged man. He was tall and burly. He had two pairs of snow-white wings on his back and wore silver armor. He looked extraordinary.

Seeing Bolan and Yan Yu’s severe injuries, the middle-aged man frowned. He quickly took out two sacred healing pills and fed them to them.

“Your Highness, what happened?” the middle-aged man asked with concern.

Bolan struggled to sit up, he said indignantly, “I came to Central Imperial City to help Kunlun resist the invasion of Infernal Court. I wanted to have a good talk with the geniuses from all realms, but I didn’t expect Chi Kongyue to attack me like she had gone mad suddenly. She injured Fairy Yan Yu and me in a despicable way and even killed Pallas cruelly.

“Just now, Chi Kongyue even forced Fairy Yan Yu and me to kneel down. Thinking that I have to face such humiliation after risking my life killing enemies on the battlefield, I’m really disappointed. Kunlun is not worth helping.”

When Bolan made up the story, he looked very emotional, as if he were the victim telling the truth.

The middle-aged man stood up and looked at Chi Kongyue. His eyes flashed with a cold light. “Chi Kongyue, How dare you go against laws of Celestial Court and kill your allies? Do you really think that no one would dare to touch you just because you are Empress Chi Yao’s daughter?” His tone was cold.

As he spoke, the middle-aged man released an intimidating aura. He was actually a Nine-Step Saint King with profound cultivation.

Chi Kongyue endured the intimidating Saint aura from the Nine-Step Saint King. Her slender body looked as fragile as a leaf in the wind. It was as if she could be crushed at any moment. However, she did not show any signs of weakness. “You know very well what the truth is. Don’t bother to make up such dignified excuse when you deliberately want to bully the weak. Don’t you ever think that just because you are a Nine-Step Saint King, I would be afraid of you.” Her voice was loud and clear.

“You are ill-mannered. I must teach you a lesson today.” The wings on the middle-aged man’s back fluttered as he slowly flew into the air.

Before her voice trailed off, the middle-aged man stretched out a hand. A glow of Saint light emerged, and his hand grew enormous to the length of 300 meters, trying to grab Chi Kongyue.

As a Nine-Step Saint King, he did not see Chi Kongyue as a worthy opponent.

He thought that even if Zhang Ruochen and Chi Kongyue were in the same cultivation rank as him, they were not his match.

Chi Kongyue showed no fear. She moved his finger and instantly drew a complicated inscription, which landed on Jade Swallow Pendant.

Swoosh!

Jade Swallow Pendant emitted a dazzling light and signs of ancient, powerful energy. It was like a powerful ancient deity had been revived. It gave off a vast divine power that could sweep throughout heaven and earth.

A tall and mighty illusory image of a deity descended behind Chi Kongyue, stepping on the heavens, looking down at the universe.

Strange marks appeared from Jade Swallow Pendant, interweaving to form a divine defense that completely enveloped Chi Kongyue.

BANG!!!
The middle-aged man's large hand was blocked. It could not touch Chi Kongyue.

Instead, a surge of divine force was transmitted over, sending the middle-aged man to take a few steps back.

The middle-aged man's heart trembled. He had seen more than one deity in Heavenly Realm, but he had never encountered such a mighty divine force.

Needless to say, Jade Swallow Pendant on Chi Kongyue's neck was definitely something special. It had an astonishing origin.

Outwardly, the middle-aged man appeared very calm. He snorted coldly."It's just a mere streak of divine force. Don't you think that I can't do anything to you? After all, it is not your power. How many times you think you can use it?" said the man.

Chi Kongyue said nothing. Instead, she secretly released her spiritual power to control the energy of Jade Swallow Pendant.

Swoosh!

With a flash of white light, Chi Kongyue's figure disappeared without a trace.

In an instant, she appeared beside the middle-aged man with a Saint sword in her hand, charging at him as quick as lightning.

"She is fast."The middle-aged man was slightly shocked.

Chi Kongyue's explosive speed was not slower than any Nine-Step Saint Kings.

Furthermore, Chi Kongyue's sword strike made the middle-aged man feel intimidated.

The reason was that Chi Kongyue had used the power of Time on her sword technique.

The Time around the Saint sword became chaotic.

The middle-aged man did not have enough time to think. Immediately, he released powerful Saint Qi to form layers of defense.

Crack!

Chi Kongyue's Saint Sword pierced through dozens of layers of Saint light, but it was blocked in the end.

Taking this opportunity, the middle-aged man stretched out a hand and pointed at Chi Kongyue.

A dazzling bright Saint light shot out from the middle-aged man's fingertip. It gave off a destructive aura that even the surrounding space seemed to crack.

The fingerstrike was an intermediate Saint technique. When it was executed by a Nine-Step Saint King, its power was very shocking.

At such a close distance, Chi Kongyue did not have enough time to avoid it. She could only mobilize the Precepts of Time she had cultivated to perform her most powerful Sword of Time.

Many Marks of Time appeared and got imprinted in space, causing Time within a radius of several hundred feet to become chaotic,

Creak.
The fingerstrike that the middle-aged man had launched was instantly disintegrated. Marks of Time began to revolve, enveloping the middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man let out a muffled groan as his entire body fell from midair.

Dozens of wounds of varying degrees had been inflicted on his body, fresh blood flowing out from them.

More importantly, the middle-aged man felt that he had been greatly weakened. He had actually lost over two hundred years of his lifespan in an instant.

Seeing this, those who were present could not help but gasp. They were truly flabbergasted.

"Hong Kun is a Nine-Step Saint King who has reached the peak of Greater Precept World. He's just one step away from condensing a Precept Domain. For a cultivator that powerful, how did Chi Kongyue injure him with just one strike?"

“Chi Kongyue performed the same Sword of Time like Zhang Ruochen. Is a Time technique really that terrifying?”

“Impossible. Even if it is a Path of the Ancients, it should not be as heaven-defying as this. Chi Kongyue must have used other techniques that we don’t know. Don’t forget, she is also a deity’s daughter.”

“Chi Kongyue is too terrifying. I hope she won’t vent her anger on us.”

…

All the talented young cultivators whispered. Their emotions were deeply stirred by the outcome, none of them could calm down. They looked at Chi Kongyue in awe.

As for Chi Kongyue, she was also in a daze at this moment. Never had she expected that her Sword of Time would be so powerful. It did not feel like it was from her.

Chapter 2153: False Countercharges

Chi Kongyue was stunned. She looked around as if she was looking for someone.

‘Father, are you here?’ Chi Kongyue guessed in her mind.

Although Sword of Time was a very mysterious and profound sword technique, it was unlikely to be strong enough to defeat Hong Kun with just one strike.

Even though Chi Kongyue knew that Jade Swallow Pendant could be the reason, she hoped that Zhang Ruochen was here to protect her secretly.

Unfortunately, she did not find any trace of Zhang Ruochen after a long search. It made her felt disappointed.

Sensing Chi Kongyue’s gaze, the talented young cultivators became nervous. They were afraid that they would be implicated.

At this moment, Bolan and Yan Yu’s eyes were wide open. They were in disbelief. Even Hong Kun, a Saint King, could not defeat Chi Kongyue.

They had been hoping that Hong Kun would suppress her swiftly so that they could vent their anger. However, never had they seen this coming.

“Let’s go.”

Seeing that the situation had turned against them, Bolan and Yan Yu immediately wanted to retreat.

Hong Kun had removed the restraints on them when he arrived. Furthermore, their injuries were recovering rapidly after consuming the sacred healing pill. Now, the Saint Qi and spiritual power in their bodies could circulate again.

Chi Kongyue roused herself from daze and controlled the power of Jade Swallow Pendant with her spiritual power. She instantly appeared before Bolan and Yan Yu at an incredible speed, pointing her Saint Sword at the two of them.

“You haven’t knelt to apologize. Where do you think you’re going?”

Chi Kongyue emitted a cold murderous intent enveloping Bolan and Yan Yu.

When they sensed her killing intent, they felt a chill in their hearts. They had seen Pallas turned into bloody mist under Chi Kongyue’s sword, and they did not dare to take any chances.

“Don’t think you can do as you please!”

Hong Kun stood up and let out a roar.

He could not back down at a time like this even though he had sustained severe injuries and lost his lifespan. He could not afford to watch Chi Kongyue killing Bolan and Yan Yu.

Furthermore, Hong Kun perceived that there was no way Chi Kongyue was the one who had launched that sword strike and believed that the external energy she used had a limit.

As Hong Kun roared, he took out a miniature palace building made of extremely rare Suet Jade. It was like an exquisite art piece.

Triggered by Saint Qi, the Suet Jade palace expanded rapidly and emitted an incomparably holy light. Tens of thousands of inscriptions interweaved on the surface of the Suet Jade palace and pressed down on Chi Kongyue.

The Suet Jade palace was a Seven-Radiance Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact that had a powerful binding force. Hong Kun had once used it to suppress a Nine-Step Saint King.

As the Suet Jade palace pressed down, the entire Spiritual Lake froze.

Chi Kongyue's body trembled slightly. She felt as if an ancient divine mountain was coming at her, going to crush her.

Chi Kongyue's eyes suddenly became ferocious. The harder her opponent tried to suppress her, the stronger her resistance to submit to them.

As if sensing Chi Kongyue's will, Jade Swallow Pendant unleashed more powerful energy. It was so powerful that even the illusory image of a deity behind her looked more solid. It was as if an ancient deity from a different dimension and time were to descend here.

With that, Chi Kongyue instantly felt much more relaxed. A large amount of Five-element Chaotic Qi circulated in her and overflowed out of her body, condensing into the illusory image of a chaotic realm behind her.

This was the phenomenon caused by Five-element Chaotic Body. Only by cultivating this physique to a certain level could it be condensed.

Legends said when a Five-element Chaotic Body was cultivated to perfection, not only that it would become as strong as a deity's physical body, the illusory realm could turn into an actual realm that could suppress the heavens.

Chi Kongyue believed in Jade Swallow Pendant's mighty defensive power, but she did not want to stay in passive defence mode for long. Be it a Nine-Step Saint King or even a Supreme Saint, she would do her best to fight back.

"Eh?"

Chi Kongyue's heart skipped a beat. She noticed some unusual changes had occurred to the phenomenon she created.

However, she did not have the time to think at such a critical moment because the Suet Jade palace was about to land on her.

The illusory realm of chaos slowly rose to meet the coming Suet Jade palace. The two violently collided.

CRACK!
A cracking sound was heard from the Suet Jade palace. The palace was supposed to be very sturdy, yet several noticeable cracks formed on its surface.

“Oh no.”

Hong Kun’s expression changed. Immediately, he wanted to retrieve the Suet Jade palace.

It was a Seven-Radiance Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact; moreover, it was in the form of a palace building. It was worth more than a hundred million Saint Stones. In fact, Hong Kun had spent a thousand years of savings to obtain it. Hence, he could not afford to watch it get destroyed.

However, Hong Kun was a step slower. The illusory realm of chaos suddenly exploded, releasing an extremely terrifying force.

KABOOM!
After being hit by the impact, the Suet Jade palace immediately exploded, turning into fragments that shot out in all directions.

Tens of thousands of streaks of Five-element Chaotic Qi broke through the obstruction and condensed into an illusory image of a five-colored divine dragon. It looked solid and lifelike, pouncing straight at Hong Kun.

“D*mn it!”

Hong Kun was furious, feeling distressed in bereavement. Never had he expected that a young cultivator would destroy his precious treasure.

Hong Kun did not dare let his guard down in the face of the five-colored divine dragon pouncing at him. He flapped the two pairs of snow-white wings on his back, shooting out feathers like arrows.

Each and every single feather emitted a dazzling Saint light and contained a terrifying destructive power. They were unstoppable.

BOOM!
The feathers exploded one by one, and the vast destructive force drowned the five-colored divine dragon.

Just as Hong Kun was about to heave a sigh of relief, the five-colored divine dragon re-emerged with no visible signs of damage.

There was no way Hong Kun could dodge it at such a close distance. He could only mobilize all the Saint Qi in his body and instantly set up dozens of layers of Saint Qi shields outside his body, ready to take it head-on.

Boom!

When the five-colored divine dragon hit the dozens of Saint Qi shields Hong Kun had set up, they were torn into pieces like paper.

“Hold it.”

Hong Kun growled. He wrapped himself up with his two pairs of folded snow-white wings.

However, he had underestimated the power of the five-colored divine dragon. The snow-white wings could not withstand it either. They were broken in an instant, and a large number of blood-stained feathers flew out.

Hong Kun was once again severely injured. His body was distorted and mangled, and he was no longer in his human form. He was sent into the Spiritual Lake brutally that not even the array formation could block him.

It was not that the array formation of the Spiritual Lake was not strong enough, but the power of the five-colored divine dragon had already surpassed the impact it could sustain. As a result, the formation was forcefully torn open.

In the blink of an eye, the lake water turned blood-red and began to boil.

Every drop of a Saint King’s blood contained a vast amount of energy that an ordinary sacred artifact could not withstand.

If an array formation had not protected the Spiritual Lake, the lake would have already been evaporated.

“How could she be this powerful? Just how did she obtain such power? ”

Hong Kun’s eyes were filled with disbelief and despair.

The injuries he suffered this time was too severe that even his Saint Soul was damaged. Even if he could survive, there was no hope for his cultivation level to attain the realm of Precept Domain.

Furthermore, his lifespan had been cut off by more than 200 years. In other words, he could only survive for few hundred years.

“That is Five-element Chaotic Body? How terrifying.”

“Chi Kongyue’s strength is truly heaven-defying. She is even more terrifying than Zhang Ruochen was back then.”

“Such a big commotion will surely attract those bigwigs gathering in Syzygy Mansion. When they find out what happened here, I wonder what the leaders of Heavenly Realm will look like?”

…

The talented young cultivators were shocked and wanted to flee immediately.

Even a veteran Nine-Step Saint King like Hong Kun could only get trampled. If Chi Kongyue became bloodthirsty and obsessed with killing, they could get implicated.

At this moment, some talented young cultivators who joined meetings in other areas in the vicinity of the Spiritual Lake rushed over once they were alarmed. Among them, some were even from Heavenly Realm or their allies. Their cultivation base was higher than that of Bolan and his friends. Yet, none of them dared to act rashly.

After all, the strength Chi Kongyue had displayed could even defeat an elite of the Precept Domain realm.

Among these talented young cultivators of different realms, the strongest ones were only Seven-Step Saint Kings. None of them had the confidence to take a hit from Chi Kongyue.

Bolan and Yan Yu’s faces were ashen. If they had known this would happen, they would not have provoked Chi Kongyue no matter what.

When Bolan thought of what he had said in the beginning, he felt ashamed and indignant. He wished he could immediately find a hole to hide.

Chi Kongyue withdrew the Five-element Chaotic Qi that had spread out. At the same time, she grabbed Hong Kun—who was seriously injured and on the verge of death—out of the Spiritual Lake and brought him closer to her.

After this serious injury, Hong Kun had completely lost the ability to resist. His condition was so bad that even a weak martial art practitioner could easily kill him.

Chi Kongyue pointed her sword at Bolan and the other two without concealing her murderous intent at the slightest. “I will say it one last time. Kneel and apologize. You should never humiliate Empress Chi Yao and my father.” Her tone was icy cold.

“Chi Kongyue, don’t go too far. You have already killed Pallas. You want to kill us as well? Are you trying to stir up a dispute between Kunlun and Heavenly Realm?” Bolan said in a deep voice.

He was the son of a deity. He was more honorable than other sons of deities because both his parents were deities. They had been together for tens of thousands of years before he was born as their only child.

If he were to kneel down and apologize, not only would he lose his dignity, it would also be a disgrace to his father and mother. As a result, he would definitely become a laughing stock.

With a wave of her hand, Chi Kongyue released two streams of Saint Qi. They wrapped around Hong Kun and Yan Yu, lifting them into the air.

“Are you sure you do not want to kneel and apologize?”

Chi Kongyue asked again.

“No, I don’t want to die. Bolan, please save me,” Yan Yu said in fear.

“My life is over.” A hint of despair appeared in Hong Kun’s eyes.

Bolan naturally understood what Chi Kongyue wanted to do. This made his heart filled with anger. No one had ever dared to threaten him like this.

But now, even if he hated Chi Kongyue to her core, there was nothing he could do.

“Stop.”

Right at this moment, a loud voice filled with authority came.

A beam of holy light shot out from a palace located in Syzygy Mansion’s deepest part, and an intimidating Saint aura instantly enveloped the entire Syzygy Mansion.

“Hmph!”

Chi Kongyue let out a cold snort as she slashed with her Saint Sword.

Pow!
Myriad streaks of Sword Qi burst out, and before Hong Kun and Yan Yu could scream, they turned into Blood Mist. Even their Saint Souls were destroyed.

A senior Nine-Step Saint King and an elven genius with great potential died just like that.

The scorching saint blood instantly dyed the entire Spiritual Lake red. The blood-colored mist rose up and quickly spread to the surroundings.

Anyone present in Syzygy Mansion could smell the dense bloody scent.

“How dare you kill a Saint King from Heavenly Realm?”

With an angry voice, a slender figure bathed in Saint light appeared on the Spiritual Lake.

This person, in a spotless white robe, was eight feet tall, with long blond hair and jade-like eyes. His body contained tens of millions of Precepts. The Precepts of Heaven and earth and Saint Qi all gathered around him.

He was none other than the leader of Heavenly Realm, Zhou Yu.

Previously, Zhou Yu had suffered great loss at Sect of the Blood God. Not only had *The Divine Book of Light* got stolen, but he had also lost his portion of Canon of Truth to Zhang Ruochen. Such outcome had driven Zhou Yu into great bereavement.
However, Zhou Yu had eventually survived from it and returned to Heavenly Realm. He had secluded himself for self-cultivation for a period of time. Only recently did he return to Kunlun.

Zhou Yu was very angry. Chi Kongyue dared to kill Hong Kun and Yan Yu even after he had told her to stop. Apparently, she did not respect him in the slightest. Her action was a provocation to him and Heavenly Realm.

‘Well, well, well. Zhou Yu, after getting the taste of defeat last time, he still managed to improve his cultivation. Although he has yet to reach first-tier below Supreme Sainthood, he is no lesser than that’ said Zhang Ruochen in his mind.

From what he saw, Zhou Yu’s current strength should be on par with that of Azure Dragon and Moyin.

If he returned *The Divine Book of Light* to Zhou Yu, Zhou Yu’s strength would have reached the first-tier below Supreme Sainthood. He could have been an elite no less than Mara in his prime.
However, even so, Zhang Ruochen did not consider Zhou Yu a worthy opponent.

If it were Michael the Archangel, perhaps Zhang Ruochen would show some concern.

Following Zhou Yu, an old man with a white beard appeared on the Spiritual Lake.

Donned in a purple official robe and a jade crown, he looked elegant. He exuded the temperament of a person who had been in a high position for a long time, looking mighty.

The old man was none other than the current ruling officer of Imperial Court, Grand Chamberlain Wang Shiqi.

As the disciple of Emperor Wen, Wang Shiqi had learned the true teachings of Confucianism. His spiritual power was extremely powerful and was close to level 60.

Sensing the terrifying killing intent emitted from Zhou Yu, Wang Shiqi instinctively stood in front of Chi Kongyue.

Chi Kongyue was Empress Chi Yao's daughter. He could not allow anything to happen to her.

"Wang Shiqi, are you trying to stop me?" Zhou Yu's face darkened.

Wang Shiqi said, "I think it's necessary to find out what happened first."

"Isn't it clear enough? This brat from Kunlun ignored the rule of heaven and killed three elites from Heavenly Realm in public. Not only does she deserve death, Kunlun also owes us—Heavenly Realm—an explanation," Zhou Yu said in an intimidating tone.

Obviously, someone had secretly informed Zhou Yu that Pallas—a giant—had also died at the hands of Chi Kongyue.

Zhang Ruochen had repeatedly opposed Heavenly Realm, and they could not do anything about it. But now, even his daughter was this outrageous and insolent. How could he tolerate it?

Chi Kongyue stepped forward and said, "They have committed blasphemy. They deserve to die."

"Kongyue, What happened?" Wang Shiqi immediately asked.

Chi Kongyue told him what had happened.

After hearing Chi Kongyue's story, Wang Shiqi's face darkened. He looked at Zhou Yu and said, "Blasphemy against Her Majesty the Empress is a serious crime. Heavenly Realm is the one who owes us an explanation."

Hearing this, Zhou Yu frowned slightly. It was really troublesome when it came to blasphemy.

"Blasphemers must die" was a rule that all deities had agreed upon. Who would have the nerve to provoke a deity?

"This is just Chi Kongyue's words, which cannot be trusted. Bolan, did you blaspheme Empress Chi Yao?" said Zhou Yu.

Bolan was struck by his question. He immediately replied, "No, I have great respect for Empress Chi Yao. There's no way I would do that."

Chi Kongyue pointed at the dozens of young cultivators in the pavilion and said, "They all heard it with their own ears."

"Is that so? What did you all hear?" Zhou Yu turned around, and an invisible pressure enveloped the dozens of young cultivators.

The pressure sent the dozens of these young cultivators shivers.

At this time, they knew very well that if they said a wrong word, they would face serious consequences.

Offending Heavenly Realm for the sake of a Kunlun that was about to perish was undoubtedly a very unwise choice.

Thinking of this, all the young talented cultivators shook their heads and distanced themselves from the matter.

Seeing the reaction of these people, Chi Kongyue shook her head slightly. Her eyes were filled with disappointment.

On the other hand, there was a smile on Bolan. As long as he insisted that he had never said anything blasphemous about Empress Chi Yao, no one could do anything to him.

Moreover, they could turn the situation against Chi Kongyue and find trouble with her. It was a pleasing outcome.

Zhou Yu turned to look at Chi Kongyue and Wang Shiqi. "Do you have anything else to say?" His tone was flat and indifferent.

Chapter 2154: I Really Want to Take Your life

The leaders of the many Macroworlds in Western Universe gathered in the ninth building of Syzygy Mansion. They were all top elites below Supreme Sainthood and were very famous throughout Celestial Court and Infernal Court.

Kunlun was a member of Western Universe. Hence, most foreign cultivators who were here to support Kunlun were from various Macroworlds in Western Universe.

Of course, some Macroworlds of the other three universes also participated in this meeting, for example Wanxu Realm, Celestial Dragon Realm and Qianrui Realm. They were all powerful Macroworlds.

Almost half of the Macroworld leaders had arrived at Syzygy Mansion now. The rest were still coming.

At this moment, the attention of all Macroworld leaders in the mansion were drawn to the situation at the Spiritual Lake.

“Kunlun cultivators are really bold. How dare they provoke Heavenly Realm at such time?”

“That’s not bold. That’s stupid. Chi Kongyue is playing with fire at the worst time. Judging from the feud between Heavenly Realm and Zhang Ruochen, I’m afraid Zhou Yu won’t let her off this time.”

“Chi Kongyue killed three Saint Kings of Heavenly Realm in public. This is a serious crime. Even Empress Chi Yao can’t absolve her.”

“If Chi Kongyue dies in the hands of Zhou Yu, I wonder if Zhang Ruochen will go mad when he finds out?”

..

Many Macroworld leaders opened their mouths and talked casually like spectators watching a show.

Obviously, they were either allies or some forces close to Heavenly Realm. None of them would care about Kunlun being in an unfavorable circumstance.

They figured that Heavenly Realm cultivators were most likely the ones who had started the fight. Nevertheless, Heavenly Realm had an upperhand now, there was nothing Kunlun could do about it.

Most of the Macroworld leaders remained silent and quietly watched how the incident unfolding. At this time, it was not a good time for them to intervene.

Above the Spiritual Lake, the atmosphere was particularly oppressive. Wang Shiqi was grim. Of course, he did not doubt Chi Kongyue's words. However, the talented young cultivators present were unwilling to testify. Hence, Chi Kongyue could not defend herself.

Zhou Yu stood on surface of the water. "Wang Shiqi, hand over Chi Kongyue. Don't leave me no choice." His tone was cold.

Wang Shiqi, who was standing in front of Chi Kongyue, was processing his thought quickly, trying to force a solution from his mind. No matter what, he could not hand Chi Kongyue over.

He felt responsible for Chi Kunlun's disapearance in the Battlefield of Merits. Until now, the whereabouts of the Empress' son were still unknown. If something happened to Chi Kongyue, he could not bring himself to face Empress Chi Yao.

Chi Kongyue felt immense pressure from Zhou Yu's intimidating and powerful Saint aura. However, there was no fear in her eyes. She held her Saint Sword tightly and pressed it against Bolan's forehead.

Even if she could not defeat Heavenly Realm this time, she would not compromise. She would certainly drag the culprit—Bolan—along with her if death awaited her.

Chi Kongyue was deeply dissapointed with the young cultivators from the dozens of Macroworlds. None of them had the courage to come forward and speak the truth. How could these bunch of cowards become Supreme Saints in the future?

"Chi Kongyue, still want to act tough at this time. Don't you think you are disrespectful."

Zhou Yu shouted and released a powerful aura targetting Chi Kongyue.

He would kill Chi Kongyue mercilessly if she dared to make any moves.

Bolan's identity was very special that Zhou Yu had to do everything he could to protect him.

Chi Kongyue straightened her posture and looked straight at Zhou Yu. With no slightest fear in her voice, she said, “I know you want me dead simply because you and Heavenly Realm have suffered great losses at my father’s hands. Unfortunately, there is nothing you can do about that.”

“Zhou Yu, not everyone is afraid of Heavenly Realm. I may not be as powerful as my father, but I won’t endure your persecution.”

Hearing this, Zhou Yu raised his eyebrows, exuding a more intimidating murderous intent.

To Zhou Yu, his defeat to Zhang Ruochen in Sect of the Blood God was the greatest humiliation in his life. Yet, Chi Kongyue dared to rub his nose in it. Despite having calm temperament, he was deeply offended.

“Zhang Ruochen surely has a good daughter,” Zhou Yu said in a deep voice.

Wang Shiqi’s expression changed slightly. He had a premonition that something bad was going to happen. He immediately released his powerful spiritual power and mobilized energy of heaven and earth to protect Chi Kongyue.

At the same time, an ancient calligraphy brush emerged between Wang Shiqi’s eyebrows and flew to his hand.

As soon as the brush appeared, a vast aura spread out. It felt as if it was from an eternal scholarly civilization carrying generations of cultural heritage.

This brush bore a great significance in Path of Confucianism. It was called Everlasting Brush. Legend had it the four Confucius forefathers had wrote Sacred Confucian Tome using it.

Since myriad of years, generations of Masters of Confucianism had used Everlasting Brush to write countless poems and literary piece. The true essence of Path of Confucianism had long been imprinted in it.

One had to admit that the legacy of Path of Confucianism was greatly profound. Any artifacts passed down from it could be deemed a highly valuable treasure in the eye of a weak Macroworld.

“Hmph.”

Zhou Yu snorted loudly and extended a hand. A large number of Precepts of Light appeared.

In an instant, a ball of Saint light gathered in Zhou Yu's hand. It was as dazzling as a divine sun, rising slowly and emitting boundless radiance that would dispel all the darkness from the world.

At this moment, it was as though Zhou Yu had become the embodiment of Light holding the world's power of Light. As if wherever he went, light would descend.

Based on Zhou Yu's ways of doing things, he would not allow himself to be intimidated by others for long. He wanted to suppress Chi Kongyue and Wang Shiqi with great force and rescue Bolan at the same time.

Wang Shiqi's eyes became solemn. With no hesitation, he immediately waved Everlasting Brush, condensing the energy of Confucianism, and wrote some immaculate characters in the air.

These were ancient fonts created at the birth of a civilization. They bore the wisdom of countless ancestors, unleashing unfadable radiance and amazing power to meet the Saint Technique of Light cast by Zhou Yu.

Seeing that Zhou Yu had made a move, Chi Kongyue immediately unleashed the illusory realm of Chaos with her Five-element Chaotic Body.

Then, Chi Kongyue entered a wondrous state of becoming one with her sword. She mobilized the nearly 10,000 Precepts of Time that she had cultivated to capture Marks of Time of heaven and earth. She moved quietly and executed Sword of Time with her might.

So what if she was facing a leader from Heavenly Realm. She would still have the bravery to wield her sword and fight. No one could make her give up resisting.

"Wang Shiqi is not only the ruling officer of Imperial Court. He is also a priominent cultivator of Path of Confucianism. If Zhou Yu defeats him this time, it will be a big blow to Kunlun."

"He is overestimating himself. There is no one to blame for this. Kunlun is full of arrogant cultivator. They are not strong, but they like to act tough. They are asking for trouble."

“It’s time to teach Kunlun a lesson, make them see the reality. Their glory hundred thousand years ago has long gone. If they don’t know their place, their world will be destroyed faster.

..

Seeing Zhou Yu make a move, some of the Macroworld leaders gloated.

In their opinion, he should teach Kunlun a lesson so that it would be more convenient for them to loot more benefits.

There were also some Macroworld leaders who couldn’t bear it and wanted to make a move. They were all from relatively weaker Macroworlds. Seeing what Kunlun experiencing, they could not help but empathize and resonate with Kunlun cultivators.

At some point in the future, there was no guarantee that their Macroworld would not suffer the same fate that Kunlun was going through one day.

However, just as they wanted to move, they were pulled back by the others around them. “Don’t act rashly. In this situation, even if we take action, we won’t be able to help. On the contrary, it will bring trouble to our Macroworlds.”

Hearing this, they had to hold their anger. Not only did they come as individuals, they represented their Macroworlds. At any time, they could not afford to act impulsively.

“Something happened.”

Suddenly, the Macroworld leaders in the mansion all revealed astonished expressions.

The reason was that the Saint Technique of Light that Zhou Yu had executed had been broken, and the power of Time had cut Light off.

Zhou Yu’s expression kept changing. There had been a Mark of Time that had infiltrated his body and shortened nearly a hundred years of his lifespan. As a result, he was greatly weakened.

A master of Time who was only a Four-Step Saint King could break the Saint Technique of Light he performed and shorten his lifespan. This was totally unexpected.

‘There’s no way Chi Kongyue’s Sword of Time to be such powerful with her current cultivation base. Could it be… Zhang Ruochen is here?’ Zhou Yu guessed.

He had been wondering how Saint King Hongkun got defeated by Chi Kongyue. Now it seemed that something very strange was going on with Chi Kongyue. It was very likely that Zhang Ruochen had secretly attacked him.

However, Zhou Yu failed to find any trace of Zhang Ruochen.

As he could not locate him, the more uneasy Zhou Yu became.

Zhang Ruochen could easily break his advanced Saint technique and shorten his lifespan by 100 years using Chi Kongyue’s attack while hiding in the plain sight.

‘Does this mean he has the ability to kill me without me knowing?’

“Let me say something fair.”

At this moment, a clear voice suddenly sounded.

As the voice trailed off, the fog on the Spiritual Lake dispersed, revealing a jade table. A man and a woman sat opposite each other.

In an instant, everyone’s gaze turned towards these two people.

That man looked very young. He was wearing a Taoist robe with a complicated eight trigrams pattern on it. He held a horsetail whisk in his hand. He was the one who had spoken just now.

Sitting opposite the young man was a beautiful woman dressed in Buddhist robes. She held a jade clear bottle in her hand. Her body was emitting a faint Buddhist light. Every inch of her skin was sacred and flawless. She was like a Bodhisattva walking in the mortal world.

“Zheng Yuan, Ci Hang.”

Seeing these two people, Zhou Yu could not help but frown slightly.

His attention was all on Chi Kongyue, and he really did not notice the existence of Zheng Yuan and Ci Hang.

Moreover, the leaders of various Macroworlds had gathered at the ninth building of Syzygy Mansion, and Zheng Yuan and Ci Hang were staying at the place where the talented young cultivators conversed. It was really out of his expectations.

Zheng Yuan stood up and took a step forward. The next moment, he appeared beside Chi Kongyue, smiling.

“Hi Uncle Zheng Yuan.” Chi Kongyue greeted him with a bow obediently.

She had long heard that Zhang Ruochen and Zheng Yuan had a close relationship. Now that Zheng Yuan had stood up for her, she should behave politely.

Zheng Yuan nodded slightly and said, “My junior, Ruochen’s daughter is indeed extraordinary.”

“Zheng Yuan, this matter has nothing to do with you. You’d better not get involved,” Zhou Yu said.

Zheng Yuan turned to look at Zhou Yu and said indifferently, “I’m not planning to take sides. I just want to say a right thing. This matter is indeed the fault of Bolan. The evidence is here.”

As he spoke, Zheng Yuan took out a scroll and unfolded it in front of everyone.

Moving pictures appeared on the scroll. Voice was heard. The scroll had recorded everything that had happened in the pavilion earlier.

When Bolan heard his blasphemous words with his own ears, his face instantly turned pale. He had never thought that this matter would be preserved with evidence.

Moreover, that person was the first-class young genius of Taoism, Zheng Yuan.

In the pavilion, the dozens of geniuses who were lying were also stunned. They felt their cheeks burning and wanted to find a hole to hide in.

Wang Shiqi secretly heaved a sigh of relief. Now that there was evidence and the leader of the Taoist Holy Land, the Five Elements Temple, had appeared, he believed that no matter how tyrannical Zhou Yu was, it would not dare to act recklessly.

“Zhou Yu, what else do you have to say now?”Wang Shiqi asked in return.

Hearing this, Zhou Yu’s face could not help but darken. He had personally stepped forward and did not hesitate to bully the weak. He had even lost nearly a hundred years of his life, yet in the end, he had received such an outcome. He felt that this matter seemed to have been premeditated.

However, he could not flare up now. If he were to blow the matter up, it would only be disadvantageous to their paradise realm.

He calmed himself down and Zhou Yu said calmly, “Now that the matter has been clarified, there’s no need to continue to be entangled. Chi Kongyue, let Bolan go. Everything ends here. Don’t affect the plan to fight against Infernal Court.”

At this point, even if he was unwilling, he had to compromise. After all, if he continued to make trouble, Bolan would only die.

With the evidence of blasphemy, even if Chi Kongyue killed Bolan, no one would be able to pursue the matter.

“Bolan blasphemed and deserves to be punished. Your universe, on the other hand, is indiscriminately attacking me and Tai Zai for no reason. It is also against the Precepts of heaven and deserves to be punished severely,”Chi Kongyue said seriously.

Hearing this, Zhou Yu’s face could not help but sink. He had already chosen to compromise and not pursue the matter of Chi Kongyue killing the three Saint Kings of Heavenly Realm, yet Chi Kongyue still dared to pester him. He was really going too far.

Forcefully suppressing the anger in his heart, Zhou Yu asked, “Chi Kongyue, what exactly do you want?”

“I still say the same thing. Bolan must kneel and apologize,”Chi Kongyue said.

Everything could be discussed, but when it came to the dignity of her parents, there was no room for discussion.

As he spoke, Chi Kongyue had already withdrawn Five-element Chaotic Body’s abnormal phenomenon, and her gaze was fixed on Bolan.

Bolan sat weakly on the surface of the lake. After many twists and turns, he finally returned to his original position.

Ever since he was born, no matter what he did, he had always been successful. He had never suffered such a huge setback.

He was the son of two gods. How could he kneel and apologize in front of everyone? How would he face others in the future? Where would the dignity of father and mother be?

But if he didn't do this, there would only be death. How many people weren't afraid of death?

"A setback is nothing. As long as you're alive, you'll get back everything you've lost sooner or later."The Voice of Zhou Yu entered Bolan's ears.

He was experienced in this aspect. Zhang Ruochen might be strong now, but it was hard to say what would happen in the future. He might become a god, but Zhang Ruochen was struggling in the great saint realm.

A temporary victory or defeat didn't mean anything. It depended on who would have the last laugh.

"Let me help you."

Zhou Yu's voice sounded again.

Before Bolan could react, two light blades suddenly appeared and cut off his legs.

Without his legs, he didn't have to kneel anymore.

Bolan wasn't stupid. He immediately understood Zhou Yu's meaning. Enduring the pain, he said in a trembling voice, "I was too ignorant and desecrated empress Chi Yao. I apologize. I hope Empress Chi Yao will forgive me."

"Chi Kongyue, are you satisfied?"Zhou Yu asked.

"You…"

Chi Kongyue wanted to say something else, but Zheng Yuan shook her head at her,

to be able to force the divine son of heaven to this point in front of so many people was already close to touching the bottom line of heaven. Zheng Yuan was very clear that continuing to target Chi Kongyue and Kunlun would not benefit them.

After all, Heavenly Realm was the ruler of Western Universe.

The next moment, Zheng Yuan waved his hand and released a streak of Saint Qi. He rolled up Bolan and sent him to the side of Zhou Yu along with the Projection Scroll.

Zhou Yu reached out and pinched it. The mirror image scroll turned into ashes and wanted to take Bolan away.

“Cut off one of your arms!”

At this moment, a voice rang in the ears of Zhou Yu. It made his heart tremble.

He was very familiar with this voice. It was like a nightmare. It was Zhang Ruochen, whom he hated and feared the most.

Just as he had guessed, Zhang Ruochen was indeed in Syzygy Mansion. What he feared came true.

From this, it could be confirmed that Chi Kongyue’s terrifying strength had something to do with Zhang Ruochen.

“You actually made me cut off one of my arms. Zhang Ruochen, you’ve gone too far.”Zhou Yu was furious.

However, he didn’t dare to let it out. The current Zhang Ruochen was stronger than he’d imagined. Even Yan Wushen had been defeated by him. He was truly invincible under the great saint.

Based on his understanding of Zhang Ruochen, if he didn’t do it, the consequences would be even worse. His strength might be comparable to the first level below the great saint, but if he faced Zhang Ruochen, he might be killed without anyone knowing.

However, he was the leader of Heavenly Realm. How would people view him if he cut off his arm in public? What dignity would he have in the future?

For a moment, Zhou Yu was extremely conflicted and did not know what to do.

All of a sudden, Zhou Yu’s heart trembled. He faintly felt a terrifying qi dynamic lock onto him. Space from all directions pressed down on him, making it difficult for him to breathe.

“Zhang Ruochen… you’re ruthless…”

Zhou Yu raised his right hand with difficulty. He used his hand as a knife and gritted his teeth. He was extremely unwilling. An indescribable sense of humiliation rose in his heart.

Zhang Ruochen’s voice came again. “What are you waiting for? Do you want me to do it myself? I really want to kill you!”

Thwack!

Zhou Yu chopped down on his left arm.

His arm fell off and holy blood splashed out.

Zhang Ruochen was too terrifying. In order to survive, he had to compromise in humiliation. Who knew that this damn guy had come to Central Imperial City?

“My God! What’s going on? Why did Zhou Yu chop off one of his arms?”

“Zhou Yu chopped off Bolan’s legs first and then one of his arms. Is he crazy?”

“What’s going on? What is Zhou Yu trying to do?”

..

For a moment, everyone was dumbfounded. They didn’t understand the situation at all.

Even Chi Kongyue showed a puzzled expression. She did not know what Zhou Yu was up to. The cultivators of Heavenly Realm went crazy. They even killed their own people. No, they had even inflicted themselves.

Chapter 2155: Doting
Zhou Yu felt extremely humiliated and indignant when he chopped off his own arm in public.

It was even more humiliating than when he lost to Sect of the Blood God previously.

But Zhou Yu couldn’t do anything about it. Zhang Ruochen was famous for being ruthless to his enemies. How many top cultivators of the Heavenly Realm had died at his hands?

It was a pity that Zhou Yu was the leader of the Heavenly Realm, the son of a deity, and the object of the Fane of Light's nurturing. His status was extremely noble. But now, he had lost all his face.

Over the years, no leader of the Heavenly Realm had been more sullen than Zhou Yu.

"I'll let you off this time, but you shouldn't do it again. Mark my words." Zhang Ruochen's voice rang in Zhou Yu's ears again.

Although Zhou Yu was indignant, it felt as if he had been granted amnesty.

He exhaled lightly. Without any hesitation, he immediately took Bolan with him and turned into a streak of light, leaving Syzygy Mansion.

This time, the Heavenly Realm had lost all its face. Naturally, Zhou Yu couldn't stay any longer to avoid being a laughing stock.

Moreover, with Zhang Ruochen in the shadows, the Heavenly Realm wouldn't be able to gain any advantage in this meeting. Instead, it would be restricted everywhere.

"What's going on? Did someone secretly threaten Zhou Yu to do this?"

"With the strength and status of Zhou Yu, who can threaten him like this?"

"Indeed, ordinary people can't threaten Zhou Yu, but there is one person who can. That person can even threaten everyone at present."

"Are you talking about… Zhang Ruochen?" Someone exclaimed.

At the mention of "Zhang Ruochen", many leaders of the great world in the Syzygy Mansion could not help but change their expressions.

No one was a fool.

Only Zhang Ruochen could quietly make Chi Kongyue's Five-element Chaotic Body shine and multiply the power of the Sword of Time.

On second thought, Zhang Ruochen had a special intention to threaten Zhou Yu and cut off his own arm in public.

He was clearly warning everyone to think about the consequences before doing anything.

Thinking of this, countless cultivators couldn't help but gasp. "It seems that Zhang Ruochen, who is invincible below the Supreme Saint, has quietly arrived at the Central Imperial City."

"We must immediately inform the cultivators of our realm to keep a low profile in the imperial city. Don't be like Zhou Yu and run into danger." Some leaders of the great world thought so.

The atmosphere in the Ninth Mansion became much more depressing. Many cultivators felt suffocated by Zhang Ruochen.

With Zhang Ruochen's unscrupulous style, not many people could be unafraid. No matter how prominent one's background was. Zhou Yu was the best example.

Whoosh
A layer of fog appeared on the Spiritual Lake.

The fog was like smoke and clouds. It quickly swallowed Chi Kongyue, Zheng Yuan, Fairy Cihang, and Wang Shiqi, making them disappear between the red walls and green tiles.

The fog could isolate all senses. The four seemed to have disappeared into thin air.

Zheng Yuan, Fairy Cihang, and Wang Shiqi were all first-class cultivators. They had already sensed something, and they looked at each other. Then, they sat down at a stone table, as if waiting for something.

Chi Kongyue and the others saw a tall figure slowly walked out of the fog. He stepped on the lake, creating small ripples.

It was none other than Zhang Ruochen, who had put away the Thirty-six Transmogrification and returned to his original form.

Chi Kongyue stared at the figure. He held his breath, bit his lower lip and his eyes turned slightly red.

Slowly, Zhang Ruochen walked in front of Chi Kongyue and stared at her tall figure. His eyes were full of deep emotions.

With a flip of his hand, Zhang Ruochen took out a transparent jade box and handed it to Chi Kongyue. His face was so terrifying that even the cultivators of the Infernal Court and the Celestial Court would be scared to see it, a gentle smile appeared on his face. "Kongyue, I don't know what

gift to give you… hehe… are you thirsty? I don't know if this fruit is sweet or not. Why Don't you try it?"

Zhang Ruochen really didn't know how to be a father, so he didn't know what to do when he saw Chi Kongyue.

In the jade box, there was a fist-sized fruit. It gave off a faint sparkling light and was soaked in a clear liquid.

"Is that the legendary… Supreme Saint fruit?"

Wang Shiqi's eyes suddenly widened.

As a Saint Master of the Path of Confucianism, Wang Shiqi was very knowledgeable. He recognized at a glance that the fruit Zhang Ruochen took out was the extremely precious Supreme Saint fruit. It had an amazingly miraculous effect.

Zhang Ruochen had taken such a precious treasure to quench Chi Kongyue's thirst.' Wang Shiqi had never seen anything crazier than this.

This was the Supreme Saint fruit. According to legend, as long as one refined one, it was not entirely possible to cultivate to the Supreme Saint realm, but it was not too far off.

Wang Shiqi's talent wasn't inferior to anyone, but he lacked the heart of a Supreme Saint, which prevented him from breaking through to the Supreme Saint realm.

The Supreme Saint fruit had a strange function. It could make up for the lack of the heart of a Supreme Saint and pave the way to become a Supreme Saint.

Therefore, Wang Shiqi's eyes were filled with desire.

Zheng Yuan and Fairy Cihang were also surprised. They didn't expect Zhang Ruochen to have such a rare treasure.

Chi Kongyue didn't take the Jade Box. Instead, she threw herself into Zhang Ruochen's arms. Tears flowed uncontrollably as if she wanted to vent all the grievances she had suffered.

"Father, I miss you so much. Why haven't you come to see me? Didn't you promise to take me to Mount Kongyue when we return to Kunlun Realm, and take me to see the myriad of light, mountains and vast rivers…"

Chi Kongyue kept sobbing. Bean-sized tears kept falling to the ground and her delicate body was twitching slightly.

Hearing Chi Kongyue's sobbing, Zhang Ruochen's heart was filled with guilt. He was really a bad father. He hadn't done anything for her as a father.

Zhang Ruochen's heart was trembling. Even though he tried hard to keep a straight back and be as determined as a mountain, his eyes were still red. There were tears in his eyes. He couldn't help but raise his hands and hug Chi Kongyue tightly.

"It's all my fault, Kongyue. I will definitely keep my promises to you."

Zhang Ruochen reached out to stroke Chi Kongyue's head and comforted her softly.

Chi Kongyue was still very emotional. "Father, I'm so afraid. I'm afraid that I won't be able to see you again. Please don't leave me in the future, Okay?"

"Don't be afraid. I will always be by your side. No one can bully you." Zhang Ruochen's voice trembled slightly. It was an indescribable feeling.

Seeing Chi Kongyue crying, his heart was about to break!

In the end, Chi Kongyue was still a child. She shouldn't have to bear so many worries.

No matter what, he would never let Chi Kongyue suffer any more grievances, even if he was a god.

Wang Shiqi stood aside and looked at Zhang Ruochen with a complicated expression.

He had once regarded Zhang Ruochen as a traitor. He had advised Empress Chi Yao more than once and urged her to kill Zhang Ruochen to avoid future trouble.

But he didn't expect that Zhang Ruochen would be needed to support Kunlun Realm today. The Path of Confucianism owed Zhang Ruochen a huge favor.

Without Zhang Ruochen, the situation in Kunlun Realm would be even more difficult. At least, the other realms would plunder without any scruples. No one could stop them.

In the battle of the Sword Vault, Zhang Ruochen had guarded the Nether Dungeon and didn't let the Immortal Vampires release Lord Ming.

In the battle of the Xianji Mountain in the North region, Zhang Ruochen had destroyed the Deathkin's conspiracy. He had prevented them from absorbing the North region's power of resuscitation. He had also sealed the world passage, making it even harder for the Deathkin to enter Kunlun Realm.

In the battle of True Dragon Island, Zhang Ruochen had not only protected the key to the World Gate. However, he had also greatly reduced the morale of the Infernal Court.

Almost everything Zhang Ruochen did after he returned to Kunlun Realm had a huge impact on it and changed the direction of the overall situation again and again.

Was I too narrow-minded?' Wang Shiqi asked himself.

After a long time, Chi Kongyue gradually calmed down and left Zhang Ruochen's embrace.

Zhang Ruochen reached out and gently touched Chi Kongyue's head. He stuffed the jade box containing the Supreme Saint Fruit into Chi Kongyue's hands.

After adjusting his emotions, Zhang Ruochen walked over to Zheng Yuan and Fairy Cihang. He smiled and said, "Senior brother Zheng Yuan, senior sister Cihang, long time no see."

Although his current strength had surpassed Zheng Yuan and Fairy Cihang, he was not arrogant at all. He seemed very easy-going.

"Junior Zhang, your growth speed really surprises me. It has only been a short time since we parted at the Xianji Mountain, but your strength has already reached the invincible level below the Supreme Saint. Even Yan Wushen was no match for you. Only your deterrent power can force Zhou Yu to cut off one of its arms." Zheng Yuan sighed.

Zheng Yuan had been paying attention to Zhang Ruochen ever since he set foot in the Celestial Domain of Truth. It could be said that he had watched Zhang Ruochen grow up step by step.

With Zhang Ruochen's current strength, he was undoubtedly able to gain the approval of the Taoists.

Chi Kongyue walked forward. Although her eyes were still red, she still bowed very obediently and said, “Thank you, Uncle Zheng Yuan, for coming to my rescue.”

Zheng Yuan waved his hand and said, “It’s just a small matter. There’s no need to be so polite. Even if I didn’t come, Junior Zhang would definitely have a solution.”

“Speaking of which, Junior Cihang and I came to the Spiritual Lake because we accidentally found Junior Zhang. We just happened to encounter these things.”

If they hadn’t found Zhang Ruochen, with Zheng Yuan and Fairy Cihang’s status, why would they stay in the place where the juniors talked?

At this time, Zhang Ruochen looked at Fairy Cihang and said seriously, “Senior Cihang, can you tell me which emperor became an awakened buddha in the west?”

In the beginning, Zhang Ruochen had decided that since he had the Eight-Dragon Umbrella, the emperor must be Emperor Ming.

But after thinking carefully, he had other thoughts.

800 years ago, there were nine emperors in the human race of Kunlun Realm. Although the Bodhi Emperor and the Demon Emperor were dead, there were still seven more. Except for Emperor Wen, the other six emperors had all disappeared without a trace. Therefore, the one who had become an awakened buddha in the west might not be Emperor Ming.

But since the enemy had the Eight-Dragon Umbrella, he must have had a deep relationship with Emperor Ming. Through him, Zhang Ruochen might be able to find clues about Emperor Ming.

Therefore, no matter what, Zhang Ruochen wanted to find out the identity of that emperor.

Unexpectedly, Fairy Cihang shook her head and said, “Even in the Western Buddha Realm, not many people know about the identity of that emperor. Forgive me for not being able to tell you.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat. He did not expect the identity of that emperor to be so mysterious. ‘Was he worried about something?’ Zhang Ruochen thought.

Emperor Ming, Emperor Wu, Emperor Dao, Sword Emperor, Emperor Wen, and Emperor Qing had all disappeared since the unification of the Kunlun Realm. No one knew where they had gone. Emperor Wen had only reappeared in recent years.

There were also the three empresses of the past, Blood Empress, Soul Empress, and Phantom Empress. Blood Empress was said to had been killed, but she was still alive in the second gradient of the Endless Abyss. On the other hand, Soul Empress and Phantom Empress were missing.

Thinking about it carefully, all of this was too strange. Where did the six emperors and the two empresses go? Were they secretly plotting something?

Zhang Ruochen thought about it and couldn't find an answer. Perhaps only when he met the emperor who had become an awakened buddha in the west could he solve part of the mystery.

After chatting with Zheng Yuan and Fairy Cihang about the army of the Infernal Court, Zhang Ruochen left Syzygy Mansion with Chi Kongyue. He didn't want to go to the open for the time being.

Chi Kongyue held Zhang Ruochen's arm tightly. With a pure and bright smile on her face, she let go of all her depression and worries.

"Father, is the empress really my mother?"

Although she already had the answer in her heart, Chi Kongyue still wanted Zhang Ruochen to tell her personally.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but stop. His calm mind fluctuated greatly.

Empress Chi Yao's deception was a difficult hurdle for Zhang Ruochen to overcome.

But now, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't hide it anymore. Chi Kongyue had the right to know.

After a moment of silence, Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, "Yes."

Hearing this, Chi Kongyue couldn't help but fall into silence. Ever since she knew that Zhang Ruochen was her biological father, she had secretly investigated many things. She knew about the grudges between Zhang

Ruochen and Empress Chi Yao, but this didn't solve her doubts, instead, it made her more confused.

What puzzled Chi Kongyue the most was the meaning of her and Chi Kunlun's existence? If Empress Chi Yao was so heartless to Zhang Ruochen, why did she give birth to them?

Chi Kongyue believed that Zhang Ruochen was genuinely good to her. However, Empress Chi Yao's love was also true.

Now, Chi Kongyue's greatest wish was to have a family reunion and enjoy the love of a father and a mother at the same time.

However, Chi Kongyue also understood that this was just her extravagant wish. The conflict between Zhang Ruochen and Empress Chi Yao was a knot that no one could untie. Could she untie this knot?

"Father, do you know where my brother is?" Chi Kongyue asked.

Chi Kongyue was more concerned about Chi Kunlun's safety than anything else.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Well, don't worry. Your brother will be fine. I will reunite you both soon."

One of the reasons why he came to the Central Imperial City was to save Chi Kunlun from Yan Wushen.

If I couldn't even protect the people I cared about, how could I protect Kunlun Realm?' Zhang Ruochen thought.

Chi Kongyue was very happy for the next three days. With Zhang Ruochen by her side, he chats with her, he cultivates sword techniques with her, she had almost forgotten all her troubles.

Although it was not a long time, Chi Kongyue was very satisfied.

Zhang Ruochen stood under a green willow tree and looked at Chi Kongyue who was playing in the stream with a smile. His eyes were full of happiness.

The three days he spent with Chi Kongyue was the most relaxed and happy days he had had in many years.

If only time could stop at this moment,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

If Zhang Ruochen had a choice, he did not want to be the strongest cultivator below the Supreme Saint, let alone the fighting and killings. He just wanted to be an ordinary person, so that he could give more company to his family and friends.

Whoosh
A slight sound pulled Zhang Ruochen back to reality.

A fat rabbit and a tall and mighty Demon Ape rushed out of the forest.

They were Guoguo the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and Demon Ape.

“Master Chen, we’re here. Your wish is my command,” Guoguo ran to Zhang Ruochen’s side and said politely.

Zhang Ruochen reached out and grabbed the soft fur on Guoguo’s neck. Guoguo’s body immediately shrank and was lifted up gently. A smile appeared on its lips.

“Kongyue, Come here. I have a gift for you,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Chi Kongyue did not hesitate. He immediately ran back to the shore and looked at Zhang Ruochen with anticipation.

Zhang Ruochen handed over the furry Guoguo and said, “I’ll bestow them to you. Let them talk and play with you.”

Hearing this, Guoguo opened its eyes wide and struggled to say, “What? Master Chen, you specifically summoned me and Demon Ape just to give us to a little girl as pets?”

“So? Do you have a problem with that? You two keep Kongyue company from now on. If she’s unhappy, I’ll hold you two responsible,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Guoguo shrunk its neck and quickly said, “Of course not. I’m just asking. I’ll be a good pet for Princess Kongyue in the future. It’s my honor.”

When it received Zhang Ruochen’s message, it thought that something good was going to happen. Guoguo had rushed over, but it did not expect such a result. It felt like crying.

Chi Kongyue took over Guoguo and gently stroked it. She said with a smile, “What a cute rabbit. It’s chubby. I like it very much. Thank you, Father.”

“I’m glad that you like it.” Zhang Ruochen showed a doting smile.

Guoguo and the Demon Ape were summoned especially from Royal Mountain because Zhang Ruochen hoped they could accompany and protect Chi Kongyue.

After all, he still had many things to do. He could not stay by Chi Kongyue’s side all the time.

In fact, Zhang Ruochen wanted to keep Chi Kongyue in the Qiankun Realm. It was the safest way, but Chi Kongyue was unwilling to. She did not want to stay out of the crisis in Central Imperial City.

Zhang Ruochen had no choice but to make this arrangement.

Guoguo and the Demon Ape were both in the Precept Domain realm. They were very powerful. With them by Chi Kongyue’s side, Zhang Ruochen could feel at ease.

…

Chapter 2156: I Come from the Heavenly Realm

Hundreds of feet away from the Ziwei Palace, the Space rippled like a water surface. Two figures walked out slowly. They were Zhang Ruochen and Chi Kongyue.

Guoguo and Demon Ape were both on Chi Kongyue’s body, but the treatment given was different. Guoguo was being held in a comfortable position, while Demon Ape shrank into the size of a fist and sat on Chi Kongyue’s shoulder.

“Father, it’s the Nine-heavens Maiden,” said Chi Kongyue.

Zhang Ruochen looked towards the palace gate. He couldn’t help but frown slightly.

At this moment, two figures walked out of the palace gate. One was a man and the other was a woman. Both of them exuded outstanding dispositions that were out of this world.

The woman was, of course, the Nine-heavens Maiden. As for that man, he was no stranger to Zhang Ruochen. He had seen him before. It was Akash.

After a few days, he saw Akash with the Nine-heavens Maiden outside the Ziwei Palace. It was not just a coincidence, but God’s will.

Chi Kongyue frowned and said, “It’s Akash again. He seems to be pestering the Nine-heavens Maiden a lot recently.”

Obviously, what Zhang Ruochen had seen before was not an accident. It was not the first time Akash had met with the Nine-heavens Maiden.

Without a doubt, Akash was very solicitous in getting on the Nine-heavens Maiden’s good side.

Guoguo looked up and snorted. “Where did this gigolo come from? How dare he pester the Nine-heavens Maiden? Doesn’t he know that she belongs to Lord Chen?”

“What are you talking about?” Zhang Ruochen stared at Guoguo.

Guoguo’s neck shrank, and he quickly corrected his words. “Friend, just a friend. Princess Kongyue, who is this gigolo? How can the Nine-heavens Maiden be so polite to him?”

“Akash comes from Megrez. He is the descendant of the legendary Navagraha. He is also very powerful. I heard that he has practiced both the energies of the Sun and the Moon simultaneously, and has already reached an extremely high level,” explained Chi Kongyue.

Navagraha had cultivated nine energies to the extreme all at the same time. Naturally, most of his people also chose to cultivate the same nine energies.

However, Navagraha’s talent was naturally gifted. It could not be replicated. It was very rare for any of his descendants to cultivate one energy to the extreme successfully.

Out of all the nine energies, the Moon, the Sun, Ketu, and Rāhu were extremely mystical. They were not just any trivial matter but extremely difficult to cultivate.

Akash who was able to cultivate both the power of the Moon and the Sun, his talent was undoubtedly high. Only a few people could be compared to him. So he was fully deserving to be called a genius.

“Who cares about the descendants of Navagraha? No one can pester the Nine-heavens Maiden. Lord Chen, I must teach him a lesson and make him leave,” said Guoguo excitedly.

Demon Ape curled its lips and said, “Since you’ve said it, if you have the ability, go beat him up.”

“Shut up, you big fool.” Guoguo glared at him.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t pay attention to Guoguo at all. After pausing for a moment, he walked forward.

“Miss Nalan, the situation in the imperial city is becoming more and more dangerous. You should decide as soon as possible. Don’t… Eh?” Akash was trying his best to persuade the Nine-heavens Maiden when he suddenly sensed something.

He couldn’t help but turn his head and look straight ahead. Suddenly, two figures appeared in front of him. They were getting closer and closer.

After taking a good look at who they were, Akash’s pupils contracted. His emotions were no longer calm.

‘Zhang Ruochen really came to the Central Imperial City. How did I get to meet him now?’ thought Akash.

What had happened in Syzygy Mansion three days ago had already spread far and wide. The issue had stormed the whole city and shocked many. As a result, the cultivators of the macroworlds had acted a lot more low-key.

It was unimaginable that one person could shock thousands of macroworlds.

With Akash’s background and strength, he was able to remain calm no matter who he met.

However, at this moment, he felt a little nervous. He wanted to leave this place immediately. He didn’t want to face Zhang Ruochen at all.

Ever since Zhang Ruochen came to the Central Imperial City, his whereabouts had been a mystery. He did not even show up when Syzygy Mansion was punishing Zhou Yu. But now he was swaggering in front of him, Akash couldn’t help but feel uneasy.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was getting closer and closer, Akash calmed himself down immediately. He smiled and cupped his hands, “Brother Zhang, I’ve heard so much about you. Now that I can finally meet you in person, it’s really a blessing. This trip is worth it all.”

“Who are you?” asked Zhang Ruochen coldly.

Hearing this question, Akash was stunned. He was the leader of Megrez and he is famous in both Celestial Court and Infernal Court. This was the very first time someone said they did not know him.

Akash replied, “I am Akash. I come from Megrez. My ancestor is Navagraha.”

As he spoke, Akash showed a strong sense of pride. He held a natural sense of superiority.

After all, Megrez was one of the top five powerful realms in the Western Universe. It had a deep foundation, and Navagraha was once invincible. Even in the present day, he still had a reputation in all the realms. How could Akash not be proud?

“Megrez. Navagraha. it is indeed an extraordinary background,” Zhang Ruochen said indifferently.

A displeasing look flashed across Akash’s eyes. No matter how he listened to Zhang Ruochen’s words, he felt that there was something strange.

After controlling his emotions, Akash smiled again and said, “Brother Zhang, it’s a huge issue that you came to the Central Imperial City. It’s huge enough to boost our morale. I’m thinking of hosting a banquet and inviting some good friends to welcome you together. What do you think, Brother Zhang?”

“There’s no need for this. I prefer peace and quietness. Besides, not many people will be happy to see me in the Central Imperial City,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Akash’s expression froze. He did not expect Zhang Ruochen to reject him so directly. He really did not bother to show some kindness.

Although he didn’t like it, he remained a polite stance and said, “How can that be? Brother Zhang defeated Yan Wushen and is the strongest person below Supreme Saint. You have no idea how many people admire you.”

“Do you have anything else to say?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

Hearing this, Akash was down. How could he not know that Zhang Ruochen thought of him as an annoyance and wanted him to leave? This was outrageous.

If it was anyone else, he would have lost his temper by now. However, the person standing in front of him was the infamous Zhang Ruochen. He did not dare to provoke him.

‘Zhang Ruochen. How dare you. Since you don’t know how to appreciate favors, it seems that you are purposely looking for trouble. You want to stop me from pursuing the Nine-heavens Maiden. How evil.’ Akash was annoyed.

He had done his research and knew that Zhang Ruochen had a close relationship with the Divine Scripture Maiden. Looking at Zhang Ruochen’s attitude, Akash felt that everything was very clear.

But, even if Akash knew everything, he did not dare to have a fallout with Zhang Ruochen. He was very strong and had many trump cards, but he was not confident in fighting Zhang Ruochen.

‘Zhang Ruochen, you have offended the Heavenly Realm and Infernal Court. You won’t have long to live. I’ll let you be arrogant for now,’ thought Akash.

Suppressing his anger, Akash said, “I still have some things to deal with, so I’ll take my leave first.”

With that, Akash did not stay any longer. With a move, he turned into a saint light that interweaved with the Sun and the Moon and left quickly.

“What a hypocrite. He’s obviously burning with anger, but he still pretended to be calm,” said Guoguo contemptuously.

The Demon Ape said, “Would he dare to lose his temper in front of his Royal Highness?”

“Lord Chen is mighty. He’s invincible in the world. Even the dragons and snakes must bow before him,” complimented Guoguo.

The Nine-heavens Maiden displayed a helpless expression. She did not expect Zhang Ruochen to intervene. She was speechless.

“Why did you do this?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “I didn’t do anything. I just happened to meet him while sending Chi Kongyue back.”

At this, the Nine-heavens Maiden rolled her eyes at Zhang Ruochen. She reached out a hand and pulled Chi Kongyue to her side. “Chi Kongyue, don’t run around these few days. Just stay in the palace.”

The Central Imperial City was filled with all kinds of dangers. So staying in the Ziwei Palace was the safest. After all, this was Empress Chi Yao’s residence. No one dared to trespass.

“Please take care of Chi Kongyue. I’ll visit her often,” said Zhang Ruochen.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen’s glabella suddenly lit up. The Ancient Abyssal Blade flew out from the Divine Light Sea of Qi and circled around him. Then, it flew straight into the Ziwei Palace without any obstruction.

Zhang Ruochen knew that the Ancient Abyssal Blade was going to find the Blood Dripper. They hadn’t seen each other for a long while.

Recently, the situation in the imperial court had been tense. The Blood Dripper had been guarding the Ziwei Palace to stabilize the army’s morale.

For a moment, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but feel emotional. No matter how hostile he was towards Chi Yao, the relationship between the Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dripper hadn’t changed. Swords are much more affectionate than humans.

“Maybe you can go to The Inscription Guild,” said the Nine-heavens Maiden suddenly.

As soon as Zhang Ruochen heard ‘The Inscription Guild’, his heart skipped a beat, and he suddenly thought of something.

After saying a few words, Zhang Ruochen watched the Nine-heavens Maiden and Chi Kongyue enter the Ziwei Palace. He then turned and left.

If it was not necessary, Zhang Ruochen did not want to set foot inside Ziwei Palace.

Zhang Ruochen performed the “Thirty-six Formless Transmogrification” to change his appearance, he then appeared in the 5th City District. The headquarters of The Inscription Guild was in this district.

The Inscription Guild was very mysterious. It had always been a neutral force in Kunlun Real, recruiting all the world’s strongest cultivators but it was not limited to humans only. It had the longest history and very few forces could compare to it.

No matter how the Kunlun Realm's situation had changed, The Inscription Guild will always exist. Its foundation was unfathomable. Even the imperial court did not mess with it.

As Zhang Ruochen was standing outside the headquarters of The Inscription Guild, his eyes could not help but shine with a strange light.

In his imagination, the headquarters of The Inscription Guild should be grand and magnificent with countless pavilions. But looking at it now, it was only an ancient and simple palace filled with historical marks.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen could see that this palace was not just any palace. It contained countless inscriptions. It must have been refined by an extraordinary Refiner.

'This palace must contain the Heavens and the Earths. If it is self-sealed, I'm afraid no one can break into it. According to legend, The Inscription Guild was founded by the one and only Divine Refiner. Two or three of the Ten Greatest Divine Artifacts in Kunlun Realm seemed to have been refined by that Divine Refiner,' thought Zhang Ruochen to himself.

Divine Artifacts were so precious that even the ultimate macroworld, Kunlun Realm only had ten of them.

Most of the macroworlds didn't have any Divine Artifact at all. They didn't even have much Supreme Artifacts.

Unfortunately, after the catastrophe in the Middle Age, almost all of Kunlun Realm's Ten Greatest Divine Artifacts vanished. Only the Imperial Ruler was preserved in The Inscription Guild.

To be more precise, the Imperial Ruler had always been the cornerstone treasure of The Inscription Guild.

The Inscription Guild was able to pass on its heritage for thousands of years. It had a lot to do with the Imperial Ruler.

Legend had it that the Imperial Ruler could measure the Emperor's cultivation realm. It contained the profound way to the Supreme Saint. If one could fully comprehend it, one might be able to achieve godhood.

After reaching the Saint Kinghood, if one wanted to quickly improve their cultivation, following the way of the Imperial Ruler was the best choice.

Naturally, Zhang Ruochen came to The Inscription Guild because he wanted to use the Imperial Ruler and gain some enlightenment. He wanted to reach the peak of his cultivation as much as possible.

Everyone's first time using the Imperial Ruler to gain enlightenment had the best effect. There might even be an epiphany.

Although Zhang Ruochen had reached the peak of Saint Kinghood, he had never been to The Inscription Guild before. He was looking forward to the effect.

"Nice to meet you, Brother Zhang."

Just when Zhang Ruochen was about to enter, a magnetic voice suddenly sounded.

A man walked over from the side with a smile on his face. He exuded a very friendly feeling.

This man was six feet tall. His facial features were exquisite and flawless. He was so good looking that many women envied him. He wore a silver brocade robe and had long purple hair. He looked very elegant.

The most eye-catching thing was his purple eyes. They glittered with purple light and seemed to be mysterious.

Zhang Ruochen took one glance at him casually and found that he was extraordinary. He naturally shone with a noble disposition, but he also gave people a sense of approachability.

What surprised Zhang Ruochen was that this man could see through his changes.

It seemed that his "Thirty-six Formless Transmogrification" had not been practiced well. First, he was seen through by Zheng Yuan and Fairy Cihang, and now, he was seen through by another person.

Was he someone who could be compared with Zhen Yuan and Fairy Cihang?

The purple-haired man walked up to him and cupped his hands, "Brother Zhang, let me introduce myself. My name is Yin Yuanchen, and I come from the Heavenly Realm."

After the purple-haired man said the last three words, the temperature around them dropped rapidly.

“Why is there anyone from the Heavenly Realm looking for me? Aren’t you afraid that I’ll kill you?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

Yin Yuanchen was not afraid. He remained calm and said, “Although I’m from the Heavenly Realm, I’m not your enemy. Just like in Kunlun’s Realm, not everyone is your friend.”

“Is that so? There’s actually someone in the Heavenly Realm who doesn’t want to kill me?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Yin Yuanchen said, “The Heavenly Realm is very big and there are countless cultivators. It is impossible for all cultivators to think the same way. “In fact, I don’t like many of the doings in the Heavenly Realm. They are too vicious and don’t look at the bigger picture. The Infernal Court is the biggest enemy! Unfortunately, I am powerless to stop them. I can only restrain myself.”

“Speaking of which, I actually have a great relationship with Kunlun Realm. My grandmother is from there. Before the Middle Ages, she married my grandfather. Therefore, the blood of Kunlun Realm also flows in my body.”

At the end of his speech, a smile appeared on Yin Yuanchen’s face. It was as if he was very happy to have such a special background.

“With the relationship between Kunlun Realm and Heavenly Realm, how did the cultivators of both worlds come together?” It was obvious that Zhang Ruochen didn’t believe him.

Yin Yuanchen said, “Before the Middle Age, the relationship between Kunlun Realm and Heavenly Realm was still very harmonious. There was no bad blood between them. My grandfather and grandmother weren’t ordinary people either. They both had extraordinary identities.”

“My grandfather was a god. He had once practiced for a period of time with Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations. He then fell in love with Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations’ daughter. Their union was a good story in that era.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were filled with surprise.

Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations was a legendary figure. He used to be the number one powerhouse in the Kunlun Realm. He had a higher

knowledge that could conquer all realms. Even now, his fame was still being spread throughout the world.

Perhaps only a god could be worthy of the daughter of Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations.

But did she really marry into the Heavenly Realm? What kind of situation was it now?

Chapter 2157: The Imperial Ruler

Yin Yuanchen seemed to know what Zhang Ruochen was thinking. He sighed and said, “Grandmother has long become a god. She participated in the ancient divine war 100,000 years ago, but she couldn’t change the fact that Kunlun Realm was on the decline. The ruler of Heavenly Realm didn’t allow her to return to her homeland no matter how much she wished to.”

“It’s hard to return to her homeland with the grudges between Kunlun Realm and Heavenly Realm. All these years, grandmother’s heart has been full of contradictions. She has been living a hard life.”

Yin Yuanchen’s eyes showed a hint of sadness. He unconsciously tightened his fist, as if he felt the same way about his grandmother’s experience.

“You seem to know your grandmother’s affairs very well,” Zhang Ruochen said calmly.

Yin Yuanchen said, “To tell you the truth, brother Zhang, when I was very young, my mother was killed by a powerhouse from Infernal Court. I was raised by my grandmother. She loved me very much and gave me the best of everything. She even used the secret technique contained in the *Heaven’s Pass Scripture* to help me purify my body repeatedly.”

Yin Yuanchen could not help but felt a little sad mentioning his past. At the same time, he had a sense of hatred. He hated the Infernal Court for killing his mother.

If it were not for his grandmother who loved him dearly, his childhood would have been gloomy. It would have been hard for him to have the achievements he had today.

A strange look flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. He quickly recalled information about the *Heaven’s Pass Scripture* in his mind.

Kunlun Realm had a deep foundation and there were countless techniques to cultivate. There were many Regal-class techniques and the six great tomes.

Logically speaking, Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations's daughter should be cultivating the same techniques as her father. Even if her technique were different, it must be extraordinary.

After thinking for a long time, Zhang Ruochen still couldn't find any information about *Heaven's Pass Scripture*. There didn't seem to be any inheritance of this technique in Kunlun Realm.
In fact, he also knew nothing about the technique cultivated by Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations.

Zhang Ruochen had an idea, he sent a stream of spiritual power into the Qiankun Realm and asked the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, "Senior, have you heard of the *Heaven's Pass Scripture*?"
The Divine Sky-connecting Tree was absorbing the essence of its dried tree trunk. It had become very tall, with luxuriant branches and leaves. Its life force was so dense that it could not be dispersed. Thus, it formed a river of life under the tree.

"The *Heaven's Pass Scripture* is a technique cultivated by Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations. It originated from the outer realm and is extremely mysterious. It's extremely difficult to cultivate that even Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations himself hasn't truly cultivated it to its peak. The Heaven's Pass Temple is one of the three great divine temples of Kunlun Realm and was established by Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations. It also got its name from the *Heaven's Pass Scripture*." The Divine Sky-connecting Tree replied.
Zhang Ruochen was struck by its words. He didn't expect a peerless cultivator such as Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations would cultivate a mysterious technique from the outer realm instead of the six great tomes of Kunlun Realm.

For Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations to become a peerless cultivator, it was enough to show that the *Heaven's Pass Scripture* wasn't simple. It probably wasn't inferior to the six great tomes of Kunlun Realm.
However, it was strange that the *Heaven's Pass Scripture* was not included in the Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank compiled by the Celestial Court.
If it was not because the *Heaven's Pass Scripture*'s grade was not high enough, then it meant that it was too mysterious and few people knew about it.
"Senior, could you sense the power of the *Heaven's Pass Scripture*?" Zhang Ruochen asked again.
The Divine Sky-connecting Tree said, "Yes."

Zhang Ruochen opened a crack in the Qiankun Realm so that the Divine Sky-connecting Tree could sense the outside world.

“This person does have the aura of the *Heaven’s Pass Scripture*. He must have been refined by this power,” the Divine Sky-connecting Tree said.
Zhang Ruochen was struck by its words and thought. ‘Was Yin Yuanchen’s grandmother really the daughter of Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations?’

According to the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, the *Heaven’s Pass Scripture* was a cultivation technique that Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations had mastered. It had never been spread in Kunlun Realm, so it was unlikely that the Heavenly Realm had it.
Therefore, Yin Yuanchen’s words should have a certain degree of credibility.

In other words, Yin Yuanchen was very likely to be the descendant of Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations. His identity was not inferior to, or even better than, young master Akash.

Many thoughts flashed through Zhang Ruochen’s mind. He looked straight at Yin Yuanchen and said, “After all this, what do you want from me?”

“I wish to fight at your side, brother Zhang. We can team up against the powerful cultivators of the Infernal Court. I know that you are invincible below the Supreme Saint, but there are countless of them in the Infernal Court and I can’t fight them all by myself. Although I’m not talented, I want to give my best shot,” Yin Yuanchen said seriously.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Yin Yuanchen for a moment and said, “If you really want to deal with the Infernal Court, I welcome you no matter your origin.”

“But if you have ulterior motives and caused harm to Kunlun Realm, I won’t let it pass. I hope you and I won’t end up fighting each other.”

Obviously, Zhang Ruochen had always been vigilant against those of the Heavenly Realm.

“I believe that we will become friends instead of enemies. Brother Zhang, you must have something to do. I won’t disturb you any longer. Farewell.” Yin Yuanchen cupped his hands and left with a smile.

Looking at Yin Yuanchen’s back, Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment. He carved a Communication Talisman and sent it to Divine Scripture Maiden to ask about Yin Yuanchen.

If it was anyone else, he wouldn't care. But Yin Yuanchen might be the descendant of Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations, which piqued his interest.

Whoosh
Soon, a Communication Talisman returned.

Zhang Ruochen got shocked after reading the content of the talisman.

"Yin Yuanchen is really an exception in the Heavenly Realm," Zhang Ruochen murmured.

According to the information provided by Divine Scripture Maiden, Yin Yuanchen was indeed the grandson of a powerful deity in the Heavenly Realm. However, he was not on good terms with the other cultivators in the Heavenly Realm. He had always been alone and had been training on the Battlefield of Merits all year round; he had killed a large number of powerful cultivators from Infernal Court.

He had always kept a low profile and was not liked by the other cultivators in the Heavenly Realm. Therefore, he had never been well-known.

Speaking of which, Yin Yuanchen had been in Kunlun Realm for quite some time. He had spent most of his time in the Battlefield of Merits behind the Godfall Cryptwoods in the Eastern Region. He had caused heavy losses to the Ghost and the Corpusian. He had even saved the humans in many cities of the Eastern Region and sabotaged some of the Heavenly Realm's plans.

After the Central Imperial City fell into crisis, Yin Yuanchen was one of the first to come to support them. He had fought twice in a row against the top-notch cultivators of the Infernal Court. One win and one draw had a great impact on the morale of the Celestial Court.

'It seems that the Heavenly Realm is not all sinister and vicious. They still have the heart to fight against those of the Infernal Court. If the Heavenly Realm has more such talented ones, how can the Infernal Court press on?' Zhang Ruochen sighed with emotion.

No matter what, it was certainly a good thing to have someone like Yin Yuanchen in the Heavenly Realm.

Zhang Ruochen collected his thoughts and walked toward the headquarters of the Inscription Guild.

Perhaps it was because the army of the Infernal Court was approaching the city, so it was quite deserted. There was not even a guard at the door. As though anyone could enter freely.

‘Huh?’

The Thirty-six Formless Transmogrification that was cast earlier instantly lost its effect as soon as Zhang Ruochen stepped through the door, and reverted to his true form.

However, he did not panic at all.

Although Zhang Ruochen wanted to keep a low profile in the imperial city, it was not a big deal to reveal his true form either.

As Zhang Ruochen had expected, the Inscription Guild was indeed very vast. It was like a minor realm with a towering Saint Mountain and a flowing spiritual spring. The Saint Qi of heaven and earth was extremely dense and the precepts of heaven and earth were very active. It could be called a sacred ground for cultivation.

At this moment, a white-robed elder walked out of nowhere. He was thin and small, and his hair and beard were white, but his spirit was shining. There was no fluctuation of Saint Qi on him. He looked like an ordinary elder.

“The Prince of the Eastern Region has finally come. I have been waiting for you.”

The white-robed elder smiled warmly and walked toward Zhang Ruochen.

“Waiting for me?”

Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes. He could tell at a glance that the white-robed elder was extraordinary. He was a Spirit Saint and infinitely close to the 60th level.

Although Zhang Ruochen’s spiritual power was close to the 60th level, it was based on its quantity.

In terms of quality, he could not compare with the white-robed elder in front of him.

The white-robed elder’s spiritual power cultivation should be no less than Grand Chamberlain Wang Shiqi.

It seems that the Inscription Guild was really unfathomable. It was no wonder that they could guard the Imperial Ruler, one of the ten great Divine Artifacts.

“Yes, I’m waiting for you.”

In the blink of an eye, the white-robed elder walked up to Zhang Ruochen and said, “I’m Bai Qianli, one of the ten elders of the Inscription Guild.”

Zhang Ruochen was not arrogant since the other party was so polite. He said, “So it’s Elder Bai. It seems that the Inscriptions Guild had expected my arrival.”

“The one who holds the title of The Scion of Time and Space and the Prince of Eastern Region. With the strength of the strongest cultivator below the Supreme Saint, and the influence of the Imperial Ruler in Kunlun Realm, how could you not come?” Bai Qianli laughed.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. He had to admit that he was very curious about the Imperial Ruler and the Inscription Guild. So, he explained why he came. “I came to gain enlightenment from the Imperial Ruler.”

Since the other party called him Prince of the Eastern Region. It meant that he was qualified to enter the Inscription Guild with his current status.

If it is a cultivator of the Guanghan Realm, he might be refused entry.

He regarded himself as the prince and officially acknowledged his status.

“Of course. Prince of the Eastern Region, please come with me. But be careful. There are many arrays in the Inscription Guild. Mind your steps, it will be very dangerous.” Bai Qianli treated Zhang Ruochen as one of his own, so he especially reminded him.

“Such a powerful array? Will I be in danger with my current cultivation?”

Zhang Ruochen asked while followed behind by Bai Qianli.

Bai Qianli smiled and said nothing.

In front of him was a stone door formed by nine stone dragons intertwining. Each stone dragon was tens of thousands of meters long. It was like nine dragon-shaped mountains were twisted and bent, forming a majestic form.

Standing under the nine dragons stone door, Zhang Ruochen felt extremely small and insignificant.

The so-called invincible cultivation below the Supreme Saint seemed to be nothing.

A Saint Light appeared in Zhang Ruochen's eyes. He saw clearly that within the nine dragons stone door contained countless array patterns. It was actually…

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen drew a sharp breath.

Each stone dragon was a Ninth Stratum Array.

The nine stone dragons were nine Ninth Stratum Arrays.

The nine Ninth Stratum Arrays were connected to each other, forming an even more powerful array. It contained nine array spirits. They were the dragon souls of the nine dragons. Each dragon soul contained power that seemed to be able to swallow heaven and earth.

Zhang Ruochen smiled bitterly. He finally became cautious and followed Bai Qianli carefully.

After crossing the nine dragons stone door, they officially entered the minor realm.

This minor realm was vast and the edge couldn't be seen with naked eyes. Many of its areas were foggy. There was a hidden strange power that couldn't be seen through.

There were countless array patterns on the land, sky, and underground. But most of them were dormant.

Zhang Ruochen could not even see through some of the array patterns.

Compared to the Microworld of the jungle that Zhang Ruochen had taken from Saint King Xuankong, the grade of this minor realm was many times higher. In particular, it was filled with divine force. It must have come from the hands of a deity.

'Hmm…The Power of Time…Could the flow of time in this minor realm be adjusted?' Zhang Ruochen was shocked again.

A moment ago, he had captured traces of the Power of Time, and it was perfectly integrated with the entire minor realm.

Zhang Ruochen thought of Saint Monk Xumi instantly. Since his master was able to combine weapon refining, the Path of Time, and the Path of Dimension.

But it was obviously impossible. The Inscription Guild had existed for a much longer time than Saint Monk Xumi.

‘Could it be that the Inscription Guild is related to the time and space ancestor?’ Zhang Ruochen guessed.

The first Master of Time and Space existed eons ago. There were too few legends left in the later generations. Many things had long become unverifiable.

Zhang Ruochen followed Bai Qianli into the depths of the minor realm after passing through layers of fog.

In front of him was a vast expanse of white fog. Even if he used the Eye of the Divine Mark, he could not see clearly.

“Prince of the Eastern Region, we have arrived in front of the Imperial Ruler,” Bai Qianli said.

Zhang Ruochen frowned and showed a trace of doubt.

‘There was only white fog in front of him. How could there be an Imperial Ruler?’ He thought.

Bai Qianli waved his hand and the white fog dispersed. A divine jade bridge appeared in front of Zhang Ruochen. It was extremely wide, more than a hundred miles wide. It led to an unknown area shrouded in white fog.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Can I reach the Imperial Ruler by crossing this bridge?”

“No, it’s the Imperial Ruler.” Bai Qianli shook his head.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed slightly. He stared at the divine jade bridge. It was difficult for him to connect the dots of the divine jade bridge and the Imperial Ruler.

Although Zhang Ruochen had heard the legend of the Imperial Ruler, he had never actually seen it. It's no wonder that he didn't even know what the Imperial Ruler looked like.

"The Imperial Ruler is huge. There's a monument every 50 kilometers. Only those who have attained the Saint Kinghood could reach it. Reaching the first monument means one's cultivation has reached the One-step Saint King realm, and so on," Bai Qianli said.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. He knew about the monument's existence.

He still remembered that the Divine Scripture Maiden had mentioned the Imperial Ruler to him when he first came to the Central Imperial City. She had said that the Spirit King Ancestor of the Ghost had reached the second monument of the Imperial Ruler.

At that time, he had thought that the Spirit King Ancestor's cultivation was unfathomable. Now that he thought about it, he had just reached the Two-Step Saint King.

Of course, before Kunlun Realm had been revived, to be able to cultivate the Saint Kinghood was undoubtedly an extremely talented person.

'I wonder how many monuments I can reach with my current strength?' Zhang Ruochen was getting excited.

Each monument contained a profound and mysterious Path of Supreme Saint, which was very helpful for the Path's enlightenment. The further one went, the better the outcome of the enlightenment.

Legend had it that the Imperial Ruler had a total of 99 monuments. If Zhang Ruochen could cross all of them, he would have a chance to understand the mystery of becoming a god.

Zhang Ruochen turned to Bai Qianli and said, "Thank you, Elder Bai."

"It's a small matter. I wish the Prince of the Eastern Region all the best," Elder Bai said with a smile.

As he spoke, Bai Qianli made an inviting gesture.

Zhang Ruochen looked straight ahead and secretly adjusted his condition. He was not anxious at all.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen took a step forward and stepped on the divine jade bridge formed by the Imperial Ruler.

The moment he stepped on it, Zhang Ruochen had a tingling feeling. The Precepts in him flowed involuntarily and faintly emerged out of his body.

A vast majestic aura enveloped his body. It made his mind tremble slightly and the circulation of Saint Qi slowed down a lot.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen sensed several obscure spiritual powers sweeping over his body without leaving a trace.

'The foundation of the Inscription Guild is indeed amazing. There are so many powerful spiritual-power Saint Kings. Some of them are not weaker than Bai Qianli. They should also belong to the ten elders.' Zhang Ruochen thought.

'Hmm? This spiritual power, could it be… the spiritual-power Supreme Saint?'

Zhang Ruochen was not surprised that the Inscription Guild had a spiritual-power Supreme Saint. After all, the Inscription Guild recruited spiritual-power cultivators from all over the world. All of them mastered all kinds of mystical spiritual power cultivation methods. There was at least one spiritual-power Supreme Saint in every era.

However, it was extraordinary that the spiritual-power Supreme Saint stayed in Kunlun Realm and was not discovered by the Emissaries Vigilant.

It could only mean that the minor realm in the headquarters of the Inscription Guild was too extraordinary. Even a god would not be able to see through everything in it.

Perhaps it was the only place in Kunlun Realm that was still well-preserved after the catastrophe of the end of the Middle Ages.

Chapter 2158: 72 Days of Comprehending

Zhang Ruochen gathered his thoughts and quickened his pace. Even though he was suppressed, he was still moving extremely fast. Every step he took would cover several miles. In the blink of an eye, he had entered the area covered by the white fog.

After taking dozens of steps forward, Zhang Ruochen travelled a hundred miles. The first stele of the Imperial Ruler appeared in front of him.

The first stele was 999 feet tall and 99 feet thick. It laid across the Divine Jade Bridge formed by the Imperial Ruler, giving off a vast aura of the Path. Countless Precepts were faintly interweaved on it.

Zhang Ruochen felt a huge pressure on his consciousness as he stood in front of the stele. It was as if he were facing an ancient sacred mountain and all the beings of Heaven and earth were suppressed by it.

“This is only the first stele but it already has such a strong aura. The Imperial Ruler is indeed extraordinary. No wonder it can measure the emperor’s cultivation realm, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen immediately sat cross-legged in front of the stele and began to comprehend.

Each stele of the Imperial Ruler was very helpful to his enlightenment in the Path. There was no reason for him to waste this opportunity.

The more enlightened he was in the Path, the further he could go advance on the Imperial Ruler.

Zhang Ruochen was not worried about wasting too much time, because he had found that the time flow around him had changed since he stepped onto the Divine Jade Bridge.

The change was astounding, the time flow ratio had reached 30:1, which meant that 30 days here was only one day in the outside world.

This way, Zhang Ruochen could relax and comprehend the Path without any worries.

With the influence of the stele’s strange power, Zhang Ruochen quickly entered a deep state of enlightenment. His spiritual power and Precepts started circulating, even the blood Qi in his body shook, which gradually strengthened his body.

Whether it was cultivating spiritual power, martial arts, or the body, as long as one came to the Imperial Ruler to comprehend the Path, they would definitely gain great benefits.

At this time, many elites of the Inscription Guild were closely watching Zhang Ruochen’s situation. Their spiritual powers extended out one after another.

The Inscription Guild was very special, they only recruited spiritual power cultivators. Even if they had geniuses who practiced both spiritual power and martial arts, they mainly used spiritual power and with martial arts as support; savage beasts were no exception either.

“Zhang Ruochen is already the strongest person after the Supreme Saint level. I wonder how much he’ll improve after comprehending the Path with the help of the Imperial Ruler.”

“Which stele do you think Zhang Ruochen can reach? Can he catch up with the amazing geniuses in history?”

“Ever since the refinement of the Imperial Ruler, countless Saint Kinghood cultivators have come to comprehend the Path. The most talented one reached the 18th stele, surpassing most Neverwilt Realm Saints. Even some of the Supreme Saints of the Hundred-Shackle Realm can’t achieve this.”

“Zhang Ruochen’s current achievements are among the best in Kunlun’s long history. Even if he can’t reach the 18th stele, he should be able to reach the 16th or even the 17th.”

“Judging from the battle between Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen, he has at least the battle strength of an advanced Neverwither Supreme Saint. As long as his spiritual will is strong enough, reaching the 16th stele shouldn’t be a problem.”

..

The elites of the Inscription Guild were having a discussion. They were all looking forward to Zhang Ruochen’s performance and wanted to see which tablet stele was his limit.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen knew that many elites were spying on him, but he did not care. He was completely focused on comprehending the Path, a large amount of insight flowed through him.

One by one, the Precepts were derived, they slowly widened the Heavenly Stream.

Zhang Ruochen’s saint heart contracted violently under the strong aura, it was as if it had turned into a furnace. It repeatedly refined the vigorous spiritual power within him, strengthening every strand of spiritual power.

At the same time, the potential of Zhang Ruochen's body was further explored. His body could now accommodate more essence Qi released by the Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi's Sun Leaf.

Three days passed in the blink of an eye. Zhang Ruochen finished comprehending the Path and slowly stood up.

"The effect of Imperial Ruler's assistance in comprehending the Path is really amazing. I only comprehended the first stele for three days, and my insight of the Path has greatly improved—my Precepts have increased by nearly 10,000, and my spiritual power and body have become stronger."

Zhang Ruochen was quite happy.

Of course, he also understood that such a impressive gains had a lot to do with his high cultivation.

Zhang Ruochen didn't stay any longer, he raised his head and looked up at the stele before lightly stamping his foot on the ground. He leaped up and easily jumped over the stele.

Having personally experienced the wonders of the Imperial Ruler, Zhang Ruochen was looking forward to the enlightenment effects of the steles that come after this

Before long, Zhang Ruochen arrived at the second stele and entered the state of enlightenment again.

As time passed, Zhang Ruochen continued to move forward. He leaped over steles after steles.

He spent three days each comprehending in front of the first ten steles.

Starting from the 11th stele, his time spent on enlightenment began to increase. The Path was obviously too complicated. Even with Zhang Ruochen's cultivation realm, he could not easily comprehend it.

At the beginning, Zhang Ruochen used his physical body to resist the strong aura coming from the Imperial Ruler.

But after the 14th stele, it was difficult for him to move with only his physical body. Zhang Ruochen had no choice but to release Saint Qi.

According to Bai Qianli, the 14th stele corresponded to an initial stage Neverwither Supreme Saint.

It wasn't easy to reach this stele with only his physical body, this meant that his body was comparable to an ordinary Neverwither physique.

As expected by the elites of the Inscription Guild, Zhang Ruochen arrived at the 16th stele without a hitch. He comprehended there for seven days.

When Zhang Ruochen stood up, the elites of the Inscription Guild couldn't help but perk up, they wanted to see if he wanted to continue or stop here.

The next stele corresponded to the full strength of a Neverwither Supreme Saint, only few Neverwither Supreme Saints could reach it.

Of course, this did not mean that one had to have this level of strength. The key was to have a spiritual will that is comparable to the a full strength Neverwither Supreme Saint.

Power is easy to obtain, but to temper one's spiritual will is extremely difficult.

Swoosh

Zhang Ruochen jumped over the 16th stele without any hesitation, this was definitely not his limit.

However, he had obviously slowed down. His body felt extremely heavy, it was as if he were carrying a sacred mountain. Every step taken took him a lot of strength.

It took Zhang Ruochen a whole day to trudge to the 17th stele.

"I hope I can attain Great Perfection of Path of Dimension here,"Zhang Ruochen thought.

This plane contained countless Dimensional Inscriptions and Mark of Time, it was the most suitable for comprehending the Path of Time and the Path of Dimension. Therefore, Zhang Ruochen had been focusing on these two paths since the first stele.

The improvement of his attainments in the Path of Time and the Path of Dimension was undoubtedly the most obvious when in came to improving his strength.

"He has really reached the 17th stele. It's no wonder he's the strongest person after the Supreme Saint, not many people in the long history of Kunlun can compare to him."

“He’s only in Saint Kinghood, but he already has a spiritual will comparable to a Neverwither Supreme Saint who has attained Great Perfection . Zhang Ruochen’s future achievements is limitless, he might even become the second Saint Monk Xumi.”

“But with the current situation of Kunlun, I don’t know if I can live to see day Zhang Ruochen is fully grown.”

..

The elites of the Inscription Guild felt unsettled.

In the history of Kunlun, those who could reach the Imperial Ruler’s 17th stele in the Saint Kinghood, and have never died prematurely, all became great figures eventually.

This time, it took Zhang Ruochen nine days of comprehending before he opened his eyes.

“Unfortunately, I’m still falling short by a little. It’s too difficult to attain perfection in the Path of the Ancients,” Zhang Ruochen’s eyes flashed with helplessness.

He had to admit that cultivating the Path of the Ancients was far more difficult than he had imagined.

However, in the very next moment, Zhang Ruochen gathered his confidence and said, “Since the 17th stele didn’t work out, I’ll go comprehend the 18th stele.”

“Wow, Zhang Ruochen actually wants to attempt the 18th stele.”

Many elites of the Inscription Guild were shocked as they watched Zhang Ruochen leap into the air,.

Zhang Ruochen heard a roar in his head the moment he landed, an unimaginably vast and divine pressure was exerted on his body, it was almost crushing his spiritual will.

For a moment, Zhang Ruochen felt his mind go blank, he could not form any thoughts.

However, he eventually withstood the impact of the divine pressure. His spiritual will was tempered to the extreme, it was as firm as a rock and unshakable.

This was because Zhang Ruochen had directly faced the Divine Power more than once, it gave him an unyielding will.

“This is indeed a legendary and divine artifact. Its divine pressure surpasses many Divine Powers,” Zhang Ruochen thought.

This was actually not out of the ordinary, since the vessel spirit within a Divine Artifact is equivalent to a Divine Power. That is why they have the terrifying power of refining and killing Gods.

“Phew.”

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath and walked forward steadily.

The divine pressure released by the Imperial Ruler was not aggressive, it was most suitable for refining spiritual will.

This was a rare opportunity for Zhang Ruochen.

If he could use this opportunity to refine his spiritual will into one that compared to a powerful individual in the Hundred-Shackle Realm, it would undoubtedly be very beneficial for his future cultivation.

With each step, Zhang Ruochen’s spiritual will would bear the impact of the divine power, and it would become more and more violent. It was like a small boat sailing in the vast ocean, facing the crashing waves and the possibility of capsizing at any time.

It took Zhang Ruochen seven days to reach the 18th stele.

Zhang Ruochen immediately sat down cross-legged and started comprehending the Path without any hesitation.

He couldn’t stay here for too long even with his current spiritual will

The elites of the Inscription Guild were now speechless—they were all deeply shocked—including the spiritual-power Supreme Saint.

Reaching the 18th stele was something heard in legends. Now, the legend himself was right in front of them.

Everyone held their breath, wanting to see how long Zhang Ruochen could cultivate here.

Everyone could see that Zhang Ruochen's body was trembling slightly. He had a deep frown and had obviously reached his limit.

Even so, Zhang Ruochen persevered, he didn't want to give up easily.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't persist anymore after a day and a half, he had to stand up and retreat.

The moment he stepped back, the Imperial Ruler shot out a beam of Jade Divine Light which enveloped him.

In the next moment, Zhang Ruochen felt extremely relaxed. However, he had returned to the starting point.

"A day and a half—Zhang Ruochen actually broke the record. The time he spent cultivating was even longer than the legends."

All the elites of the Inscription Guild were dumbstruck and shocked to the core.

During the most glorious period of Kunlun, a cultivator reaching the 18th stele was shocking enough, they could even receive an audience with the Gods. A day and a half was more than impressive.

"Don't tell anyone about this."

After a short silence, an obscure spiritual power was transmitted into everyone's minds.

"Yes, Great Elder."

All the elites replied in unison.

It was a direct order of the Great Elder, no one dared to disobey him.

"The Prince of the Eastern Region must have gained a lot by reaching the 18th stele. Congratulations." Bai Qianli appeared with a smile on his face.

Bai Qianli was obviously more polite compared to before. He looked at him with a faint reverence.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I have to thank the Inscription Guild for giving me this opportunity to the enlightenment of the Path."

“You are too kind, Prince of the Eastern Region. You have done so much for Kunlun. It is only right for us to do as much,”Bai Qianli said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I still have other things to do so it is inconvenient for me to stay for long. I will now take my leave and visit again when I have the chance.”

“I will see you out, Prince of the Eastern Region. If you may,”Bai Qianli said.

Zhang Ruochen nodded slightly. He gazed at the Divine Jade Bridge formed by the Imperial Ruler before walking out of the plane.

After leaving the Inscription Guild, Zhang Ruochen used “Thirty-six Formless Transmogrification” again and turned into a knowledgable scholar once more.

This time, with the help of the Imperial Ruler, Zhang Ruochen’s gains were beyond one’s imagination. He had more than 99 million Precepts in his body. He only needed one each of Precepts of Dimension and Precepts of Time before he reached Great Perfection.

The other Paths that he cultivated didn’t improve as much as space and time, but they were also much stronger. Among them, the Precepts of Truth had reached 910,000. As long as he condensed the Realm-frame of Truth, he could unleash 10 times his attack power.

His Precepts of Palm and Precepts of Fist also exceeded 900,000—a level that ordinary people couldn’t reach.

Zhang Ruochen’s spiritual power had been refined and his essence had become stronger. He was even stronger than Bai Qianli.

In addition, Zhang Ruochen’s brain had become neverwither successfully. He had truly cultivated his body to the limit below the Supreme Saint.

In some way, Zhang Ruochen was already at his strongest. It would be difficult to significantly improve his strength in Saint Kinghood without any special encounters.

“The Imperial Ruler is so helpful in comprehending the Precepts of Dimension and Precepts of Time. It seems that it might be related to the Timespace Primordial Master ,”Zhang Ruochen guessed.

Masters of Time and Space came from the same lineage. Saint Monk Xumi was Zhang Ruochen's master, and the Timespace Primordial Master was Zhang Ruochen's Ancestral Master.

Zhang Ruochen was very curious about this mysterious Ancestral Master.

Chapter 2159: Xue Wuye was Seriously Injured

Zhang Ruochen could not help but feel emotional as he stood before the Inscription Guild.

If it were not for this opportunity, he would have to seclude himself for God knows how long to practice the Path of Dimension and Path of Time to their current state.

After all, it was extremely difficult to add a precept to any path, not to mention the Path of the Ancients.

No one would believe that hundreds and thousands of precepts grew in only 72 days. It was absolutely incredible.

But that realm was special as it contained countless Dimensional Inscriptions and Mark of Time.

More importantly, Zhang Ruochen's strength and willpower were too strong. The benefits he gained from reaching the 18th Stele of the Imperial Ruler in the Saint King Realm were something ordinary people couldn't compare with.

'There are extraordinary treasures like the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, Sundial, and Imperial Ruler. No wonder Kunlun was so prosperous before the Middle Ages. Maybe that's why Infernal Court wants to conquer Kunlun,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

There were too many treasures in Kunlun that even Infernal Court and the realms in Celestial Court could not compare.

To them, Kunlun had become a battlefield of merits. It was like a grand banquet that they simply could not miss.

Time flowed differently in that realm. Less than two and a half days had passed in the outside world compared to the 72 days in that world. It didn't take up too much time.

Otherwise, Zhang Ruochen would not know what had become of Central Imperial City when he came out of seclusion.

Zhang Ruochen did not stay outside the Inscription Guild for long. He rushed straight to Ziwei Palace as he wanted to find the Nine-heavens Maiden to find out the latest situation in Central Imperial City, especially Yan Wushen's whereabouts. He also wanted to see Chi Kongyue.

Tens of millions of Saint-level armies from Infernal Court surrounded the city. It may seem calm now but the situation could change rapidly. Central Imperial City could be conquered in the next moment. A great war could break out at any time.

Not long after, Zhang Ruochen saw the Nine-heavens Maiden and Chi Kongyue outside Ziwei Palace.

What surprised Zhang Ruochen was that Yin Yuanchen also walked out of Ziwei Palace.

The Nine-heavens Maiden's expression was grave, as if something terrible had happened.

"What has happened?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

The Nine-heavens Maiden answered, "Six hours ago, Xue Wuye was seriously injured. His life is hanging by a thread."

Zhang Ruochen could not help but frown upon hearing this. He had a good relationship with Xue Wuye. Even though they walked different paths, they were both sincere about swordsmanship.

Moreover, Xue Wuye had come into contact with Saint Monk Xumi. Saint Monk Xumi had given him the Brand of Time and Brand of Dimension. With these two brandings, he could use the power of Time and Dimension to a certain extent.

In a sense, Xue Wuye could be considered as the successor of Saint Monk Xumi.

Zhang Ruochen was willing to make friends with Xue Wuye just because of this.

"Take me to Xue Wuye," Zhang Ruochen said.

The Nine-heavens Maiden did not hesitate and immediately led the way.

Ziwei Palace was extremely huge. It was composed of many magnificent palaces and pavilions. Those who could live in it had high positions in the imperial court.

Fane of Zichen was a place of practice that Empress Chi Yao had specially prepared for the nine Realm Bearers in which ordinary people were not allowed to enter.

At this moment, except for Huang Yanchen and Ouyang Huan, who had died, the other seven Realm Bearers were all gathered in Fane of Zichen.

As soon as he entered Fane of Zichen, Zhang Ruochen recognized many familiar faces: Gai Tianjiao, Friar Lidi, Beigong Lan… However, everyone's expressions were not well. The atmosphere was depressing.

As Gai Tianjiao and the others witnessed Zhang Ruochen's arrival, their expressions changed.

They had been chosen as Realm Bearers and had been nurtured by Empress Chi Yao. Their future was limitless. Each of them had hopes of becoming emperors and empresses in the future.

Over the years, they had indeed grown very fast. Their cultivation had caught up to or even surpassed the *Five Heroes*.
However, compared to Zhang Ruochen, their achievements were overshadowed.

Zhang Ruochen nodded slightly and did not say anything as he followed the Nine-heavens Maiden to one of the cultivation rooms.

He could already hear the continuous cries from a distance.

Zhang Ruochen knew that without a doubt, the cries were from the sword attendants that Xue Wuye had taken in.

Like Xue Hongchen—the Sword Emperor—Xue Wuye was also a great figure. He had many sword attendants with him at all times. Each of them were stunning and had extraordinary talent in swordsmanship.

There were more than ten sword attendants in the cultivation room. All of them looked extremely sad and pitiful.

Zhang Ruochen looked around and saw Xue Wuye.

Xue Wuye was lying on a bed of jade. He was severely injured. His body was covered in scars and blood kept oozing out. It looked like he would break in just a touch.

Zhang Ruochen could tell at a glance that Xue Wuye's three meridians broke, his organs were messed up, and his Saint Soul was severely injured. He could barely hold his breath. It was obvious that he could not hold on for long.

"Xue Wuye's three meridians are all crushed. Even if we had the best sacred pill in our hands, there is no way it could help him," Divine Scripture Maiden sighed softly.

The Imperial Court did not lack sacred pills or sacred medicine, but Xue Wuye's current situation made it difficult.

Zhang Ruochen did not say a word. He walked to the jade bed and carefully examined Xue Wuye's injuries.

The dozen or so sword attendants clearly recognized Zhang Ruochen's identity and knew that he was an unparalleled legend. Therefore, a glimmer of hope appeared in their previously despairing eyes.

"Master Zhang, please save my master," all the swordmen knelt down and begged Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen asked them to get up and as he proceeded to check Xue Wuye's injuries, his heart sank.

Xue Wuye's condition was worse than he had expected. His injuries were almost irreversible.

If he wanted to cure Xue Wuye's injuries, he needed the top-level Spring of Life, a large amount of Divine Springs from the Divinity Bestowment Altar, or other healing treasures of the same level.

Unfortunately, the Divine Sky-connecting tree had not fully grown yet. The level of Spring of Life was not enough, and the Divine Springs from the Divinity Bestowment Altar weren't enough to heal Xue Wuye.

"Who did this?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

The person who had injured Xue Wuye was extremely vicious. Not only did he want Xue Wuye's life, but he wanted him to suffer.

Zhang Ruochen did not sense power of Infernal Court from Xue Wuye. So he was sure that it was someone from Celestial Court.

Yin Yuanchen said, “It was Gu Xin’ao, the Sword Reverend of Saber Empyrean. He took a liking to one of Xue Wuye’s sword attendants and the two of them had a conflict. Unfortunately, I arrived late and couldn’t stop them in time.”

“Master Yuanchen is not to blame. If you hadn’t arrived in time, Xue Wuye might have died,” the Nine-heavens Maiden said.

Because of Zhang Ruochen’s inquiry, the Nine-heavens Maiden got to understood Yin Yuanchen’s situation. Thus, she did not treat him as an enemy and confuse him with the other cultivators of Heavenly Realm.

“With the current state, almost all the beautiful women of Kunlun that are fancied by the big shots of the outside world will be taken into their camps,” Yin Yuanchen sighed.

“Not only that, in order to join the powerdul relams, the small clans and sects of Kunlun will take the initiative to offer beautiful women to the cultivators of the outside world. Beauty in exchange of a means for subsistence.”

“It is precisely for these reasons that the arrogance of Gu Xin’ao and the cultivators is encouraged. They think that the women of Kunlun belong to them. As long as they have their eyes on them, they can take them away. But this time, they bumped into Xue Wuye.”

‘Gu Xin’ao,’ Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes.

He had heard of this name before. This person was the leader of Saber Empyrean. His talent in swordsmanship was outstanding. Few could compare to him.

Saber Empyrean was one of the top 20 powerful realms in the Western Universe. It was the most prosperous macroworld in swordsmanship. There were countless sword cultivators and their foundations were extremely powerful. Very few people would willingly provoke them.

Most importantly, Saber Empyrean belonged toHeavenly Realm faction. It had always followed the lead of Heavenly Realm. Maybe Gu Xin’ao was deliberately trying to provoke Xue Wuye in order to scratch a Kunlun Bearer.

Chapter 2160: True Motive

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Zhang Ruochen's gaze turned cold. He had never thought that such a thing would happen in Kunlun. It was really sad.

But the current situation in Kunlun would indeed make some people feel desperate. No wonder they would want to prepare a way out in advance.

But even if they could join the powerful worlds, they were still not strong enough, so their lives wouldn't be easy either. They had to bow and bend their knees to others. They would also be like slaves with no dignity

"Do you have a way to save Xue Wuye?" The Nine-heavens Maiden looked at Zhang Ruochen with hope in her eyes.

Every Realm Bearer had an important mission, so it would be a pity if they died in vain. Their death would also be a great blow to Kunlun.

A charming sword attendant kept kowtowing to Zhang Ruochen while crying at the same time. "It's all my fault that the Master Xue is in danger, Master Zhang. You must save the him even if it costs my life. I'm willing to die for this."

Zhang Ruochen gave the sword attendant a cursory glance. She was indeed very beautiful and possessed an alluring mystique. It was no wonder that Gu Xin'ao had his eye on her.

"All of you, leave first," Zhang Ruochen said.

Hearing this, no one hesitated. Everyone hurriedly left the practice room. Xue Wuye's life was hanging by a thread. There was no time to be wasted.

Closing the practice room door, Zhang Ruochen carefully examined Xue Wuye lying on the jade bed. Then, with a flick of his wrist he took out something roughly the size of a fist. The object was dark green, and it gave off an extremely rich aura of vitality.

This was the Heart of the Divine Tree nurtured by the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. The heart possessed the miraculous ability to make bones and flesh regrow. Approximately 129,600 years were needed to extract the hearts, making them priceless. Even gods would yearn for it.

In Xianji Mountain of Northern Region, Zhang Ruochen had only obtained seven hearts of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. He had given two to the Fairy of a Hundred Flowers and Mu Lingxi, so he had five left.

‘Saint Monk Xumi had once taught Xue Wuye swordsmanship for a month. He even gave him Brands of Time and Dimension, which could signify a deeper meaning. No matter what, we have to keep Xue Wuye alive.

‘In a sense, the two of us could even be considered as brothers. Xue Wuye, I hope this Heart of the Divine Tree wouldn’t be a waste on you.

‘If you can’t become a top elite in the future, I’ll personally take back your Brands of Time and Dimension for my master,’ Zhang Ruochen thought.

After obtaining the Secret Tome of Time and Space and the Sacred Qiankun Wooden Picture Scroll, Zhang Ruochen was undoubtedly Saint monk Xumi’s disciple. However, he wasn’t as lucky as Xue Wuye to have seen him in person.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t hesitate anymore. He flipped his hand and pressed the Heart of the Divine Tree into Xue Wuye’s body.

He didn’t need to do anything else, because the Heart of the Divine Tree emitted a majestic life force and merged with Xue Wuye’s flesh and bones. It immediately started healing Xue Wuye’s broken and injured body.

It had to be said that this was a great opportunity for Xue Wuye. After merging with the Heart of the Divine Tree, not only could his life be saved, but he could also receive great benefits that have a profound effect on his future training.

Nourished by the life force, the scars and injuries on Xue Wuye’s body healed quickly. Even the three major meridians were rebuilt.

Zhang Ruochen opened the Heaven’s Eye between his eyebrows and carefully observed Xue Wuye’s situation. This was undoubtedly a great opportunity for him to understand the mystery of the Heart of the Divine Tree.

It didn’t take long for the wounds on Xue Wuye’s body to be completely healed. His physique was greatly strengthened, and he attained the state of ‘Perfection Physique’ without going through the stages.

The recovery of the Saint Soul was relatively more troublesome, but it was only a matter of time.

With Xue Wuye's current status, naturally he could not completely absorb the Heart of the Divine Tree. Most of the essence would be stored in his body to be released slowly afterwards.

Six hours later, Xue Wuye's injuries healed and he slowly awakened.

"Thank you, brother Zhang, for saving my life." Xue Wuye stood up and thanked Zhang Ruochen gratefully.

He knew very well how serious his injury was, but now he was safe and sound. With only Zhang Ruochen by his side, it was obvious what had happened.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I let you fuse with a Heart of the Divine Tree. I hope you would make good use of it."

Hearing this, Xue Wuye's couldn't help but shuddered. He knew how precious a Heart of the Divine Tree was. No wonder that even his serious injuries were healed.

He could clearly feel that his physical quality and Saint Soul had become stronger. Even his status had improved. Numerous precepts of life had been added to his body.

"Saint Monk Xumi once said that I would face a great calamity. If I can't survive it, I'll die. If I survive it, I'll get unimaginable benefits. It really came true," Xue Wuye sighed.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but look surprised. He hadn't expected Saint Monk Xumi to have predicted what would happen today.

However, the future was unpredictable. Even Saint Monk Xumi wasn't sure if Xue Wuye could have endured this catastrophe.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Xue Wuye and said, "With your temperament, how could you be so easily provoked by Gu Xin'ao?"

Although Zhang Ruochen had not had much contact with Xue Wuye, he knew that Xue Wuye was not someone impulsive. Even if it was for the sword attendant, he would not be stupid enough to throw his life away.

Especially since Xue Wuye was the mayor of Wan Xiang City and the Realm Bearer of Kunlun, he shouldered a heavy responsibility, so he should not act rashly.

“I also know that I am not a match for Gu Xin’ao, so I did not plan to fight with him at first. I was going to leave with the sword attendant, but he said that he wanted to have a friendly match and not compete in cultivation strength. As a sword practitioner, how could i fall back?”

“However, I did not expect that Gu Xin’ao would be so despicable. He is the leader of the Saber Empyrean, yet he reneged on his promise. After exchanging a few dozen moves, he used his overwhelming strength to heavily injure me and snatched away my Seal of Ten Sword,”Xue Wuye said despondently.

No matter how well trained he was, he was still filled with anger when he encountered such an aggravating thing.

If Gu Xin’ao had really defeated him in regular sword fight, he would have nothing to say. However, he would never accept using such a despicable method of injuring him.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen suddenly realized that Gu Xin’ao had indeed planned beforehand. It seemed that him taking fancy to the sword attendant was just an act. His real target was Xue Wuye.

Moreover, the Flying Fairy Sword Technique of Wanxiang City was obviously what Gu Xin’ao wanted.

Xue Wuye suddenly became serious, “Brother Zhang, I have a presumptuous request, which I do not know whether you can promise me.”

“What is it?” Zhang Ruochen replied.

Xue Wuye said, “I want you to intervene and take back the Seal of Ten Sword, Wan Xiang city’s Flying Fairy Sword Technique, because we cannot let it fall into Saber Empyrean’s hands.”

“Since Gu Xin’ao has already taken the Seal of Ten Sword, he will certainly have comprehended it. Even if we take it back, I’m afraid it will be too late,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Xue Wuye shook his head and said, “The Seal of Ten Sword that I carried is the symbol of the mayor of Wanxiang City. There are layers of seals on them which will not be easily broken.”

Xue Wuye continued after pausing for a while, “After entering Kunlun, the cultivators of Saber Empyrean have been trying to collect all kinds of sword manuals. They even have plans to attack the Sword Pavilion.

“Although Saber Empyrean is known as the holy land of swordsmanship, they yearn for the Wordless Sword Manual.

“The Flying Fairy Sword Technique originates from the Wordless Sword Manual. It contains the secrets of Sword One to Sword Ten. Saber Empyrean has been coveting it for a long time. Perhaps this was the reason why Gu Xin’ao took action personally.”

Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat. The Flying Fairy Sword Technique was one of the most powerful sword techniques in Kunlun. Even in a Macroworld with foundation as solid as of Saber Empyrean, it was hard to find any sword techniques comparable to it in the sword manuals of the same level, let alone the ones that could surpass it.

In fact, there were many Macroworlds coveting the powerful inheritances of Kunlun. For example, the demonic great worlds like the Blackdemon realm wanted to steal the Demonstone Engraving.

The six great tomes of Kunlun had long been famous throughout the worlds. They were the targets of countless macro worlds.

Once they lost all the powerful inheritances, Kunlun’s strength would be lost and have no hope of rising again.

Chapter 2161: A Decree From Zhang Ruochen
After pondering for a moment, Zhang Ruochen said, “No one can take away the heritage that belongs to Kunlun.”

“Thank you, brother Zhang,” Xue Wuye quickly thanked him.

When Xue Wuye heard Zhang Ruochen’s words, he secretly heaved a sigh of relief. If Flying Fairy Sword Technique were to fall in the hands of outsiders, he would undoubtedly become a sinner of Wanxiang City and be ashamed to face his ancestors.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen thought of something. He waved his hand and took out a corpse. “Since I’ve seen you, I’ll have to trouble you to bring him back to Wanxiang City to be buried.”

“He’s… Sword Emperor’s second disciple, Xue Lanshan.” Xue Wuye was shocked.

Although he was still very young and had never seen Xue Lanshan in person, he recognized him at a glance since there was a portrait of Xue Lanshan in Wanxiang City.

Xue Wuye sighed and said, “Xue Lanshan had been missing for more than 300 years. Never did I expect he has long died. Where did Brother Zhang find his body?”

Xue Lanshan was a legendary figure. His talent in swordsmanship was close to that of Sword Emperor. He had become the top elite in Wanxiang City not long after the disappearance of Sword Emperor.

Just when everyone had thought that Xue Lanshan would comprehend Ninth Sword and become the second Sword Emperor, he suddenly went missing. No one knew if he was dead or alive. It had caused a great impact on Wanxiang City.

“I found Xue Lanshan’s body many years ago on an ancient ship of the dead souls when I went to Ying Yang Sea,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Xue Wuye’s eyes were filled with sadness. “When Xue Lanshan went missing, he was already the strongest elite below Supreme Sainthood. He must have gone to Ying Yang Sea to find ways to become a Supreme Saint. Unfortunately, he failed.”

With Xue Lanshan’s talent, it would not have been difficult for him to advance to Supreme Sainthood if the environment of Kunlun didn’t restrict him.

Xue Wuye bowed respectfully to Xue Lanshan’s body. Then, with a wave of his hand, he put the body away.

When the crisis in Central Imperial City was over, he would bring the body back to Wanxiang City.

Handing Xue Lanshan’s corpse over to Xue Wuye took some load off Zhang Ruochen’s mind. His state of mind could only achieve a perfect state by fulfilling the promise he had made.

The door to the practice room opened. The Nine-heavens Maiden, Yin Yuanchen, and the others walked in immediately.

Seeing that Xue Wuye’s injuries had healed, everyone could not help but look surprised. They wondered what Zhang Ruochen had done.

Regardless of what he had done, the fact that Xue Wuye survived was certainly good news.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the Nine-heavens Maiden and Yin Yuanchen. “Where is Gu Xin’ao now?”

“Brother Zhang, are you planning to fight Gu Xin’ao?” asked Yin Yuanchen.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Not really. I just want to take back something that doesn’t belong to him.”

“Gu Xin’ao should still be in Welkin Lounge,” said Yin Yuanchen.

Welkin Lounge was a very famous restaurant floating above the third district in the city. It was a place for Saint-level elites to eat, drink, and have fun. It was a very luxurious place.

Ever since cultivators from diverse Macroworlds stormed into Central Imperial City, Welkin Lounge had become a gathering spot for prominent figures from different Macroworlds. It was even more bustling than before.

Welkin Lounge was where Yin Yuanchen had saved Xue Wuye. Judging from Gu Xin’ao’s personality, he felt that Gu Xin’ao’ probably had no plan to leave the place for now.

The Nine-heavens Maiden’s eyes changed. She asked softly, “You have a plan?”

Zhang Ruochen had already made many enemies. She really did not want him to get himself into more trouble.

“People of Kunlun should not endure the bullies. We must not allow outsiders to loot Kunlun. The more we tolerate, the more of them will be more unscrupulous.”

“It’s time to make rules. No matter who comes to Kunlun, they must comply with the rules.” Zhang Ruochen’s tone was calm but there with a strong will and authority in it.

Hearing this, the Nine-heavens Maiden was in silence. She thought of the recent situation of Imperial Court, Chi Kongyue’s encounter in Syzygy Mansion, and Xue Wuye’s serious injury this time. They could not continue to put up with this.

Otherwise, even if Kunlun survived from Infernal Court’s attack, those Macroworlds under Celestial Court would plunder it. In the end, everything including living beings and treasures would be taken away.

Of course, each cultivator held different ambitions. There was no way to force those wanting to join the powerful Macroworlds to fight for Kunlun.

Zhang Ruochen waved his hand and took out a golden leather scroll. It was made of the skin of a top Saint-King level sacred beast. Many complicated patterns seamlessly integrated with it.

As soon as he took it out, it emitted an intimidating aura, making Xue Wuye's sword attendants step back.

Zhang Ruochen wrote lines of text on the golden scroll using his finger with his blood.

As soon as Zhang Ruochen wrote the last word, the golden scroll immediately emitted a dazzling light and transformed into a Decree.

Anyone could feel that the Saint power within the Decree was so powerful that even ordinary Neverwither Supreme Saints might not be able to withstand it.

This was the first time Zhang Ruochen had written a Decree since he had reached Sainthood. Furthermore, it was a Blood Decree.

With such a powerful Decree in his hand, anyone below Supreme Sainthood could do almost anything.

With a thought, Zhang Ruochen summoned a huge creature from Qiankun. It was a ferocious and terrifying Divine Python—Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit.

Recently, the Evil Spirit had devoured the Saint souls of many elites. It had also been nourished by many heavenly treasures. It became stronger and stronger. Its compatibility with the corpse of the Divine Python had also increased greatly that it could unleash greater divine power.

"Master, what can I do for you?"

The Evil Spirit lowered its head and asked respectfully.

Now, Zhang Ruochen had planted a Blood God's Curse Seal in the evil spirit's Saint Soul so it did not dare to be presumptuous anymore.

Zhang Ruochen shook his hand and tossed the Blood Decree to the Evil Spirit. At the same time, he sent a message using his spiritual power.

The Evil Spirit did not hesitate. It moved and left Fane of Zichen swiftly. Then it left the Ziwei Emperor Palace.

The Nine-heavens Maiden and the others were confused. They had no idea what Zhang Ruochen was up to. They had not seen what was written on the Blood Decree.

However, they could predict that something big would happen. It might shake the entire central imperial city.

‘Is Zhang Ruochen—who has defeated—Yan Wushen finally going to establish his authority?’

At the same time, a large number of cultivators of Saber Empyrean were indulging in leisure and pleasures at Welkin Lounge.

However, the most luxurious pavilion in the lounge was very quiet. There was no singing and dancing performances but only two people sitting opposite each other.

On the left was a handsome young man with a pair of slanting eyes. There was a clear sword-shaped mark between his eyebrows. He was emitting light as dazzling as an unparalleled, unsheathed divine sword.

He was none other than Gu Xin’ao, Young Sword Reverend from Saber Empyrean.

Sitting opposite Gu Xin’ao was a skinny, wicked-looking man. He wore a green-black robe with many complicated array runes on it. Although he was sitting there, in the same place, it gave off the feeling that he was in a separate dimension.

This cultivator was also someone extraordinary. He was Zhou Zhen, a very powerful High-Saint Array Master from Formation Sect.

Formation Sect was a sect jointly set up by many Archsaint Array Master during the Middle Ages. It was a place of pilgrimage for array masters and had produced many Array Saint Masters. It shared a close relationship with Celestial Palace.

Zhou Zhen was the most outstanding successor in Formation Sect’s current generation. Not only that he was excellently skilful in array formation, but his fame was also no less than that of Lu Baiming from the Five-Element Temple.

“Zhou Zhen, I have great confidence that things will go according to our plan with you here in Kunlun. Come, let’s have a toast,” said Gu Xin’ao, who raised his glass.

Zhou Zhen did not smile. He picked up the fine wine in front of him and drank it in one gulp.

“Kunlun is indeed an eternal Macroworld. Never did I expect it still has the chance to turn things around after it went through the great catastrophe during the Middle Ages,” Zhou Zhen said with a sullen face.

Gu Xin’ao nodded. “Who would expect Kunlun to have two World Spirits?

“I thought when Blackheart Demonlord made Huang Tian chop down Divine Sky-connecting Tree, Kunlun would meet its end.

“Never did I expect the root of a new World Spirit would be born, reviving Kunlun from its verge of fall.

“However, if that World Spirit—Saturn Peach Tree—is chopped down, Kunlun will definitely meet its doom.”

A World Spirit was of utmost importance for a Macroworld. Losing the Root of World Spirit meant the cultivators of that Macroworld would lose the foundation to ascend to Godhood.

Kunlun used to be glorious and prosperous, but after Divine Sky-connecting Tree was cut off, it had entered a godless era that had lasted for 100,000 years.

It was not until Saturn Peach Tree had become Kunlun’s new World Spirit that a new deity had been born.

“It must be the doing of those Kunlun deities. They had everything planned and set and quietly waited for 100,000 years, for the chance to rise again.

“After all, we can’t tell for sure whether those legendary powerful died in that catastrophe during the Middle Ages?

“Moreover, the power of Sundial covered the entire Central Region in Kunlun during the Middle Ages. In other words, Kunlun must have produced many elites at that time. It is possible that not all of them died in that catastrophe. The situation in Kunlun is far more complicated than you, and I can imagine,” Zhou Zhen said meaningfully.

Gu Xin'ao was struck by Zhou Zhen's words. Although he had come into contact with many secrets, he was still far from Zhou Zhen.

After drinking another glass of wine, Zhou Zhen continued, "However, it doesn't matter. As long as the Saturn Peach Tree is chopped down, all the plans of Kunlun deities will go in vain. When the time comes, no one will be able to stop the destruction of Kunlun."

"Saturn Peach Tree is in Central Imperial City, so this battle is of utmost importance to Kunlun. No matter how deep Kunlun cultivators keep that tree hidden, it will be found once the city is broken through, and that will be game over for Kunlun."

Zhou Zhen's eyes were filled with coldness as he spoke. He seemed to be looking forward to such an outcome.

"When that time comes, many secrets hidden in Kunlun will probably surface." Gu Xin'ao's eyes shone with a bright light.

The force afraid of Kunlun's rising the most was not Infernal Court but Heavenly Realm and their allies.

After all, who would not be worried about Kunlun's retaliation against them for what they had done?

No matter what disgraceful and despicable act they had committed, what was done was done. They could only bury the truth forever and get rid of those who dared to uncover the past.

At this moment, a slightly fat middle-aged man entered the pavilion.

Gu Xin'ao said, "Chu Xiangyun, what are you doing here? Get out." His tone was arrogant.

Chu Xiangyun was the owner of Welkin Lounge. He was a Saint with a high cultivation base and had some fame in Kunlun. Otherwise, he would not have been able to gain a foothold in Central Imperial City.

"Gu Xin'ao, I did not mean to disturb you. However, the emissary of Prince of the Eastern Region is here. He wants you to—" Chu Xiangyun wanted to say something, but he hesitated; sweat kept beading on his forehead.

Gu Xin'ao frowned the moment he heard 'Prince of the Eastern Region'. "What does Zhang Ruochen want?"

Ever since Zhang Ruochen had issued the travel ban restricting the entry of foreign cultivators into Eastern Region Holy City, cultivators from both Celestial Court and Infernal Court knew that he was the Prince of the Eastern Region.

As a regional Prince, Zhang Ruochen was undoubtedly one of the most high ranking figures in Kunlun.

“The emissary wants you to accept the Decree from the Prince of the Eastern Region immediately,” Chu Xiangyun said in a trembling voice.

Smack!
Gu Xin’ao slammed his palm on the table and stood up abruptly. His body emitted a terrifying aura.

‘Does he know who I am? I’m the famous Young Sword Reverend, a leader from Saber Empyrean. I would not even accept a Decree from an ordinary Supreme Saint, let alone him.

‘I am a Saint King just like Zhang Ruochen, yet he had the audacity to want me to accept his Decree. This is blatantly an insult!’

‘Zhang Ruochen, you’ve gone too far. Do you really think that no one can beat you?’ Gu Xin’ao’s eyes were full of anger.

Chu Xiangyun kept trembling. He could not withstand the intimidating aura from Gu Xin’ao and almost fell to the ground.

He was reluctant to be a messenger. In front of Gu Xin’ao, he was just a small fry.

Yet, he had no choice because compared to Gu Xin’ao, Zhang Ruochen—the Prince of the Eastern Region—was undoubtedly more terrifying.

“Gu Xin’ao, come out quickly and accept the Decree from the Prince of the Eastern Region.”

A deep sonorous voice came.

The voice contained traces of divine power that could shake the heavens, sending everyone in Welkin Lounge shivers.

Gu Xin’ao walked out of the pavilion and saw a Divine Python possessed by Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit. He could not help but narrow his eyes. He could clearly feel that the powerful, intimidating aura of the Evil Spirit.

“I am not a Kunlun cultivator. Ask Zhang Ruochen to stop flaunting his authority as the Prince of the Eastern Region in front of me. If he wants anything, he should meet me in person,” said Gu Xin’ao in an aggressive tone.

‘It is true that one cannot afford to offend Zhang Ruochen, but I am not someone he can mess with. How can I face others if the news of me accepting his Decree spread?’

The Evil Spirit hovered in the air and looked down at Gu Xin’ao from above. The Blood Decree flew out of his head. “Gu Xin’ao, take this Decree.”

The Blood Decree released a bright golden light and gave off a vast, intimidating pressure. The pressure that came down to Gu Xin’ao was as heavy as an ancient divine mountain.

“Hmph.”

Gu Xin’ao snorted coldly. He raised his hand and shot out a thousand-foot-long dazzling Swordlight.

The Swordlight was invincible that it could slash through a dimension. Even an ordinary Neverwither Supreme Saint had to dodge it.

However, before it could even get close to the Blood Decree, the sword radiance was quickly dissipated. It did not cause any damage to the Blood Decree at all.

Gu Xin’ao was inadvertently struck by the sight of it. He felt immense pressure.

With a flip of his hand, Gu Xin’ao took out a violet gold Saint Sword, activated it with Saint Qi to launch an attack at the Blood Decree.

200,000 Regal-level inscriptions appeared on the violet gold Saint Sword, and hundreds of thousands of Precepts of Swordsmanship wrapped around it. The sword was emitting a vigorous Sword Qi.

The Blood Decree was slowly unfolded, and powerful energy was released. It locked down the dimension, crushing everything.

Despite Gu Xin’ao’s best efforts to resist, it did not take long for the Blood Decree to suppress him. It destroyed the sword strike that he was proud of.

“How is this possible?”

Gu Xin’ao was shocked and could not accept this reality.

If Zhang Ruochen had come in person and fought him, Gu Xin’ao might have accepted such an outcome. But now, it only took a Decree for Zhang Ruochen to suppress him to the point that he could not move. No one could accept this result.

“I, Prince of the Eastern Region, hereby pronounce a Decree. You are subject to Celestial Laws set by Celestial Court. In Kunlun, there are Kunlun Laws to follow too. Cultivators of Celestial Court could face punishment over violation of Celestial Laws, so are Kunlun Laws. Failing to comply with Kunlun Laws will face severe punishment.

“The first Order: You are forbidden to bully Kunlun cultivators and plunder Kunlun of its heritage—the cultivation technique manuals.”

“The second Order…”

..

The Evil Spirit raised its head and read aloud. Its voice was clearly heard throughout the entire Central Imperial City.

At the same time, the Blood Decree was fully unfolded. Lines of large characters that emitted boundless Saint light shone on the sky. Anyone who was in Imperial City could see them.

Obviously, the Decree written by Zhang Ruochen was not meant for Gu Xin’ao only, but all the cultivators of Celestial Court in the Imperial City.

The so-called Orders were the rules Zhang Ruochen had set.

Many cultivators saw Decree reflected in the sky and had a thought. “Does Zhang Ruochen want to suppress cultivators from all Macroworlds himself?”

Chapter 2162: Execute Those Who Refuse

Above the imperial city, lines of characters illuminated the heavens and earth. Each character emitted a terrifying presence, like stars floating in the sky. Their presence shocked many cultivators in the city.

For a moment, no one could ignore it, and the entire imperial city was thrown into an uproar.

“Such tyranny. He’s using such harsh rules to restrict cultivators from all realms.”

“What a joke. No matter how strong Zhang Ruochen is, he is merely a Saint King. How dare he dream of making the so-called Kunlun Laws? He had disregarded the other Macroworlds.”

“Kunlun has been reduced to a Battlefield of Merits. We have to rely on the help of the other Macroworlds to temporarily hold back the Infernal Court’s invasion. What right do we have to talk about dignity and status?”

“Kunlun Laws? Zhang Ruochen is far from being able to suppress all the Macroworlds by himself. The will of the cultivators of all Macroworlds is not something he can fight alone.”

…

All kinds of voices sounded. They were full of disdain for the laws set by Zhang Ruochen. They felt that it was a joke.

Even Empress Chi Yao might not be able to abide by the laws set by herself. Let alone Zhang Ruochen.

Their authority was far inferior to that of the Celestial Palace.

In Ziwei Palace, the Nine-heavens Maiden, Yin Yuanchen, and the rest were surprised when they saw the words in the sky. They did not expect that the Blood Decree written by Zhang Ruochen was aimed at the cultivators of the Celestial Court.

“Forgive me, brother Zhang. The laws you have set are too restrictive for the cultivators of all realms. It has seriously affected their interests. I’m afraid that no one will be willing to abide by them,” said Yin Yuanchen.

Zhang Ruochen said calmly, “Whether they are willing or not, they must abide by Kunlun Laws. This is the bottom line of Kunlun.”

“I’m afraid it’s not that simple. If things go wrong, Celestial Palace will be involved.” The Nine-heavens Maiden frowned slightly.

Of course, she knew that Zhang Ruochen had set the laws for Kunlun. However, the outcome might not be as he had hoped.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Don’t worry. We shall know the responses from Celestial Palace soon enough.”

‘Could it be…’

The Nine-heavens Maiden and Yin Yuanchen had some guesses in their hearts.

At Welkin Lounge, Gu Xin’ao was under more and more pressure. He reluctantly lifted his head and looked at the lines of words in the sky.

Gu Xin’ao could not miss the first Order that Zhang Ruochen had made. It was aiming at him.

Moreover, Zhang Ruochen had specially sent an emissary to Welkin Lounge to announce the Decree and even specified for Gu Xin’ao to receive it. Gu Xin’ao had a bad feeling about this.

After reciting the Decree, Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit looked at Gu Xin’ao coldly and said, “Gu Xin’ao, the leader of Saber Empyrean, injured Xue Wuye of Kunlun for no reason and stole his inheritance. You have violated the first Order of the realm. You shall be executed as a warning to others.”

“Execute me? How can Zhang Ruochen make the laws? How can he kill me?” Gu Xin’ao roared into the sky.

Just as he had thought, Zhang Ruochen had planned to use him to establish his authority. He hadn’t expected Zhang Ruochen to be so overbearing. Zhang Ruochen wanted to take his life with just one sentence.

Celestial Palace might not execute Gu Xin’ao. With his status, even if he violated the rules. There was always a way to turn things around.

Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit said indifferently, “The Prince of Eastern Region is one of the rulers of Kunlun. Naturally, he has the right to set the laws of the realm. All cultivators of Celestial Court must abide by them when they enter Kunlun.”

“Gu Xin’ao, not only did you violate the laws, but you also challenged the Prince of Eastern Region’s prestige. Such crime is unforgivable, and you shall be executed instantly.”

Gu Xin’ao was struck by its words, and his eyes narrowed. He wished to break free from the suppression of the Blood Decree immediately and at the same time shouted, “Array formation”.

He knew very well that he couldn’t fight against Zhang Ruochen’s Blood Decree alone. Only by combining the powers of many Saber Empyrean cultivators could he escape.

No matter what, he couldn’t just be a sitting duck.

The large group of Saber Empyrean cultivators immediately moved. They formed a mysterious sword formation in an instant and gathered vigorous power onto Gu Xin’ao.

Rumble

Cracks appeared in a large area of space, and it was on the verge of shattering. Gu Xin’ao was finally able to straighten his body.

“Impudent! Do you dare to obstruct law enforcement? You all are as guilty as Gu Xin’ao!” Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit coldly shouted.

Vast divine force surged out from Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit’s body, condensing into a pitch-black divine cloud. A terrifying divine might instantly envelop the entire Welkin Lounge.

Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit opened its mouth, revealing a pitch-black bolt of lightning. It was spherical and crazily gathered divine power, becoming larger and larger.

When the bolt of lightning expanded to ten thousand feet in size, it suddenly shrank rapidly, becoming only the size of an egg. The surrounding space then violently collapsed.

Whoosh

The bolt of lightning pierced through space at an unimaginable speed.

Boom

The lightning exploded and released a terrifying destructive power.

The sword array formed by Saber Empyrean cultivators was powerful, but it couldn’t resist the destructive power. It was torn apart in an instant.

Many screamed after the impact.

A large number of Saber Empyrean cultivators were hit. Their bodies were charred black and almost turned to charcoal.

Fortunately, with the suppression of Zhang Ruochen's Blood Decree, the space within 300 meters was exceptionally stable. The violent power didn't spread out wantonly.

Otherwise, the Welkin Lounge and the entire third city district would have been severely damaged.

"How could this be? How could Zhang Ruochen have so many top-notch elites by his side?" Gu Xin'ao's mood fluctuated. He was shocked and annoyed.

During the Battle of Luoshui, Zhang Ruochen had already revealed his two powerful helpers. The Azure Dragon and the Saint Devourer. Gu Xin'ao did not expect another one to appear now.

Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit was probably comparable to the first level below the Supreme Saint in terms of strength.

Gu Xin'ao didn't know that Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit could activate the powerful divine force contained in the Divine Python's corpse as it wished. As long as its Saint Soul remained powerful. It was not comparable on normal occasions.

One day, Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit would completely control the power of the Divine Python's corpse. Naturally, it would gain the power of a Supreme Saint.

Zhang Ruochen was a selfless person. He would share his precious cultivation resources with the cultivators around him. He also spared no effort to cultivate Saint Devourer, Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit, and the Ancient Abyssal Blade.

Therefore, Zhang Ruochen was different from a lone ranger like Yan Wushen. He had trained many top-notch elites around him. The Four Heavenly Kings could chase Yan Wushen all over the world, but if they dared to chase after Zhang Ruochen, they would be hunted down.

"Stop."

Zhou Zhen finally opened his mouth to stop Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit after seeing that it was about to attack again.

Zhou Zhen walked out of the dilapidated pavilion. He looked straight at Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit and said in a deep voice, "Go back and tell Zhang Ruochen that although he is powerful, he can not act recklessly. The leader

of the Macroworld is not someone who can decide life and death at will. Be careful not to offend the public."

"Who are you? Are you here to obstruct the law enforcement as well?" Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit said coldly.

Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit exuded a strong murderous intent. As he was instructed by Zhang Ruochen to kill Gu Xin'ao this time to establish his authority. Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit would suppress anyone who stood in his way.

Zhang Ruochen could truly intimidate the cultivators of the Celestial Court from all realms by doing so. He would make everyone remember the laws and dare not to violate them.

If he did not show an example, the laws would become a blank piece of paper.

Zhou Zhen snorted coldly. "I'm the leader of the Formation Sect. I'm here to deal with the High-Saint Array Master of the Infernal Court on behalf of the Celestial Court's order. Does Zhang Ruochen still wish to make a move on me?"

The Formation Sect held a very high position in the Celestial Court. Zhou Zhen firmly believed that Zhang Ruochen would not dare to act recklessly.

As soon as Zhou Zhen finished speaking, the Blood Decree floating in the sky suddenly released an extremely powerful binding power, making everyone present unable to move.

Then, a sword materialized from the Blood Decree and headed straight for Gu Xin'ao.

"No!"

Gu Xin'ao shouted, desperately trying to break free from the binding.

But with Zhang Ruochen's current dimensional attainments, how could Gu Xin'ao break free from the Dimensional Lockdown?

Zhou Zhen was getting furious and a saint light shone between his eyebrows. A circular array disk flew out and instantly split into four.

Immediately, Zhou Zhen used his intense spiritual power and formed a mystical Ninth Stratum Array with the four disk arrays. It enveloped all the Saber Empyrean cultivators, including Gu Xin'ao.

Zhou Zhen could not watch Gu Xin'ao be killed no matter what.

"Crash."

Although the Ninth Stratum Array was powerful, it could not resist the sword. Its formation was cut open easily.

This sword contained entirely of Zhang Ruochen's Swordwill. It was equivalent to him attacking with all his strength. Even an elite of the first level below the Supreme Saint had no choice but to retreat.

Gu Xin'ao broke free from the Dimensional Lockdown using the power of the Ninth Stratum Array. He attacked with all his strength without hesitation. He waved the saint sword in his hand and performed his strongest attack.

"Block it for me."

Gu Xin'ao growled. He poured his Saint Qi into the saint sword without hesitation. At the same time, he mobilized both the Precepts of Swordsmanship and the Precepts of Truth.

Although Gu Xin'ao was far inferior to Zhang Ruochen in the Path of Truth, he was not bad either. He could increase his attack power six times.

"Puff."

The saint sword left his hand. Gu Xin'ao's body was directly cut into two halves.

Even if there were Divine Marks carved on his body by the gods, he could not resist it.

How dare Zhang Ruochen…' Gu Xin'ao thought with his remaining consciousness.

Then, his Saint Soul was also destroyed by the Sword Qi.

Even to death, he could not believe that Zhang Ruochen dared to kill him in front of everyone.

Seeing Gu Xin'ao being killed, Zhou Zhen's face darkened. Zhang Ruochen persisted to kill Gu Xin'ao even after he showed up. Zhang Ruochen didn't respect him in the slightest.

At the same time, Zhou Zhen was shocked. He truly felt how terrifying Zhang Ruochen was. He was sure that Zhang Ruochen's strength was stronger than the Blood Decree.

The cultivators of Saber Empyrean were terrified. They wanted to escape from the Welkin Lounge and return to Saber Empyrean.

"Killing a leader of a Macroworld in public? Has Zhang Ruochen truly gone mad?"

"Zhang Ruochen is showing his attitude and will. It's a warning to us all."

"He's a madman. He dares to do anything."

"Saber Empyrean has always been protective of its people. It is a great shame that Gu Xin'ao was killed. They will never let this pass easily. Moreover, the Celestial Palace will certainly not tolerate such a thing."

"I heard that just yesterday, the celestial law enforcers of the Celestial Palace arrived at the Central Imperial City. Led by Commander Jin Hong. The celestial law enforcers would have made a move by now."

…

Witnessing Gu Xin'ao death, the cultivators from all realms could no longer remain calm. They all realized that Zhang Ruochen was not joking around this time.

Perhaps only Zhang Ruochen dared to do such a crazy thing.

Everything happened too suddenly. Except for Zhou Zhen, who was at the scene, no one could save him in time even if they wanted to.

"Brother Zhang, you killed Gu Xin'ao. This…" Xue Wuye fell into a daze.

He knew very well how serious the consequences would be after doing this. Zhang Ruochen would be pushed to the middle of the storm again.

No matter what, this incident was caused by him. Xue Wuye couldn't help but feel guilty.

Zhang Ruochen said calmly, “If I don’t kill Gu Xin’ao, the laws I set are meaningless.”

“Saber Empyrean is one of the top 20 powerful worlds in the Western Universe. How could it be willing to suffer such a loss? Especially now, it’s an emergency and the situation is even more complicated. Do you think you don’t have enough trouble?” The Nine-heavens Maiden’s face turned dark as she complained.

Since things had already come to this point, it was useless to say anything more. The most important thing now was to think of a countermeasure.

A leader of a Macroworld who died in the imperial city would cause a huge commotion. Even the gods would be alarmed and it wouldn’t be easy to calm them down.

At the same time, in a great saint’s mansion somewhere in the fourth city district.

24 elites stood side by side and looked at the sky from afar.

They wore the same style of silver armor that covered their entire bodies. Only their faces were exposed, and their bodies exuded a strong murderous aura.

The armor they wore had a mark that belonged to Celestial Palace, symbolizing their status in the Celestial Palace.

They were the celestial law enforcers from Celestial Palace that had just entered the imperial city. Each of them was a top-notch Nine-step Saint King. They were equipped with sacred artifacts and specialized in mysterious battle formations. Their combined battle strength was extremely shocking, and cultivators from all realms were in awe of them.

“How dare Zhang Ruochen kill an elite from the Celestial Court? Doesn’t he know there are rules of heaven and the Celestial Palace?”

“Even if Gu Xin’ao was arrogant and committed a mistake, it should be handled by the celestial law enforcers. How could Zhang Ruochen act as he wishes?”

“Commander, Zhang Ruochen has disregarded the rule of Celestial Palace. He must not be tolerated. He should be captured immediately and taken to the Celestial Palace to be punished.”

Three powerful elites spoke one after another, all of them filled with murderous intent.

All of a sudden, everyone's gaze turned to the person standing in the middle. This person was seven feet tall and looked valiant. There was a murderous aura between his brows that made people fear him.

His name was Jin Hong. He was the youngest commander in the celestial law enforcers and the only commander at Saint King realm. He had been nurtured by the Celestial Palace and was extremely powerful. He had endless potential.

Ever since he became a celestial law enforcer, Jin Hong had killed countless experts. He condensed a terrifying murderous aura and became famous for his killing. He was known as The Reaper.

In the Celestial Palace, besides the Four Heavenly Kings, no one else at the Saint King realm could beat Jin Hong.

Right now, the Central Imperial City was in chaos and disarray. Jin Hong was ordered to lead a unit to maintain order in the imperial city to avoid any major problems.

However, he had just arrived at the Central Imperial City. Before he could do anything, something so serious had happened.

Jin Hong glanced at the three enforcers who had spoken. He knew very well why they were so radical.

Maintaining the order of the Celestial Palace was only part of their purpose. The truth was that they all belonged to the sect of the Heavenly Realm. They all wanted to seize the opportunity to get rid of Zhang Ruochen.

Although the celestial law enforcers were subordinate to the Celestial Palace, it was also composed of cultivators from all realms to maintain a balance with everyone.

Jin Hong was not a cultivator from Heavenly Realm. Therefore, he thought for a moment and said, "Let's first report this matter to the Celestial Palace and let them decide."

"Commander, it was not necessary. Zhang Ruochen wouldn't dare to resist as long as we are here," said one of the enforcers.

Another enforcer said, “Zhang Ruochen’s action has offended the public. I’m afraid that cultivators from all realms are waiting for our action. If we don’t act now, many people will laugh at us and think that we’re afraid of Zhang Ruochen.”

All along, anyone who faced the celestial law enforcers could only surrender. No one had ever dared to fight against them.

Jin Hong shook his head slightly and said, “Zhang Ruochen is different from others. He dares to clash with the gods and is never afraid of anything. It’s best not to provoke him without full confidence.”

“We can attack after the Celestial Palace gives a clear order. At that time, no matter how powerful Zhang Ruochen is, he won’t be able to cause any trouble.”

With Celestial Palace’s prestige, all Saint Kings, Supreme Saints, and even the deities wouldn’t disobey their order. Otherwise, how could they rule the universe?

Chapter 2163: Domineering Authority

In Welkin Lounge, Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit released a surge of divine force enveloping Gu Xin’ao’s body. Immediately, a white token flew out. There were ten sword patterns on the token. It was the Seal of Ten Swords that Xue Wuye had been robbed of.

Then, Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit looked at Saber Empyrean cultivators and said coldly, “All of you should be punished for obstructing the law enforcement. Go guard the city gate and make up for your mistakes.”

The cultivators of Saber Empyrean felt indignant after hearing what Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit said. But at the same time, they secretly heaved a sigh of relief. Their lives were spared and did not end up the same fate as Gu Xin’ao.

Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit raised his head and said in an extremely deep voice, “Gu Xin’ao has been executed as he violated the laws. This serves as a warning and I hope that all the cultivators from all realms will not repeat the same mistake.”

As the saying goes, a tossed stone raises a thousand ripples. As soon as Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirit’s voiced, the entire imperial city was shaken like a big storm.

Many Saber Empyrean cultivators felt anxious as their leader had been killed. If they had also violated the laws set by Zhang Ruochen, would they still be alive?

No doubt, the warning was very effective and it shocked many of them.

It was foreseeable that the news of Gu Xin'ao's death would spread to all realms at a shocking speed. Who knew what kind of commotion it would cause? Many gods would probably be unable to sit still.

On the quaint street, a burly man who was more than three meters tall suddenly stopped. His gaze was locked on the Blood Decree in the sky.

"Hmph, Zhang Ruochen must be crazy. He wants to restrain the cultivators of all realms with just a Blood Decree. Does he think he's invincible?" The burly man snorted.

After that, the burly man's big hand turned into sharp claws and suddenly swung out a claw.

Crash.
Five 10,000-meter-long claw energy appeared. They tore through the space and arrived at the location of the Blood Decree in an instant.

"Insolent fool!"

Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit let out a violent roar.

Just as it was about to stop the burly man, there was a stream of spiritual force entering his mind.

A dazzling sword slashed out from the Ziwei Palace and met with the sharp claw energy.

Crack
The five claw energy was shattered the moment they came into contact.

The sword was unscathed. It tore through space and slashed toward the source of the claw energy.

The burly man stared intensively. He hurriedly waved his sharp claws to block the incoming sword.

A large number of Precepts appeared. With it as the center, the precepts and Saint Qi of heaven and earth gathered together frantically.

The sword was indestructible and directly cut through all obstacles.

Pfft
The burly man's defense broke through and he splattered out bright red blood.

"So strong." The burly man was shocked.

On a lake more than a hundred miles away from the burly man, a boat quietly floated. Inside the boat sat a handsome man who looked like an immortal, who was playing the zither.

All of a sudden, the handsome man's body emitted a fierce aura. With a wave of his hand, a mysterious sound wave flew out.

The sound wave fluctuated. It was originally intangible, but at this moment, it transformed into a ferocious tiger that seemed to have corporeal form. It roared and pounced toward the Blood Decree.

At the same time, by the crystal clear river, an ordinary-looking fishing man swung his fishing rod and released a fishing line thousands of feet long.

The fishing line was very thin. It was almost invisible to the naked eye, but it was extremely sharp. It cut through space and created an extremely long crack. It was unstoppable.

A peerless deity's daughter also made a move. She raised her hand and a streak of divine flame flew out. It ignited the Saint Qi of heavens and earth, turning the entire sky crimson as if it burned everything on sight.

…

In the Ziwei Palace, Zhang Ruochen stood in front of the Fane of Zichen, staring in the direction of the Welkin Lounge.

He had sensed the Qi dynamics of many top-notch cultivators and they all shared the same goal. They all wanted to destroy his Blood Decree.

These elites did not recognize the laws he made and wanted to destroy them forcibly.

Everyone who attacked was a top-tier elite below the Supreme Saint. They had a great reputation in the Celestial and Infernal Courts.

Only they dared to challenge Zhang Ruochen's authority at this time.

“Just the right time.”

Zhang Ruochen had an idea. He raised his hand, and nearly a million Precepts of Dimension emerged and merged into the space.

Suddenly, a hand that was between reality and illusory appeared above the Blood Decree. It carried with it the power to crush everything and pressed down.

No matter how powerful the attacks were, they were all suppressed.

“How is this possible?”

The cultivators who attacked were all shocked.

Involuntarily, they no longer hold back. They tried their best to release their Saint Qi and make their attacks the strongest.

Zhang Ruochen’s spatial hand was in sync with the Blood Decree and controlled a large area of space.

Boom

The space with a radius of thousands of feet surrounding the Blood Decree collapsed instantly and was annihilated.

The fierce tiger formed by the zither music burst into pieces.

The fishing line broke inch by inch.

The divine flame in the sky was quickly extinguished.

…

With Zhang Ruochen’s current attainments in the Path of Dimension, he displayed the second level of Dimensional Annihilation. It was powerful enough to make a Neverwither Supreme Saint retreat.

Not only that, the powerful destructive power penetrated the space and impacted all the powerful elites who attacked.

Pfft
Affected by this attack, nearly half of the powerful elites were injured, spouting blood, and a look of horror appeared in their eyes.

“Zhang Ruochen’s strength has increased greatly compared to the Battle of Luoshui previously. What’s going on? Could it be that even Yan Wushen has fallen far behind too?”

They had thought that Zhang Ruochen’s strength had reached its limit since he had defeated Yan Wushen in Luoshui. They hadn’t expected him to continue improving.

It was hard to accept that the difference in strength between them, who were both top-notch elites below the first level of the Supreme Saint, could be so great.

In Ziwei Palace, Zhang Ruochen displayed the Saint Aspect of the Immovable King. He was thousands of miles tall and standing on the ground. He was overlooking the entire imperial city like a god.

“If anyone is dissatisfied, feel free to attack. However, you must bear the consequences.” Zhang Ruochen’s voice echoed in the imperial city and reached everyone’s ears.

Anyone could hear the strong threat in his words.

The first-level powerhouses were all defeated one after another. They could not destroy the Blood Decree and even suffered injuries in the fight through the air.

Who still dared to make a move?

For a moment, the entire world fell silent.

At this moment, Gai Tianjiao and the others looked at Zhang Ruochen in a completely different way. In their eyes, Zhang Ruochen’s figure had become extremely stalwart, and they could only look up to him.

Once, they were the top geniuses of their generation. But now, they have been left far behind by Zhang Ruochen.

They had no hope of achieving what Zhang Ruochen had achieved in the Saint King realm, even if they spent another thousand years.

Chi Wansui had mixed feelings. He and Zhang Ruochen have a deep blood feud for the extermination of the clan. He had longed to kill Zhang Ruochen and even kill Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue.

Even now, he hadn’t forgotten his hatred. But he knew that he couldn’t take revenge. The gap between him and Zhang Ruochen is already a world of difference.

At the same time, Chi Wansui knew very well how much Zhang Ruochen meant to Kunlun.

When Kunlun had attacked the Xumi Dojo but was ambushed by the Heavenly Realm and nearly annihilated. It was all thanks to Zhang Ruochen that they had turned the tide.

But now, the internal and external affairs of Kunlun were also relying on Zhang Ruochen to support the situation. He alone was able to suppress the Celestial and Infernal Court.

For Kunlun at this stage, Zhang Ruochen was like a stabilizing pillar, and there must be no shortage of it.

‘This is Zhang Ruochen’s true strength.’

Zhou Zhen’s heart sank to the bottom.

He was right below the Blood Decree and he could feel the collision of power the most clearly.

The power Zhang Ruochen displayed made Zhou Zhen feel suffocated and he simply lost the courage to fight back.

Swoosh
A huge Primordial Demonic Serpent suddenly appeared outside the Ziwei Palace, exuding an extremely powerful demonic aura.

Above the Primordial Demonic Serpent stood an elegant middle-aged man. He wore a five-elements Taoist robe, combed in a Taoist bun, and held a whisk. His body exuded a Taoist aura of inaction.

He was none other than Lu Baiming, the most outstanding genius of the Five-Elements Temple.

“Brother Lu, it’s been a long time since I saw you.”

Zhang Ruochen appeared out of thin air and greeted Lu Baiming with a smile.

Zhang Ruochen had a good impression of Lu Baiming from his contacts in the Northern Region. He was also very impressed by his attainments in array formations.

Lu Baiming's spiritual power was extremely powerful. Even if Zhang Ruochen had refined his spiritual power to the extreme with the Imperial Ruler, he was still a little impenetrable.

Of all the people Zhang Ruochen had come into contact with, only Ji Fanxin's spiritual power was comparable to Lu Baiming's.

With such powerful spiritual power, he didn't know if Lu Baiming had reached the second level of High-Saint Array Master.

Normally, becoming the Lord of Mountains and Rivers was already the limit of the Saint Kinghood. However, Lu Baiming was a rare genius in array formations. He might be able to break this limit and become the King of Sea and Land.

Lu Baiming smiled warmly and said, "After parting in the Northern Region, I'm really surprised that you had grown to such a level in such a short time. The Scion of Time and Space really can't be judged by common sense."

"Brother Lu, you're overpraising me! When you come here, you're not just here to compliment me, right?" Zhang Ruochen said.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was so direct, Lu Baiming did not waste time and said, "I'm here to hope that you can show mercy to Zhou Zhen. At this time, don't touch him."

"Why?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Lu Baiming's figure flashed and appeared in front of Zhang Ruochen, and said, "Zhou Zhen is the subject of the Formation Sect. He has the potential to become an Archsaint Array Master. As a sacred ground of Array Masters, the Formation Sect is very powerful, and not many people are willing to provoke it.

"Of course, you may not care about this, but Zhou Zhen is here on the order of the Celestial Palace. If you kill him, it will be tantamount to fight against Celestial Palace. Even a god can not bear the consequences."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen's heart skipped a beat. Zhou Zhen was so close to Gu Xin'ao. Even if they were not from the sect of Heavenly Realm,

they must have a deep relationship. He did want to take the opportunity to get rid of them.

However, after hearing what Lu Baiming said, Zhou Zhen was a troublesome person.

“Thank you for your reminder, Brother Lu. I’ll know what to do.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that Lu Baiming must be well aware of the seriousness of this matter. He was worried that Zhang Ruochen would kill Zhou Zhen to establish his prestige, so he came to the Ziwei Palace personally.

Perhaps this was also the attitude of the Five-Elements Temple.

Zhang Ruochen’s Blood Decree had so much influence that even the upper-class figures may not be able to sit still. They were afraid that he would be too aggressive and cause unpredictable consequences.

Lu Baiming said, “The celestial law enforcers have arrived in the imperial city. They are led by Jin Hong, The Reaper. You need to be careful. It’s best not to conflict with them.”

“As long as they don’t come looking for trouble, I won’t provoke them,” Zhang Ruochen said indifferently.

So what if it was the celestial law enforcers?’ Zhang Ruochen thought.

It wasn’t enough to subdue him.

Lu Baiming knew that Zhang Ruochen was also a smart person and not a reckless person, so he didn’t say anything more.

“Brother Lu, you must have just arrived in the Central Imperial City, right? Let me call a few friends to welcome you,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Lu Baiming waved his hand and said, “Don’t bother. I’ve already made appointments with several Array Masters to discuss ways to deal with the ten High-Saint Array Masters of the Infernal Court. We can’t afford to delay.”

“Also, I want to go and meet the array geniuses of the Infernal Court as soon as possible.”

It was obvious that Lu Baiming was happy to see Zhang Ruochen. Only those in the same attainments from the Infernal Court could arouse his interest.

After chatting for a while more, Lu Baiming took his leave. He looked quite anxious.

In Welkin Lounge, Zhou Zhen looked calm on the surface, but he was panicking in his heart. Gu Xin'ao died in front of him. He didn't know what would happen to him.

He had done his best to activate the Ninth Stratum Array formation to protect himself, but he knew in his heart that if Zhang Ruochen wanted to deal with him, no matter how strong the array formation was, it would be useless.

Just when Zhou Zhen was upset, a giant hand suddenly appeared above the Welkin Lounge and grabbed him.

"This is not good."

Zhou Zhen was shocked and immediately activated the array to resist despite everything.

However, his resistance was futile. The giant hand easily penetrated the array and grabbed him.

Seeing this, all the cultivators gathered around the Welkin Lounge were shocked.

Of course, they all knew that Zhang Ruochen had taken action!

"Zhang Ruochen took Zhou Zhen away. What exactly did he want to do?"

"Zhou Zhen is a High-Saint Array Master trained by the Formation Sect and his identity is very special. Does Zhang Ruochen dare to attack him?"

"Is there anything in this world that Zhang Ruochen dares not to do? Killing the leader of Fane of Dimension, the leader of Fane of Merit, the Sunshine Tianzi, and the leader of the Saber Empyrean. Zhou Zhen is probably in danger this time!"

…

Many people thought that since Zhou Zhen was captured by Zhang Ruochen, his life was most likely in danger.

Bang
In the Ziwei Palace, Zhou Zhen fell from the sky and fell to the ground in embarrassment.

“Zhang… Zhang Ruochen.”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen, Zhou Zhen’s pupils couldn’t help but shrink.

At this moment, the person he didn’t want to face the most was undoubtedly Zhang Ruochen.

After all, no one who fell into Zhang Ruochen’s hands would have a good ending.

Zhang Ruochen stood in front of Zhou Zhen and said calmly, “Someone came to me just now and asked me to spare your life. Do you think I should spare your life?”

Hearing this, Zhou Zhen’s eyes could not help but change slightly and he secretly wondered who would come forward.

At the same time, Zhou Zhen was also very frightened. Zhang Ruochen wanted his life and he was unscrupulous.

“You should know the reason why Gu Xin’ao was killed, right?”

“Tell me, what is Gu Xin’ao’s true purpose in dealing with Xue Wuye? I don’t believe it. It’s just for a mere sword attendant or to kill a Realm Bearer of Kunlun. How could a leader of the Saber Empyrean do such a degrading thing?”

Zhang Ruochen looked straight at Zhou Zhen and said unhurriedly.

As he spoke, an invisible pressure was released and enveloped Zhou Zhen.

Zhou Zhen’s mind trembled as if he was being pressed down by a divine mountain. He bent his knees slightly and was about to kneel involuntarily.

This was not only the suppression of Saint Power but also the impact of spiritual will.

As a High-Saint Array Master, Zhou Zhen's spiritual will was already extremely powerful and he was even superior to many Neverwither Supreme Saints.

However, he was much weaker than Zhang Ruochen.

Gritting his teeth, he endured the immense pressure, Zhou Zhen thought in his heart, 'It seems that Zhang Ruochen doesn't know the uniqueness of Kunlun's Realm Bearers. These Realm Bearers have all eaten the Saturn peaches from the Saturn peach tree. They're the true fruit of the gods. With their current strength, they can't completely refine them. The saint blood still contains the aura of the Saturn peach tree, so I can find the approximate location of the Saturn peach tree.

After this incident, it will be very difficult to get the Realm Bearer's saint blood again. No matter what, I can't let Zhang Ruochen know this secret.'

It was because this matter was too important that Gu Xin'ao had acted personally, and even taken the Seal of Ten Swords to cover it up.

But no one had expected Zhang Ruochen to interfere, and Gu Xin'ao had lost his life in vain.

His thought turned quickly, and Zhou Zhen said with difficulty, "I don't know what Gu Xin'ao wants to do. I only heard from him that he is very interested in the Wordless Sword Manual. He also wants to get a glimpse of the mysteries of the manual through the Flying Fairy Sword Technique of Wanxiang City."

Zhang Ruochen could not help but take three steps forward and approach Zhou Zhen, he said, "Do you think I'm easy to deceive? There are two paths in front of you now. One is to live, and the other is a dead end. If you want to live, answer the question obediently, and don't think of hiding anything; If you want to die, I can help you now."

Hearing this, Zhou Zhen couldn't help but take a step back. Of course, he wanted to live, but there were some things he couldn't tell Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 2164: The Celestial Law Enforcers

Zhou Zhen was now in a dilemma, and he was brainstorming on ways to deal with the situation.

There were some things he could not say, but at this moment, he had no choice but to say it.

With Zhang Ruochen's intelligence and wisdom, he could not be easily fooled. If he wanted to escape, he would have to say something of real value.

After some thought, Zhou Zhen said, "Gu Xin'ao vaguely mentioned that the remaining seven Realm Bearers are connected to the imperial court's fate. Being able to mobilize the power of the thousands of spiritual veins gathered in the Central Imperial City is of great significance to the protection of the Central Imperial City.

"If a Realm Bearer dies, the defense of the Central Imperial City might have a flaw."

Zhang Ruochen's heart jumped. The situation in the Central Imperial City was so critical, but the seven Realm Bearers were all gathered. Perhaps there was a reason for this.

A god spending so much effort to nurture seven Realm Bearers must have other intentions. Even if they hadn't fully grown, they could still play an important role.

But the cultivators from the sect of Heavenly Realm wanted to kill the Realm Bearers. They had ulterior motives.

At a time like this, the Heavenly Realm was still thinking about internal strife instead of concentrating their forces to fight the Infernal Court. It was simply insane.

"What are you and Gu Xin'ao plotting in the Welkin Lounge?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Zhou Zhen said, "Gu Xin'ao values my position in the Formation Sect and wants to befriend me. That's why he's holding a banquet in the Welkin Lounge to welcome me. Even a strong realm like the Saber Empyrean will request help from the Formation Sect."

In the end, Zhou Zhen's eyes couldn't help but show a sense of pride. It was the sense of superiority as the successor of the Formation Sect.

The Formation Sect had a transcendent status and was independent of the world. Even if it dominated the world, it would do its best to maintain a harmonious relationship.

Zhang Ruochen nodded noncommittally. Only he knew whether he believed Zhou Zhen's words or not.

“We are the celestial law enforcers and we are here for Zhang Ruochen. Where is he?”

At this moment, a cold voice suddenly sounded.

Although this voice didn’t spread across the entire imperial city like Emperor Yi’s Evil Spirits, it also spread throughout the first central district where the Ziwei Palace was located. It reached the ears of millions of Saint realm cultivators.

“Since the celestial law enforcers have made a move, let’s see how arrogant Zhang Ruochen can be.”

“Insolent? Even if he’s a true dragon, he has to be arrogant in front of the celestial law enforcers. Who dares to offend the majesty of the Celestial Palace?”

“Just wait for the show. I wonder what an interesting scene it will be when Zhang Ruochen puts on the shackles.”

…

All of a sudden, the cultivators in the first central district were alarmed. They all turned their eyes toward Ziwei Palace.

Although everyone knew that Zhang Ruochen was undisciplined, no one thought that he dared to fight Celestial Palace.

Joy sparked in Zhou Zhen’s eyes. With the deterrence of the celestial law enforcers, Zhang Ruochen shouldn’t dare to do anything to him.

It would be even better if the celestial law enforcers could capture Zhang Ruochen,’ Zhou Zhen thought.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Zhou Zhen indifferently and said, “Gu Xin’ao was killed, but the celestial law enforcers didn’t do anything. They rushed over as soon as you were captured. You must be quite of something.”

“Are you thinking that I’ll let you go when the celestial law enforcers arrive?”

Zhou Zhen’s heart trembled slightly. His instincts told him that things might not be as simple as he thought.

Outside the Ziwei Palace, six celestial law enforcers rode on white jade pegasi. They stood in a line, emitting a strong murderous aura. As though

the aura transformed into ferocious divine demons. Just their auras alone were enough to scare people. It was obvious that they didn't come with good intentions.

"Zhang Ruochen, show yourself," one of the enforcers shouted coldly.

As soon as he finished shouting, the palace gate opened and a beautiful palace maid in green walked out.

The palace maid stopped 9 meters away from the six celestial law enforcers. She said nervously, "The Prince of the Eastern Region has something important to deal with and he won't see anyone."

Although the palace maid was a saint, her cultivation was inferior to the six celestial law enforcers. Especially when they emitted extremely powerful saint might, which makes her felt under great pressure.

"How dare you! We represent the Celestial Palace. Zhang Ruochen sent a little palace maid to send us away. Are you trying to insult us? Zhang Ruochen, do you have no regard for the Celestial Palace?" One of the enforcers shouted.

He had never been rejected entry since he became a celestial law enforcer.

A powerful aura burst out from his body.

Bang!
The palace maid's cultivation was too weak. She flew backward and spat out blood as she couldn't withstand the impact.

A look of horror appeared in the palace maid's eyes and she felt like her entire body was about to explode.

She had never expected that the other party would be so overbearing.

When she flustered, a gentle force appeared and wrapped around her. She instantly stabilized her body, and the aura that was about to crush her vanished into thin air.

Then, a cloud of crystal-clear spring of life flew out of the Ziwei Palace and entered the palace maid's body.

"How impressive. As a celestial law enforcer, you can disregard the rules set by me and oppress the cultivators of Kunlun?"

A cold voice came from Ziwei Palace.

The enforcer who spoke just now urged the white jade pegasus forward, and said loudly, “Zhang Ruochen, don’t be unreasonable. You killed the leader of Saber Empyrean for no reason and took away the High-saint Array Master sent by Celestial Palace. You have violated the heavenly law. Release Master Zhou Zhen immediately and surrender. Come with us to the Celestial Palace and accept your punishment.”

Others would be afraid of Zhang Ruochen, but as the celestial law enforcer, he didn’t put Zhang Ruochen in his eyes at all.

“Capture me? Do you have the heavenly decree of the Celestial Palace?” Zhang Ruochen’s faint voice came out.

The enforcer snorted. “Do you think you’re a god or a Supreme Saint? Why do we need the heavenly decree of the Celestial Palace to capture you?”

“You don’t even have the heavenly decree, yet you want to capture me. Do you think I can be bullied?” Zhang Ruochen’s tone was calm, but there was an invisible pressure emanating from Ziwei Palace.

Another enforcer said, “Zhang Ruochen, do you still want to resist? You’d better think about the consequences.”

Anyone could hear the strong threat in his tone.

The six enforcers’ eyes were cold. They were ready to forcibly break into Ziwei Palace at any time.

They had come to capture Zhang Ruochen. Even Empress Chi Yao couldn’t cure them of offending.

“There is no heavenly decree, and there is no commander. Just the six of you and you want me to surrender? Where did you get the courage?”

“I don’t care who you are. If you hurt any cultivator of Kunlun for no reason and violate my laws, you must be punished.” Zhang Ruochen’s indifferent voice sounded.

An enforcer sneered and said, “Your laws? Zhang Ruochen, weren’t you taking yourself too seriously? Punish us? You can try.”

He didn’t take Zhang Ruochen’s words to heart. It had always been the enforcers who punished others and not the other way around.

Sometimes, their words were equivalent to the heavenly law and no one dared to defy it.

However, before he could finish his words, the Saint Qi of heaven and earth around him shook violently. In an instant, it condensed into a 300-meter hand and pressed down in the air.

When the six enforcers saw this, their expressions changed.

Without any hesitation, the six enforcers immediately attacked and used a powerful saint technique to block the large hand that was pressing down.

At the same time, six chains flew out from their bodies. All of them released bright saint light and many mysterious runes appeared on the surface. It was as if six divine dragons had been revived and were soaring into the sky.

The chains were created by Celestial Palace with a unique secret technique. They could restrict all sorts of powers, which is enough to restrain the top-notch Nine-step saint kings and even Neverwither Supreme Saint.

However, no matter how many methods they used, it was useless.

As the 300-meter huge hand pressed down, the space within a thousand feet radius became completely solidified.

The six enforcers seemed to have been cast with a body-immobilizing technique and could not move at all.

“Zhang Ruochen, how dare you attack the celestial law enforcers? Do you think nothing of the heavenly law?” One of the enforcers shouted angrily.

Zhang Ruochen did not speak. Instead, he made his stance clear with his actions.

The 300-meter hand no longer stagnated. Instead, it suddenly pressed down.

Bang
Instantly, the six enforcers and their mounts sank into the ground. Only their heads were exposed.

“Zhang Ruochen, you’ll regret this.”

The six enforcers were furious. They had never been so humiliated before.

A hundred miles away, Jin Hong and the other enforcers stood on a low mountain. They watched Ziwei Palace from afar.

“Commander, should we save them?”

One of the enforcers asked.

Jin Hong put his hands behind his back and said calmly, “They disobeyed me and went to find trouble with Zhang Ruochen privately. It’s better to let them suffer a little.”

The other enforcers stopped saying anything to avoid making Jin Hong unhappy.

At this moment, Jin Hong felt a gaze cast over from the Ziwei Palace.

Jin Hong knew Zhang Ruochen was gazing at him. He wasn’t surprised at all, because he didn’t deliberately hide it.

Jin Hong smiled after he felt Zhang Ruochen’s gaze. He wasn’t intimidated by his opponent’s powerful saint might. However, the enforcers around him weren’t so relaxed. Each of them seemed to have a mountain on their bodies and they couldn’t move.

“I am Jin Hong, The Reaper.”

Although Zhang Ruochen had never seen Zhou Zhen before, he could visualize him with all the knowledge in his mind with his powerful spiritual power.

A wisp of Saint Qi, a Precept, a look, a hair, an inch of skin… all contained endless knowledge, and one could see everything at a glance.

Spiritual power was not only used for fighting.

Since the other party had no intention of showing up, Zhang Ruochen didn’t bother to provoke another powerful enemy.

After looking at each other for a moment, Zhang Ruochen withdrew his gaze.

“Phew.”

All the enforcers heaved a long sigh of relief. They had never felt so relaxed before.

“Zhang Ruochen is terrifying. No wonder so many top-notch elites below the first level of the Supreme Saint attacked at the same time but were still suppressed by him. They dared to provoke Zhang Ruochen, and they were asking for trouble.”

“The commander is wise. With Zhang Ruochen’s style of acting, we can’t subdue him without the heavenly decree from the Celestial Palace.”

At this moment, these enforcers were undoubtedly completely convinced by Jin Hong’s decision.

Jin Hong didn’t say anything. He simply turned around and left.

Seeing this, the other enforcers naturally didn’t dare to stay any longer. They all followed.

As for the six enforcers who were suppressed, they could only pray for their good fortune.

Seeing the six enforcers being suppressed, the cultivators who were watching in secret were undoubtedly exploded.

“Zhang Ruochen is crazy. He even dares to suppress the celestial law enforcers. Isn’t he afraid of being punished even more?”

“It’s a pity that Commander Jin Hong didn’t make a move. Otherwise, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t have dared to be so arrogant.”

“Perhaps even if Commander Jin Hong made a move, the outcome would still be the same. Zhang Ruochen has no rival below the Supreme Saint.”

“It seems that we can only wait for the news from the Celestial Palace. It won’t be long.”

…

Many cultivators were very disappointed, but there was nothing they could do.

Based on the current situation, if there was no order from the Celestial Palace, no one would be able to do anything to Zhang Ruochen if the Supreme Saint and the gods couldn’t enter Kunlun.

The laws would always be hanging over the heads of the cultivators as long as Zhang Ruochen was still there, forming constraints on everyone.

In Ziwei Palace, Zhang Ruochen appeared very calm, as if nothing had happened.

Zhou Zhen, on the other hand, was a little frightened. Although he did not know the specific situation outside the imperial palace, he had heard the words of the six enforcers.

It was hard to imagine how Zhang Ruochen could be so bold as to provoke the celestial law enforcers.

Therefore, it was really difficult for him to escape.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Zhou Zhen and pondered for a moment. He smiled and said, “Don’t be nervous. Since Master Zhou is so cooperative, I will keep my promise and let you go.”

Zhou Zhen looked surprised and said, “Are you going to let me go?”

“Of course. Come, I’ll see you out myself.”

Zhang Ruochen released a stream of Saint Qi and wrapped Zhou Zhen with it as he spoke. He then performed the Great Dimensional Shift.

The next moment, the two appeared at the entrance of Ziwei Palace.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and patted Zhou Zhen’s shoulder. He was very friendly, like a good friend he had just made.

“Please forgive me, for my actions have offended you numerous times. If you need anything in the future, just come to me. There are very few things in Kunlun that I can’t do,” Zhang Ruochen said.

At this time, the six enforcers who had been suppressed underground all had cold eyes. They stared at Zhou Zhen.

They were all powerful figures from the sects of the Heavenly Realm. With their status, they naturally knew many secrets.

If not for that, they would not have rushed to the Ziwei Palace to ask for Zhou Zhen after he was taken away by Zhang Ruochen, disregarding Jin Hong’s orders.

However, judging from the current situation, Zhou Zhen might have a huge problem. He might have leaked important secrets to Zhang Ruochen.

Otherwise, why would Zhou Zhen be able to walk out of the Ziwei Palace alive when Gu Xin'ao was killed? Moreover, Zhang Ruochen had personally sent him off.

Zhou Zhen was still a little dizzy at this time and did not understand the situation.

However, since Zhang Ruochen had let him go, why would he hesitate?

After Zhang Ruochen watched Zhou Zhen leaving, he secretly transmitted his spiritual power to Yin Yuanchen's mind. He said, "Brother Yin, I want to ask you for a favor."

"Brother Zhang, please speak," Yin Yuanchen replied.

Zhang Ruochen said telepathically, "Please follow behind Zhou Zhen and see who he will be in contact with."

"Since you trust me, leave this matter to me," Yin Yuanchen answered straightforwardly.

Immediately, Yin Yuanchen concealed himself and left the Ziwei Palace, quietly following him.

Chapter 2165: He Hasn't Grown up Yet

Seeing Zhou Zhen leave Ziwei Palace, all the cultivators irresistibly turned their attention towards him.

Being caught not only kept him safe and sound but also gave him an opportunity to be sent out by Zhang Ruochen politely. It was a rare gesture, and it inevitably made people interpret many things.

Especially those cultivators from the Heavenly Realm, they came up with even more interpretations.

Even the Celestial law enforcers were suppressed. How could Zhou Zhen escape safely?

If someone said that Zhou Zhen didn't make some agreement with Zhang Ruochen, no one would believe it.

But Zhou Zhen didn't have time to think about it. He just wanted to leave Ziwei Palace as soon as possible and move to a relatively safe place. He didn't want to face Zhang Ruochen again no matter what.

In the Fifth City District, Zhou Zhen passed by a mountain range with very dense Saint Qi of Heaven and Earth. Suddenly, a large amount of fog emerged and drowned Zhou Zhen.

"Who is it?"

Zhou Zhen looked vigilant. Immediately, the array patterns engraved on his robe glowed up faintly.

Two figures appeared in the fog and stood in front of Zhou Zhen.

Seeing these two people, Zhou Zhen couldn't help but let out a long sigh of relief. He stopped activating the array pattern on his robe.

The two figures that appeared were a man and a woman. The man was more than 180 meters tall and had a burly figure. The muscles all over his body bulged. He was like an iron tower where every step he took trembled the entire mountain range.

The woman, on the other hand, appeared to be petite and cute. She was extremely beautiful and had thin transparent wings on her back. She was holding a Scepter made out of Saint Jade. Although there was no Saint Force, her spiritual power was abnormally strong.

The man was from Colossi. His name was Gaunt.

The woman was from Elves. Her name was Yan Xu.

Both of them were famous top powerhouses in Heavenly Realm.

Whether it was the Colossi or the Elves, both were powerful clans in the Heavenly Realm. They had countless powerhouses and deities. They had also thrived for ages.

Gaunt looked down at Zhou Zhen and said in a throaty voice, "Earth Master Zhou, I have something to ask. Now that Gu Xin'ao is dead, the Celestial law enforcers are also suppressed. Why did Zhang Ruochen just let you go?"

"What do you mean? Do you wish for me to be killed by Zhang Ruochen?" Zhou Zhen asked in a deep voice.

Yan Xu said, “With Zhang Ruochen’s style, how could he let you go so easily when he took you away by force? And he even sent you out personally. He was so polite to you. Don’t you have anything to say?”

Hearing this, Zhou Zhen was moved. It was impossible for him to not understand what Gaunt and Yan Xu meant.

Only now did he finally realize what Zhang Ruochen was trying to do. He had deliberately created an illusion to drive a wedge between him and the faction of the Heavenly Realm.

However, Zhou Zhen also understood that even if he had realized it early on, it wouldn’t change anything. Would he have confronted Zhang Ruochen head-on?

“All of this is Zhang Ruochen’s plot. He’s deliberately making you doubt him,” said Zhou Zhen.

Gaunt’s eyelids rose slightly and said, “Really? Who doesn’t know about Zhang Ruochen’s way of doing things? Why would he go through so much trouble to deal with you? Zhou Zhen, how many secrets have you revealed to him?”

Yan Xu’s tone was a little gentler, “You should know very well how serious the consequences will be if you ruin our big plan from the Heavenly Realm. Even the Formation Sect won’t be able to protect you. It’s not too late to tell us now. We can beat him at his own game and scheme against Zhang Ruochen for once.”

“I didn’t reveal any secrets to Zhang Ruochen. The big plan can go on as usual. There won’t be any problems. For the next step, I’ll use the Realm Saint Blood to locate the Saturn peach tree,” replied Zhou Zhen angrily.

Yan Xu’s eyes kept changing. Finally, she reached out a hand and said, “Give me the Realm Saint Blood. It’s extremely important. We cannot make any mistakes with it.”

“I’ll take care of the Realm Saint Blood. Will there be any problem?” asked Zhou Zhen.

How could he not hear that? It was obvious that both of them didn’t trust him. No matter how much they said, it was useless.

Gaunt took a step forward and said, “Zhou Zhen, could it be that you’ve already given the Realm Saint Blood to Zhang Ruochen?”

“Of course not,” answered Zhou Zhen.

Gaunt’s tone became cold and murderous, he asked, “Then why don’t you pass it to us? Do you want me to take it on my own?”

As he spoke, a powerful aura emanated from Gaunt’s body and enveloped Zhou Zhen.

This was the big plan of the Heavenly Realm. Nothing could go wrong. Regardless of whether Zhou Zhen leaked the secret or not, he had to take the Realm Saint Blood with him first.

At the same time, the thin wings on Yan Xu’s back also emitted an azure light. It was drawing the surrounding Saint Qi of Heaven and Earth and flowing into the Saint Jade Scepter in hand.

Zhou Zhen’s heart sank. He didn’t expect that just a mere suspicion would make the both of them have the desire to attack him. The Heavenly Realm was really overbearing.

Although he was a High-Saint Array Master, he could not gain the upper hand while going against both Gaunt and Yan Xu at the same time.

Moreover, if he really fought with them at this time, he wouldn’t be able to gain clarification and would be on the opposing side of the Heavenly Realm.

“Alright, I’ll hand the Realm Saint Blood to you,” said Zhou Zhen after weighing the pros and cons.

With a flip of his hand, Zhou Zhen took out a small jade bottle. It was only the size of a thumb, and engraved with a large number of Dimensional Inscriptions. It was a Dimensional Object.

It wasn’t easy to get the Realm Saint Blood that was inside the jade bottle. Gu Xin’ao had lost his life because of it.

Fortunately, Gu Xin’ao had given it to Zhou Zhen before Zhang Ruochen attacked. Otherwise, his death would have been in vain.

Zhou Zhen shook his hand and threw the jade bottle over.

Just as Yan Xu was about to reach out to receive it, a streak of Saint Qi suddenly appeared. It wrapped around the jade bottle and was trying to snatch it away.

“Don’t even think about it!”

Yan Xu cried out in a low voice and immediately waved the Saint Jade Scepter in her hand.

Immediately, the Saint Jade Scepter emitted a bright saint light. An extremely cold aura appeared and froze everything.

With Yan Xu as the center, the area within a hundred mile radius surrounding her was immediately filled with ice crystals.

At the same time, Gaunt extended a large hand. A large number of Paths appeared in his hand. He released an extremely powerful suction force and directly grabbed at the Dimensional jade bottle.

However, the Saint Qi was extremely powerful. The spell that Yan Xu had used was unable to freeze it. Gaunt’s large hand was also unable to capture it.

“Zhou Zhen, why aren’t you making a move?” cried Yan Xu in a low voice.

Zhou Zhen regained his senses. With a wave of his hand, he blasted out over ten formation seals, forming an exquisite formation. He wanted to seal the Dimensional jade bottle.

BANG!
Saint Qi instantly broke through the formation’s restriction. It wrapped around the spatial jade bottle and directly broke through the air.

ROARRR!
Gaunt let out a low roar and wanted to chase after it.

“There’s no need to chase after it. The person who attacked hiddenly is extremely powerful. He’s not someone we can deal with,” Yan Xu stopped him.

Zhou Zhen snorted coldly. “If you didn’t insist on me handing over the Realm Saint Blood, how could it have been taken away by someone else? The two of you must take full responsibility for this matter.”

Hearing this, Yan Xu had a dark look in her eyes. This situation was totally out of her imagination.

Realm Saint Blood was an important part of the plan. Now that it had been taken away by a mysterious powerhouse, it would be difficult to locate the Saturn peach tree.

“Zhou Zhen, don’t shout. Who can prove that the Dimensional jade bottle contains Realm Saint Blood? I suspect that you have already given it to Zhang Ruochen. All this is just Zhang Ruochen’s acting with you.” Gaunt stared at Zhou Zhen deeply.

Zhou Zhen replied angrily, “Don’t slander me. Now that things have escalated to this situation, do you still want to push the responsibility?”

“Humph, the bigger your reaction, the more it shows that you have a secret. People who are not from the Heavenly Realm are indeed unreliable,” said Gaunt with a smirk.

Seeing that the two were about to start a fight, Yan Xu interrupted, “No matter who is right or wrong, go and meet Archangel Michael first.”

“Archangel Michael has already arrived at the Imperial City?” Zhou Zhen had a strange expression.

Yan Xu answered, “This is not a small matter. Naturally, Archangel Michael will have to personally manage the entire situation.”

Without dragging more time, the three of them immediately set off and left this foggy mountain.

As soon as they left, a figure appeared. He held the Dimensional jade bottle in his hand. It was Yin Yuanchen, who had followed them all the way here.

As a cultivator of the Heavenly Realm, it wasn’t convenient for him to reveal his true identity under such circumstances. He could only attack secretly.

Seeing the three of them had left further, Yin Yuanchen didn’t follow them anymore. He took the Dimensional jade bottle and returned to Ziwei Palace immediately.

As soon as he returned, he met Zhang Ruochen.

“Brother Yin, how was it?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

Yin Yuanchen replied, “Zhou Zhen was in the Fifth City District. He had contacted the Gaunt from Colossi and Yan Xu from Elves. Both of them did not trust Zhou Zhen, so there was some dispute.”

“I heard them mention that the Realm Saint Blood was able to locate the Saturn peach tree. It was related to some big plan of the Heavenly Realm. Unfortunately, although I am a cultivator of the Heavenly Realm, I do not have access to these things.”

After a pause, Yin Yuanchen continued, “By the way, this contains the Realm Saint Blood that was taken by Gu Xin’ao. I snatched it from them. Now that the three of them have gone to meet Archangel Michael, I stopped following them.”

As he spoke, Yin Yuanchen handed the Dimensional jade bottle to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen reached out to receive it. His eyes flashed with surprise irresistibly. He knew very well that Yin Yuanchen’s words were completely true. There was no falsification or concealment.

As for the reason, he had followed Yin YuanChen and witnessed everything with his own eyes.

Zhang Ruochen had asked Yin Yuanchen to follow Zhou Zhen because he wanted to test Yin Yuanchen’s loyalty and see what kind of person he was.

It turned out that Yin Yuanchen was indeed just like the rumors. He was eccentric and even dared to ruin the big events in the Heavenly Realm. Perhaps that was why Yin Yuanchen could not get in touch with many secrets of the Heavenly Realm.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Brother Yin, you seem to have something on your mind?”

Yin Yuanchen smiled bitterly and shook his head slightly, he said, “The Heavenly Realm’s idea to attack the Saturn peach tree disheartens me. Apart from disappointment, there are no other words to describe it. It was a good War of Merit to be united against the outside world. Why must you always be on guard against your own people? It’s not pleasant at all!”

Yin Yuanchen let out a long sigh and a breath of foul air.

Both of them were intelligent, so naturally, they could guess what the Heavenly Realm’s purpose was.

The grandson of the daughter of Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulation, this identity was too sensitive. He was caught in the middle of two macroworlds. How could he be happy?

Zhang Ruochen, the son of the Blood Empress, had many similarities with him.

No one can decide their own birth, one can only decide what they should do. Should one choose to do the right thing or the wrong thing?

If the plan failed this time, there must be other arrangements by the Heavenly Realm.

Compared to the Infernal Court's army, Zhang Ruochen felt that Heavenly Realm was a bigger threat.

The enmity between Heavenly Realm and Kunlun was too deep. The Heavenly Realm would probably hope for Kunlun to be destroyed more than the Infernal Court, and for the secret of the past to be hidden completely.

Not long after, Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit returned from Welkin Lounge and handed the Seal of Ten Sword to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen only glanced at it before handing it over to Xue Wuye. He said, "Return it to its owner."

The Flying Fairy Sword Technique was indeed mysterious. It contained Sword Ten from *The Wordless Sword Manual*. If it was before, Zhang Ruochen would have wanted to borrow it and study it.
But now, he had already practiced all five realms of Sword Ten successfully. He even relied on his own comprehension of *The Wordless Sword Manual* and combined it with the Path of Dimension to create the sixth realm of Sword Ten.
In a sense, Zhang Ruochen had reached or even surpassed the height of the former Sword Emperor.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen believed that the Sword Emperor's achievements in Swordsmanship were not limited to Sword Ten. There might be more profound sword techniques in the *Flying Fairy Sword Technique*, but they were just unknown to outsiders.
The level of sword technique was not something that Saint Kings could comprehend and cultivate.

"Thank you, Brother Zhang."

Xue Wuye put away the Seal of Ten Sword and bowed to thank Zhang Ruochen.

From now on, the entire Wanxiang City undoubtedly owed Zhang Ruochen a huge favor.

After a series of events, the Imperial City became quiet.

Originally, cultivators from all walks of life were very resistant to the rules set by Zhang Ruochen. No one was willing to accept it.

However, the death of Gu Xin'ao plus the fact that no one could destroy the Decree. Moreover, the suppression of the six Celestial law enforcers really shocked many people.

At this critical moment, no one dared to act rashly.

It wasn't that all the cultivators had chosen to compromise. Instead, they were all waiting for Saber Empyrean and Celestial Palace to react. No one believed that this storm could be calmed down easily.

However, after waiting for a long time, there was still no news from the Celestial Palace. Many people couldn't help but feel puzzled. Could it be that the Celestial Palace had tacitly consented to all of this?

Finally, some secret news leaked through special channels.

It wasn't that the Saber Empyrean had chosen to swallow their anger, but many parties had intervened, including the three dominant worlds. A war between gods almost erupted.

To prevent the situation from escalating, the Celestial Palace stepped in to mediate. The parties reached some sort of agreement and suppressed the matter.

"How can this be? Do we really need to abide by Zhang Ruochen's rules in the future?"

Most cultivators found it hard to accept such an outcome.

But they had no choice. Even the Celestial Palace had acquiesced the existence of these rules. What else could they do?

A Saint King making rules to restrict the cultivators of the Celestial Court, such a thing had never happened before.

Compared to the oppression of the cultivators of various worlds, the local cultivators of Kunlun felt elated. After all, no one wanted to be oppressed.

In a palace.

The Moon Goddess appeared and told Zhang Ruochen everything that had happened in the Celestial Court.

This time, Zhang Ruochen had issued a Decree that suppressed all the worlds. It was so shocking that it exceeded the Moon Goddess' expectations. Although he was a Divine Envoy, he was just a Saint King that was not powerful enough.

However, a Saint King could influence this War of Merit and cultivators of all macroworlds. The significance behind this event was not a small matter.

"This time, the Western Buddha Realm, Five-Element Temple, Celestial Dragon Realm, Tianchu Civilization…There are actually gods participating. It seems that I finally deserve to get their support," said Zhang Ruochen.

A long time ago, Zheng Yuan had told him that as long as he showed enough potential, the Taoists Clan would fully support him. The Western Buddha Realm obviously had the same thoughts.

The only thing that Zhang Ruochen didn't understand was the Tianchu Civilization.

He had never heard of how close the relationship between the Tianchu Civilization and Kunlun was. The only relationship was probably the one between Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu.

But whether it was a romantic relationship between a man and a woman or a friendship of life and death, in the end, it was just a personal relationship between two juniors.

It was impossible for a Civilization to participate in the fight of the great world because of personal feelings. The friendship between gods was much more viable.

Unless…

'Maybe the elder Tianzhu of the Tianchu Civilization is repaying the favor of that 100,000 drops of Divine Spring,' Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

That was 100,000 drops of Divine Spring, which helped the elder Tianzhu of the Tianchu Civilization to heal and survive the calamity of the Yuanhui Tribulation. It was a great favor.

‘Maybe Luoji is helping me. Now that she has the inheritance of the Goddess of Luoshui, her voice in the Tianchu Civilization will certainly become more powerful. Coupled with my ability, maybe I can make the Tianchu Civilization face me squarely,’ thought Zhang Ruochen.

After all, fighting against the Heavenly Realm required a great price. Any force had to think carefully and consider the pros and cons.

If Zhang Ruochen had not become an invincible powerhouse below Supreme Saint, the situation would have changed greatly.

The Moon Goddess said, “You are just a Saint King. You are still lacking a lot. Although it is not clear enough, according to my estimation, the god of Kunlun is behind this whole thing.”

“Chi Yao?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

Who else could be the god of Kunlun besides her?

The Moon Goddess shook her head and said, “The Five-Element Temple, Western Buddha Realm, and Celestial Dragon Realm should all be backed by the god of Kunlun. Otherwise, they wouldn’t have jumped to the surface to challenge the Heavenly Realm.”

“How is that possible? No, could it be…” Then, Zhang Ruochen fell into deep thought.

Zhang Ruochen knew that there was an emperor of Kunlun in the Western Buddha Realm who became a god there.

Could Five-Element Temple and Celestial Dragon Realm also be teaming with the god of Kunlun?

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen thought of the emperors and the two empresses who disappeared in Kunlun 800 years ago. Could it be that 800 years ago, they all went to the Celestial Court to make preparations in advance?

Taking the Five-Element Temple as an example, although it had a deep relationship with Kunlun, after all, 100,000 years had passed. If there was

no god of Kunlun, how could the Five-Element Temple support him so much when he practiced there?

The Moon Goddess smiled and said, “Do you want to know what Chi Yao said about what you’ve done this time?”

“You don’t have to say it.”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression became gloomy.

The Moon Goddess didn’t expect Zhang Ruochen’s mood to fluctuate so much just by mentioning Chi Yao’s name. She didn’t keep him in suspense anymore and said, “She said, not the master of a realm and making the rules, all this is just fooling around. Zhang Ruochen hasn’t grown up yet.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “It seems that I’ve done what she should have done and made her unhappy!”

“In your eyes, is the Goddess so narrow-minded?”

The Moon Goddess wanted to say that maybe in Chi Yao’s eyes, you haven’t done enough and haven’t truly had the heart of an emperor.

If his heart had fully grown, he wouldn’t have used the identity of Prince of the Eastern Region and issued a Decree in Ziwei Palace where Chi Yao lived.

Instead, he would destroy Ziwei Palace and establish Sacred Palace. Then, he would first correct his own reputation and then issue the Decree with the identity of a realm master.

To issue a Decree as the Prince of the Eastern Region was an impulsive act. It seemed to be an act for the sake of Kunlun, but it was not justified. It was no different from a child’s mischief.

By issuing a Decree as a realm master shows the real intention of bearing the responsibility and consequences of the issuance.

Of course, the Moon Goddess did not say these words because she did not know Chi Yao very well. She also did not know Chi Yao’s true thoughts.

Maybe it was just as Zhang Ruochen had said, he had done what she was supposed to do, and that made her unhappy!

Chapter 2166: The Fish Lover

Zhang Ruochen pondered for a moment on the palace grounds and asked curiously, “Why did the other three dominant worlds get involved this time?”

Kunlun was a member of Western Universe. After the invasion from Infernal Court, Heavenly Realm should be in charge of the battlefield. The dominant worlds of the other three universes had no choice but to get involved.

Although there were cultivators from Pangu Realm, Demon God Realm, and Wanxu Realm who had entered Kunlun, their numbers were limited by Celestial Palace’s constraint. Moreover, they had not sent out their top powerhouses yet.

Wanxu Realm, for example, only sent out a team of several hundred people, led by Xuanyuan Liekong, who was at the second level beneath the Supreme Saint. They were far from being able to affect the huge battle.

“The three dominant worlds have long been dissatisfied with Heavenly Realm’s actions in Kunlun. They don’t want Heavenly Realm to continue dominating Kunlun, but they can’t find the right opportunity.”

“You should know very well that Heavenly Realm doesn’t want to see Kunlun rise again. With the Heavenly Realm dominating the field, Celestial Court will most certainly lose. When that happens, all the dominant worlds will suffer heavy casualties. The impact will be huge,” Moon Goddess said solemnly.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. Heavenly Realm had done so many disgraceful things. Of course they would be afraid that Kunlun would liquidate after its rise. Therefore, they were more eager to destroy Kunlun than Infernal Court.

For this reason, Heaven Realm had already set their sights on the Saturn Peach Tree. They wanted to destroy the spiritual root of this new world and completely cut off the hope of Kunlun’s recovery.

Zhang Ruochen even suspected that Heavenly Realm was behind Infernal Court’s easy recruitment of 30 million saint-level armies to besiege Central Imperial City.

Kunlun’s battlefield was completely dominated by Heavenly Realm. How could there be any hope for victory?

Even so, he did not need to risk the world's condemnation to set rules in Kunlun. It was equivalent to offending all the cultivators in the universe.

Moon Goddess looked at Zhang Ruochen with indifference and said, "Your action of setting rules in Kunlun to suppress all the worlds created too much of a commotion, even the Celestial Palace was shocked. The three dominant worlds took the opportunity to intervene. They want to dominate Kunlun's battlefield and turn the tide of the battle together.

"For so many years, Celestial Court has been at a disadvantage in the battle with Infernal Court. If another immortal world is destroyed, it will be a serious blow to the morale of Celestial Court."

"Of course, based on my speculation, the gods of Kunlun are probably behind the intervention of the three dominant worlds."

In fact, there was another thing that Moon Goddess did not mention—Zhang Ruochen's powerful strength had attracted everyone's attention.

Although he was only a tiny Saint King, he was invincible in Kunlun. If he was pushed too far, who knew how many deaths would there be in Celestial Court.

So, no matter what, everyone did not want the situation to escalate to the point of no return.

"I'm afraid that the three dominant worlds also want more benefits from Kunlun," Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes.

"Many things are driven by benefits and gain. No one is a fool. However, in any case, it will be good for Kunlun if the three dominant worlds control Heavenly Realm," Moon Goddess replied.

Zhang Ruochen nodded his head to Moon Goddess' reply. He agreed with her. With the three dominant worlds joining forces, Heavenly Realm had to be cautious and not be too bold.

As long as they could buy enough time, Kunlun might be able to rise again.

Therefore, the battle in the central imperial city was very important. If they lost, it would be a huge blow to the battle situation in Kunlun's field.

"Soon, the armies of the three dominant worlds will enter Kunlun. Although the storm has subsided, you'd better keep a low profile and try not to cause any more trouble," Moon Goddess warned.

With those words, Moon Goddess disappeared.

There was no doubt that Moon Goddess had contributed a lot to this matter.

After all, Zhang Ruochen was now a cultivator of Guanghan Realm. Anything he did would implicate Guanghan Realm.

Fortunately, Moon Goddess was extremely powerful. Otherwise, Zhang Ruochen would not be as carefree as he was now.

A faint smile appeared in Zhang Ruochen's eyes. He was quite satisfied with the result.

The three dominant worlds sending their armies at this time could solve the urgent situation in Central Imperial City and greatly increase the chances of victory.

In just one day, the three dominant worlds had sent an group of Saint-level armies who were personally led by their top powerhouse.

The moment they entered Central Imperial City, a huge commotion occured.

The leader of the Demon God Realm, Prince Tianpeng, had a high-profile. As soon as he walked out of thedimensional teleportation array, he headed straight to the imperial city and challenged the powerhouses from Infernal Court.

A powerhouse from Deathkin stepped out to accept the challenge. The two of them fought for nearly 2,000 rounds, and Prince Tianpeng won.

This was a rare victory for Celestial Court. It greatly boosted their morale, and everyone in the imperial city was shouting "Prince Tianpeng".

Prince Tianpeng was a peerless genius of the Golden Roc Clan. His blood vessels, bone structure, and aptitude were all top-notch. With his own strength, he had suppressed the monstrous geniuses of the various clans in Demon God Realm, leaving them breathless.

Following closely behind, Saint Lord Wan Zhan from Wanxu Realm also left the city and fought with a powerhouse from Stone Clan. After 3,000 rounds, he flattened a mountain in the north of the imperial city till the land was barren.

Although Saint Lord Wan Zhan did not win this battle, he didn't lose either. He drew a lot of cheers.

After all, in recent times, the powerhouses of Celestial Court and Infernal Court had lost more than they won as they fought each other. There were only a handful of times that they had a draw.

Unfortunately, the leader of Pangu Realm was too low-key. He didn't make a move, which disappointed the cultivators from all the worlds.

On the other hand, after suppressing the six Celestial law enforcers for three days, Zhang Ruochen released them and let them go.

After all, they wereCelestial law enforcers. Moreover, Celestial Palace chose to stand on Kunlun's side this time, so Zhang Ruochen naturally had to take a step back.

If he kept suppressing the enforcers, he would inevitably be attacked by the factions of Heavenly Realm, which would be disadvantageous to the current situation.

Zhang Ruochen did not stay in Ziwei Palace for long. After all, it belonged to Empress Chi Yao. If it were not for Xue Wuye, he might have not even set foot in it.

After asking the Nine-heavens Maiden to keep tabs on Yan Wushen's news, Zhang Ruochen came to Yin Yuanchen's residence in the imperial city. It was not a big courtyard, but it was very quiet and elegant. It was adjacent to a clear blue Spiritual Lake.

Zhang Ruochen was still very interested in Yin Yuanchen.

As the grandson of Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations' daughter, he should know secrets from one hundred thousand years ago, right?

When Zhang Ruochen saw him, he was feeding the fish alone by the lake. He was feeding them snow-white petals. It was like a whirlwind of snow each time he sprinkled the petals.

The fish in the lake jumped up for the petals.

As he heard Zhang Ruochen's footsteps behind him, Yin Yuanchen smiled and said, "See? They are my friends. We grew up together. Whenever there was something on my mind, I tell them. When I came to Kunlun, I brought them here."

“I went to Lake Saint Yuan in Demon God Realm to get the sacred lake water.”

“I went to Qianrui Realm and bought 100,000 petals because I know they love it.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “What a lonely person, to be friends with fish.”

“Yes, loneliness can be hard sometimes. It’s a pity that someone like me is destined to be lonely,” Yin Yuanchen said in a low voice.

Logically speaking, his grandfather and grandmother were both gods. His status should be prominent as nobility in Heavenly Realm.

However, Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations’ bloodline flowed in his body. It was destined that he wouldn’t be able to truly integrate into Heavenly Realm. He would be isolated no mattter where he went.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but feel for Yin Yuanchen. He had felt loneliness many times too. It was hard to find someone to talk to.

Yin Yuanchen turned around and smiled. “I heard that you have a special relationship with Fairy of a Hundred Flowers. Next time when I go to Qianrui Realm to buy flower petals, can you help me talk to Fairy of a Hundred Flowers and ask her to give me a cheaper price? The things in Qianrui Realm are not cheap,” he said.

“Only you would buy flower petals at a high price in Qianrui Realm to feed the fish. I envy the fish. They have a good master and no worries,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Sometimes, it is better to be a fish than a human being.

Yin Yuanchen sprinkled a few more flower petals and said, “Brother Zhang, you’ve been so busy recently. How do you have time to come to my place?”

“What? You don’t welcome me?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Of course I welcome you. I have some Higabana tea from Qianrui Realm. Do you want to try it, Brother Zhang?”

“Sure,” Zhang Ruochen replied.

Immediately, Yin Yuanchen led Zhang Ruochen to a pavilion by the lake and began to make the tea.

Yin Yuanchen was a very refined person. His words and actions were both gentle and elegant. It was hard to imagine that a Saint Kinghood top powerhouse would enjoy making tea and feeding fish.

Tea and Paths were connected. As they drank the tea, Zhang Ruochen and Yin Yuanchen naturally began to discuss about Paths.

As top powerhouses below Supreme Saint, there were undoubtedly many things that Zhang Ruochen and Yin Yuanchen could talk about with each other.

For example, Yin Yuanchen also practiced Swordsmanship. Zhang Ruochen could give him a lot of guidance.

Although Zhang Ruochen was powerful, he rarely listened to the preaching of a powerhouse. There were many things that he did not learn systematically. He had to figure them out by himself. It was inevitable that he would have some doubts, and Yin Yuanchen could answer them for him.

After all, Yin Yuanchen came from an extraordinary background. His grandfather and grandmother were both gods. In some aspects, his understanding of Paths were deeper than Zhang Ruochen's.

To Zhang Ruochen, talking about Paths with Yin Yuanchen could relax his nerves. If he was lucky, he might find an opportunity to practice the Path of Dimension and the Path of Time to perfection.

On the surface of the lake, Zhang Ruochen's sword soul danced with the long sword that was condensed with Saint Qi. He casually practiced all kinds of sword techniques, from easy to difficult, and then from complicated to simple. He fully demonstrated his understanding of Swordsmanship.

"I really admire Brother Zhang's talent in Swordsmanship. You reached perfection all by yourself. You are not inferior to the legendary Sword God during the Middle Ages of Kunlun," Yin Yuanchen sighed.

Zhang Ruochen said, "My cultivation in Swordsmanship is nothing. Compared to the Sword God, I am far from it."

What was the Sword God? It was certainly not just a god who practiced Swordsmanship. Just like how Saint-level sword practitioners were not called Sword Saints by default. They had to meet certain conditions.

In order to become a Sword Saint, one of the prerequisites was to cultivate Sword Qi to the perfect level, or the equivalent of that.

Continuously, to become a Sword God, one had to master the Canon of Swordsmanship, which was difficult beyond imagination.

Because of this, there were very few powerhouses in the world who could be called a Sword God.

“Brother Zhang, you don’t have to belittle yourself. Speaking of which, the legendary Sword God during the Middle Ages of Kunlun has a few connections with you. He came from Liangyi Sect and was known as Sword God Mingxin. He practiced the Wordless Sword Manual and his achievements in Swordsmanship were magnificent.”

“Saber Empyrean is known as the holy land of Swordsmanship. But in that era, all the geniuses that were trained were suppressed by Sword God Mingxin. Brother Zhang’s achievements are no worse than the Sword God Mingxin’s achievements, probably even better,” Yin Yuanchen said with great admiration.

Zhang Ruochen could not help but be moved by those words. He had once transformed into Lin Yue and entered Liangyi Sect to cultivate. He could be considered a disciple of Liangyi Sect. Looking at it this way, he indeed had some connections with Sword God Mingyi.

Speaking of which, Sword Saint Zang Yue had given him a drop of divine blood. He said that it belonged to a god who cultivated Swordsmanship in the Middle Ages. Could it be Sword God Mingyi?

The Liangyi Sect had a very strong foundation. In addition to the three grandmasters, there had been many famous figures in history. That was how they had been able to prosper and become the leader of all the sects in the eastern region.

Since there was such a powerful figure like the Sword God Mingyi, it was likely that the Liangyi Sect had some sentiments after Sword Ten.

Although Kunlun had inherited the Four Great Sword Techniques, the most powerful one was undoubtedly Sword Pavilion. The Wordless Sword

Manual was a secret supreme sword technique manual that everyone in the universe coveted.

“Brother Yin, how much do you know about the things that happened 100,000 years ago?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Yin Yuanchen thought for a moment and said, “What happened 100,000 years ago is taboo. Few people dare to mention it. I’ve only heard my grandmother mention some of it.”

“That battle was extremely tragic. Half of the gods died in Celestial Court, including many invincible overlords, such as Saint Monk Xumi and Immortal Navagraha. So many years have passed, but they still haven’t fully recovered. This is also one of the important reasons why large-scale battles between Celestial Court and Infernal Court rarely break out anymore.”

“During that battle, Kunlun suffered heavy losses and almost all their powerhouses died. But in my opinion, there are so many peerless figures in Kunlun, they shouldn’t have all died. There might still be survivors. It’s just that we don’t know where they are.”

Yin Yuanchen paused for a moment and continued, “For example, Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations is unrivalled. The leaders of the ten clans in Infernal Court joined forces to attack him, but he managed to break out of their encirclement and escaped with some injuries. Later on, he killed dozens of gods in Infernal Court that even the stras in the sky were trembling.

“Unfortunately, in the end, Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations was still beaten until his divine body shattered. His divine blood dyed the starry sky red, and the Divine Planet bacem dim. No one knows what kind of terrifying enemy Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations encountered.”

“Grandmother told me that after that battle, she once sensed the aura of Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations in The Disenchantment. It was very weak and soon disappeared without a trace. However, my grandmother firmly believes that Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations is still alive, but it is very likely that he has left this starry universe.”

The Disenchantment was located at the edge of the universe. It was an extremely strange and dangerous starry region. Even gods could meet death if they entered.

There had always been a legend that after passing through The Disenchantment, one could leave this galaxy and go to the outer realms.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes flashed with a strange light. Other than Saint Monk Xumi, the name he had heard the most was Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations, the former top one powerhouse of Kunlun. He had lived for 10 Yuanhui Tribulations and left behind countless legends.

How many gods in Celestial Court and Infernal Court could survive that many Yuanhui Tribulations without dying?

In fact, it was very rare to survive 2 or 3 Yuanhui Tribulations. Almost all the top powerhouses among the gods had the ability to control the canon.

The Yuan Tribulation that the gods had to face was extremely terrifying. Without being able to control the Canon, most of them could not survive even once.

Therefore, most of the gods in the universe were actually new gods who had not yet experienced the Yuan Tribulation. For example, Yanshen from Fane of Merit and Bloodlord Erija from Fane of Bloody War belonged to this category.

"I've always been curious about who cut down the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, cutting off the path of becoming gods for all the cultivators in Kunlun," Zhang Ruochen said.

Yin Yuanchen's expression suddenly became serious. "The one who cut down the DIvine Sky-connecting Tree is an extremely evil man. If his name is mentioned, he will sense it. It's best not to talk about it."

"It's fine. I just want to know. I won't offend such an existence," Zhang Ruochen said.

Yin Yuanchen hesitated for a moment, then said, "This is top-secret. According to my grandmother's speculation, that evil man is probably a giant from Stone Clan called Huang Tian."

"Huang Tian is extremely terrifying. He opened up a huge world in a chaotic area of Infernal Court all by himself. His divine power is endless, and he has mastered a powerful canon. I wonder how many gods has he killed in Celestial Court."

Yin Yuanchen was very afraid of this man from Stone Clan. He didn't want to mention him too much to avoid being sensed by Huang Tian.

“Huang Tian.”

Zhang Ruochen muttered as the name was carved into his brain.

He cut off the Divine Sky-connecting Tree and the hopes of all living beings in Kunlun.

Any cultivator in Kunlun—as long as they was powerful enough—would want to kill him personally as revenge.

Chapter 2167: Yan Wushen and Zhang Ruochen
In the pavilion.

Zhang Ruochen and Yin Yuanchen fell silent. The atmosphere was a little depressing.

After a long while, Yin Yuanchen let out a sigh and said, “Let’s not talk about these sad topics. Why don’t we talk about Akash?”

Zhang Ruochen did not expect him to bring that up. He laughed and said, “Brother Yin, how much do you know about Akash?”

“Why don’t you tell me your feelings for the Nine-heavens Maiden?

“Don’t look at me. Anyone with eyes can see there is more than fondness between the two of ye.

“And news about Akash pursuing the Nine-heavens Maiden spread like wildfire in the city.” A smile appeared on Yin Yuanchen’s handsome face.

“We are friends.”

“Just friends?”

“Close friends.”

“Just close friends?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Confidants to each other, is that enough?”

“Wealth is not hard to earn, but it’s hard to find a close friend, let alone a confidant. Brother Zhang, don’t lose a close friend and hurt a girl at the same time,” Yin Yuanchen said meaningfully.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes turned cold. He said, "I don't know much about Akash. From what you said, I assume there's something wrong with him?"

"Navagraha was a brilliant and unrivaled deity. During the middle ages, he was also a TrueGod praised by a myriad of Macroworlds. Countless beings admired him. However, his descendants may not be open and aboveboard," Yin Yuanchen said.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "What do you mean?"

Yin Yuanchen did not rush to answer Zhang Ruochen's question. Instead, he said, "Let me ask you another question. If Akash truly admires the Nine-heavens Maiden and wants to pursue her so they can become cultivation couple, and willingly tries his best to persuade Megrez deities to help Kunlun, will you give them your blessing?"

This question stumped Zhang Ruochen!

Akash's appearance, talent, and background were all first-class. If he was sincere, he was completely worthy of the Nine-heavens Maiden.

However, wouldn't Zhang Ruochen feel sad and reluctant in the slightest?

"Zhang Ruochen, Zhang Ruochen, why are you so greedy? You already have Ling Xi, and you should not let Luoji down. Why can't you let go of Nalan Danqing willingly?

"If your confidant ties knot with a Mr. Right, you should bless them."

Zhang Ruochen suddenly felt deeply guilty when Ling Xi came to his mind as if he had done something wrong.

Or rather, he had done too many things wrong.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen remain silent, Yin Yuanchen laughed loudly. "Never did I expect my question would make Zhang Ruochen—who has stunned myriad of Macroworlds—so deeply troubled. I feel a sense of accomplishment. Haha! "

"It's just a hypothesis. Why does brother Zhang take it seriously? If you really can't let it go, why must you bless them while you can keep her to yourself? You being indecisive could bring long-term suffering not only to you, yourself but also your confidant."

After regaining his composure, Zhang Ruochen looked at the sky while placing his hands behind his back and sighed. “Personal feelings are inseparable from family, national, and world affairs. The war which took place 100,000 years ago is indeed a sad topic, but isn’t it the same when it comes to personal feelings?

“Your hypothesis is not valid because the Nine-heavens Maiden is not one single person, but nine.

“My confidante is only one of the nine.

“But what Akash wants is all nine of them.

“Perhaps every man’s nature is as sentimental as Xue Wuye, but they are not just possessive. Tell me more about Akash. What kind of person is he?”

Yin Yuanchen said, “As far as I know, Akash’s mission is to bring Navagraha’s Tears back to Megrez no matter what. However, he changed his mind as soon as he met the Nine-heavens Maiden at Kunlun.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “If I were him, I would change my mind too. Both the Nine-heavens Maiden and their leader, Nalan Danqing, are very charming.”

“But his goal is still Navagraha’s Tears, ” said Yin Yuanchen.

Zhang Ruochen had talked about this with the Nine-heavens Maiden, so he knew it better. Akash’s approach to pursue the Nine Heavens Maiden was unwise. He used Megrez’s support as a bargaining chip to win the Nine-heavens Maiden, or rather, it was a form of coercion and an attempt to fulfill his lust.

That was why he said earlier that Yin Yuanchen’s hypothesis was not valid.

If what Akash did was deemed sincere, nobody in the world would appreciate this kind of sincerity.

Of course, Akash’s method was also very effective because he knew very well about the importance of Kunlun to the Nine-heavens Maiden. If Kunlun were really on the verge of its fall, the Nine-heavens Maiden would have no other choice but to choose him.

Yin Yuanchen said, “Brother Zhang, if you check up on Akash, you will find that he has never been sighted in any Battlefields of Merits. Even when he

came to Kunlun, he didn't take the initiative to kill the cultivators of Infernal Court."

"For someone like Akash, a cultivator with noble status, would think that the threats from Infernal Court will never harm him and would not bother to make contribution in the battle since the cultivators of those weak macroworlds , that have been made into battlefields of Merit, will fight Infernal Court to the death."

Yin Yuanchen became angry when he arrived at this point. "There are too many Celestial Court cultivators who live in luxury. They are short-sighted and greedy for pleasure. Tell me how those talented cultivators who died protecting Celestial Court in Battlefields of Merits would think if they saw the reality?

"The biggest root of the problem is the system of Celestial Court. Why should the weak Macroworlds become the sacrificial lamb? If you say that's the law of the jungle, why did they establish Celestial Palace in the first place? What were the deities thinking?"

"If someone as selfish as Akash successfully takes the Nine-heavens Maiden as a wife with his scheme and takes back Navagraha's Tears for Megrez, he would earn honor in Megrez.

"And when that time comes, Zhang Ruochen, you will be the first I despise. It's your inaction that motivates that kind of cultivators."

Zhang Ruochen could not argue with Yin Yuanchen when being scolded.

"I've gotten too emotional. I'm sorry. But brother Zhang, for the sake of the cultivators of Kunlun, you have even issued a Decree and is willing to stand up against elites from a myriad of Macroworlds; why can't you face your true feelings and become a hot-blooded swordsman who would fight for a beauty?"

"If you refused to do so. I would go instead since I kind of admire the Nine-heavens Maiden—the nine amazing women. And when the time comes, I hope you will give me your blessing. Haha."

Yin Yuanchen laughed. He walked to the pavilion and sprinkled a handful of flower petals into the Spiritual Lake.

Suddenly, many fish jumped up from the lake for food.

Zhang Ruochen did not take Yin Yuanchen's words seriously. He fell silent. His feelings had always been his biggest fear, but he had to face them.

However, if the day that Yin Yuanchen mentioned really came, he might throw everything aside and fight for her.

"What's going on?"

Suddenly, Yin Yuanchen's expression changed.

Zhang Ruochen came back to his senses and looked up at the sky. He immediately saw that the blue sky had turned blood-red.

To be more precise, there were a large number of blood-red stars hanging in the sky, reflecting the sky into blood-red.

Zhang Ruochen could sense that the surrounding space had been isolated and turned into a realm of stars. Yin Yuanchen's mansion was like a floating island in the starry sky. It looked very small, he could no longer contact the outside world.

Whoosh —

Zhang Ruochen pointed with his finger. A streak of Sword Qi flew out from his fingertip, but it only formed circles of ripples in the sky.

"What a powerful treasure of Dimension. Even a Supreme Saint can not easily fight it."

It was not a good thing to be caught off guard by an opponent. The situation became dangerous.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the lakeside, and his eyes narrowed.

Two figures slowly emerged from the lakeside.

One was tall and mighty; the other was handsome and delicate. Zhang Ruochen was no stranger to them.

"Yan Wushen." Yin Yuanchen's heart sank.

There was no doubt that all the changes in this place must have something to do with Yan Wushen.

He had never expected Yan Wushen to appear in Central Imperial City and come to his place without him knowing.

Central Imperial City was heavily guarded. It was hard to imagine how Yan Wushen had sneaked in.

Furthermore, Central Imperial City was filled with elites. Why would Yan Wushen take the risk to sneak in?

Immediately, Yin Yuanchen made a move and collected all the fish in the lake. He was afraid that these friends of his would get implicated.

‘Could Yan Wushen have come to Imperial City alone? What does he want to do? How can he break the spatial seal here?’ Yin Yuanchen thought to himself.

No matter how he looked at it, this was not a simple matter. He had to find a way to escape as soon as possible.

The only thing that made Yin Yuanchen happy was that Zhang Ruochen was by his side. When both joined hands, it should not be a problem for them to protect themselves.

Zhang Ruochen fixed his gaze on Yan Wushen. He could sense that the Yan Wushen in front of him was very different from the one he had met in Luo Shui. His temperament was completely different. It should be the good counterpart of Yan Wushen that Pan Ruo had mentioned.

Compared to his evil counterpart, the good Yan Wushen’s aura was much stronger.

On second thought, it was normal. Yan Wushen had only split into two entities temporarily for the sake of cultivation. Both entities would merge into an single entity again in the future. And during the process, Yan Wushen’s good counterpart naturally had to take the lead. Otherwise, problems would easily arise during the merger.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen also vaguely sensed the presence of Yan Wushen’s evil counterpart.

Both good and evil Yan Wushens had arrived. There’s no doubt that they were here with ill intentions.

Then, Zhang Ruochen looked at the person beside Yan Wushen. It was none other than Chi Kunlun, who had been missing for a long time.

Like Chi Kongyue, Chi Kunlun had also grown up and became more like Zhang Ruochen. He was more mature than before.

Chi Kunlun also looked at Zhang Ruochen at this moment, but his eyes were very complicated.

In the past, he had hated Zhang Ruochen and even regarded him as the enemy who “killed” his “parents”. He had wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen for revenge.

However, Yan Wushen told him that Zhang Ruochen was his biological father and Empress Chi Yao was his biological mother. He did not know who he should believe.

Seeing the complicated expression in Chi Kunlun’s eyes, Zhang Ruochen instantly understood that this son of him probably knew the truth.

But with Chi Kunlun’s personality, it would not be easy for him to accept all of this.

“Zhang Ruochen, you don’t seem surprised to see me,” Yan Wushen said.

Zhang Ruochen collected his thoughts and said, “Why should I be surprised? I’ve been waiting for you.”

“Interesting, Zhang Ruochen. I really admire you. You are merely a Saint King, but still dare to offend both Celestial Court and Infernal Court at the same time. If it were anyone else, they would have died countless times, but you can still live well and even stir up the situation of Battlefield of Merits time and time again,” Yan Wushen said meaningfully.

Yan Wushen continued after pausing for a second, “I’m afraid it’s hard to find a second Saint King who would set laws of a macroworld. It’s a pity for someone like you to stay in Celestial Court. You might as well join Infernal Court. As long as you’re strong enough, you can get everything you want and will not feel restricted.”

It was obvious that Yan Wushen was fond of talents. Although he was with Infernal Court, he admired Zhang Ruochen very much.

Zhang Ruochen said lightly, “Yan Wushen, you have killed countless Celestial Court cultivators at Battlefields of Merits; aren’t you still living well?”

“Well said, Zhang Ruochen. I’m so happy that your growth has far exceeded my expectations. Do you know how lonely it is to live without a worthy opponent?” Yan Wushen said with a hint of excitement in his voice.

Yan Wushen had joined and won fights in Battlefields of Merits for hundreds of years, yet he could not find a worthy opponent among cultivators with rank below Supreme Sainthood. Even if the Four Heavenly Kings of the Heavenly Palace joined hands, they could only suppress him.

He had always longed for a strong opponent to help him reach a higher peak in his cultivation training.

Zhang Ruochen stood up and looked at Yan Wushen. “The strong have always been lonely, but I enjoy this kind of loneliness.”

Yin Yuanchen was confused. Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen had already fought at Luoshui, and everyone knew about it. Why did it feel like they had never fought before?

“You must be waiting for Chi Kunlun. I’m really curious. You and Empress Chi Yao are enemies. Why did you give birth to Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue?” asked Yan Wushen.

Then, Yan Wushen looked at Chi Kunlun and said, “Little guy, didn’t you want to see Zhang Ruochen? You can ask him any questions face-to-face as you wish.”

Chi Kunlun asked in a low voice, “Those things he said, are they true?”

At this point, Zhang Ruoche could not bring himself to lie to Chi Kunlun. He nodded and said, “Yes.”

When Chi Kunlun heard a definite answer from his father, his eyes suddenly turned red, and his body could not help but tremble. He was very emotional.

“Why? Why did you all lie to me?” Chi Kunlun growled.

Zhang Ruochen was struck by his words hard. He completely understood Chi Kunlun’s feelings.

It was like when Chi Yao told him that Blood Empress was his biological mother, he could not accept it either. He had already thought of her as an enemy. How could he accept that?

It could only be said that Chi Yao was so cruel for deceiving two innocent children with such a lie.

“Yan Wushen, let Chi Kunlun go. If you want to fight, I’ll be your opponent. With your strength and status, why make things difficult for a child?” Zhang Ruochen said in a low voice.

Yan Wushen smiled faintly and said, “I’ve never made things difficult for him. On the contrary, I saved him from Shang Ziyan. I was going to take him in as a disciple, but this little guy is too stubborn. He never agrees.”

“But I can give you a chance. As long as you can defeat me, I will return Chi Kunlun to you. How about it?”

Yan Wushen appeared to be very confident. Although his evil counterpart had suffered defeat in Zhang Ruochen’s hands and Zhang Ruochen had obviously become stronger than before, he did not seem to be bothered by it.

Chapter 2168: 96-Foot-Tall Golden Body

Yan Wushen stared at Zhang Ruochen. His fighting spirit grew stronger and stronger. Ever since his evil counterpart told him that his name “Yan Wushen” was no longer a symbol of invincibility, he had been looking forward to this battle and even made a lot of preparations.

“I don’t need you to save me. You should take care of yourself first,” Chi Kunlun said.

He seemed tough, but there was a faint worry in his eyes. He was clearly worried that Zhang Ruochen would be at a disadvantage in the face of Yan Wushen.

Chi Kunlun did not know that Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen had fought a fierce battle, so he thought Yan Wushen was still the invincible existence that dominated Celestial Court and Infernal Court.

Moreover, even though he had been with Yan Wushen recently, he was unaware of Yan Wushen’s secret—there were two Yan Wushens: the good and the evil counterparts.

All of this could not be hidden from Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. He felt a warmth in his heart. No matter what, Chi Kunlun’s opinion of him had changed.

At least he wasn't like before, where he held his sword and looked at Yan Wushen as if they were mortal enemies.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the pavilion and faced Yan Wushen. "Let's find out who will win."

This battle was inevitable. For Zhang Ruochen, it was an excellent opportunity to test the fruit of his recent cultivation practice.

Although he sensed that Yan Wushen's evil counterpart was nearby, he was not afraid. Instead, he looked forward to the merger of Yan Wushen's good and evil counterparts, wanting to see how powerful the outcome would be.

After all, compared to when they were fighting at Luoshui, Zhang Ruochen's cultivation and strength had significantly improved. Even without the help of Sundial, he was confident that he could defeat Yan Wushen's evil counterpart.

"It seems that you are very confident. However, this time, if you want to rely on Sundial to win, it won't work anymore," said Yan Wushen.

As soon as Yan Wushen waved his hand, Chi Kunlun was swept away by a stream of Qi. He was brought outside the courtyard, standing on a blood cloud floating in the air.

Chi Kunlun could still see the courtyard. It felt it was just a close distance away from the blood cloud he was standing on.

He was anxious, so he ran with all his might. Yet, no matter how hard he tried, the courtyard—which was like a floating island—was out of reach. It was as though it was tens of thousands of miles away or even further. All he could do was watch.

"Zhang Ruochen, Prince of the Eastern Region, I hope you won't disappoint me." Yan Wushen looked expectant.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Yin Yuanchen and said, "Brother Yin, step aside and don't interfere."

"Brother Zhang, be careful."

Without hesitation, Yin Yuanchen retreated into the distance.

In his opinion, since Zhang Ruochen had defeated Yan Wushen in Luoshui, there should be no problem this time.

Yin Yuanchen looked around at the realm of stars and thought to himself, 'Yan Wushen must have tricks up his sleeve. Even if he gets defeated, he must have a way to escape unscathed. I must think of a way to leave this place and lure Celestial Court elites here so that he cannot leave the Imperial City.'

If Yan Wushen was captured or killed, it would send Infernal Court a massive blow. It could certainly turn the tide of the battle in Kunlun.

Of course, Yin Yuanchen was also secretly on guard. Although his sensory was not as good as Zhang Ruochen's, he could vaguely feel the presence of other powerful elites lurking in the dark.

It was not something unexpected. After all, Imperial City was now crowded with powerful cultivators. No matter how confident Yan Wushen was in his own strength, he would not choose to take the risk alone.

Outside the pavilion, Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen stood facing each other. They looked at each other, but neither of them made a move.

But in reality, the battle between them had already begun.

If one sensed carefully, one would find that the space around Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen had slight fluctuations. Ripples like water waves crashed into each other but disappeared at the same time.

Both of them controlled the power of Dimension meticulously. The techniques both parties used were so terrifying that they could get a nine-step Saint King killed if they got close. However, only little movements were sighted among both parties. There was no casualty around them. Not even a flower or grass was damaged.

Although it might seem that their fight was uneventful, it was actually very dangerous.

"I'm surprised that your attainment in Path of Dimension has improved so much in just a few months." Yan Wushen's expression changed.

Path of Dimension was one of the Paths of the Ancients. It was very difficult to practice it that even for a cultivator as strong as Yan Wushen. It had taken him a long time and many fortuitous encounters to reach his current attainment.

Contrary, Zhang Ruochen had only taken a few months to advance his cultivation in Path of Dimension to near perfection. Yan Wushen felt it was unbelievable despite seeing it with his own eyes.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You’re not bad either.”

In terms of the number of Percepts, Yan Wushen’s good and evil counterparts should be the same.

During their duel at Luoshui, although the evil Yan Wushen had displayed great attainment in Dimensional techniques, the number of Precepts of Dimension he could cultivate could only reach 900,000.

But now, Zhang Ruochen could sense that Yan Wushen’s quantity of Precepts of Dimension should be the same as his. In other words, Yan Wushen was only one step away from Great Perfection in terms of cultivation in Dimension.

Apparently, Zhang Ruochen’s existence had put great pressure on Yan Wushen. It drove him to achieve higher attainment in his cultivation in a few months.

“This is more interesting,” Yan Wushen laughed.

The stronger Zhang Ruochen was, the happier Yan Wushen was. He had always longed for a strong opponent.

As he spoke, Yan Wushen made his move. A powerful force of Dimension surged out, distorting the space around him.

“Saint Aspect of Dimension.”

Zhang Ruochen kept his guard up. He sensed there was an invisible vortex emerging above him.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Ruochen released his Saint Aspect of Dimension. It clashed with Yan Wushen’s head-on.

After practicing Path of Dimension to near perfection, Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen’s Saint Aspects of Dimension were undoubtedly extremely powerful and had terrifying destructive power.

Even a top-tier Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact might be crushed immediately and turned into scrap metal.

BOOM!
Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen's Saint Aspects of Dimension collided hard, releasing a terrifying impact that could destroy everything. The surrounding space was destroyed entirely, revealing a dark void space of deep layer.

That affected area was terrifying that even a Supreme Saint would find it hard to get away when they were trapped inside.

Zhang Ruochen did not care about this. With a thought, he released his Saint Aspects of Time to attack Yan Wushen.

No matter who he fought with, Zhang Ruochen liked to take the lead to strike first instead of being in defensive mode.

Saint Aspects of Time was also an invisible vortex. As soon as it appeared, countless Marks of Time flew. Even the illusory image of River of Time was formed, altering the flow of time in this space.

BANG!
Saint Aspects of Time and another invisible vortex collided in an instant. As a result, some Marks of Time dissipated into nothingness.

To be more precise, these Marks of Time were disintegrated and turned into countless tiny particles that were not visible to naked eyes.

Under the influence of Saint Aspects of Time, some of the tiny particles gathered again and turned into Marks of Time.

It seems that I'm not the only one who has cultivated multiple Saint Aspects,' Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

Generally speaking, when a cultivator reached Sainthood, he would condense all Percepts that he had cultivated into a Saint Aspect. The shape of the Saint Aspect was basically the same as their own.

However, Zhang Ruochen was extraordinary. He separated part of the Precepts from the two Paths of Ancients and three Paths of Supreme Saint that he had mainly cultivated and fused them with Precepts of other Paths together. As a result, he had managed to cultivate a total of six Saint Aspects.

Even Blackie, who was knowledgeable, had never heard of this before. It had only read about it in ancient records. In the ancient times, there had been mysterious creatures that were not part of the five elements. They

could cultivate multiple Saint Aspects and condense multiple Saint Sources.

At that time, Zhang Ruochen had not figured it out, but with his current knowledge, he might have some guesses.

He could cultivate multiple Saint Aspects, likely due to the techniques and the Paths of Cultivation he was practicing.

Empyrean Emperor Ming's Scripture was no ordinary. It was suspected to be linked to *Trāyastriṃśa*[1]. It was the top cultivation exercise in the universe.
Swoosh!
A 30,000-meter-long Saint Sword flew out of Zhang Ruochen's body. It was formed from millions of Precepts of Swordsmanship. It was his Saint Aspect of Swordsmanship.

The Saint Aspect of Swordsmanship released nine-colored Saint Light. Its surface was covered with complicated sword patterns, looking profound. It seemed to have imprinted the true essence of swordsmanship.

Tens of thousands of streaks of Sword Qi burst out from Saint Aspect of Swordsmanship. They turned into a storm of Sword Qi, charging at Yan Wushen.

Yan Wushen's body shook. A huge black hole appeared in front of him out of thin air.

"His Saint Aspect of Fist only needs one more Precept to achieve perfection," Zhang Ruochen murmured.

As he had expected, Yan Wushen had indeed cultivated more than one Saint Aspect.

He had seen Yan Wushen's powerful fist technique before, so he was not surprised that Yan Wushen had cultivated a Saint Aspect of Fist.

Yan Wushen's Saint Aspect of Fist was terrifying. It unleashed a powerful force with an aura that could only be found in Infernal Court. It was so powerful that it seemed to be able to devour everything.

In an instant, the sword Qi released by the Saint Aspect of Swordsmanship was devoured by the black hole.

Whoosh!

The Saint Aspect of Swordsmanship was unstoppable. It slashed down and cut the black hole in half.

When Yan Wushen saw it, his expression turned grim.

“This is the Great Perfection in swordsmanship.” Yan Wushen was shocked.

Even someone as powerful as him who had practiced for so many years had yet to advance any Paths of the Ancients and Paths of Supreme Saint to Great Perfection. Never had he expected Zhang Ruochen would succeed.

An amazing transformation would occur when the cultivation attainment of any Paths of cultivation reached the Great Perfection. Not only would the power of corresponding Saint Techniques multiply, but they would also even develop some unimaginable, profound effects.

“This is the Great Perfection in Swordsmanship that legend has said. He has become so powerful.” Chi Kunlun stared at Zhang Ruochen with mixed feelings.

Ever since he fought with Zhang Ruochen once in Celestial Domain of Truth, Chi Kunlun had made up his mind to defeat Zhang Ruochen with the sword in his hand fairly and squarely.

He did not change his mind even after knowing his real identity. Instead, he became more determined.

Now that Chi Kunlun saw Zhang Ruochen’s attainments in swordsmanship, he certainly felt great pressure.

However, determination reappeared in Chi Kunlun’s eyes the next second. He refused to give up and admit defeat.

An ancient sword hilt appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s hand as soon as he reached out. It looked very plain with no signs of active energy.

This sword hilt was not something ordinary. It had been stolen from Sword Vault. Zhang Ruochen had taken it back from Luo Sha. Needless to say, it contained a great secret.

Driven by the Saint Qi, streaks of divine light flew out from the sword hilt. Countless Precepts of Swordsmanship emerged. They were dense and complex, interweaving to form a slender sword.

Suddenly, a strong divine power spread out from the sword hilt.

Whoosh!
Affected by the power of the divine sword, everything in the courtyard shone with dazzling light. It was as though every single object was going to transform into sharp blades.

RUMBLE–
The realm of stars shook violently. The sword light looked solid as it spread throughout the entire space.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen was like an unrivaled Sword God who descended to Kunlun. His was unstoppable.

The power the sword hilt had unleashed was already terrifying when it was in Luo Sha's hands, let alone in Zhang Ruochen's. Needless to say, the current energy it unleased was even more impressive.

Yan Wushen's gaze locked onto the Divine Sword in Zhang Ruochen's hands. He narrowed his eyes and thought to himself, 'A sword hilt can have such power. Could it be related to the legendary divine sword that was destroyed?"

Thinking of this, Yan Wushen did not hesitate. He immediately withdrew his Saint Aspect of Fist, which was about to break, and started to execute another technique.

He could feel that Zhang Ruochen's next move would be extremely terrifying. He had to unleash his true power.

As soon as he executed the secret technique, a majestic Infernal Yama Qi emerged from his body. To be precise, it was an extremely bright Yama Qi that corresponded to the extremely dark Yama Qi that evil Yan Wushen practiced.

Suddenly, Yan Wushen's body underwent a huge change. His skin, flesh, bones, and tendons all turned golden. His body grew quickly, turning into a golden giant that was 96 feet tall.

Behind Yan Wushen, boundless Buddhist light bloomed, forming an illusory golden Buddhist kingdom, where countless Arhats, Bodhisattvas, and Buddhist Saints sat cross-legged within. The view made Yan Wushen look majestic, as if he was a real Buddha.

“The strongest Golden Body technique of Buddhism. Yan Wushen has indeed received the inheritance of the ancient Saint Buddhist cultivator.” Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat.

Pan Ruo had once told him that Yan Wushen had obtained the forbidden Buddhist technique created by an ancient Saint Buddhist cultivator. It allowed him to split himself into two entities: the good and evil Yan Wushens.

Zhang Ruochen had thought that Yan Wushen might have also received some other powerful inheritances of Buddhism. And most likely, his evil counterpart was not eligible to practice it.

However, little had he expected Yan Wushen could get the strongest Golden Body technique of Buddhism and even practice it successfully.

Zhang Ruochen had seen a Golden Body technique before. It was Chen Yuhua’s “*12-feet-tall Golden Body Mode*“, a unique skill recorded in *Four-Nine Mystic Arts* and had amazing power.
In terms of body size, Yan Wushen was eight times larger than Chen Yuhua. He was as big as a giant, but how strong would he be?

Undoubtedly, Yan Wushen was more worthy of Zhang Ruochen’s sword.

“Yan Wushen, take my sword strike,” Zhang Ruochen growled.

Zhang Ruochen waved the Divine Sword in his hand as he spoke. Its force encompassed all the space in heaven and earth, east, south, west, and north. Countless Dimensional Inscriptions appeared, causing the entire realm of stars to shake.

A realm completely constructed by Sword Qi emerged and expanded infinitely, enveloping Yan Wushen.

Ever since he comprehended Sword Ten’s sixth level, this was the first time Zhang Ruochen had launched the technique using the mysterious sword hilt against an opponent.

After all, with his current strength, not many people were worthy enough for him to use this sword technique.

[1] Buddhism’s Thirty-Three Heavens

Chapter 2169: Merger of Good and Evil: Invincible

Yan Wushen—who was now in Golden Giant Mode—did not flinch despite seeing Zhang Ruochen waving his sword. Instead, there was excitement in his eyes. The 96-foot-tall golden giant moved and released a majestic golden Blood Qi.

Moving his fists, Yan Wushen fueled his power into the pair of gauntlets he was wearing.

Suddenly, the gauntlets also shone with a bright golden light. A large number of Supreme Inscriptions emerged. Streaks of powerful Supreme Power surged out of them.

In an instant, Yan Wushen had already unleashed over a hundred punches. The sky was filled with majestic fist marks. They were like ancient divine mountains that tore through space and time and appeared in this world.

Over a hundred Fist Marks collided with the illusory realm of Sword Qi. Like hundreds of massive stars, they crashed into the illusory realm.

BOOM!

The space immediately shattered like glass due to the impact. A destructive Dimensional Storm was formed. It destroyed the courtyard, turning everything into dust.

At this moment, the realm of stars, despite being solid and stable, shook violently. The starry sky within the realm was covered with large Dimensional Rifts. It was as if the entire world was about to collapse.

The realm formed of Sword Qi shattered, but it also crushed all the Fist Marks.

Following that, countless streaks of sharp Sword Qi were released, flooding over Yan Wushen.

Each Sword Qi had a Brand of Dimension on it that could bypass the barriers of space and destroy everything.

CLANG!

The sound of metal and stone colliding came as soon as the Sword Qi hit Yan Wushen’s golden body. However, it could not break through his golden body’s defense, leaving only shallow white marks.

Yan Wushen pressed his palms together, and a Swastika symbol appeared. It was an indestructible Buddhist seal, emitting boundless Buddhist light, spreading golden circles of ripples.

Wherever the golden ripples passed, the Sword Qi dissipated, and the violent force of Dimensions returned to peace.

For a moment, a large area of space was dyed golden. Golden lotus flowers grew out of thin air, and an ethereal Buddhist chant spread throughout the world. Inside the void, a peaceful nirvana appeared with virtual images of all the immortal Buddhas.

A moment later, all streaks of Sword Qi disappeared. The Swastika Buddhist Seal shrank and entered Yan Wushen—who was in Golden Giant Mode—through his chest.

“No wonder it is known as the mightiest Golden Body technique of Buddhist sect. It’s truly indestructible,” praised Zhang Ruochen, who was deeply impressed.

The sword strike he had launched just now was so powerful that even a Supreme Saint who had cultivated a Neverwither physique would not dare to take it head-on. It could slash a Neverwither physique, yet Yan Wushen remained unscathed.

As far as Zhang Ruochen knew, even in Western Buddha Realm, only few people could practice Golden Giant Mode. This technique was too fierce and overbearing that any slightest carelessness could lead to the destruction of one’s body.

From ancient times to date, only a handful of people could practice Golden Giant Mode to Grand Completion in Saint Kinghood.

Yin Yuanchen’s expression turned grave. He whispered, “Yan Wushen is indeed terrifying. No one would think that he still hold such a trump card. The Golden Giant Mode is a secret technique of Buddhist Sect. How did he get his hands on it?”

“Moreover, logically speaking, even if he had managed to obtain it, he could not have practiced it without the help of some special methods of Buddhist Sect. Could it be that he had some fortuitous encounters in Kunlun?”

In Kunlun, there was also Buddhist Sect that had a long history. It was inextricably linked to Western Buddha Realm.

Before this, he had never heard that Yan Wushen was a cultivator of Path of Buddhism. Yan Wushen had never evolved into Golden Giant Mode, even when chased by the Four Heavenly Kings of the Heaven Palace.

Hence, one possible explanation was that Yan Wushen had only successfully practiced Golden Giant Mode after he came to Kunlun.

Yin Yuanchen then shifted his gaze at Zhang Ruochen with a hint of surprise in his eyes. “Even a Supreme Saint would find it difficult to practice such a terrifying sword technique. His swordsmanship has reached such a high level,” he said.

He knew that Zhang Ruochen had attained amazing achievements in swordsmanship, but never had he expected him to be this powerful.

Yin Yuanchen could clearly feel the power of Zhang Ruochen’s sword just now. If it were him, he would have been either ended up dead or seriously injured.

Only Yan Wushen, who was in Golden Giant Mode, could take the sword strike head-on and remain intact.

“Zhang Ruochen, taste my punch too.”

Yan Wushen stepped on the void and unleashed a punch without making any fancy moves.

SWOOSH!
Thousands of streaks of golden light burst out from Yan Wushen and condensed into an illusory thousand-mile-tall Buddha that had a solemn look on his face. The Buddha struck out a punch too.

BOOM!
The streaks of golden light pierced through the void and shattered everything, creating a dark vacuum domain.

“Be careful.”

Chi Kunlun looked worried and could not help but shout.

He was stunned. In his eyes, Yan Wushen was like a powerful Buddha descending into the world and releasing the aura that could suppress everything.

He could not tell whether Zhang Ruochen could defeat Yan Wushen. No matter what, he did not want to see Zhang Ruochen get hurt.

Zhang Ruochen remained calm. He did not seem to be bothered about how strong the storm would be. With a wave of his Divine Sword, countless Marks of Time appeared. They filled the starry sky and resonated with the Divine Sword.

In an instant, a virtual Time Domain was formed. As a result, the flow of time in a large area was greatly altered. At this moment, Time and Space seemed to freeze.

A sword light streaked across the sky. It was so fast that no one could see it clearly.

Crack!
Yan Wushen's terrifying Fist Mark cracked. It was cut in half and then scattered.

At this time, Yan Wushen had approached closer. He unclenched his fist and slowly struck out a palm strike.

The palm strike he launched expanded into an enormous hand. It covered heaven and earth, pressing down on Zhang Ruochen with great force.

At the same time, the virtual golden Buddhist Kingdom behind Yan Wushen became even more solid. It seemed like it was going to emerge from the void and descend into reality.

Inside the Buddhist Kingdom, 3,000 Buddhas were sighted sitting cross-legged. They were chanting scriptures continuously. They infused endless Power of Buddhism into Yan Wushen's body. As a result, the hand covering the sky grew stronger and stronger. It was as if it could easily pluck the stars and the Moon from the sky.

Zhang Ruochen stood quietly where he was. Boundless Five-element Chaotic Qi surged out of his body and condensed into a huge illusory realm. It looked extremely solid, no different from a real world.

The illusory realm was evolving at an astonishing speed. The Precepts of Time and Dimension and the five elements interweaved within it. Earth, wind, water, and fire shook endlessly.

During his 72 days of self-cultivation training in Imperial Ruler, Zhang Ruochen had advanced his Five-element Chaotic Body to Perfection. If he

took a step further, his body could achieve the physical state as strong as of a Supreme Saint.

The illusory realm of Chaos, with a diameter of more than 1,000 miles, rose into the air and collided with the hand covering the sky.

KABOOM!
The illusory realm of Chaos shook violently, but it managed to block the hand covering the sky steadily, preventing it from falling further.

The Swastika Buddhist Seal that had previously entered Yan Wushen's body reemerged on the hand and released an enormous force.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly looked up. He wielded the Divine Sword in his hand to form a cross-shaped Sword Light.

This cross-shaped Sword Light was sharp. It easily tore apart the space that had been frozen, penetrating layer by layer until it reached the deep dark void.

CLANG!
The Swastika Buddhist Seal immediately dimmed as soon as the Sword Light hit it, and immediately, the sky-covering hand trembled and quickly shrank.

Yan Wushen's expression turned grim. He realized that he failed to see through Zhang Ruochen's level of cultivation. In other words, he could not figure out Zhang Ruochen's limits.

He was absolutely powerful when his Golden Giant Mode was activated, that even a Neverwither Supreme Saint would not be able to withstand his punch. They would end up getting smashed into pieces even with their Neverwither physique.

Yet, he could not gain the upper hand in the fight against Zhang Ruochen.

If he had not practiced Golden Giant Mode, he could have gotten injured by Zhang Ruochen.

Yan Wushen had to admit that Zhang Ruochen had made progress in cultivation far greater than him in just a few months.

Yan Wushen stared at Zhang Ruochen, "On top of attaining Great Perfection in your swordsmanship, you have practiced a powerful sword technique. No swordsman below the Supreme Sainthood could outdo you.

Even the unrivalled Swordgods in history would fail to defeat you if they fought you under the same cultivational rank.”

“To be able to combine Path of Dimension and Path of Time with swordsmanship at will, Zhang Ruochen, if you continue to practice, you will be on par with Saint Monk Xumi one day or even surpass him in the future.”

“It seems that I should not have given you so much time to grow after the battle between you and my evil counterpart at Luoshui.”.

Zhang Ruochen appeared very calm and composed. He said, “Yan Wushen, you can’t defeat me alone, even when you transform into an indestructible Golden Giant. So, why waste your time? You should just join hands with your evil counterpart in this fight.”

Hearing their conversation, Chi Kunlun and Yin Yuanchen looked puzzled. They did not understand the situation.

‘Good and evil counterparts? Does that mean there are two Yan Wushens?’

“Well, my cultivation process in two separate entities is almost complete now. It is indeed the time for me to merge my good and evil counterparts. I’m really glad to meet a powerful opponent like you before I reach Supreme Sainthood,” said Yan Wushen with a faint smile.

As soon as his voice trailed off, the blood-red starry sky trembled as ripples appeared in space. A tall and burly figure appeared out of thin air. He stood in the air and looked down at everyone.

This man looked exactly like Yan Wushen. However, there was an incomparably evil aura radiating from him. As though he was the essence of all sinister qualities in the world, everything turned pitch-black, including the space, wherever he passed by.

“Another Yan Wushen!”

Chi Kunlun and Yin Yuanchen were both shocked.

Yin Yuanchen examined the newly appeared Yan Wushen carefully and finally realized something. “Everyone thought that Yan Wushen was temperamental and moody, that his power would change along with his personality when he turned evil. It turns out that the one they saw was never the same Yan Wushen,” said Yin Yuanchen.

Apparently, this must be the Yan Wushen that had fought Zhang Ruochen at Luoshui.

There were secret techniques that allowed cultivators to split themselves into separate entities or avatars. For example, *Way of the Three Corpses*, which was listed on *Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank*, allowed a cultivator to cultivate three avatars.
However, Yin Yuanchen could see that Yan Wushen's good and evil counterparts were fundamentally different from the "three corpses".

The cultivator practicing *Way of the Three Corpses* could only split themselves into three entities temporarily. Each of them could not exist independently for a long time, and their thoughts were unified.
On the contrary, Yan Wushen's good and evil counterparts were like two totally separate entities. Their personalities, power, and methods were completely different.

"One Yan Wushen alone is already on par with Zhang Ruochen. If he joins hand with the other Yan Wushen, will Zhang Ruochen have a winning chance?" Yin Yuanchen could not help but worry.

In the face of two Yan Wushens, even if the Four Heavenly Kings of the Heaven Palace were here, they would probably have to retreat.

The combined combat power of two Yan Wushens was not as simple as one plus one.

The evil Yan Wushen smiled coldly and said, "Hi Zhang Ruochen, we meet again. You have certainly made a great progress in your cultivation. You did not disappoint me."

Zhang Ruochen could feel that the evil Yan Wushen's strength had also improved greatly. Although he was not as strong as the good Yan Wushen, the gap was not big.

Both Yan Wushens had practiced multiple Paths, including Dimension and Origin, to the extreme. He wondered how powerful Yan Wushen would be when the two merged.

According to Pan Ruo, Yan Wushen would be able to practice the forbidden Buddhist method to Perfection once his good and evil counterparts merged. He could reach the peak of cultivation and become a legend.

“Zhang Ruochen, as you wish, I will fight you at my prime state,” said the good Yan Wushen.

As he spoke, he deactivated his Golden Giant Mode. At the same time, he retracted the Saint Aspects of Dimension and Origin Saint and turned his gaze at his evil counterpart.

In the next moment, both of them made strange hand seals at the same time. Majestic extremely bright Yama Qi and extremely dark Yama Qi surged out of them respectively.

Swoosh–
The two Yan Wushens moved at the same time. Their bodies turned into streaks of light and collided.

BANG!
A terrifying power burst out and spread in all directions. It was as if a volcano that had been silent for billions of years was erupting at this moment.

This collision was even more terrifying than the collision of two giant stars, powerful enough to destroy the world.

The extremely bright Yama Qi and the extremely dark Yama Qi were entangled together. Both Yan Wushens merged, complementing each other with yin and yang energies, forming infinite primordial energy.

In an instant, a new type of Yama Qi was born. It was dark green and had a primordial aura. It seemed to originate from the beginning of the world.

It was Yama Clan’s legendary Primordial Infernal Yama Qi. It had countless forms and uses. Since ancient times, very few people had been able to cultivate it.

Swoosh!
A stream of Precepts rushed out from Primordial Infernal Yama Qi. It was vast and mighty like a divine dragon.

There were a total of 100 million Precepts. Every single one of them was extremely sturdy and gave off a strong immortal aura. It was even stronger than many Neverwither Supreme Saints.

“100 million Precepts, how is this possible?”

Yin Yuanchen’s eyes widened. He could not believe what he saw.

The limit of the number of Precepts that a Saint King could cultivate was 100 million. However, those who could achieve it only existed in ancient legends.

At the very least, in the past 100,000 years, there had never been a talent who could cultivate 100 million Precepts at Saint Kinghood.

Being able to cultivate 100 million Precepts meant that one had reached Great Perfection in the Saint Kinghood. It was over a hundred times more difficult than cultivating a single Path to Great Perfection.

Following that, Yin Yuanchen carefully looked at the stream of Precepts. He was stunned to find Yan Wushen had cultivated ten Paths of Cultivation, including Path of Dimension and Path of Origin, to Great Perfection.

It was extremely difficult for an ordinary person to cultivate one Path of Cultivation to Great Perfection.

Yet, Yan Wushen had managed to cultivate ten Paths of Cultivations, including two Paths of the Ancients, to Great Perfection. 'How is this possible? No one will believe it when they hear this.'

Chapter 2170: One Who Wields Two Swords

The realm of stars became extremely unstable. The Primordial Infernal Yama Qi formed terrifying streams of air that shot out in all directions.

The streams of air looked like beautiful comets; even the best Nine-Step Saint Kings could be crushed into pieces if they were hit by one.

Yin Yuanchen tried his best to retreat by putting more distance between him and Wushen while he continuously dodged the attacks at the same time. Even with his strength, getting hit repeatedly by the air currents was not a good feeling.

"He's too strong. How can someone in Saint Kinghood be so strong? This is the real Yan Wushen—peerless and unrivalled," Yin Yuanchen was extremely shocked.

He did not dare to think about capturing or even killing Yan Wushen now, all he could think of was how to escape.

The mergence of Yan Wushen's good and evil counterparts exuded an intimidating aura that made it hard for one to have the urge to resist him.

Yin Yuanchen thought to himself, even if he teamed up with Zhang Ruochen, they still wouldn't be able to defeat Yan Wushen. If things went wrong, they would both die here.

Above the cloud of blood, Chi Kunlun was burning with anxiety yet he couldn't do anything.

"I told you to leave, do you not understand? I don't need you to save me. Leave!" Chi Kunlun shouted.

He believed that with Zhang Ruochen's skills, this realm of stars wouldn't be able to trap him if he wanted to leave.

If Zhang Ruochen stayed and fought with Yan Wushen who was currently at his peak performance, the outcome would be unpredictable. Nevertheless, Chi Kunlun did not want Zhang Ruochen to die here while saving him.

If that happened, he would live with guilt for the rest of his life.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen did not have the time to ask about anything else. His was completely focused on Yan Wushen.

The stronger he was, the more he could sense how terrifying Yan Wushen's power was.

A casual aura released by him could crush the stars and shatter the world.

"100 million Precepts and the Great Perfection of 10 kinds of Path. I have never expected the mergence of Yan Wushen's good and evil counterparts to produce such a shocking transformation. I wonder if there's anyone in history who's in Saint Kinghood and more amazing than Yan Wushen ," Zhang Ruochen thought.

In Saint Kinghood, reaching 100 million Precepts of Path would lead to all kinds of incredible changes, this was every cultivator's dream.

However, this step was an enormous chasm. Even if one was only lacking one Path, it would still be difficult for them to cross it.

Everyone understood that as long as they took this step, it would lay down the most solid foundation of the Path and would have a massive impact on their cultivation in the future. It would even be the key in grasping the profound meaning to becoming a God in the future.

Whoosh.
All of the Primordial Infernal Yama Qi were attracted by a powerful force and quickly gathered together. The River of Precepts also started flowing backwards.

When everything returned to normal, Yan Wushen's figure reappeared.

Yan Wushen's good and evil counterparts disappeared, his complete true body appeared.

Yan Wushen's aura was fluctuating between divine and evil, he was like a God but also like the devil. He was exuding an extremely dangerous aura and seemed very unstable.

The violent force surrounded Yan Wushen's body, it shattered the glass in their surroundings and formed a vacuum zone.

As expected, Yan Wushen had just merged his good and evil counterparts, so he couldn't control his newfound powers at will.

Yan Wushen stood in the dark void, he looked like an ancient God who had crossed time and space to arrive at this realm. His cold eyes looked around disdainfully.

"Zhang Ruochen, use your full strength to fight me," Yan Wushen said coldly.

Yan Wushen pointed his finger as he spoke, his power of Origin was released.

Countless tiny particles condensed instantly. Their origin changed, it did not not matter what their origins were, they all turned into a dark golden metallic liquid that swept towards Zhang Ruochen.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to dodge the metallic liquid, it blocked all of his escape routes and quickly solidified into a giant ball.

Then, the ball was compressed rapidly. Its structure became more and more compact.

The pressure within the ball was extremely terrifying, even a Neverwither physique might not be able to withstand it.

This method used not only used the power of Origin, but also the Power of Dimensions. It was the perfect combination to easily kill an ordinary Neverwither Supreme Saint.

This was when Yin Yuanchen took out a silver-white long sword, he poured his Saint Qi nto it with all his might. This activated a majestic divine power within the sword, which condensed into a beam of 30,000-meter-long sword energy that slashed towards Yan Wushen's direction.

He obviously could not continue to stand idly and watch this happen. If Zhang Ruochen does get suppressed by Yan Wushen, what came after this would not be good for him.

Yan Wushen glanced at Yin Yuanchen and waved his sleeve.

He shot out a powerful Primordial Infernal Yama Qi, it turned into a cloud of smoke that was deep emerald in color and a hundred million feet long. It looked powerful enough to sweep out the heavens.

Crack.
The beam of sword energy shattered the moment it came into contact with it, dissipating its divine power.

Yin Yuanchen's expression changed slightly. He quickly activated the longsword in his hand with all his strength as he condensed dozens of defensive shields at the same time.

BANG!
The deep emerald cloud of smoke was unstoppable, it shattered all of Yin Yuanchen's defense shields and sent him flying.

Cough.
Yin Yuanchen coughed out large mouthfuls of blood. If it weren't for the extraordinary sacred robe he was wearing and the large amount of divine marks tattooed on him, his physical body might have already been in pieces.

A few more attacks of this level was enough to take his life.

Yin Yuanchen had to endure this whether he wanted it or not, his strength was not on the same level as Yan Wushen's.

"Yan Wushen is so powerful. With his current strength, even if the the Four Heavenly Kings of the Celestial Palace joined forces, they would be no match for him," Yin Yuanchen was shocked.

“Other than the Supreme Saint, only a handful of living beings can survive an attack from me. Your strength is not bad,” Yan Wushen said and ceased his attack.

BOOM!
At this moment, billions of sharp Sword Qi shot out of the metal ball, shredding it to pieces.

Countless crystal-clear flower buds appeared out of thin air and slowly bloomed.

Flowers blooming in the dark void, they could be described as beautiful and magnificent.

However, these flower buds bloomed and released an extremely powerful destructive power. All of the metal pieces turned into ashes and were swallowed by the dark void; even their most basic particles were not left behind.

Zhang Ruochen’s figure appeared again. He was surrounded by numerous Sword Lotuses and looked completely unharmed.

Seeing this, Yin Yuanchen suddenly came to the realization, “So this is Brother Zhang’s true strength, he was deliberately holding back previously.”

Yin Yuanchen gave it some thought and understood what was going on. Zhang Ruochen knew from the start that Yan Wushen had both good and evil counterparts yet he still dared to fight him. How could he only have the strength equal to Yan Wushen’s good counterpart?

This was undoubtedly a good thing; the stronger Zhang Ruochen was, the greater their chance of escape would be.

Zhang Ruochen held the divine sword and mobilized millions of Precepts with millions of Precepts of Swordsmanship as the focus. The other Precepts that he used were related Swordsmanship, this included the Precepts of Truth. He even mobilized the Canon of Truth.

The hilt of the sword from the Sword Vault was more than extraordinary and contained many mysteries. The usage of the Canon of Truth would allow him to forcefully activate part of its power.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression was solemn. The usage of the Earth Sword Soul made him enter the state of being one with the sword, he slashed him without any reservation.

Whoosh.
This was his most powerful slash, it contained all his enlightenment and knowledge of Swordsmanship, as well as his sincerity towards Swordsmanship.

The divine light that was condensed into a sword broke up into thousands of light swords. They carried an indescribably terrifying aura as they slashed towards Yan Wushen.

“Good timing.”

Yan Wushen was not afraid at all. On the contrary, he appeared very excited.

The Primordial Infernal Yama Qi surged out of Yan Wushen’s body and poured into the gloves that he was wearing.

At the same time, a tall figure appeared behind Yan Wushen. The figure was so tall the blue sky was right above above his head and hell was right beneath his feet, he was majestic.

“When Yan Wushen is angry, there will be bloodshed,” Yan Wushen let out a long howl.

Yan Wushen’s shadow that was behind him immediately moved in sync with him and punched.

A massive fist imprint appeared, it covered the lands and the skies.

The appearance of this fist imprint led to an extremely shocking phenomenon in this realm of stars—billions of beings were laid dead and countless Divine Demons covered with blood fell from the sky.

This phenomenon alone was enough to shock people to the core and make them feel fear.

Whoosh.
The thousands of light swords that Zhang Ruochen used revealed their incredible sharpness, they were invincible and brought the odd phenomenon in the sky to an end. They also destroyed the huge fist imprint.

The light swords then shattered and turned into a divine light once more, it disappeared into the hilt of the sword.

“That’s a very powerful sword technique. Unfortunately, it still isn’t enough,” Yan Wushen said.

Zhang Ruochen’s heart sank, even his strongest attack couldn’t harm Yan Wushen. This was not good news.

Although he had many trump cards, there were only few that could actually threaten Yan Wushen. Yan Wushen might even have ways to deal with them, including Sundial.

Yan Wushen stuck out his hand and flipped it casually.

In an instant, the space Zhang Ruochen was in changed greatly. The lands and skies were overturned as dozens of blood-red stars appeared around him.

Zhang Ruochen was at the center of a large area of space that was distorting violently. It was compressed and folded repeatedly, it turned into a cage that trapped him.

“The Great Perfection of Path of Dimension is indeed terrifying. It can actually completely suppress my Path of Dimension,” Zhang Ruochen was shocked.

His Path of Dimension was not weak, he was only one Path away from reaching Great Perfection. However, the difference of this single Path had a significant impact on his control of space.

Zhang Ruochen could not help but put away the hilt of his sword. With a thought, Saint Aspects of Time and Saint Aspects of Dimensions appeared on both of his sides. He put both his hands together and did a strange gesture.

He condensed the power of time in his left hand and power of space in his right. There was instantly a mysterious change as the two collided.

It was incredible, the power of the two ancient Paths quickly merged and turned into a brand new power.

“Destruction of time and space.”

Zhang Ruochen muttered and released the spacetime power he had condensed.

With his current cultivation, it would be difficult for him to control spacetime power. Even if he could condense it, it would only last for a short time. He would hurt himself if he wasn't careful.

In the dark void, an illusory image of the River of Time appeared. It flowed slowly without a beginning nor end.

Countless Marks of Time flew out of the River of Time, making the time flow in this realm extremely chaotic.

BOOM!
Dozens of blood-red stars exploded. The surrounding space was torn apart and formed a huge spatial fault. It looked like a dark abyss that was consuming everything.

Zhang Ruochen opened the anomaly and used the Five-element Chaotic World to protect himself before rushing out as quickly as he could.

Zhang Ruochen finally flew out of the spatial fault after using a lot of his strength. The anomaly was still shattered. The blood Qi within his body churned violently, causing him to almost spit it out.

Fortunately, he had the protection of the Armor of the Fire God and divine marks, as well as the Five-element Chaotic Body that he had cultivated to the extreme.

Yan Wushen stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, "I'll give you one more chance, work for the Infernal Court."

Yan Wushen really admired a peerless genius like Zhang Ruochen. he really hoped that he could make use of him.

Of course, if Zhang Ruochen continued to be stubborn, he had no choice but to kill a genius like him.

Zhang Ruochen appeared very calm. He was trying his best to suppress the blood Qi that was churning in his body. He was silent but his determined eyes showed his stance.

"What a pity," Yan Wushen shook his head slightly.

The next moment, Yan Wushen's aura skyrocketed. His long black hair fluttered. An ancient book flew out of his body, it hung above his head and slowly opened.

Streams of arcane light of life and death flew out of the ancient book, they displayed the mysteries of life and death.

When Chi Kunlun saw the *Book of Life and Death*, he bit his lip really hard until it almost bled. He shouted at Yan Wushen, “Yan Wushen, I agree to be your master. Let Zhang Ruochen go.”
Yan Wushen was a little surprised when he heard this. He didn’t expect Chi Kunlun—a man of stubborn character—to agree.

Yan Wushen then shook his head and said, “Kid, you’re still too naive. Do you think this battle can stop at a time like this? Zhang Ruochen and I represent this era. We must decide the winner, even if it means death. In an era, there can only be one invincible person.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were calm. He looked at Chi Kunlun and said in an indifferent tone, “Yan Wushen is destined to be defeated by me, why do you want him as your master? Just watch quietly.”

Anyone could hear the confidence in Zhang Ruochen’s words.

“Hahaha, how arrogant. Zhang Ruochen, let me see what you are capable of,”

Yan Wushen was about to launch a fierce attack before he suddenly sensed something. He couldn’t help but look up at the sky.

BOOM!
Two meteor-like sword lights—one black and the other red—were flying towards them. The realm of stars was split open.

Swoosh.
The two sword lights descended from the sky and appeared beside Zhang Ruochen. They turned into two simple longswords. One was black and wide, while the other was blood-red and slender.

The two swords hovered in the air. They represented yin and yang—life and death—and seemed to be able to seize the fortunes of Heaven and earth.

They were the Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dripper.

Zhang Ruochen had a close connection with the Ancient Abyssal Blade, even this realm of stars couldn’t completely block their connection.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dripper immediately flew over from Ziwei Palace the moment he summoned them, the timing was perfect.

Zhang Ruochen's long hair fluttered in the wind as the sword intents of the two swords merged. He looked extremely sharp and emitted a five-colored chaotic light, it was as if he'd become a peerless sword God.

With a wave of his sleeve, the Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dripper flew up at the same time. They were like lovers, they intertwined one another and formed a yin and yang Tai Chi pattern that covered the entire realm of stars.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dripper finally had a chance to perform the strongest sword formation of the Liangyi Sect—the Ying and Yang Sword Formation—since the battle at the Sword Vault.

However, Zhang Ruochen's cultivation and strength had improved tremendously compared to the previous time. His Swordsmanship had reached Great Perfection while the Ancient Abyssal Blade had become a regal weapon.

The Ying and Yang Sword Formation could only be mastered when two love each other with all their hearts.

The 'two' here did not refer to Zhan Ruochen and Chi Yao, but the Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dripper.

Buzz.
At this moment, the swords of all the cultivators in the Imperial City started trembling violently. They were being pulled by a powerful force and were about to fly away.

The cultivators were alarmed.

"What's going on? Why are all of the Precepts of Swordsmanship heading to that direction?"

"What a powerful energy fluctuation. Who is fighting in the Imperial City?"

"This aura… has far surpassed Saint Kinghood. Could it be that a Supreme Saint has descended?"

Chapter 2171: No Definite Winner

The yin and yang Tai Chi pattern rotated slowly and released a terrifying Swordwill. It enveloped the entire place and tightly locked onto Yan Wushen's Qi.

Zhang Ruochen's aura was rising. He merged his Swordwill and millions of Precepts of Swordsmanship into the yin and yang Tai Chi pattern so that he could unleash the strongest power of the Ying and Yang Sword Formation.

Yin Yuanchen silently sighed in relief and whispered, "So Brother Zhang still has such a trump card. Now that the Space Seal has been broken, there is hope to keep Yan Wushen here."

Based on his guess, the powerhouses in the Imperial City must have sensed that there were some activities here. No matter how powerful Yan Wushen was, he could not fight against many of the Celestial Court's powerhouses.

"Empress Chi Yao's Blood Dripper? It's not a bad Sword Formation."

Yan Wushen's eyes became serious.

Zhang Ruochen's aura was completely integrated with the yin and yang Tai Chi pattern. It was as if both had become one. The Sword Formation could be operated according to his will.

After cultivating Sword Ten, Zhang Ruochen's understanding of the Ying and Yang Sword Formation was undoubtedly more profound. Especially when he had comprehended the sixth realm, he could make the Sword Formation produce indescribable changes.

"Controlling life and death, seizing the opportunity."

Zhang Ruochen's hand suddenly pressed down.

Swish!

The yin and yang Tai Chi pattern shook violently. Swordlights that cut through Heaven and Earth pressed down from the sky.

Yan Wushen humphed lightly. *The Book of Death* that was placed on top of his head flipped. Then, a large number of terrifying mystic lights flew out to meet the swordlights.

The swordlight broke through the mystic light.

It directly collided with *The Book of Death*, and Yan Wushen was sent flying into the air, falling to the ground.
Unfortunately, he was unable to break through the book.

Yan Wushen let out a loud humph and activated his Supreme Artifact Gauntlet. He mobilized millions of the Precepts of Fist, and displayed an incomparably tyrannical and powerful fist technique.

A massive fist print blasted, filling the entire world, as if it wanted to pierce through the entire galaxy. No power could stop it.

Bang!
The fist print directly hit the yin and yang Tai Chi pattern. Unparalleled power was released without holding back.

Even if this Space was still in a half-sealed state, the area around the fist print would still be shattered, and countless Space fragments would be flying around.

However, no matter how it was being attacked, the yin and yang Tai Chi pattern was still extremely stable. It didn't show any signs of collapsing. Instead, it was slowly destroying the power contained in the fist print.

Even the shattered space was suppressed and restored to its original state.

"Yan Wushen, is this all you have?" Zhang Ruochen spread out his hands. He held Space on one hand and Time on the other, representing the two swords of life and death that surrounded him.

"It's still early."

A tall and burly figure walked out of *The Book of Death*. His body exuded vast divine power. The mystic light of Life and Death circled behind him and condensed into a wheel. It was black and white. The power of Life and Death was constantly changing. Life and Death were within his control. Both of them controlled Life and Death.

However, the figure that walked out wasn't his real body. It was merely a mark left behind by a God in the past, and it was now revealed.

That God was invincibly powerful. He had once cultivated the Primordial Infernal Yama Qi and was unrivalled in the world, leaving behind an illustrious reputation.

Although it was just a mark, it seemed lifelike. It was as if his whole body had crossed the long river of time and descended from an incomparably distant era into the present world.

The tall and burly figure's eyes were cold. He slowly raised his hand and pointed.

A vast amount of power of life and death gathered on his fingertip. He tapped lightly on the yin and yang Tai Chi pattern.

Instantly, the pattern shook. Then, the Sword Formation's movement started to slow down.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes changed slightly. His hands quickly formed seals. He merged a large number of Precepts of Time and Precepts of Dimension into the Sword Formation.

All of a sudden, the Sword Formation transformed a lot. The Spatial Domain and Time Domain manifested at the same time, changing the shape of Space and the speed of Time.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen took out the *Secret Tome of Time and Space*. It formed a mysterious multi-dimensional space that covered the blood cloud where Chi Kunlun was.
He wasn't sure what other cards Yan Wushen had. To be safe, he had to rescue Chi Kunlun first.

However, just as the *Secret Tome of Time and Space* was about to reach Chi Kunlun, Chi Kunlun disappeared into thin air and was teleported to Yan Wushen's side in an instant.
Confining Chi Kunlun in his Spatial Domain, Yan Wushen said, "Zhang Ruochen, if you want to save Chi Kunlun, you'll have to wait until you defeat me."

As Yan Wushen's voice fell, the small starry sky suddenly shrank and turned into a blood-red ball, falling into his hand.

Then, Yan Wushen manifested the Golden Giant Mode and soared into the sky.

Right behind him were Buddha's shadow filling up the sky, and the chanting of sutras shook people's hearts.

Swoosh

Yan Wushen turned into a streak of golden light with an unimaginable speed.

In an instant, thousands of palm prints appeared, each of them looking extremely fierce and overbearing. Golden ripples were rippling all around.

Inside an elegant Manor, Fairy Ci Hang suddenly raised her head and looked at the distant horizon. A look of surprise appeared in her eyes. “Golden Giant Mode. Amitabha Palm. Who is that?”

As a leader of Buddhism, Fairy Ci Hang was naturally very familiar with Buddhist techniques.

Regardless of whether it was the Golden Giant Mode or Amitabha Palm, they were both secret techniques of Buddhism. It was extremely difficult to cultivate them. In the current Western Buddha Realm, no one below Supreme Saint had cultivated Golden Giant Mode. The number of people who had cultivated the Amitabha Palm could be counted with just one hand.

But now, Fairy Ci Hang saw someone who had cultivated both Golden Giant Mode and Amitabha Palm at the same time. No matter how calm she was, she couldn’t help but feel a wave of emotions.

Fairy Ci Hang left the Manor and rushed towards the place where the battle was going on.

It wasn’t just Fairy Ci Hang. The other top powerhouses in the Imperial City also started to move. They wanted to find out what had happened.

“That’s…Yan Wushen. How dare he enter the Imperial City?”

Some of the powerhouses saw the attacker’s face clearly and exclaimed naturally.

As soon as these words were said, it caused a huge wave. The entire Imperial City was shaken.

“What? Yan Wushen is in the Imperial City? Is he crazy?”

“How dare he sneak into the Imperial City? Doesn’t it seem like Yan Wushen has no respect for the Celestial Court’s cultivators? We can’t let him leave.”

“If we can kill Yan Wushen, the Celestial Palace will reward us handsomely. This is a great opportunity. We can’t let Zhang Ruochen always take all the benefits.”

…

No matter how infamous Yan Wushen was, this was the Imperial City, the headquarters of the Celestial Court. No one was afraid. Instead, they all wanted to capture or kill Yan Wushen and render meritorious service.

Seeing that it was Zhang Ruochen fighting with Yan Wushen, many cultivators were eager to attack. They didn’t want to see Zhang Ruochen’s reputation being pushed to a higher level.

“How can it be Yan Wushen? Where did he get the secret teachings of Buddhism?” Fairy Ci Hang frowned.

The secret teachings of Buddhism had been obtained by the Infernal Court. It wasn’t a good thing.

Boom!
Thousands of palm prints struck out consecutively, shaking the yin and yang Tai Chi pattern and inevitably revealing a slight flaw.

Relying on his Divine Eye of Origin, Yan Wushen clearly caught this flaw. His whole body acted. And without any fancy moves, he punched at a weak point of the Sword Formation.

Whoosh—
The Ying and Yang Sword Formation was torn open with a small hole. Yan Wushen grabbed *The Book of Death* with one hand and escaped immediately.
Standing in the sky above the Central Imperial City, Yan Wushen’s eyes were filled with regret, “It seems that this battle cannot be continued.”

He wanted to fight Zhang Ruochen to claim a real winner, even to death. But it was almost impossible in this situation.

“Zhang Ruochen, I will fight you again after I have completed merging. If you remain with this little strength by then, you will definitely lose,” Yan Wushen said indifferently.

After finishing his words, Yan Wushen didn’t stay any longer. He immediately tore through Space and left the Imperial City.

“Yan Wushen, don’t you dare leave.”

At this moment, many top powerhouses attacked Yan Wushen from different directions.

It was a rare opportunity to deal with Yan Wushen. No one wanted to miss it.

All at once, palm prints, fist prints, and sword light shot through the air. A pagoda and fane descended from the sky, releasing vast divine power. They seemed to be able to suppress everything in the world.

Yan Wushen humphed calmly and said, “A motley crew. Do you think you are qualified to fight with me?”

He was now one with good and evil, and even if he was not, he still would not put these people in his eyes.

Boundless golden light burst out of Yan Wushen’s body, forming golden ripples that spread in all directions like tides.

BOOM!
Wherever the golden ripple passed, all the Saint Technique were destroyed. The pagoda and fane were also sent flying.

The people who attacked were no exception. They were all affected by the golden ripple and injured to varying degrees.

“How can he be so strong? Is he really still at Saint Kinghood?”

Several powerhouses were extremely shocked.

They were all powerhouses below the first level of Supreme Saint. If they attacked together, not only would they not be able to do anything to Yan Wushen, but they would also be injured. To them, this was a huge blow.

They were all of the same level but the gap between them was too big.

An incomplete ancient talisman appeared in Yan Wushen’s hand. After activating it, it released an extremely mysterious power. It forcefully pierced through the Space in front of it and formed a pitch-black tunnel.

What was inconceivable was that this tunnel actually broke through the Imperial City’s Sword Formation and directly led out of the city.

Yan Wushen retracted his Golden Giant Mode and returned to his original appearance. He brought Chi Kunlun along and transformed into a ray of light, entering the tunnel.

Boom!
Many powerhouses rushed over and attacked one after another. All sorts of Saint Techniques and sacred artifacts bombarded the pitch-black tunnel.

Unfortunately, they were too late. The dark tunnel collapsed on its own, blocking out all the attacks.

Everything happened in a flash that Zhang Ruochen didn't have time to attack. Of course, he was also afraid of hurting Chi Kunlun.

Since Yan Wushen dared to enter the Imperial City, he must have a way to escape. The possibility of keeping him was slim.

It was a bad sign that Yan Wushen could enter the Imperial City quietly. Could other masters of the Hell World had also entered the Imperial City?

It was a bad sign that Yan Wushen could enter the Imperial City quietly. Could there be other powerhouses of the Infernal Court who had also entered the Imperial City?

No matter how hard he thought about it, Zhang Ruochen did not think that Yan Wushen merely entered the Imperial City just to fight with him.

In addition, Yan Wushen was now a combination of good and evil. His ability had soared, which also made Zhang Ruochen feel pressure.

He had always been invincible at his level.

Yan Wushen was the only exception.

It should be known that Yan Wushen was still in the initial stage of merging. He was not stable yet and had not reached the actual peak. When he calmed down, his strength would certainly improve a lot.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was thinking, Fairy Ci Hang came up to him and asked, "Junior Zhang, how much do you know about Yan Wushen's situation?"

Zhang Ruochen knew that Fairy Ci Hang wanted to get some information. He couldn't help but reply, "Yan Wushen received the inheritance of an ancient Saint-level Buddha. He comprehended the ways of good and evil

and has split into good and evil bodies. Now, he has finally completed his merits."

Even though it was only a short line, Fairy Ci Hang understood many things at once. She was enlightened.

"So it's…"

Fairy Ci Hang had guessed the Saint-level Buddha's identity and knew the Forbidden Dharma he'd created.

Few people in Buddhism dared to try that kind of Buddhist dharma.

She didn't expect Yan Wushen to not only dare to cultivate, but also go a step further and completely split the good and evil. It was hard to imagine how determined he was.

Fairy Ci Hang rarely admired anyone, but she had to admire Yan Wushen.

He was truly a man of his generation.

If it weren't for Zhang Ruochen in this era, Yan Wushen, who was a combination of good and evil, might have been able to overturn the entire Battlefield of Merits on his own. Who could stop him?

The Four Heavenly Kings could no longer suppress him.

No matter how many first-level powerhouses there were, if they couldn't set the Space and surround him, Yan Wushen would probably break and kill them all one by one.

Just like Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations who fought against the Infernal Court alone, the starry sky was painted in red with Divine Blood.

Other than the ancient Saint-level Buddha, Yan Wushen should be the only one who had practiced the Forbidden Dharma, Golden Giant mode, and Amitabha Palm.

Yin Yuanchen came to Zhang Ruochen's side. He shook his head and sighed. "It's a pity that you couldn't make Yan Wushen stay."

Zhang Ruochen looked at Yin Yuanchen and said, "Yan Wushen came for me. I've implicated you this time."

“A small injury is nothing. Fighting with Yan Wushen was always my wish and I have finally fulfilled it,” said Yin Yuanchen.

Although he had been defeated badly, at least he had fought with Yan Wushen once. This was an experience that many first-level powerhouses below the Supreme Saint yearned for.

“Zhang Ruochen, what is going on?”

At this moment, a cold voice sounded.

The speaker was a thin man in black armor. He was less than six feet tall and his face was as sharp as a knife. His eyes were as cold as ice, and there was a faint evil Qi on his body. It was obvious that he was not a good person.

Hearing this voice, Zhang Ruochen turned his head. He locked his eyes on the man and recognized him at a glance. That man was Saint Lord Xue Tian, the leader of Cha Realm.

Speaking of which, Zhang Ruochen had killed many of Cha Realm’s cultivators in Shengming City, including Gu Tianyin, whose strength was close to the third level below the Supreme Saint.

Cha Realm was the sacred ground of the heretical paths. It had many long-standing dark cults and cultivated mysterious witchcraft. It was not easy to provoke.

Zhang Ruochen said lightly, “Isn’t it obvious enough?”

“Why is Yan Wushen Here?” asked Saint Lord Xue Tian in a questioning tone.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You should ask Yan Wushen about this.”

“You saw Yan Wushen escape and yet you didn’t stop him. Why? Could there be some secret between you and Yan Wushen that you are afraid of exposing if he is captured?” continued Saint Lord Xue Tian.

Akash also walked out and said, “Zhang Ruochen, I think you should explain everything clearly to avoid any misunderstandings.”

In the blink of an eye, hundreds of powerhouses had gathered. Most of them were leaders of macroworlds. They all looked at Zhang Ruochen. No one knew what they were thinking.

Zhang Ruochen found it funny. If it were Yan Wusheng standing here, would they dare to question him like this?

“You are not qualified to speak in such a tone to me.”

Bang!
Zhang Ruochen flicked his finger lightly. The surrounding space shook violently. Hundreds of leaders of the macroworld felt that they could not stand steadily. It was as if the sky was going to collapse and the earth was going to sink. Their bodies unconsciously stepped back.

Under the eyes of many, Zhang Ruochen walked straight out of the Central Imperial City.

Yan Wushen had publicly entered the Central Imperial City. He came and went as he pleased. How arrogant and unbridled was he. Today, the momentum of Kunlun and the Celestial Court’s army had undoubtedly suffered a serious blow. Everyone would be in danger.

Naturally, Zhang Ruochen had to go and get back at them.

Just look at the Infernal Court. How many people could withstand his sword?

Chapter 2172: Attain Godhood
Outside Central Imperial City, there were more than 40 million Infernal Court Saints gathered. Almost ten percent of them were warriors at Saint Kinghood.

Such a powerful army force would be regarded as invincible in the other Battlefields of Merits.

But in Kunlun, this was only a portion of the total force deployed by Infernal Court. There were many soldiers who were yet to enter Kunlun, waiting behind the World Rifts scattering around Kunlun.

Nothing stopped Zhang Ruochen on his way when he was leaving Central Imperial City. He then appeared above the large battlefield.

The closer an area was to Central Imperial City, the more powerful the effect of protection formations. Thus, the ground closer to Central Imperial City could withstand the impact of the battle. Or else, the surroundings of Central Imperial City would have been destroyed by the continuous battles between elites from both sides.

The hundreds of elites who had arrived at the fastest speed before also followed behind Zhang Ruochen. They appeared on the city wall, wanting to see what he wanted to do.

Zhang Ruochen stood in the air. With a wave of his hand, Ancient Abyssal Blade and Blood Dripper flew out. They performed Ying and Yang Sword Formation, evolving into a vast Taiji Diagram blotting out the sun and sky above.

A mysterious Swordwill spread rapidly. It was formless and immaterial, but it existed. Any swordsmen could feel its presence.

BUZZZZ
All of a sudden, the swords of all the cultivators inside and outside Imperial City trembled violently. They were summoned by a strong force. Many of them flew out of control toward Taiji Diagram in the sky.

At the same time, the flowers, grass, soil, and rocks outside the city underwent a change; they became sharp. Thousands of streaks of Sword Light shot up into the sky.

When a cultivator's swordsmanship reached a certain level, everything in heaven and earth could become swords.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were cold. Using both hands, he formed a Sword Seal and activated the Ying and Yang Sword Formation.

Whoosh–
A terrifying Sword Light that was hundreds of thousands of feet long burst out from Taiji Diagram. It pierced through heaven and earth, splitting the universe.

All of a sudden, almost all the cultivators had the illusion that the world had become dark. The Sword Light became the only light. Their mind was attracted by it unwittingly.

The Sword Light slashed down from the sky, landing straight on the camp of Infernal Court.

The camp of Infernal Court had profound formations set up by High-Saint Array Masters. Its defense was solid that even an ordinary Neverwither Supreme Saint could not damage it.

However, against the tens of thousands of feet long Sword Light, these formations were useless. They could not resist it at all.

BOOM!
The Sword Light broke through the formations like a hot knife through butter, cutting open the entire camp from the middle.

Even though the ground outside the city was extremely sturdy, a deep ravine was cut open at this moment. It was over a hundred feet wide and extended over a thousand miles away.

Along the way, hot lava spewed out from many places. The sight was horrifying.

With just a slash, Infernal Court suffered heavy casualties. Countless cultivators were killed with their bodies and souls annihilated by the Sword Light. The number of those injured was even more significant.

The casualties would have multiplied if not for the strong protection from the formations.

Although Central Imperial City was a city, it could not be regarded as a city.

It was more like a microworld.

If Eastern Region Holy City was a planet, Central Imperial City was much bigger than it.

Although Infernal Court had 40 million soldiers with the rank of Saint, it wasn't easy for them to surround a city as large as a Microworld.

The formations they set up were not able to cover all aspects. Therefore, they could not entirely block Zhang Ruochen's attack.

"What a powerful sword strike."

On the city wall, all Celestial Court elites were shocked. Many of them could not help but gasp.

It was hard to imagine that a Saint King could execute such a terrifying technique. How many cultivators—with rank below Supreme Sainthood—could resist it?

Saint Lord Xue Tian and Akash's expressions were solemn. They were undoubtedly regretful as they realized It was unwise to question Zhang Ruochen's strength earlier.

This sword strike could shut everyone's mouth off.

In the camp of Infernal Court, a High-Saint Array Master made his move. He set up a powerful formation as fast as he could to avoid further damage from another attack.

Whoosh–
A number of figures rushed out of the damaged camp.

They were all top elites, including the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan and the five Reverends whom Zhang Ruochen knew.

These elites were all angry, overwhelmed with murderous intent.

Everything had happened too suddenly. Although they had reacted quickly, they could only reduce part of the damage and failed to dodge the attack completely.

“Zhang Ruochen, are you courting death? Do you really think no one can beat you?” An elite from Ghost Clan shouted angrily.

Under normal circumstances, this Ghost Clan fellow might have been afraid of Zhang Ruochen. But now, with all the powerful figures of Infernal Court here, so what if Zhang Ruochen was strong?

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Ghost elite and said emotionlessly, “You’re not convinced? Then come and fight me.”

The Ghost elite’s expression changed slightly as soon as he heard Zhang Ruochen. He was indeed a top elite in Ghost Clan. Although he did not bat an eyelid when dealing with many cultivators with ranks below the Supreme Sainthood, he could not help but fear Zhang Ruochen.

Even if one disregarded Zhang Ruochen’s victory in the duel against Yan Wushen, how many people could stand the sword strike he had launched just now?

“What? No one dares to attack? Are all Infernal Court cultivators cowards?” Zhang Ruochen said indifferently.

Upon hearing him, all Infernal Court elites were furious. No one could endure listening to such contemptuous words.

A slightly short figure walked out, five feet tall, his body entirely covered in dark golden armor. There were two thick skeletal horns on his head. Pitch-black flame lingered around his body.

Under the effect of the black flame, the space around him became distorted. It seemed like it was about to melt.

“That’s Inferno Flame of Destruction. He is Dark Skeletal Lord,” someone from Celestial Court whispered.

Dark Skeletal Lord was the strongest elite among Bone Clan cultivators ranked below Supreme Sainthood in the current generation. He could easily make into the list of top ten figures in Infernal Court’s Ten Clans.

Not only was he powerful, but his defense was also shocking. His Demigod-level bone body could fight head-on with a Supreme Artifact. Normal attacks were nothing to him.

Dark Skeletal Lord released a powerful aura targetting Zhang Ruochen. “You will regret humiliating Infernal Court. Let me give you a taste.”

Dark Skeletal Lord was very confident in his own strength. He knew about the existence of two Yan Wushens. He also knew that the one Zhang Ruochen had defeated at Luoshui was the evil Yang Wushen, who was weaker than the good Yan Wushen.

Yan Wushen was indeed very famous. He was said to be invincible among cultivators below Supreme Sainthood.

Although Dark Skeletal Lord never fought Yan Wushen, he did not think he would lose to him. Moreover, Dark Skeletal Lord’s cultivation had improved further after he came to Kunlun. He felt that he was strong enough to fight good Yan Wushen.

Holding this view, Dark Skeletal Lord thought that Zhang Ruochen was not invincible.

Moreover, if no one showed up now, there wouldn’t be any dignity left for Infernal Court.

“Well, let’s see how many sword strikes you can take,” Zhang Ruochen said calmly.

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen waved his hand casually. The Yin and Yang Sword Formation immediately began to rotate, Taiji Diagram contracting. Two streaks of Sharp Sword Light were released from the Yin Eye and Yang Eye, emitting completely different Swordwills: one that signified life, and another signified death.

Life and death intertwined with each other, and the cycle would never end.
Dark Skeletal Lord snorted. He had no intention of dodging. Instead, he planned to use his powerful body frame to fight against the two streaks of Sword Light.

To Dark Skeletal Lord, his Demigod-level body frame was the most powerful weapon. Every part of it was useful in combat.

As Dark Skeletal Lord circulated his power, a large amount of Demigod-level Precepts appeared on his fist. They released mighty power.

Before he had become an undead, his cultivation level had reached Demigod realm, and he was only one step away from Godhood. The Precepts he had cultivated for his lifetime had fused into his bones. Even tens of thousands of years after his death, they had never dissipated.

That was how powerful a Demigod-level body frame could be.

BANG!
The two streaks of Sword Light signifying life and death were unpredictable: sometimes, it was violent; sometimes, it was gentle. They cut open a large black crack in space and hit Dark Skeletal Lord's fist hard.

Although Dark Skeletal Lord tried hard to resist, he still fell from the sky rapidly.

BOOM!
Dark Skeletal Lord shattered the ground as soon as he landed on his feet like a meteorite.

"What a strong power. Has Zhang Ruochen's strength improved greatly again?" Dark Skeletal Lord thought.

Yan Wushen had secretly sneaked into Central Imperial City and fought Zhang Ruochen. Although he had caused a lot of commotion in the city, Infernal Court was kept in the dark.

Moreover, no one had witnessed the battle between Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen. Therefore, almost no one could really tell how strong Zhang Ruochen was.

Inside Dark Skeletal Lord's empty eye sockets, there were dancing flames. They were like his eyes when he was staring coldly at his fist.

The power of the attack just now was really terrifying. It actually made the Demigod-level Precepts he had activated dim and disappear into his bones again.

Although there was no damage on his body frame, it was infiltrated by a strange Swordwill aiming at his Saint Soul directly.

Luckily, he had a secret treasure protecting his Saint Soul, so he was still safe and sound.

RAWRRRR!
Dark Skeletal Lord raised his head and let out a long howl.

Majestic Inferno Flame of Destruction emerged from his bones. Destructive aura spread out, causing the surrounding land to shatter and turn into sticky lava.

Inferno Flame of Destruction was a terrifying flame that contained energy comparable to the power of Paths of the Ancients. It existed in the deepest parts of Infernal Court, and very few people had been able to master it since ancient times.

If one's body was strong enough, they could release Inferno Flame of Destruction powerful enough to burn a Macroworld to ashes.

As his aura grew stronger, Dark Skeletal Lord expanded to three thousand meters in an instant. Large amounts of Demigod-level Precepts emerged from his body, and he activated the vast Precepts and Saint Qi of heaven and earth.

Dark Skeletal Lord waved his arm, and a long skeletal whip appeared. It was thousands of feet long and seemed to be made of a dragon spine. Tens of thousands of Supreme Inscriptions were carved on each section.

As he waved it, the skeletal whip was life-like. It burst out with powerful Supreme Power, charging at Zhang Ruochen like lightning.

Zhang Ruochen still looked calm. The Sword Seal formed by his hands changed at a steady pace.

"Yin-Yang rotation, engulfing heaven and earth."

Taiji Diagram rotated slowly and released a powerful suction force, like a huge black hole.

The white skeletal whip was sucked into Taiji Diagram as soon as it struck. The diagram easily deflected all the attack power.

Then, several extremely condensed sword glows slashed out from Taiji Diagram.

BANG!
Dark Skeletal Lord was struck by the sword glows, and his enormous body flew back several hundred Li before crashing heavily into a towering mountain ridge.

In an instant, the mountain ridge collapsed, and dust flew everywhere, drowning Dark Skeletal Lord's enormous body.

Immediately after, Taiji diagram pressed down from the sky like a descending ancient divine mountain.

Dark Skeletal Lord sat up and struggled with all his might. He wanted to break Taiji diagram, but it was impossible. He was suppressed to the point that he could not move.

Even Yan Wushen, who had merged his good and evil counterparts, had to expend a lot of energy to tear a hole in the Ying and Yang Sword Formation. Dark Skeletal Lord's strength was clearly far behind.

The hearts of all the powerful figures in Infernal Court sank as soon as they saw this.

It was hard for them to accept that someone as powerful as Dark Skeletal Lord had been defeated so easily.

"Strange. Why hasn't Yan Wushen made a move yet?" some Celestial Court elites asked.

If it was inconvenient to continue fighting in Imperial City, Yan Wushen shouldn't have such concerns to do so outside the city.

With Yan Wushen's tyrannical strength, no one believed that he was afraid of Zhang Ruochen.

However, not only didn't Yan Wushen make any move, he was nowhere to be seen now. It was as if he had already left this place.

Only Zhang Ruochen knew that it was not that Yan Wushen did not want to fight, but because his good and evil counterparts had yet to merge fully. So, there was still a fatal flaw after the merger.

Yan Wushen would not have a high chance of winning if he were against Zhang Ruochen who was wielding Ancient Abyssal Blade and Blood Dripper now.

Therefore, Yan Wushen must have gone to find a place to seclude himself for self-cultivation. In other words, he would not reappear until he had completely merged his good and evil counterparts.

If Yan Wushen lost to Zhang Ruochen at his prime, it would greatly affect others' beliefs about his invincibility.

In fact, he had not actually lost in their previous fights.

On the other side near Imperial city, Luo Sha, the Rakshasha Princess, was standing mid-air. Her eyes were fixed on Zhang Ruochen, and there was a glint of light in her eyes.

Last time, not only had she been captured by Zhang Ruochen, she had lost the sword hilt she stole to Zhang Ruochen. On top of that, she had felt deeply humiliated when Zhang Ruochen had asked her clan to exchange Saint Ancient Tea Tree for her.

She was known for her resourcefulness, but she was repeatedly at a disadvantage in the face of Zhang Ruochen.

"Zhang Ruochen is getting more and more powerful. But does he really think that no one can kill him? Yan Wushen can't kill him, but a Supreme Saint can. If a Supreme Saint can't, then a deity can!"

"My destiny…destiny…maybe he is my namesis!" Luo Sha sighed and felt troubled when she thought of this.

On the other side, many elites of Immortal Vampires in the camp were also watching Zhang Ruochen, including Lord Xue Chen.

Lord Xue Chen watched Zhang Ruochen from afar. His eyes flashed, and he whispered, "Xiao Xiao, do you see that? That's the son of fourteenth aunt and a human."

"Younger cousin?"

Xue Ningxiao looked at Zhang Ruochen in the distance with interest.

She looked like she was only 16 or 17 years old. Her face was enchanting. However, she was in an unusual form: sometimes she looked clear, sometimes blurry.

“He’s your elder cousin. He’s at least 800 years old. You’re only over 100 years old,” said Xue Chen.

Xue Ningxiao’s beautiful eyes sparkled. She smiled and said, “He’s strong, but I don’t believe he can defeat Yan Wushen. Yan Wushen is a big shot with a great background. I’m afraid that it would take a myriad of years to have another cultivator as powerful as him.”

Lord Xue Chen did not make any comment. His expression was calm. After a long while, he said, “Fourteenth aunt has already attained Godhood.”

“What? She is a God now?” Xue Ningxiao was surprised.

Her grandfather, Wargod Bloodximius, was already a deity. He was also the number one Wargod of Bloodysky Clan. Despite being a younger god, his strength had surpassed that of some ancient deities of Bloodysky Clan. He had even defeated them.

And now, another deity was born in Xue Jue Family. The entire famly would probably undergo a huge change.

Lord Xue Chen nodded slightly and said, “Not long ago, she contacted me.”

“How long will it take for fourteenth aunt to return to Infernal Court?” Xue Ningxiao asked.

Since she had become a deity, she definitely had to return.

“Soon, but she still has something to do in Kunlun. Sixth uncle is still being suppressed. There’s no doubt that Fourteenth aunt will go and save him before she leaves,” Lord Xue Chen said.

Xue Ningxiao asked, “Is sixth uncle still alive?”

Lord Xue Chen glared at her and said, “Fourteenth aunt once told me that if sixth uncle is still alive after being suppressed for so long, his state of mind, body, and will must have reached divine level. His strength might even surpass that of an ordinary god.

“The day he escapes will be the day he enters Godhood.

“And yet you dare to curse a God to die?

“So there will be another deity born in Xue Jue Family?” Xue Ningxiao was shocked again. She sighed and said, “Once Fourteenth aunt and sixth uncle go back, the state of Xue Jue Family will change. Those people will probably face consequences for what they did. What do you think grandfather will do?”

“That’s two deities returning to the family. What do you think?”

Lord Xue Chen said again, “No one expected that sixth uncle and fourteenth aunt, who were born of a concubine, would attain Godhood after being forced to come to Kunlun. Now, even the son of fourteenth aunt is so monstrous. If those old crooks—the direct descendants of first wives—knew about this, they would probably cry.”

Xue Ningxiao snorted coldly, “Son to fourteenth aunt who was born of concubine slay Battlefields of Merits. Contrary, the descendants of first wives have been enjoying the family’s resources without making any contribution. All they need to do is just to cultivate. The ways thing work in Xue Jue Family should have been changed a long time ago.”

“It’s because strongest cultivators of each generation are descendants of first wives. Their bloodlines are purer, and it’s easier for them to become a Supreme Saint. Hence, they are not required to go to Battlefields of Merits.”

A sneer appeared in Lord Xue Chen’s eyes. Clearly, he didn’t like the direct descendants of his clan.

The reason was that his father was born of a concubine. However, unlike Lord Ming and Blood Empress, he wasn’t forced to go to Kunlun to fight for Immortal Vampires.

Speaking of which, since he was young, he had been bullied by the direct descendants. If he wasn’t outstanding enough, he would not have his current status and would not have been valued by Wargod Bloodximius.

In the Infernal Court, many elites did not need to join Battlefields of Merits. Hence, it was normal if these talented cultivators’ names were not heard by cultivators in Celestial Court before.

Lord Xue Chen was the top elite—below Supreme Sainthood in Bloodysky Clan—known by Celestial Court only. Unlike their deities, Celestial Court cultivators had limited knowledge about Infernal Court.

Chapter 2173: News of Victory Spreading Like Wildfire

“Good news!”

“Good news!”

“The Prince of the Eastern Region fought a fierce battle against Dark Skeletal Lord at Four Emperors Ridge. He defeated Dark Skeletal Lord in seven moves and destroyed his soul in 180 consecutive strikes. The top fighter below the rank of Supreme Sainthood in the Bone Clan has fallen.”

In the quiet Imperial City, a resounding voice suddenly rang out.

A heavily armored Imperial City Knight entered, riding on a tall and mighty savage beast. He loudly proclaimed the news of victory while riding towards Syzygy Mansion.

The news sent shock waves to the entire Imperial City.

“Zhang Ruochen killed Dark Skeletal Lord? How is that possible?”

“Dark Skeletal Lord was the strongest Bone Clan elite ranked below Supreme Sainthood. He’s one of the top ten elites among the ten clans of Infernal Court. With a Demigod-level bone body that is near indestructible, he also possesses Inferno Flame of Destruction that burns everything. Just yesterday, he even defeated a Divine Scion from the Fane of Time.”

“Who is spreading this rumour? How can you simply make such claims?”

…

Imperial City was massive. Because there was not enough time, news about Zhang Ruochen fighting Infernal Court alone was yet to reach all cultivators in the city.

Most cultivators from the various Macroworlds were suspicious of the news brought by the Imperial City knight.

It couldn’t be helped. Dark Skeletal Lord was no ordinary cultivator. He was known as a Bone Clan top fighter below the rank of Supreme Sainthood with the potential to become a god. How could he die so easily under Zhang Ruochen’s sword?

On the streets of Qing Luan, chaos was reigning. Many cultivators in Kunlun still believed that Zhang Ruochen had such strength.

On the left side of the street, more than a dozen Array Masters of Formation Sect gathered in a six-story pavilion. They gazed at the distance towards the faraway riders suspiciously.

“Master Zhou, you have fought Zhang Ruochen before. Is Zhang Ruochen really that strong? With the ability to kill Dark Skeletal Lord with ja sword?” a genius array master from the Formation Sect asked in surprise.

Zhou Zhen shut the talented Array Master up with a cold glance.

Fight?

There was no fight at all. He was suppressed in an instant. Was this junior mocking him?

He was a High-Saint Array Master. In other words, he had strength that was on par with of a Supreme Saint. First, he was defeated by Zhang Ruochen, suspected and ostracized by the cultivators of Heavenly Realm.

Formation Sect’s leader was no worse off than him.

Zhou Zhen was offended at the mention of Zhang Ruochen, but he still had to act composed in front of the juniors, so he said lightly, “Zhang Ruochen is very powerful indeed. He is invincible among those with cultivation rank below Supreme Saint level. I’m actually very shocked that Dark Skeletal Lord could take seven sword moves from him.”

All the Array Masters present were skeptical. They felt that Zhou Zhen deliberately exaggerated Zhang Ruochen’s capabilities.

‘If Zhang Ruochen were invincible and defeated Dark Skeletal Lord in seven swords strikes, Zhou Zhen—who was suppressed by Zhang Ruochen—would no longer have to feel shame. The defeat could even be regarded as an honor instead.

‘At least, unlike Dark Skeletal Lord, he could survive the battle against Zhang Ruochen.

‘How many people could survive with Zhang Ruochen as the opponent?

‘But Zhou Zhen did it!

Zhou Zhen did not care about what these Array Masters were thinking. He thought to himself, ‘Zhang Ruochen, please achieve an even more outstanding battle record. You’d better behead Yan Wushen as well!”

“Good news!”

“Good news!”

..

“The three Emperors of the Bone Clan joined forces and reliatiated aggressively. They wanted to avenge Dark Skeletal Lord and fought Zhang Ruochen. Although the three Emperors’ power could penetrate the void, it could not break Zhang Ruochen’s Sword Formation. All three Emperors died in battle with their bones all shattered. The Bone Clan’s strength was greatly affected.”

“Good news. The three Emperors of the Bone clan died in resentment at Kunlun.”

Following that, a second knight flew past. Again, the news sent shockwaves to cultivators from various Macroworlds in Central Imperial City.

“The three Emperors of the Bone clan inherited great power. They’re good at combined attacks. Together, they’re invincible. No matter how strong Zhang Ruochen is, he shouldn’t be strong enough to kill them.”

“Impossible. Absolutely impossible.”

…

Many people thought that if the three Emperors joined hands, they should be powerful enough to fight the Four Heavenly Kings of the Celestial Palace. How could they possibly die at Zhang Ruochen’s sword?

“Good news!”

“Good news!”

“The Prince of the Eastern Region fought the Seven Top Killers from Nether Hall. He was invincible. Three of the Seven Top Killers died. The remaining four fled in miserable state with injuries.”

Just as the cultivators from various Macroworlds had start to recovered from their shock, the third Imperial City knight arrived on his mount and ran over quickly. He shouted the victory report again, looking excited.

“This is insane. When the Seven Top Killers from Nether Hall worked together, even Yan Wushen had to retreat. Rumor has it that they are destined to become deities. How could they end up half-dead at Zhang Ruochen’s hands?”

“Let’s leave the city to see it. There was such a big commotion in the city just now. Maybe Zhang Ruochen has really left the city to challenge Infernal Court elites.”

“The three Emperors of the Bone Clan inherited great power. They’re good at combined attacks. Together, they’re invincible. No matter how strong Zhang Ruochen is, he couldn’t be strong enough to kill them.”

As the saying went, what we hear could be false, but what we must be true. Everyone wanted to see for themselves what exactly happened.

At the same time, the Imperial City knights rushed into Syzygy mansion one after another to report the results of the battle outside the city to the important figures of Imperial Court.

At this time, Nine Heavens Maiden was also in Syzygy Mansion, studying Chessboard of the World with Wang Shiqi—the Grand Chamberlain—while discussing important matters.

Hearing the news brought by Knight of Imperial City, everyone in Syzygy Mansion couldn’t help but look shocked and incredulous.

Nine Heavens Maiden had a strange look in her eyes. She had not been separated from Zhang Ruochen for long. It was unthinkable that Zhang Ruochen would make such a big commotion.

The three Emperors of the Bone Clan, Dark Skeletal Lord, and the Seven Top Killers from Nether Hall were no ordinary people. Each of them had a fierce reputation. They had dominated many Battlefields of Merits and killed countless Celestial Court elites.

Many Celestial Court cultivators would be terrified at the mention of these famous names. No one could possibly think that they would die on a battlefield.

“Well done!”

“The Prince of the Eastern Region is worthy of being the successor of Saint Monk Xumi. He is worthy of being the most outstanding person in Kunlun. In the future, who will dare to bully Kunlun?”

Some of the Saint Confucians said excitedly, feeling proud.

Recently, the atmosphere in Central Imperial City was very depressing. The news of victory at this time could undoubtedly inspire people and boost their morale.

The top Celestial Court elites had been deployed to fight Infernal Court, but most of them failed miserably. Many of them had even died. No one could be optimistic.

Now, Zhang Ruochen had suppressed Infernal Court alone and killed seven top fighters of Infernal Court in consecutive battles. This was undoubtedly what Celestial Court needed.

Nine Heavens Maiden, Wang Shiqi, and the others couldn’t help but set off. They rushed toward the east gate, wanting to see the real situation on the battlefield.

At this moment, outside Central Imperial City, Zhang Ruochen stood above the sky. His long black hair fluttered in the wind. He looked down at the world, with the Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dripper beside him. The monstrous killing intent released by both swords made him look like a God of Killing.

The bones of the three emperors of the Bone Clan were scattered on the broken ground. Although not a single bone was intact, their Saint Souls had already been destroyed.

Dark Skeletal Lord’s Demigod-level body was still intact, but his Saint Soul was destroyed.

Three of the Seven Top Killers from Nether Hall also fell on the battlefield. Dark red blood flowed and soaked the ground, and the powerful energy of Curse didn’t dissipate for a long time.

The remaining four had already fled back to the camp in the hell world. They looked up at Zhang Ruochen, who was standing in the sky. There was anger in their eyes, but the fear outweighed that.

If they had run slower just now, they would have died.

The Seven Top Killers from Nether Hall had been invincible since their debut. The only two times they had lost was because of Zhang Ruochen, and this time, they had failed even more miserably.

After witnessing Zhang Ruochen's unrivaled grace, no one in Infernal Court dared to fight again. Their honor couldn't be more important than their own lives.

In Immortal Vampire camp, Xue Ningxiao's beautiful eyes sparkled. "He's really powerful. I'm starting to believe that he can defeat Yan Wushen."

"Grandfather will like Zhang Ruochen's personality. After all, he rose up step by step and swept through all his opponents just like what Zhang Ruochen is currently doing. I'm really looking forward to him joining Xue Jue Family. I wonder what expressions those direct descendants will have," Lord Xue Chen's said with his eyes full of anticipation.

He might not be powerful enough to suppress those geniuses in his family alone, but what if Zhang Ruochen went back?

"Back to Infernal Court?" Xue Ningxiao shook her head.

It was impossible!

…

"Zhang Ruochen has already gained momentum. Among those ranked below Supreme Sainthood, who can keep him in check?"

Many Celestial Court and Infernal Court cultivators thought the same thing.

The fact that Yan Wushen had good and evil counterparts was, after all, a secret that few people knew.

Moreover, after seeing Zhang Ruochen's terrifying strength, even those who knew Yan Wushen's secret felt unease.

With a wave of his hand, Zhang Ruochen collected the bones of Dark Skeletal Lord, the Three Emperors of the Bone Clan, and the three Top Killers from Nether Hall, as well as their treasures. These were the spoils of his victory.

They were all valuable, especially the bones of Dark Skeletal Lord and the three Emperors of the Bone Clan. They were priceless and had many uses.

Seeing this, no one in Infernal Court dared to stop him. They were furious, yet they could do nothing but watch.

“The Prince of the Eastern Region. Invincible! Undefeatable!”

At this moment, an excited voice sounded.

“The Prince of the Eastern Region. Invincible! Undefeatable!”

Suddenly, many Kunlun cultivators began shouting. They were so excited, emotional that their eyes were filled with tears of joy.

Zhang Ruochen looked around and said in a clear voice, “Yan Wushen, I’m waiting you for our life-or-death battle. You’d better show up soon.”

After saying this, Zhang Ruochen didn’t stay any longer. He took a step forward and went straight back to Central Imperial City.

He had achieved the goal he had set out for, and it had far exceeded his expectations. Since no one from Infernal Court would fight, there was no need to waste time here.

Most of the elites gathered on the city wall had unnatural expressions on their faces. No one dared to say anything at that time.

In the beginning, when they saw Zhang Ruochen attacking the camp of Infernal Court, they all thought that Zhang Ruochen had gone mad and was seeking his own death. At that time, many of them had laughed.

But after seeing the result, no one could laugh anymore.

Especially Saint Lord Xue Tian and Akash, both kept quiet and hid in the crowd, afraid that Zhang Ruochen would notice them.

However, Zhang Ruochen did not pay attention to anyone. He took another step and disappeared from the spot.

In the following period of time, Zhang Ruochen fell silent and made himself untraceable. No one knew what he was doing.

However, the more he concealed his whereabouts, the more fearful all the cultivators became. Everyone restrained themselves and strictly followed Kunlun Laws Zhang Ruochen had set.

There was a hidden canyon 100,000 miles away from Central Imperial City that had a natural maze. Even a top Saint King could get lost easily inside.

The Saint Qi of heaven and earth in the canyon was extremely dense, with a lot of sacred medicinal herbs growing in it. It was a perfect place for practicing.

In the center of the canyon, there was a huge emerald jade. At this moment, there was a tall figure sitting cross-legged on it.

It was none other than Yan Wushen, who had fought with Zhang Ruochen in Imperial City.

Yan Wushen's current state was very unstable. His body gave off a holy aura and an evil aura intermittently at times. It seemed like he could return into both good and evil states of his being any time.

Just as Zhang Ruochen had sensed, Yan Wushen hadn't been able to truly merge his two bodies. The good and evil parts had not fused so there were many problems.

Even though he'd come to the valley and been in seclusion for a few days. He still couldn't completely merge. The Origins of the good and evil bodies strongly rejected the other.

It was normal, because if this path was easy, the Buddhist Sect wouldn't have banned it.

"Who is it?"

Suddenly, Yan Wushen opened his eyes and looked at the entrance of the canyon.

In the next moment, a figure appeared in the canyon. Although it was in human form, it had four eyes and four arms. Its body was emitting a strong devilish aura. It was from Asuran clan, one of the Ten Clans in Infernal Court

"Wan Xin, what do you wish to accomplish by entering my enclosed cultivation training territory?" Yan Wushen asked coldly.

Wan Xin smiled and said, "I deliberately spent a lot of efforts in locating you. I have something important and good for you."

"If you have something to say, just say it," Yan Wushen said.

Wan Xin did not waste time and spoke, “I am here under the orders of my master to give you a treasure that can help you repair the flaws in your cultivation method. It will allow the good and evil parts to fuse together, allowing you to achieve your peak state.”

Hearing this, Yan Wushen’s heart gave a flutter, Wan Xin’s master was an extremely powerful Asuran deity. He was very old and had survived countless Yuanhui Tribulations. Moreover, he cultivated the Path of Time.

During the tragic divine war 100,000 years ago, this deity had participated in the group attack on Saint Monk Xumi. However, he had been severely injured by Saint Monk Xumi and was unable to recover till now.

Ever since the battle of gods, this deity had rarely shown his face. Many people were speculating on his death.

“What does Asurendra Samay want?” Yan Wushen asked directly.

He didn’t believe that Asurendra Samay would be so kind as to help him out in time of need. A treasure that could fuse good and evil was definitely not ordinary. Therefore, there must be an ulterior motive.

Wan Xin said, “Master sole request is to bring Zhang Ruochen’s body back to Infernal Court after you defeated him.”

“Huh? Is the Asurendra Samay trying to possess Zhang Ruochen’s body?” Yan Wushen instantly replied.

As far as he knew, Asurendra Samay had been severely injured, with his physical body on the verge of collapse. If he couldn’t find a way to repair it, he could only find a suitable body to possess.

However, what Asurendra Samay practiced was Path of Time. A normal body wouldn’t be able to satisfy the requirements for possession.

Zhang Ruochen had the Five-element Chaotic Body and God’s Destiny. He was perfect in all aspects so he was obviously the best choice.

Wan Xin didn’t answer. He just stared at Yan Wushen.

Yan Wushen was a decisive person, so he agreed without hesitation.

He and Zhang Ruochen had to decide who would live and who would die.

Since he—Yan Wushen—would be the victor, Zhang Ruochen had to die. There's no difference in the way of his death.

If he lost to Zhang Ruochen, how could he live on? There would be a great possibility that he would end up getting devoured by Saint Devourer.

After receiving this reply, Wan Xin smiled again. He took out an exquisite jade box and said, "This is Yin-Yang Equinox Flower. It can solve your current problem."

Yan Wushen extended his hand to receive the jade box.

Wan Xin clasped his hands together, bowed, and said, "I await good news from you."

After saying this, Wan Xin turned into nothingness and departed the valley.

Yan Wushen opened the jade box and took out a strange flower. It was black and white with a shape resembling Taiji Diagram, where Yin and Yang interweaved together into one entity.

A look was enough to enlighten Yan Wushen, and he understood the problems within his body that prevented him from merging fully.

With the treasure in hand, Yan Wushen did not want to wait longer. He immediately began refining himself in order to fuse his good and evil counterparts as soon as possible to become truly invincible.

…

In Central Imperial City, Zhang Ruochen finally reappeared after disappearing for a few days.

Under the watchful eyes of the cultivators, Zhang Ruochen entered the Sub-Terminal of Merits alone. He left Kunlun directly through the dimensional teleportation array.

"Zhang Ruochen is heading to Celestial Domain of Truth!"

Soon, news came back to Imperial City.

"Why is Zhang Ruochen going to Celestial Domain of Truth at this time? Is he going to cross Sea of Truth?"

“I think so. Zhang Ruochen probably wants to try crossing the tenth level in Sea of Truth to obtain the reward from Celestial Domain of Truth.”

“Since the birth of Celestial Court, only 13 Supreme Saints have been able to cross the tenth level of the sea and climb the Mountain of Truth. Each of them has become a world-shaking figure.

“Although Zhang Ruochen is very strong, he is merely a Saint King, which means his chance of succeeding should be very low.”

All cultivators from various Macroworlds discussed among themselves fervently. They all paid close attention to Zhang Ruochen’s actions.

Zhang Ruochen had become too popular, so not many wanted to see him cross the tenth level of the Sea of Truth.

After all, Zhang Ruochen was already so powerful. If he obtained the legendary reward that could make even gods jealous, he might become even stronger, crushing everyone with his might.

…

After Zhang Ruochen left, an ancient and elegant Saint Chariot descended from the sky outside Ziwei Palace. A slender and handsome figure emerged from within.

It was none other than the low-profiled Akash.

Because of Zhang Ruochen, Akash had not come to see the Nine-heavens Maiden for some time.

Just as Akash was about to enter Ziwei Palace, he suddenly sensed something and couldn’t help but turn towards it. A ridiculously handsome face appeared before him.

“Yin Yuanchen.”

There was a slight change in Akash’s expression.

Chapter 2174: The Celestial Court’s Most Beautiful Woman

After some time, Zhang Ruochen successfully arrived at the Celestial Domain of Truth via the dimensional teleportation array in the Grand Terminal of Merits.

The Celestial Domain of Truth was always very lively at any time. It brought together saints, Supreme Saints, and even gods from all realms who came to comprehend the Path of Truth.

With the Path of Truth's boon, it could increase the battle strength of gods. It was also very helpful for comprehending other Paths.

Zhang Ruochen's cultivation was not very strong when he left the Celestial Domain of Truth. He was only a Five-step Saint King. But now, he was already standing at the pinnacle of the Saint King realm. His name was heard throughout the Celestial and Infernal Court.

Zhang Ruochen rushed back to the Celestial Domain of Truth to cross the Sea of Truth this time because he wished to obtain more Canons of Truth.

Only in this way could he make a big breakthrough in his strength in a short time and fight Yan Wushen to the death.

Once Yan Wushen merged both his good and evil counterparts, his strength would inevitably be increased. Zhang Ruochen knew very well that even if he relied on the Ying and Yang Sword Formation, he might be unable to deal with Yan Wushen.

Zhang Ruochen was confident that if given enough time like Yan Wushen, he could improve his Precepts to a hundred million, and cultivate multiple Paths to great perfection.

Zhang Ruochen had never lacked self-confidence.

However, the biggest problem was he didn't have that much time. He couldn't accumulate it slowly, so he had to find another way.

Without much delay, Zhang Ruochen rushed straight to the Sea of truth.

There were many cultivators on the shore of the Sea of Truth as in the past. They all came to get more time to cultivate in the Fane of Truth by crossing the sea.

Speaking of which, Zhang Ruochen had been given four years to cultivate in the Fane of Truth after he crossed the fifth and sixth regions of the sea. However, because of the changes in Kunlun, he had been unable to make use of it.

However, if he wanted to cultivate in the Fane of Truth for four years, it would be impossible for him to reach his current state. No matter how fast he cultivated.

While standing on the shore, Zhang Ruochen's eyes were fixed on a pitch-black saint mountain beyond the ten regions of the sea. It was the Mountain of Truth that countless cultivators yearned for, and it was also the goal of his trip.

'What secrets did the Mountain of Truth hide? What rewards will the Fane of Truth bestow?' Zhang Ruochen was filled with curiosity.

If he wanted to figure out these things, he would have to climb the Mountain of Truth himself.

But he understood it wasn't easy to climb the Mountain of Truth. Only thirteen Supreme Saints had succeeded, while none of the Saint Kings had.

If not for this, the Fane of Truth would not have specifically issued an oracle. Those Saint Kings who had climbed the Mountain of Truth will be awarded a prize that even the gods would be jealous of.

"Hmm? Someone is in the ninth region of the sea."

Zhang Ruochen looked surprised.

The ninth region of the sea was no small matter and those who could enter must be truly outstanding.

At this moment, an angelic powerhouse was crossing the ninth region of the sea. His wings were different from ordinary angels and were platinum in color. There were countless Precepts of Light entwined on them, blooming with incomparably bright and sacred light.

"It's Archangel Michael."

Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes and smiled.

He had long heard of the true leader of the Heavenly Realm. It was a pity that he never had the chance to meet him. He had never expected to meet him by accident when he came to the Celestial Domain of Truth.

'Archangel Michael had always seemed so mysterious all along that few people knew about him.'

While Zhang Ruochen was thinking, Archangel Michael performed an exquisite saint technique of light. He shattered the gatekeepers of the ninth region into pieces and entered the tenth region of the sea.

“For someone who is not a disciple of the Fane of Truth, Archangel Michael is indeed powerful and only he could cross the ninth region.”

“Not only that, but Archangel Michael has also condensed the Realm-frame of Truth on his own. He is so powerful that even Zhang Ruochen can’t compare with him.”

“Just his attainments in the Path of Truth alone—let alone Zhang Ruochen—not even the Ten Divine Scions of the Fane of Truth can compare with Archangel Michael. Perhaps Archangel Michael can create miracles by crossing the tenth region of the sea, and become a legend.”

…

On the shore, many cultivators were very excited. They were admiring Archangel Michael.

Two streaks of light rushed out of the Fane of Truth and they arrived at the shore of the Sea of Truth instantly. They also cast their eyes on the Boat of Truth, which was struggling in the golden sea.

One of them was Nie Xiangzi, who was known as the Starcaptor.

After being defeated by Lord Xue Chen outside the imperial city, Nie Xiangzi returned to the Fane of Truth. He wanted to increase his strength in a short period.

The other person was 180 centimeters tall and handsome. He wore a celestial-crane blue sky robe, with a piece of azure sacred jade hung on his waist, and held a jade folding fan. A gentle and elegant aura exuded from his body.

His name was Dongfang Qingyu and he was also one of the Ten Divine Scions of the Fane of Truth from the Heavenly Realm.

Nie Xiangzi said lightly, “Those of you from the Heavenly Realm are very impressive. You helped Archangel Michael obtain the secrets of executing a form of the Realm-frame of Truth—’Lands Down Below’.”

Although the ‘Lands Down Below’ was not the top form, it was not for everyone. Even the Divine Scions of the Fane of Truth had very little success in executing it.

“You seemed to be a little upset about it?” Dongfang Qingyu asked with a smile.

Nie Xiangzi said, “I just don’t like the behavior of breaking the rules.”

“These things are decided by the gods. Why do we have to worry about it?” Dongfang Qingyu said.

Nie Xiangzi did not say anything else. He only locked his gaze on Archangel Michael. Thinking how far Archangel Michael could travel in the tenth region of the sea.

The farthest distance a Saint King traveled in the tenth region so far was six kilometers and it was Nie Xiangzi who did it.

The other two Divine Scions that had crossed the ninth region were Thousand-winged Silver Dragon and Dongfang Qingyu.

It was only recently Dongfang Qingyu was able to cross it. After entering the tenth region, he had only traveled half a kilometer.

Archangel Michael fell into the golden sea not long after. He was stronger than Dongfang Qingyu and had traveled one and a half kilometers in the tenth region of the sea.

When Archangel Michael returned to the shore, many cultivators immediately surrounded him. They said all kinds of flattering words as if they were about to worship him.

Just as Archangel Michael was about to leave, he turned his gaze and looked at Zhang Ruochen.

“Zhang Ruochen.”

Archangel Michael was also surprised to meet Zhang Ruochen in the Celestial Domain of Truth.

One of the reasons why Archangel Michael came to the Celestial Domain of Truth to cultivate was because Zhang Ruochen had fought with a group of top powerhouses of the Infernal Court outside the Central Imperial City.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen's terrifying battle strength made him feel great pressure.

Following the gaze of Archangel Michael, many cultivators were surprised when they noticed Zhang Ruochen was here.

"Zhang Ruochen came to the Celestial Domain of Truth. Did he plan to cross the Sea of Truth as well?"

For a moment, most cultivators turned their attention to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help it as he was now a famous figure. His every move would draw everyone's attention.

Soon, the news of Zhang Ruochen's appearance in the Sea of Truth spread at an astonishing speed.

Many were interested to meet Zhang Ruochen rushed from the Celestial Domain of Truth to the Sea of Truth at the fastest speed.

"Brother, it's you."

Suddenly, a pleasantly surprised voice sounded.

As soon as Zhang Ruochen turned around, he was given a big bear hug by a burly dark figure.

Other than Xiang Chunan, no other man would be so enthusiastic to Zhang Ruochen.

Such intimacy…

Others would easily be misunderstood!

Zhang Ruochen smiled and patted Xiang Chunan. He looked at the two people who had arrived with him. One of them was Feng Yan.

The other person was very unfamiliar but also very eye-catching.

This person had very interesting features. He was extremely burly, with a waist thicker than a bucket, legs as thick as a plate. He had dark skin, a short neck, and a huge face with thick lips and protruding ears. His body exuded a strong, masculine aura. He was even more manly than a man, except that he was a woman.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly thought of something when he saw this woman.

Xiang Chunan let go of Zhang Ruochen. He smiled and said, “Brother, I was thinking of going to the Central Imperial City to look for you with Feng Yuan after crossing the Sea of Truth. We didn’t expect to bump into you in the Celestial Domain of Truth. Our bond as brothers was so great that our hearts thought the same thing. Hahaha.”

“By the way, brother, let me introduce you. Qing Sixue was the junior sister I mentioned to you before. What do you think? Is she the most beautiful woman in the Celestial Court?”

Xiang Chunan stared at Zhang Ruochen with anticipation, as if he wanted his approval.

‘The number one beauty of the Celestial Court?’

Zhang Ruochen coughed dryly. As he had guessed, this burly and strong woman was the junior sister that Xiang Chunan had been dreaming about.

After all, the very image of this woman in front of him was exactly what Xiang Chunan had described.

Among the women Zhang Ruochen had seen, only Gai Tianjiao could be compared… with her beauty…

Such a strong figure was unassociated with the name ‘Qing Sixue’ no matter what.

Zhang Ruochen touched the tip of his nose and said, “Well, she’s unusually beautiful indeed. Chunan, you are blessed.”

He had long known Xiang Chunan’s standards for beauty and naturally he would not speak carelessly at this time. As long as Xiang Chunan liked it, he did not need to care about what others thought.

“Hahaha, I knew it, brother. Surely you also know how to appreciate beauty,” Xiang Chunan said.

After a pause, Xiang Chunan turned to Qing Sixue and said, “Sixue, this is my sworn brother, the top elite among Celestial and Infernal Court cultivators with rank below Supreme Sainthood.”

Chapter 2175: The Three Brothers Crossing the Sea

Qing Sixue stepped forward and bowed slightly. She said with a smile, “Thank you, Brother Ruochen. For taking care of my Brother Chunan.”

Her appearance was mighty and masculine, but her voice was surprisingly gentle and sweet.

“I didn’t take much care of Chunan. On the other hand, He helped me a lot, and I should be the one thanking him,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhang Ruochen was showing his gratitude for Xiang Chunan who had helped him a lot in Kunlun. Chunan had accompanied him through life and death without asking for anything in return.

Xiang Chunan said with a straight face, “If you consider me as your brother, please don’t say such a thing again. I won’t be happy.”

Zhang Ruochen was struck by Chunan’s words and felt warmth in his heart. He was blessed by the gods to have such a brother.

“In the battle outside the Imperial City, you killed seven top elites of the Infernal Court by yourself. Brother, I really can’t imagine how powerful you are,” Feng Yan said.

Compared to when he was in the Northern Region, Zhang Ruochen was undoubtedly more unfathomable now. Even though Feng Yan’s cultivation and strength had greatly improved, yet he could not see through it at all.

Zhang Ruochen said, “My current state was pushed by the situation. Too many people wanted to take my life. If I wanted to live longer, I would have to make myself stronger.”

Anyone could hear that there was a lot of helplessness in Zhang Ruochen’s words.

Others only saw Zhang Ruochen’s bright side, but they did not know how much effort and sweat he had put in to have his current strength. At some point, he had almost paid with his life.

“Brother, let’s cross the sea first. Then we’ll find a place for a gathering and have a few drinks,” Feng Yan suggested.

Xiang Chunan immediately agreed. “Yes, we must have it. I haven’t had a good drink in a long time. This time, we must not stop until one gets drunk.”

“Alright, count me in,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to disappoint his two sworn brothers no matter what.

Without delay, the four of them walked towards the beach.

Wherever they passed, the cultivators would avoid them. No one dared to offend them.

There were many Boats of Truth docked by the beach and it was more than enough for them to cross the sea.

As Zhang Ruochen expected, Qing Sixue also wanted to cross the sea.

Xiang Chunan’s master was very mysterious. He could learn the Path of Truth outside the Celestial Domain of Truth. Since Xiang Chunan had such high attainments in the Path of Truth, his junior sister should not be worse. She might even be stronger.

As they moved in a flash, the four of them each boarded a Boat of Truth. They rode the wind and cleaved the waves as they began to cross the sea.

After the four of them set off, streams of light gathered from all directions. They landed on the shore and turned into figures.

If Zhang Ruochen was still on the shore, he would definitely find many familiar faces.

Maiden of a Thousand Stars landed on a skerry. She fixed her gaze on Zhang Ruochen and said, “Zhang Ruochen has finally come to cross the Sea of Truth again. Perhaps he already has the confidence to cross the tenth region of the sea.”

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars had made up for the flaw in her state of mind during the trip to True Dragon Island. She had rushed straight to the Celestial Domain of Truth since then. Now that she had crossed the eighth region of the sea, she had a lot of time to cultivate in the Fane of Truth.

A beautiful woman standing beside the Maiden of a Thousand Stars. Her name was Qie Huairou. She was a Divine Scion and a good friend of the Maiden of a Thousand Stars in the Fane of Truth.

Qie Huairou smiled tenderly and said, “Everyone wants to cross the tenth region of the Sea of Truth. However, no Saint King has succeeded since

the establishment of the Celestial Court. Even the ten Divine Scions that the Fane of Truth has tried so hard to nurture and only three of them have crossed the ninth region of the sea."

"Zhang Ruochen may be strong, but he hasn't even condensed the Realm-frame of Truth. It's still a question whether he can cross the ninth region, let alone the tenth region."

As a Divine Scion of the Fane of Truth, she knew very well that the Realm-frame of Truth was very important to cross more regions of the sea.

Without the secret teachings of the Fane of Truth, Qie Huairou didn't believe that Zhang Ruochen could have a way to condense the Realm-frame of Truth.

Not to mention the top-notch 'Boundless Universe' form, even the worst 'Heavens Up Above' form was by no means easy to condense.

Even the Divine Scions of the Fane of Truth could only condense the 'Heavens Up Above' form. Only a handful could condense the 'Lands Down Below' form.

Not many people have succeeded in condensing the 'Shoreless Star Ocean' form, except for the ten Divine Scions.

As for the 'Boundless Universe' form, it only existed in legends. Not even all the gods of the Fane of Truth possessed it.

"You underestimate Zhang Ruochen. To him, anything could happen. His goal of crossing the Sea of Truth at this time is definitely not limited to the ninth region of the sea," the Maiden of a Thousand Stars said with a smile. She seemed to be full of confidence in Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was unique in that no ordinary person could compare to him in her eyes.

Qie Huairou shook her head and said, "It's not that I underestimate Zhang Ruochen. It's that you are blinded by him, Chenjing. I really don't know how you can be sure that Zhang Ruochen could cross the tenth region of the sea. Do you think that his attainments in the Path of Truth are higher than those of the ten Divine Scions?"

Qie Huairou didn't think that Zhang Ruochen could cross the tenth region of the sea no matter what the Maiden of a Thousand Stars said. It was simply impossible.

“That’s because you don’t know much about Zhang Ruochen. Look, it won’t take long before there will be results.” Maiden of a Thousand Stars insisted.

Qie Huairou looked at Maiden of a Thousand Stars with surprise and said, “Chenjing, you’re so protective of him. Don’t tell me you have a thing for Zhang Ruochen?”

Maiden of a Thousand Stars rolled her eyes at Qie Huairou after hearing that, but she didn’t say anything. She just fixed her gaze at Zhang Ruochen with a look of expectation that appeared faintly in her eyes.

“Brother Nie, which region do you think Zhang Ruochen can cross?” Dongfang Qingyu asked with a smile.

Nie Xiangzi thought for a while and said, “Maybe he can surpass all of us.”

“I don’t think so. Crossing the Sea of Truth is not just about strength. The key is one’s attainments in the Path of Truth and it also increases one’s attack power by nine fold. There’s a big difference between whether Zhang Ruochen can cross the ninth region using the Realm-frame of Truth or not. The chances are very low,” Dongfang Qingyu said.

Nie Xiangzi said, “Then let’s wait and see.”

Although he didn’t have much contact with Zhang Ruochen, he was a good judge of character and trusted his intuition.

Dongfang Qingyu didn’t say anything else. He gently fanned the jade folding fan in his hand, with wisps of brilliance flashing in his eyes.

It would be delightful to see Zhang Ruochen being frustrated in the Sea of Truth.’ Dongfang Qingyu thought.

In the other direction, the Fairy of a Hundred Flowers descended from the sky as it was showered with flowers.

If it were any other time, the appearance of the Fairy of a Hundred Flowers would have caught the attention of countless cultivators. But now, they focused their attention on Zhang Ruochen.

The Fairy of a Hundred Flowers had been cultivating in the Mandala Goddess’s dojo recently. She had learned a lot from comprehending and refining the Heart of the Divine Tree.

Those below the Supreme Saint are invincible. After parting in the Northern Region, what kind of opportunity did Zhang Ruochen get in such a short time? Is it because of the trunks of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree?' The Fairy of a Hundred Flowers guessed.

Even the cultivators who were personally instructed by the gods couldn't cultivate as fast as Zhang Ruochen and anyone would be curious about the reason.

After hearing the discussions of many cultivators around, the Fairy of a Hundred Flowers whispered, "If it was the tenth region of the sea, maybe Zhang Ruochen can do it."

As time passed, more and more cultivators gathered in the Sea of Truth, and soon there were more than 10,000 of them. Among them, there were not only saints and Saint Kings but also Supreme Saints.

Zhang Ruochen was the center of everyone's attention even though there were four of them crossing the sea at the same time.

This was Qing Sixue's first time crossing the Sea of Truth and she needed to cross the sea region by region.

Zhang Ruochen, Feng Yan, and Xiang Chunan had already crossed the first six regions of the sea. The seventh region would be their starting point.

The three of them moved at the same speed and it didn't take long for them to reach the seventh region.

"Brother, let's see who can enter the eighth region faster," Feng Yan said with a smile.

Feng Yan had crossed the sixth region and became a Divine Scion of the Fane of Truth before he headed to Kunlun. He no longer had to be ridiculed by his sister.

If Feng Yan could cross the seventh or eighth region this time, he would be more assertive when talking to his sister in the future.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Losers pay the bill for the next meal."

"You two can take your time while I am crossing the region. Hahaha." Xiang Chunan laughed.

Feng Yan said, "Chunan, it's not right for you to play tricks like this."

As he spoke, he rode the Boat of Truth and quickly chased after them.

In the next moment, gatekeepers gathered in front of the three.

The three gatekeepers attacked at the same time. They threw out powerful fist techniques, triggered the Precept and Saint Qi of heaven and earth, and set off violent waves.

However, the waves did not affect Zhang Ruochen and the other two. The Boat of Truth under their feet seemed to be very stable without any turbulence.

Tens of millions of Precepts appeared as the breeze blew. They interweaved behind Feng Yan and formed a tall divine shadow with powerful divine force.

Roar!
The divine shadow leaned forward and let out a terrifying roar.

Endless squalls whistled out and enveloped the majestic fist print and the gatekeepers.

“Take this!” Xiang Chunan shouted, and monstrous Demonic Qi surged out of his body.

The Demonic Qi combined with the Precepts of Fist to form hundreds of magnificent demonic mountains. They connected with each other and became one. It released the world-suppressing power.

Compared to the commotion caused by Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan, Zhang Ruochen’s attack was rather simple. He simply waved his hand and cut out a faint sword ray.

Crash
The majestic fist print was instantly cut open by the sword ray and even the gatekeepers’ body was split into two.

The gatekeepers dissipated. It turned into a ball of silver light fog and it merged into the light screen in front of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen did not look happy. Instead, he frowned slightly and thought to himself, Why is there no Canon of Truth?’

In the past, he was able to get the Canon of Truth for each region whenever he came to cross the Sea of Truth. The numbers of it were gradually increasing.

When he crossed the sixth region of the sea, the reward for the Canon of Truth had already reached three out of ten thousand.

Not even one out of ten thousand of the Canon of Truth has been rewarded. It was really strange. He couldn't figure out what had gone wrong.

…

Chapter 2176: The Ninth Region of the Sea

While Zhang Ruochen was thinking, Xiang Chunan and Feng Yan also defeated the gatekeeper one after another. It was done neatly and looked as if they did it effortlessly.

Feng Yan smiled bitterly and said, "The two of you are good. I'll treat you both to some drinks later."

Although there was only a slight difference in their time, he still lost, so could only accept his defeat.

"Haha, Second Brother is treating us to some drinks, we'll need to have lots of good wine," Xiang Chunan couldn't help but laugh.

He was truly a heavy drinker. Otherwise, he wouldn't have gotten thrown into the Celestial Domain of Truth by his master for being drunk.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Let's continue crossing the sea first."

With that, Zhang Ruochen steered his Boat of Truth and smoothly passed through the light screen in front of him, entering the eighth region of the sea.

When Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan saw this, they didn't hesitate and immediately followed suit. Their goal this time was naturally not just to cross the seventh region of the sea.

The limit of a Saint King was the seventh region of the sea, but that was only for ordinary Saint Kings. They definitely didn't belong to this category.

The eighth region of the sea was testing their limits, the difficulty of crossing the sea had multiplied. The waves were extremely powerful and repeatedly crashed against their Boat of Truths.

However, Zhang Ruochen was like an unmoving divine mountain. He suppressed the movement of his Boat of Truth, it didn't move at all albeit the crashing waves.

His goal was to cross the tenth region of the sea. If the seventh region was considered troublesome, how could he continue to cross the other regions?

Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan's Boat of Truths started rocking slightly but were quickly stabilized

After entering this region of the sea, Zhang Ruochen's distance from Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan gradually increased. He took the lead and arrived at the entrance within 30 minutes.

The light screen in front of him shot out dazzling beams of holy light. The beams of light interweaved one another before condensing into an illusory Saint General donned in silver armor. He looked real and solid, exuding a vast Saint aura. His power was unfathomable.

When the illusory Saint General made his move, the Precepts of the water nature in heaven and earth were completely mobilized. Huge waves that were hundreds of feet high rose up on the surface of the sea, they carried unparalleled holy power and slapped towards Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen appeared very calm. He took a drop of water from the sea and flicked it out with his finger.

The drop of water was under the effect of his holy Qi and Power of Dimensions, it instantly transformed into a huge world that swallowed the illusory Saint General and the huge waves he created.

The world he created seemed very fragile but was in fact extremely tough. It did not break despite the illusory Saint General's vicious attacks.

In the next moment, the world formed from the water droplet was compressed rapidly. A destructive power was exerted onto the illusory Saint General.

BOOM!

In the blink of an eye, the illusory Saint General's body exploded and turned into beams of holy light again, disappearing into the light screen in front of him.

The surface of the sea was calm once more, it was as if nothing had happened.

This scene livened up those by the shore of the Sea of Truth.

"Zhang Ruochen is so strong, he defeated the gatekeeper of the eighth region so easily. It seems that he really has a chance to break through to the tenth region."

"You're naïve. Zhang Ruochen hasn't even formed Realm-frame of Truth, him crossing the ninth region is already a problem, the tenth region is overreaching."

"You're right. The ninth region of the Sea of Truth is very different from the previous eight regions. It's a basic condition to have the Realm-frame of Truth. Even Zhang Ruochen would have a hard time overcoming this rule."

"Even the most invincible strength after the Supreme Saint won't necessarily work at the Sea of Truth. Zhang Ruochen is destined to be inferior to the Archangel Michael here."

..

While everyone was busy discussing, Zhang Ruochen was frowning in front of the light screen. Just like before, he still did not get the reward of the Canon of Truth despite passing this region.

"What went wrong? Perhaps there is no Canon of Truth at the Sea of Truth? Or is it because I have acquired enough Canon of Truth?" Zhang Ruochen was filled with doubt.

One of the main purposes of his trip to the Sea of Truth was to get more Canon of Truth so that he could comprehend the Path more easily.

The Canon of Truth was very magical. Even if it only increased by one-thousandth, it could lead to many incredible changes.

"If I can't acquire more Canon of Truth, I'll have to find a way to get the reward from the Fane of Truth," Zhang Ruochen thought.

Then, he set sail again and steered his Boat of Truth through the light screen and into the ninth region of the sea.

At this time, the cultivators on the shore paid even more attention to him.

“Chen Jing, I’m afraid you’ll be disappointed soon. Zhang Ruochen doesn’t have much hope to cross this region, let alone the tenth region of the sea.”

“Zhang Ruochen chose to cross the sea after Michael has crossed the ninth region. If he fails, it’ll affect his reputation. It’s not wise.”

Qie Huairou shook her head repeatedly.

Like most people, she didn’t think highly of Zhang Ruochen when it came to crossing the Sea of Truth. It wasn’t that she looked down on him, nor was it because of prejudice. She was just judging the matter on its merits, she didn’t believe that someone could break the established rules.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars smiled and said, “Shall we make a bet? Let’s bet on whether Zhang Ruochen can cross the ninth region.”

“Sure. What do you want to bet?” Qie Huairou showed great interest.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars thought for a moment and said, “Haven’t you wanted my Heavenly Feather Coat for a long time? If you win, I’ll give it to you. But if you lose…”

“I know what you want. If I lose, I’ll give you my Celestial Flute,” Qie Huairou interrupted.

A sly glint flashed across the Maiden of a Thousand Stars’s eyes. “Then it’s settled.”

“I’ll personally take the Heavenly Feather Coat off of you later. Don’t be shy then,” Qie Huairou laughed.

The Thousand Stars Maiden didn’t say anything else and just stared at Zhang Ruochen. What others said did not matter to her, she believed that Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t be stopped by the ninth region.

Whoosh.
Several streaks of light flew out of the Temple of truth and landed on the shore of the Sea of truth. They turned into five figures, all of them were donned in blue robes with crane motifs—which indicated their identities—they were the Divine Scions of the Fane of Truth.

The person in the lead was a woman with a graceful figure and legs that were long and straight. She wore a veil and gave off an exquisite aura, it was as if she were like an ethereal goddess and no one could profane her.

She was none other than Feng Yan's sister, Feng Xi.

Feng Xi had a very high position in the Temple of truth. Other than the Ten Divine Scions, not many people were more superior than her.

Feng Xi was not like the others. When she came to the Sea of Truth, her first focus wasn't Zhang Ruochen but Feng Yan.

Feng Yan was currently at the eighth region's entrance fighting fiercely with the gatekeeper.

The gatekeeper at his region was extremely powerful and couldn't be defeated as easily as the ones before this.

However, after exchanging hundreds of moves, Feng Yan finally used a wondrous technique recorded in the Nüwa Scripture. The gatekeeper was beaten into smithereens.

Feng Xi couldn't help but smile as she watched the scene. This time, Feng Yan didn't disappoint her and didn't disgrace the Feng family.

Those who were able to cross the eighth layer of the Sea of truth were already considered to be the best among the many Divine Scions. After all, even most of the Ten Divine Scions had only crossed the eighth layer of the sea.

A majority of the Divine Scions could only cross the seventh layer of the sea, and that was already magnificent.

The reason why Feng Xi had such a high status in the Fane of Truth was not only because of her background, but also because she had already crossed the eighth region of the sea and reached the entrance of the ninth region.

"Junior brother Feng Yan is truly amazing. He caught up to us despite coming later, he puts us seniors to shame."A Divine Scion behind Feng Xi sighed.

Another Divine Scion, Yan Shiju, had a surprised expression and said, "Junior brother Feng Yan is very talented. He was able to cultivate the

Nüwa Scripture to such a level. The Feng family's three heads and six arms truly lives up to its reputation."

Feng Yan's status in the Feng family had always been very special. After all, he had inherited Three Heads and Six Arms from the Feng family's ancestor—Feng Shen. As a result, he had received the attention of many people, making him feel pressured, he had to do his best in everything.

Although Feng Xi was very satisfied with Feng Yan's performance this time, she kept a calm exterior and said, "He's still far from reaching the region that the ancestor expects of him."

She was telling the truth. Over the years, there had never been a junior that Feng Shen valued as much as Feng Yan. He had personally nurtured him since he was young, his treatment was even better than a deity's.

Feng Xi turned her gaze to the ninth region of the sea.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen was about to reach the entrance of the ninth region of the sea.

"The strongest person after the Supreme Saint is indeed powerful. His Boat of Truth can travel so smoothly and quickly even after entering the ninth region of the sea."

"It's useless even if it's fast. He can't possibly cross the ninth region without the Realm-frame of Truth. Unless Zhang Ruochen joins the Fane of Truth, he'll be stuck at this region for the rest of his life."

"With Zhang Ruochen's strength, even condensing the weakest Realm-frame of Truth should enable him to cross the ninth region of the sea. What a pity."

The few Divine Scions behind Feng Xi spoke one after another.

It was the common understanding of almost all the Divine Scions of the Temple of truth that one had to condense the Realm-frame of Truth to cross the ninth region of the sea. This understanding had long been ingrained in their minds and could not be changed.

Feng Xi did not speak, but she had a feeling that Zhang Ruochen's crossing of the sea would probably surprise many people.

"Huh? Who is that?"

Suddenly, Feng Xi looked at the seventh region of the sea.

When she looked over, she happened to see a tall and burly figure. He had punched the gatekeeper of the seventh region of the sea into pieces. It was truly simple yet brutal.

This person was naturally Xiang Chunan's junior sister apprentice, Qing Sixue.

It was her first time crossing the Sea of Truth. She clearly had no experience, but she was extremely fast and seemed unstoppable. There was almost no delay on the way.

Xiang Chunan had just crossed the eighth region of the sea when Qing Sixue caught up with him.

With her current speed, crossing the eighth layer of the sea should not be a difficult task.

Feng Xi's eyes glinted with divine light as she stared at Qing Sixue. She muttered, "She's at least a Supreme Saint in the Hundred-Shackle Realm. Her attainments of Precepts are extremely high. Why haven't I seen her before?"

Her status made her extremely familiar with the geniuses who cultivated at the Celestial Domain of Truth. However, she had never heard of Qing Sixue at all. It was as if Qing Sixue had appeared out of thin air.

Yan Shiju said, "I've just asked some people and none of them know the background of this Supreme Saint. However, Feng Yan seemed to be with her previously."

Feng Xi's heart could not help but shiver when she heard this, she vaguely thought of something.

Just as Feng Xi had expected, Qing Sixue did not expend too much energy and crossed the eighth region of the sea. She appeared to be having an easier time compared to Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan.

"My God, there are actually four people entering the ninth layer of the sea at the same time. They are basically monsters."

Some cultivators couldn't help but let out sounds of astonishment.

Many people came to the Sea of Truth every day, but such a scene was not a common one.

At the entrance of the ninth region, Zhang Ruochen turned his head. His gaze swept past Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan before finally locking onto Qing Sixue.

He could faintly feel the aura of a Supreme Saint from Qing Sixue. Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but look surprised, "Chu Nan's junior sister apprentice is actually a Supreme Saint. Just like Chu Nan, she acquired profound attainments in Path of Truth as soon as she came to the Celestial Domain of Truth. Who are her parents?"

Before this, Zhang Ruochen didn't notice that Qing Sixue had been restraining her aura completely.

Moreover, with her status as Xiang Chunan's junior sister apprentice, it was difficult for anyone to connect her cultivation to one of a Supreme Saint.

Even with Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation and strength, he still could not see through Qing Sixue at all. He could not be sure what region she had reached.

However, there was one thing that Zhang Ruochen was sure of, he was currently absolutely no match for Qing Sixue.

Zhang Ruochen gazed at her for a moment before turning his gaze back to the light screen in front of him.

Their Boat of Truths sailed a little further. Suddenly, the gatekeepers of this region condensed.

The powerful holy aura emanating from his body alone was enough to rival, or even surpass, the top masters of the first level below the Supreme Saint.

More importantly, there was extremely solid land under the gatekeeper's feet. The land gave off an extremely overwhelming aura, it was as it could swallow anything.

"The Realm-frame of Truth is the soil beneath his feet," Zhang Ruochen whispered.

He had come into contact with the Realm-frame of Truth a long time ago. It was when he had entered the Divinity Bestowment Altar and fought with Yu

Wenjing, a Divine Scion. At that time, Yu Wenjing's strongest technique was the Realm-frame of Truth, but it was the worst "Heavens Up Above.".

Not long ago, Nie Xiangzi had fought with Lord Xue Chen outside of the Central Imperial City and used a top-class Realm-frame of Truth, "Boundless Starry Sea".

Zhang Ruochen felt a strong pressure as he faced the gatekeeper's Realm-frame of Truth, it affected the circulation of the holy Qi in his body.

The Realm-frame of Truth could not only allow cultivators to unleash attacks that were multiple times stronger at will, but it was also a powerful attack method. It was not an ordinary method that one could resist.

At this moment, many cultivators by the shore of the Sea of Truth were staring at Zhang Ruochen, each of them had different thoughts.

"With the Realm-frame of Truth, the gatekeeper can mobilize the power contained in the Sea of Truth to his heart's content. Only those who have the Realm-frame of Truth can resist it, Zhang Ruochen will definitely lose against him."

"Zhang Ruochen is the Scion of Time and Space, he might be able to break the cycle."

"Time and space are both ancient Paths. However, in the Sea of Truth, they are also suppressed by the Path of Truth so their powers are greatly reduced. In short, any means is useless against the Realm-frame of Truth."

"I'm curious, how many rounds can Zhang Ruochen fight against the gatekeeper of this region? I hope he won't lose too quickly."

Chapter 2177: The Profound Spatial Domain

The gatekeeper was expressionless. With the thick soil beneath his feet, a surging power in the sea continued to gather. It was as if everything in the sea was under his control.

The clear sea turned murky as water and earth combined. A strong suction force unleashed and sucked the Boat of Truth that Zhang Ruochen was on.

At the same time, dust filled the air and surrounded Zhang Ruochen from all directions. It was as if some ancient ferocious beast had opened its mouth to swallow everything.

"Lands Down Below, burry all."

The gatekeeper said with an emotionless voice.

Zhang Ruochen could clearly feel that the precepts of heaven and earth were controlled by the gatekeeper. He couldn't help but have the illusion that he was against the entire world.

Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes and immediately made his move. He reached out a hand and nearly a million Precepts of Dimension appeared. His palm transformed the heavens and earth. Each palm print was like a towering mountain. His five fingers turned into five sacred mountains that supported the sky, which held the wall of dust in place.

"Break."

Zhang Ruochen bellowed.

A powerful Power of Dimensions was released and turned into an invisible spatial storm that swept in all directions.

Bang
No matter how strong the dust storm was, it was torn apart at that moment and turned into streams of khaki-colored air.

However, the air did not dissipate. Instead, they seemed to have life. They interweaved with each other and covered the void space, covering the entire sea area where Zhang Ruochen was.

Rumble
Violent thunder and lightning burst out from the interweaved air, accompanied by clusters of silver flames. The qi it emitted was extremely terrifying.

'With the blessing of the Realm-frame of Truth, the gatekeeper is indeed difficult to deal with. All my techniques are obviously suppressed. If the gatekeeper mastered the Realm-frame of Truth, the Shoreless Star Ocean, I'm afraid that none of the Divine Scion of Fane of Truth would be able to cross the ninth region of the sea,' Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

Zhang Ruochen was actually unfamiliar with the Realm-frame of Truth. Even when he fought with Yu Wenjing, he used the Secret Tome of Time and Space to forcefully tear apart the Realm-frame of Truth. He hadn't been able to fully understand its mysteries.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen had already opened the third eye between his eyebrows. At the same time, he released a powerful spiritual power to

carefully examine the Realm-frame of Truth that the gatekeeper had condensed.

Not only did he want to defeat the gatekeeper in front of him, he also wanted to be able to pry into the secrets of the Realm-frame of Truth from the gatekeeper and see if he could condense it himself.

Although it was difficult, he had 0.39 percent of the Canon of Truth, and his attainments in the Path of Truth were very high. It was possible for him to succeed.

Zhang Ruochen and the gatekeeper could not help but fall into a stalemate. They kept colliding fiercely.

On the shore of the Sea of Truth, Archangel Michael stared at Zhang Ruochen with a strange light in his eyes. In fact, he was more concerned than the others about whether Zhang Ruochen could cross the ninth region of the sea.

After all, he had just crossed the sea. Many people would naturally compare him with Zhang Ruochen. Whether Zhang Ruochen could cross the sea successfully or not would have a great impact on his reputation.

Once Zhang Ruochen successfully crossed the ninth region of the sea, the achievements of Archangel Michael would become insignificant. After all, Zhang Ruochen hadn't condensed the Realm-frame of Truth. He needed to break the established precepts.

"Archangel doesn't need to take Zhang Ruochen personally. He's destined to not cross the ninth region of the Sea of Truth. He can't compare to you, Archangel."

"The so-called invincible battle strength under the Supreme Saint is useless in the Sea of Truth. Without the Realm-frame of Truth, even the Supreme Saint has to stop here."

"Zhang Ruochen is too arrogant. He should have experienced the feeling of defeat a long time ago."

..

The cultivators of Heavenly Realm faction spoke as if they had already seen the scene of Zhang Ruochen falling into the Sea of Truth.

Archangel Michael did not say anything. He just looked at the scene on the sea quietly. He could see through countless of geniuses in the world but Zhang Ruochen was not one of them.

Common sense was often inapplicable when it came to Zhang Ruochen.

“Chenjing, Zhang Ruochen’s situation is not good. I can take off your Heavenly Feather Coat at any time,” said Qie Huairou with a smile.

The Maiden of a Thousand Stars was not anxious. Instead, she said calmly, “Don’t worry. It’s still too early to make a conclusion. I think you can take out the Celestial Flute first.”

“You’re very confident. Don’t be discouraged later,” said Qie Huairou.

Although Zhang Ruochen could still resist the gatekeeper’s attack, the longer he delayed, the more disadvantageous the situation would be for him. If there was no major turning point, he would fall into the sea sooner or later.

While Zhang Ruochen was fiercely battling with the gatekeeper, Qing Sixue, Feng Yan, and Xiang Chunan had also arrived at the ninth region of the sea, one after another.

Feng Yan could not help but frown slightly as he watched Zhang Ruochen’s fierce battle with the gatekeeper. “Brother has not condensed the Realm-frame of Truth, so he is at a disadvantage here. Otherwise, he would have already defeated the gatekeeper,” he said.

As a Divine Scion of Fane of Truth, he had been taught a secret technique, but unfortunately, he could not pass it on to Zhang Ruochen.

“Don’t worry brother. I believe that Brother Zhang will win,” said Xiang Chunan.

Qing Sixue also voiced out, “Brother Zhang is an extraordinary person. He can certainly do extraordinary things.”

With that, Qing Sixue drove the Boat of Truth close to the light screen in front of her, eager to challenge the gatekeeper.

It was Qing Sixue’s first time crossing the Sea of Truth, and she was able to cross from the first region of the sea to the ninth region of the sea. She was definitely a legend.

As Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan saw this, they did not hesitate and immediately followed. They were also looking forward to the battle with the gatekeeper of the ninth region of the sea.

In the blink of an eye, three gatekeepers appeared in front of the light screen.

Similar to the gatekeeper Zhang Ruochen was facing, they were all standing on thick soil and in control of the heavens and earth.

Feng Yan's expression was solemn. He put his hands together and a large number of Precepts of Truth emerged from his body. The precepts of heaven and earth interweaved and condensed into an obscure world of galaxies. Each star was composed of complicated characters, which annotated the truth of the world.

"Junior brother Feng Yan actually condensed the Realm-frame of Truth so quickly, and it's even the Shoreless Star Ocean. This…"

The four Divine Scions of Fane of Truth beside Feng Xi widened their eyes, unable to believe what they had just seen.

It was already very rare for the Feng family to have a peerless genius like Feng Xi. Who would have thought that Feng Yan would appear now? It seemed that the Feng family was destined to prosper in this era.

Why was Feng Xi able to have such a high status in Fane of Truth? It was because the Realm-frame of Truth that she condensed was the Shoreless Star Ocean. It was comparable to the Ten Divine Scions.

When she has enough accumulation, her strength would rise to the level of the Ten Divine Scions. She had hopes of crossing the ninth region of the sea.

At that time, she would probably be able to become one of the Ten Divine Scions.

"At least he didn't humiliate our ancestors," Feng Xi said softly.

Feng Xi felt gratified as she saw that her brother had grown.

Suddenly, Feng Xi's eyes revealed a look of shock as she said, "How could it be…"

At that moment, her gaze locked onto Qing Sixue. She saw that behind Qing Sixue, there was actually the Realm-frame of Truth, and it was even more vast than Feng Yan's Shoreless Star Ocean.

"This person is actually a Divine Scion of Fane of Truth. Why have I never seen him before?" Dongfang Qingyu's eyes were filled with surprise.

Nie Xiangzi was also puzzled. With his status, he should recognize all the Divine Scions in Fane of Truth.

Thinking about it, Nie Xiangzi thought of a possibility, 'Maybe this person is a secret scion of some prominent figure in Fane of Truth'

He believed that there wouldn't be a second instance like Archangel Michael. Therefore, Qing Sixue must be from Fane of Truth.

Dongfang Qingyu was shocked and said, "What's going on? Is that black fool also a Divine Scion?"

Just like Feng Yan and Qing Sixue, a vast illusory realm of stars appeared behind Xiang Chunan. It was no smaller than Feng Yan.

All the cultivators by the seaside couldn't remain calm as they saw this scene.

"When did the Shoreless Star Ocean became so easy to condense that three actually appeared at once?"

"Apart from Feng Yan, what's the background of the other two? Are these two Divine Scions of Fane of Truth?"

"Could it be that three people are going to cross the ninth region of the sea together?"

..

Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and Qing Sixue were already very surprised that they could reach the ninth region of the sea. Now that they had revealed the Realm-frame of Truth, they didn't know what to say.

The eyes of Archangel Michael narrowed, and a cold light flashed in his eyes. It wasn't easy for Heavenly Realm to find a secret technique to condense the Realm-frame of Truth for him. He had spent a lot of effort, but he could only condense Lands Down Below.

He hadn’t expect that a few people were able to condense Shoreless Star Ocean from the Realm-frame of Truth. It was a huge blow to him.

Now, regardless of whether Zhang Ruochen could pass the ninth region, Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and Qing Sixue had surpassed him.

Any Divine Scion who condensed the Realm-frame of Truth would be nurtured by Fane of Truth. Their future would be limitless.

For a while, many cultivators were attracted to Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and Qing Sixue. Few people paid attention to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t know that. He didn’t have the time to care about these things. All his attention was put on battling the gatekeeper and comprehending the Realm-frame of Truth.

He had plenty of Saint Qi. He wasn’t worried about running out of power.

He was not actually suppressed by the gatekeeper. No matter how powerful the gatekeeper’s attacks were, he could always deal with them with ease.

‘Although all kinds of Paths are suppressed, Path of Truth, Path of Time, Path of Dimension, and the fully cultivated Swordsmanship aren’t suppressed too badly. If I cultivate Path of the Ancients to completion, I probably wouldn’t be affected at all,’ Zhang Ruochen guessed.

It was best to cross the Sea of Truth by relying on one’s own power. With external help, the strength of the gatekeeper would increase correspondingly, which will then increase the difficulty of crossing.

So far, Zhang Ruochen had not used any treasures, including the Ancient Abyssal Blade.

After thousands of exchanges, Zhang Ruochen had already figured out some details about the gatekeeper and had a clearer understanding of the Realm-frame of Truth.

If Zhang Ruochen was willing, there was a high chance that he could condense the Realm-frame of Truth — Heavens Up Above.

However, with his personality, how could he be satisfied with such an ordinary Realm-frame of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen let out a soft breath. His eyes lit up and he whispered, “It’s time to end this. I should try the Profound Spatial Domain that I just condensed.”

As he spoke, nearly a million Precepts of Dimension appeared in his body. They evolved into a strange domain with a diameter of 300 meters.

Everything in the Profound Spatial Domain was under Zhang Ruochen’s control. It was like a battlefield that had been specially opened up for him.

The Path of Truth had the Realm-frame of Truth. The Path of Destiny had the Gate of Destiny. Hence, the Path of Dimension naturally had its own specialties — the ability to condense the Profound Spatial Domain.

The Profound Spatial Domain could be considered an upgrade of the Spatial Domain, but it was extremely difficult to condense. If one wanted to condense the top-notch Grade One Profound Spatial Domain, it would be a Herculean task.

At the very least, the Scions of Fane of Dimension who had interacted with Zhang Ruochen hadn’t been able to condense Profound Spatial Domain; or in other words, they hadn’t had the chance to do it.

With Zhang Ruochen’s Dimension attainments, he had actually been able to condense the Profound Spatial Domain long ago. However, he wasn’t satisfied with an ordinary Profound Spatial Domain, so he had delayed it until now.

After all, the Path of Dimension was his main Path. As it was related to his future achievements, naturally, he had to perfect it. He couldn’t be perfunctory to avoid regretting it in the future.

After the battle outside Imperial City, Zhang Ruochen had disappeared for a while. He was actually going to condense the Profound Spatial Domain.

The Profound Spatial Domain was Zhang Ruochen’s trump card for crossing the Sea of Truth.

Once the Profound Spatial Domain evolved, the sea within 300 meters became extremely calm. Even the Realm-frame of Truth condensed by the gatekeeper was restricted.

The reason was that Zhang Ruochen’s Profound Spatial Domain was the best. The Gatekeeper’s truth boundary was more ordinary. Even if it had

the geographical advantage, it couldn't compete with the top-notch Grade One Profound Spatial Domain.

Moreover, Zhang Ruochen had used the Precepts of Truth an dthe Canon of Truth to strengthen the Profound Spatial Domain. Thus, he easily suppressed the Realm-frame of Truth.

Unlike the Realm-frame of Truth and the Gate of Destiny, the Profound Spatial Domain was invisible. It could not be seen with the naked eye. One could only sense it by being in it.

Destroy
Zhang Ruochen reached out a hand and pressed forward gently.

A destructive power surged out and completely enveloped the space where the gatekeeper was.

Boom
A large amount of space was annihilated in an instant, revealing a dark void.

At the same time, the Realm-frame of Truth condensed by the gatekeeper collapsed which turned into streaks of saint light and disappeared into the light screen.

Zhang Ruochen put away the Profound Spatial Dimension and stood calmly in the Boat of Truth. He stared at the light screen in front of him as if he was waiting for something.

"It seems that I really can't get the Canon of Truth anymore. The only way now is to charge at the tenth region of the sea," Zhang Ruochen sighed.

It was so difficult to cross the ninth region of the sea, but there was no Canon of Truth as a reward. It was impossible to say that it was not disappointing.

But it was useless to be disappointed. There was no way he would go to Fane of Truth to ask for the Canon of Truth.

"Look, Zhang Ruochen has defeated the gatekeeper."

With a cry of surprise, many cultivators by the shore turned their heads to look at Zhang Ruochen again.

"Zhang Ruochen actually succeeded. How did he do it?"

“From the beginning to the end, he never revealed the Realm-frame of Truth. Even the shackles of the Sea of Truth could not restrain him. How terrifying.”

“Zhang Ruochen is the first person to cross the ninth region of the Sea of Truth without relying on the Realm-frame of Truth.”

“Is it really possible for Zhang Ruochen to cross the tenth region of the sea and climb the Mountain of Truth? Are we going to witness a miracle today?”

Chapter 2178: The Golden Sea Region

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Tens of thousands of cultivators gathered on the shore of the Sea of Truth. All of them looked surprised and their eyes were all fixed on Zhang Ruochen.

Most of them didn’t expect Zhang Ruochen would be able to make it through the ninth region of the sea without condensing the Realm-frame of Truth before.

Now, those who had previously made such remarks had flushed cheeks. As if someone had slapped them hard.

Maiden of a Thousand Stars smiled. She stretched out her hand and said, “Looks like I’d won and you lost the bet. I’ll have the Celestial Flute.”

There was a strange expression in Qie Huairou’s eyes. She looked at Zhang Ruochen as if he was a monster and said, “How did Zhang Ruochen cross the ninth region? Why did the suppression of the Realm-frame of Truth suddenly disappear?”

Qie Huairou had been paying attention to Zhang Ruochen because of the bet. Even so, she still could not figure out the situation and did not know how Zhang Ruochen had defeated the gatekeeper.

“It’s the Profound Spatial Domain,” Maiden of a Thousand Stars said.

Although the Profound Spatial Domain was invisible, it could not escape her Divine Eye of Origin.

Qie Huairou was taken aback at first, but then she muttered, “An ordinary Profound Spatial Domain will not be enough to overpower the gatekeeper’s

Realm-frame of Truth in the Sea of Truth. At the very least, it has to be Grade Two Profound Spatial Domain."

The Profound Spatial Domain was divided into four grades like the Realm-frame of Truth. Grade Four was the weakest, and Grade One was the strongest.

Qie Huairou knew very well the difficulty of condensing a Profound Spatial Domain was even more challenging than condensing the Realm-frame of Truth.

After all, there were more cultivators of the Path of Truth than the Path of Dimension. Over the generations, the secret method of condensing the Realm-frame of Truth has been perfected, and the difficulty has been greatly reduced.

'Although Zhang Ruochen was powerful, yet how long had he been cultivating? Since he had never entered the Fane of Dimension to cultivate.' Qie Huairou thought. She also never thought he had already condensed the Profound Spatial Domain before this.

'On second thought, Zhang Ruochen was The Scion of Time and Space. How could Saint Monk Xumi not leave behind the secret technique of condensing the Profound Spatial Domain?' Qie Huairou thought again.

"Zhang Ruochen has broken the established rules. I admit defeat. Take it," said Qie Huairou.

Qie Huairou took out the Celestial Flute unwillingly.

The Celestial Flute was not much different from an ordinary jade flute. Its magic will work only when it is played.

Maiden of a Thousand Stars directly reached out and took the Celestial Flute. She had been eyeing it for a long time and finally got her hands on it.

On the other side, the eyes of the Archangel Michael turned gloomy. Zhang Ruochen's crossing the ninth region of the sea undoubtedly covered his achievements.

Archangel Michael barely won from fighting thousands of rounds with the gatekeeper by relying on the Realm-frame of Truth. He had only traveled one and a half kilometers after entering the tenth region of the sea.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen didn't rely on the Realm-frame of Truth and easily defeated the gatekeeper. The difference in their strength was a big gap.

The worst is that Archangel Michael had crossed the ninth region of the sea on the same day as Zhang Ruochen. Many people would naturally compare him with Zhang Ruochen. All of his achievements had now become a foil.

'It must be a high-grade Profound Spatial Domain. Otherwise, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be able to crush the gatekeeper,' Archangel Michael thought.

The sycophants around Archangel Michael shut their mouths at this moment, and they could not say anything.

The commentaries they had said earlier sounded like they were mocking Archangel Michael.

At this moment, many cultivators had guessed Zhang Ruochen could defeat the gatekeeper of the ninth region because of the Profound Spatial Domain. This was something most cultivators had overlooked at the beginning.

Everyone knew that any power would be suppressed in the Sea of Truth, and the Path of the Ancients was no exception.

In the ninth region, Zhang Ruochen wasn't in a hurry to enter the tenth region. He observed Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and Qing Sixue from the sidelines instead.

Zhang Ruochen thought when he saw the Realm-frame of Truth behind Xiang Chunan and Qing Sixue, 'Chunan's master should be someone of a prominent figure in the Fane of Truth. No wonder he can engrave patterns containing the Path of Truth outside the Celestial Domain of Truth.'

Zhang Ruochen had already guessed Xiang Chu Nan's origin, and now it was undoubtedly confirmed.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen was quite surprised by the Realm-frame of Truth condensed by the three of them. If he could also do so, defeating the gatekeeper would have been a piece of cake.

Zhang Ruochen opened his Heaven's Eye and carefully observed the Realm-frame of Truth of the three of them. By doing so, he might be able to discover more mysteries from such a high-level Realm-frame of Truth.

There was no reason for him to let such a good opportunity slip.

Not long after, the Boat of Truth that Xiang Chunan and Feng Yan were on capsized one after another, and both of them fell into the sea. They had failed to cross the ninth region of the sea.

The reason was Xiang Chunan and Feng Yan's cultivation and strength were still lacking. They had not reached the pinnacle yet.

When they improved their cultivation, their chances of crossing the ninth region of the sea would be higher.

On the contrary, Qing Sixue became braver as she fought. She was on par with the gatekeeper and even gradually gained the upper hand.

Qing Sixue released an extremely domineering fist that combined with the Realm-frame of Truth. It was boundless and enveloped the gatekeeper.

Boom

The thick soil under the gatekeeper's feet immediately shattered.

The gatekeeper exploded instantly from the pressure and the battle came to an end.

"Three people successfully crossed the ninth region of the sea in a day. This has never happened since the establishment of the Celestial Court."

"A Supreme Saint who could cross the ninth region of the sea has never been known before. The Fane of Truth's foundation is unfathomable."

"I have a feeling that neither Zhang Ruochen nor the mysterious Supreme Saint has used their full strength yet. I wonder if they still have the strength to break through the tenth region of the sea."

…

On the coast, the cultivators from all realms were hyped and talking about it. Some were amazed and were looking forward to it.

Zhang Ruochen and Qing Sixue looked at each other and nodded slightly. Then, they drove the Boat of Truth and passed through the light screen in front of them at the same time.

It was the first time in the history of the Celestial Domain of Truth that two cultivators entered the tenth region of the Sea of Truth together.

The tenth region of the sea was different from the previous nine regions. The seawater had turned golden, and the suppression had multiplied. Even the Boat of Truth beneath Zhang Ruochen's feet jolted violently. It could no longer maintain absolute stability.

Because of this, most people could only advance a few kilometers after entering the tenth region of the sea and there are very few people who could advance more than five kilometers.

Nie Xiangzi is the only one among the Saint Kings who had traveled more than five kilometers in the last thousand years.

The suppression of the Path of Truth has become stronger. Even my perfected Swordsmanship can't exert much power here. I have to rely on the Realm-frame of Truth,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen had already felt the comprehensive suppression of this region of the sea on his body and spirit.

If he could not cultivate his body and spirit to the pinnacle of the Saint Kinghood, it would be difficult for him to control the Boat of Truth after entering this region of the sea.

In other words, if Zhang Ruochen did not go to the Imperial Ruler to comprehend the Path, he would not be able to make this far in the tenth region of the sea. Even if he was able to condense the Realm-frame of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the surrounding sea and whispered, "This sea is made up of the Precepts of Truth and contains endless mysteries. Comprehending the Path of Truth here would be more or less the same as in the Fane of Truth."

It was very difficult to even try to stay longer in the tenth region of the sea area.

Zhang Ruochen tried his best to control the Boat of Truth. As he slowly moved forward, he comprehended the Precepts of Truth in the sea.

In fact, after crossing three regions of the sea area in a row, Zhang Ruochen still received some other benefits besides not getting the Canon of Truth. The surge of the Precepts of Truth inside of him was a kind of alternative compensation he would accept.

At this rate, it was possible to cultivate the Path of Truth to the completion.

With Zhang Ruochen's talent in the Path of Truth and the thirty-nine out of ten thousand Canon of Truth inside of him, he was very efficient in comprehending the Path of Truth. One by one, the Precepts of Truth appeared in the Heavenly Stream.

Unknowingly, Zhang Ruochen had crossed 6 kilometers of the sea with the Boat of Truth, exceeding the record held by Nie Xiangzi.

"Qingyu, What do you think?" Nie Xiangzi asked faintly.

Just as Nie Xiangzi had said earlier, Zhang Ruochen had indeed surpassed all of them when crossing the Sea of Truth.

Dongfang Qingyu's eyes flashed with a cold light, but on the surface, he smiled faintly and said, "Brother Nie you have a good judge of character. I didn't expect Zhang Ruochen to be able to condense such a high-grade Profound Spatial Domain."

"There might be more things that were out of your expectations," Nie Xiangzi said.

Dongfang Qingyu waved his jade fan lightly. "Do you think Zhang Ruochen will be able to cross the tenth region?"

Even though Zhang Ruochen had crossed the ninth region—which was beyond Dongfang Qingyu's expectations—he refused to believe that Zhang Ruochen could cross the tenth region.

Even if Zhang Ruochen had condensed the top-notch Grade One Profound Spatial Domain, it would still not work against the gatekeepers of the tenth region.

In the past, all the thirteen Supreme Saints who had crossed the tenth region had condensed a Realm-frame of Truth that was at least 'Shoreless Star Ocean' form. Some had even condensed the 'Boundless Universe' form and had amazing achievements in other Paths, almost all of them were Masters of the Path of Ancients or had comparable power.

Crossing the ninth region of the sea without condensing a Realm-frame of Truth was already Zhang Ruochen's limit. He was destined to stop at the tenth region of the sea and couldn't reach the Mountain of Truth.

How could the Fane of Truth's reward, which could make even gods jealous, be easily obtained?

"Ruochen is still the best. It seems that the tenth region of the sea is still unable to stop him," Feng Yan said with a smile.

Although Feng Yan had failed to cross the sea, he was already quite satisfied that he was able to reach the ninth region of the sea. Next, he just needed to work harder and cultivate the Nüwa Scripture to a higher level. Then, he might be able to succeed in crossing the sea the next time.

Xiang Chunan laughed and said, "If he's not powerful, how could he be my big brother?"

"Chunan, what's the origin of you and Sixue? Why have you both condensed the Realm-frame of Truth? Also, how can Sixue be so much more powerful than you?" Feng Yan asked curiously.

Although Xiang Chunan had come into contact with Qing Sixue earlier than Zhang Ruochen, he didn't know Qing Sixue's true strength until he met her in the ninth region of the sea.

Xiang Chunan scratched his head hard and said, "We don't have any origins. The method of condensing the Realm-frame of Truth was taught by my master's wife."

"In the past, Sixue's strength was about the same as mine. But there was a time when she suddenly disappeared and was taken somewhere by my master's wife. When she came back, she was so powerful that I was no match for her."

Xiang Chunan himself was also unsure about what happened.

"What's her name and what does she look like?" Feng Xi suddenly asked.

Xiang Chunan thought for a moment and said, "I don't know her name. As for her appearance, of course, she looks exactly like Sixue. She used to be the number one beauty in the Celestial Court."

Feng Xi was stunned by Xiang Chunan's words. No matter what, she couldn't connect Qing Sixue to the most beautiful woman in the Celestial Court.

With Feng Xi's status, she was very familiar with many deities in the Fane of Truth. However, she didn't remember that there were female deities with a figure like Qing Sixue.

Of course, there were many deities in the Fane of Truth. Some of the ancient deities hadn't appeared for many years, so it was normal that she didn't recognize them.

However, Feng Xi was curious about Xiang Chunan's master and his wife and thought, 'Who were these two prominent figures that could nurture such an outstanding daughter and disciple in secret?'

In the blink of an eye, a day had passed. Qing Sixue had arrived at ten and a half kilometers in the tenth region. The Boat of Truth capsized at this moment and she failed to cross the sea.

In the next moment, Qing Sixue returned to the shore. She appeared very calm and did not feel disappointed after she failed to cross the sea.

Xiang Chunan immediately went up to her and said laughingly, "Sixue, you are amazing. You crossed the ninth region in an instant and entered the tenth region of the sea."

"That's right, Sixue. I admire you." Feng Yan could not help but give her a thumbs up.

Qing Sixue smiled warmly and said, "As long as both of your strengths improve a little more, you will also be able to cross the ninth region of the sea. I believe that this day won't be too far away."

"I admire Brother Zhang even more. He can cross the ninth region of the sea without the Realm-frame of Truth. Now, he is about to reach the pass of the tenth region of the sea. Perhaps he will be creating another miracle."

Qing Sixue looked at the Golden Sea as she spoke.

Zhang Ruochen's physique was not very tall, but he looked very majestic in the eyes of every cultivator.

Although many did not think highly of Zhang Ruochen, they were ambivalent and hoped that he could break the shackles.

After all, it would take many years for the Celestial Court to produce another Saint King as brilliant as Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 2179: The First Saint King Ascender in a 100,000 Years

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

The narrow Boat of Truth withstood the violent wind and waves and slowly moved forward. After spending an entire day, the Boat of Truth finally carried Zhang Ruochen to the pass of the tenth region of the sea.

This was the final pass. As long as he crossed it, he would be able to reach the Mountain of Truth and become a legend.

The light screen burst out with dazzling golden saint light. In an instant, it interweaved to form a 300 meters tall golden-armored saint guard. His body exuded a Saint Aura that was more powerful than that of an ordinary Supreme Saint.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the Boat of Truth and raised his head to look at the golden-armored saint guard. He felt a lot of pressure even with his strength. The saint guard's power was much stronger than that of the gatekeeper of the ninth region.

The golden-armored saint guard was majestic. His cold eyes stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, "I am your last opponent. Defeat me, and you can ascend the Mountain of Truth."

As he spoke, countless Precepts of Truth shot into the sky from the surrounding sea. They gathered behind the golden-armored saint guard and formed a vast starry sky, in which the golden light shone brilliantly.

'Just as I expected, the gatekeeper's Realm-frame of Truth of this region has risen to a whole new level. The suppression of external forces is even stronger,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

In his opinion, even if cultivators who had condensed the Realm-frame of Truth but had not reached the "Shoreless Star Ocean" grade, he would be mercilessly crushed here no matter how powerful he was.

Come to think of it, if it was not so difficult, how could only thirteen Supreme Saints have crossed the tenth region of the sea since the establishment of the Celestial Court?

Just as Zhang Ruochen was thinking, the gatekeeper made his move. His golden hand enlarged infinitely and fell from the sky, enveloping Zhang Ruochen completely.

Before the palm was pressed down, the seawater had begun to ripple. Waves of terrifying undercurrents surged and continuously attacked the Boat of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't afford to be careless. He released his spiritual power without holding back and carefully controlled the Boat of Truth to stabilize it.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen mobilized millions of powerful Precepts in him and threw a punch upward like lightning.

Rumble

The golden waves rolled, and dozens of water pillars wrapped around the huge fist. It rushed to the sky to meet the gatekeeper's big hand.

This fist contained invincible power. It turned from softest to hardest energy and seemed to be able to break the sky.

BANG!

The fist hit the golden hand, and the two powerful forces collided like two stars collided with each other.

Under the impact, huge waves rose thousands of meters high, and the entire sea shook.

However, under the suppression of the special rules, these violent forces vanished quickly.

'A full attack power with ten times stronger. Even an ordinary saint technique can burst with power comparable to the Path of the Ancients. Adding the Realm-frame of Truth, the Path of the Ancients will also be suppressed. No wonder no Saint King has been able to cross the tenth region of the sea for so many years.' Zhang Ruochen thought as his heart skipped a beat.

If a Saint King wanted to defeat the gatekeeper of the tenth region of the sea, he had to reach the pinnacles in all aspects. He had to condense the 'Shoreless Star Ocean' form or even the 'Boundless Universe' of the

Realm-frame of Truth. His techniques had to be strong enough, and it would be best if he cultivated other Paths of the Ancients as well.

BOOM!

The golden sea exploded, and countless heavenly and earthly precepts emerged. It condensed into ferocious beasts and pounced on Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed slightly. He immediately released the Profound Spatial Domain to counter the gatekeeper's Realm-frame of Truth.

Then, the sword soul rushed out of Zhang Ruochen. It was holding a saint sword condensed from the Precepts of Swordsmanship, and facing the ferocious beasts that rushed towards him.

With the help of Meritorious Sword-cleansing Essence, Zhang Ruochen had already raised his sword soul to the level of the Earth Sword Soul. As the realm of Swordsmanship improved, the sword soul constantly became stronger and stronger.

Especially after the Swordsmanship has been perfected, his sword soul has undergone a fundamental transformation, and its attack power was extremely terrifying.

'Even the 'Shoreless Star Ocean' form of Realm-frame of Truth couldn't suppress Zhang Ruochen. Could it be that he condensed a Grade-one Profound Spatial Domain?' Archangel Michael thought as his heart sank.

One had to use a higher level Paths of the Ancients if one wanted to compete with the gatekeeper's Realm-frame of Truth in the Sea of Truth.

However, it was hard for Archangel Michael to believe that Zhang Ruochen could condense the legendary Grade-one Profound Spatial Domain.

Even in the Fane of Dimension, not one person could successfully condense a Grade-one Profound Spatial Domain.

Still, Archangel Michael couldn't believe what just happened before his eyes.

After all, Zhang Ruochen couldn't be so calm and collected now if he did not have the Grade-one Profound Spatial Domain. Otherwise, he would most likely have been thrown into the sea by the gatekeeper.

What Zhang Ruochen condensed was indeed the Grade-one Profound Spatial Domain. If not, he wouldn't have the confidence to cross the tenth region of the Sea of Truth.

The so-called Grade-one referred to chaos. Zhang Ruochen was able to condense the Grade-one Profound Spatial Domain, which had a lot to do with his own Five-element Chaotic Body.

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen hadn't condensed the River of Time yet. If not, crossing the sea would be much easier.

The cultivation of the Path of Time to a certain extent could condense a true River of Time. It would be compatible with the River of Time that existed in the faraway. That way, the Power of Time can be better used.

If his realm was sufficient, he could even use the River of Time condensed by himself to enter the true River of Time and traverse time and space.

Saint Monk Xumi had once reached such a realm. He had arrived at different points in the future and became the Buddha of Future in the legends of Buddhism.

Zhang Ruochen relied on the Profound Spatial Domain to resist the suppression of the Realm-frame of Truth. Then he attacked with all his strength. He had performed various techniques of the Swordsmanship, the Path of Space, and the Path of Time to the fullest.

In the blink of an eye, he had fought thousands of rounds with the gatekeeper. Although he was not at a disadvantage, he did not gain the upper hand as well. The battle entered a stalemate.

At a certain moment, a large amount of Five-element Chaotic Qi surged from Zhang Ruochen. It condensed into a chaotic world of half-true and half-illusory behind him.

On a whim, Zhang Ruochen integrated the Canon of Truth and the Precepts of Truth that he had cultivated into the chaotic world.

As a result, the chaotic world immediately underwent a wonderful change. It became more and more obscure and mysterious as if it was about to evolve into a boundless universe.

'It seems that this method is feasible. Perhaps I can evolve it into my version of the Realm-frame of Truth based on the anomalies of the Five-element Chaotic Body,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

However, he also understood that although the idea was good, it was not easy to initiate it. He would need a lot of time to try and understand all the mysteries.

This was only a preliminary attempt at the moment. The Five-element Chaotic Body's phenomenon already had part of the characteristics of the Realm-frame of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen could feel that the suppression of the gatekeeper's Realm-frame of Truth had weakened significantly.

Under such circumstances, his Profound Spatial Domain gradually gained the upper hand.

'I can't maintain this state for too long, and might not be able to do it so smoothly next time. I have to finish this battle quickly.' Zhang Ruochen thought as his face turned fiercely serious.

He condensed the Power of Time with his left hand and the Power of Dimension with his right hand. When his hands joined together, and the two forces collided violently.

Under Zhang Ruochen's precise control, both the Power of Time and the Power of Dimension merged miraculously.

A silver light pierced the sky and broke through the powerful saint technique the gatekeeper had cast. Then, it slashed straight on his golden body.

BOOM!

The gatekeeper's body was extremely strong, and he resisted Zhang Ruochen's attack.

Zhang Ruochen was shocked by the rebound force and spat out blood. But his fighting spirit was high. he shouted, "Slash again!"

Boom

Another silver light slashed down.

"Again."

…

“Slash.”

Every time Zhang Ruochen struck, he would be rebounded by the gatekeeper’s power and spat out blood. However, the gatekeeper wasn’t in good condition as well. He was completely suppressed by Zhang Ruochen and cracks faintly appeared on his body.

When Zhang Ruochen struck out the seventy-first strike, the power in him was almost exhausted. Even the chaotic world behind him became tattered. Finally, the gatekeeper’s body was torn into two halves.

BOOM!

The chaotic world behind Zhang Ruochen also collapsed with a loud bang.

Zhang Ruochen could not control the forceful combination of the Path of Truth and the Five-element Chaotic Body phenomenon. He inevitably suffered a backlash. A large number of cracks appeared on his body, like a ceramic that was about to break.

Zhang Ruochen would care less about this. He smiled instead because he had succeeded in defeating the gatekeeper.

The gatekeeper’s tall body dissipated and turned into rays of golden saint light again, disappearing into the light screen in front of him.

Suddenly, a gentle power entered Zhang Ruochen and merged with the 144 acupoints in him, flowing through his Meridians and Saint Meridians.

“The first Saint King to pass through the ten regions of the sea since the establishment of the Celestial Court. Such a talented person. You shall be rewarded with 0.001 percent Canon of Truth.” An ethereal voice sounded in Zhang Ruochen’s mind.

Zhang Ruochen was slightly surprised. He had thought that he could no longer get the Canon of Truth after crossing the Sea of Truth. He did not expect to get 0.001 percent of it all at once.

After all, he had only gotten 0.001 percent Canon of Truth after crossing the first six regions of the sea.

Zhang Ruochen now had a total of 0.0049 percent Canon of Truth. On this basis, if he doubled it, he would be able to gather one percent and become the Envoy of Truth.

However, it was not easy to get the Canon of Truth next. Perhaps he could only plunder others Canon of Truth.

For the time being, Zhang Ruochen did not consider these things. For him, the additional 0.001 percent Canon of Truth was exactly what he needed right now. It would be very helpful for him to comprehend the Path and condense the Realm-frame of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the golden light screen in front of him, and he immediately rode the Boat of Truth and passed through it without any hesitation.

At this moment, all the cultivators gathered on the shore of the Sea of Truth couldn't help showing their stunned faces.

"Zhang Ruochen passed through the tenth region of the sea, and we witnessed a legend in-making."

"He had passed through the tenth region of the sea without condensing the Realm-frame of Truth. Just how powerful is Zhang Ruochen?"

"According to the ancient oracle of the Fane of Truth, he will be rewarded with a prize that the gods will be jealous. Wonder what will it be?"

…

Everyone wasn't able to calm down and they couldn't believe what they saw.

"Such a monster. He can even condense the Grade-one Profound Spatial Dimension. I am completely convinced." Qie Huairou shook her head.

There weren't many people that Qie Huairou would admire. However, Zhang Ruochen had undoubtedly become one of the people she admired the most.

Maiden of a Thousand Stars smiled and said, "Yan Wushen was known throughout the Infernal Court. He's the number one genius of the Yuanhui Tribulation and he's invincible in the same realm. If Zhang Ruochen can defeat him, then who can be better than him in the Yuanhui Tribulation? If he can't do it, who else could? Not to mention…"

Maiden of a Thousand Stars wanted to say that Zhang Ruochen also possessed many portions of Canon of Truth. With the boost of the Canon of Truth, it was easier to cross the Sea of Truth.

Of course, she could not say it out loud.

‘How can he succeed?’ Archangel Michael thought as his heart sank to the bottom.

Archangel Michael’s achievement was incomparable to Zhang Ruochen’s.

Dongfang Qingyu had mixed feelings, and he couldn’t say a word. He didn’t expect everything that Nie Xiangzi had mentioned to become true.

Nie Xiangzi wasn’t calm either. He felt Zhang Ruochen could get through it, but seeing Zhang Ruochen get through it with his own eyes was two completely different matters.

The so-called ten Divine Scions were the supreme geniuses of the Fane of Truth. They’d been trained to break through to the tenth region in every era.

Unfortunately, a cultivator who wasn’t a Divine Scion of the Fane of Truth succeded in what they couldn’t do.

It was a form of mockery and stimulus to the ten Divine Scions.

“The successor of Saint Monk Xumi and the one recognized by the Divine Sky-connecting Tree can’t be judged by common logic. Zhang Ruochen, could this day be the opening of your path to becoming a superior?” Fairy of a Hundred Flowers asked.

In the past, Zhang Ruochen could still be called a genius and a talent.

However, Zhang Ruochen could no longer be called that from this day onwards.

Zhang Ruochen, who had crossed the tenth region of the sea, could already be considered a powerhouse.

Xiang Chunan couldn’t help but laugh and say, “Brother, you are truly incredible. Who else could compare with you?”

“If he’s willing to join the Fane of Truth, many gods would take him as a disciple.” Feng Yan laughed.

Boom

Divine Lights flew out from the Fane of Truth one after another, turning into blurry divine shadows. They stood in the sky and looked at the back of the Golden Sea.

One of the Divine Shadows was standing on a seven-colored divine cloud. Seven-colored divine lights surrounded its body, and it exudes a cold and mighty divine power. It was none other than Empress Chi Yao.

Empress Chi Yao had never cultivated the Path of Truth before. She took the opportunity to meditate in the Fane of Truth since the divine war between the Celestial Court and the Infernal Court hadn't broken out yet.

The Fane of Truth didn't have many restrictions on deities. As long as they were deities from the subordinate worlds of the Celestial Court, they could come and comprehend the Path.

With the comprehension ability of gods, it was undoubtedly much easier to comprehend the Path of Truth than Sainthood cultivators.

A deity's ability to comprehend the Path of Truth was undoubtedly much easier than those Saint realm cultivators.

"It's not easy to cross the tenth region of the sea. However, it's not that easy to get the Fane of Truth's reward," Empress Chi Yao whispered.

As a deity, Empress Chi Yao knew something that many Saint realm cultivators didn't.

Swoosh

A towering figure appeared 300 meters away from Empress Chi Yao. Its body was as big as a primordial demon mountain. It had a pair of horns on its head, and its body was filled with terrifying, ink-like Demonic Qi. Each strand could crush the world.

The demon god said, "Empress Chi Yao, don't you think it's a pity? You have driven a peerless genius out of Kunlun, and he became the Divine Envoy of Moon Goddess. I've also heard some rumors. It's said that your relationship with him is not ordinary, and you even gave birth to him…"

Empress Chi Yao's eyes suddenly became extremely cold, and her body revealed traces of killing intent. She said, "Blackheart Demonlord, are you desperate to die in my hands?"

Blackheart Demonlord had betrayed Kunlun and was willing to be Heavenly Realm's lackey. He was even involved in cutting off the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. Such an act was more hateful than the gods of Heavenly Realm.

If there was a chance, Empress Chi Yao would find a way to kill Blackheart Demonlord.

Blackheart Demonlord didn't care about Empress Chi Yao's threat. He sneered. "You can't kill me even if you wanted to. Kunlun is at stake. How long can you keep up with your arrogance?"

I must say that Zhang Ruochen is a smart kid. He left Kunlun early and joined the Guanghan Realm. Then, Moon Goddess became his patron, so he didn't have to wait for death like the other cultivators of Kunlun. This is how a talented person is free to choose his boss. I kind of admire him a little."

"Admire? It seems that you all from Blackdemon Realm haven't suffered enough in Zhang Ruochen's hands. You must be dreaming for wanting the Demonstone Engraving," Empress Chi Yao said indifferently.

Although the Blackheart Demonlord had survived the Yuanhui Tribulation, he hadn't grasped the canon of it. However, once he got the Demonstone Engraving, the situation would be different.

Once the Blackheart Demonlord grasped the canon, he could survive the Yuanhui Tribulation two to three times. He would become stronger and harder to deal with.

The Blackheart Demonlord snorted and didn't say anything more. He looked toward the Mountain of Truth and terrifying killing intent flashed in his eyes.

Back then, Zhang Ruochen had made him lose face on Mount Yueshen. After that, he had continuingly ruined the plans of the Blackdemon Realm, which was hateful.

If Blackheart Demonlord had the chance, he wouldn't mind lowering his status by killing Zhang Ruochen himself.

As for admiration…

Unless Zhang Ruochen became his disciple and that was more like it.

….

Chapter 2180: The First Realm-frame Was Formed

As Zhang Ruochen passed through the light screen, the black Mountain of Truth was standing before his eyes. Its majestic aura had a huge impact on his mind. It was completely different from the feeling he had when he was looking at the shore of the Sea of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen felt great pressure before he had climbed up the mountain. His saint soul and the Heavenly Stream were trembling. They were almost collapsing under the pressure.

The Mountain of Truth was extremely lofty. It was tens of thousands of meters high and towered into the clouds. Countless Precepts were winding around it. Facing it was like facing the supreme Truth of heaven and earth. Even if a god came, he would probably be in awe of it.

“It seems that the reward of the Fane of Truth isn’t easy to get. Crossing ten regions of the sea are just a foundation. Whether I can climb up the Mountain of Truth is the key,” Zhang Ruochen said in a low voice.

Many people thought the greatest difficulty in getting the reward of the Fane of Truth was to cross the ten regions of the sea, but they did not know it was even more difficult to reach the top of the Mountain of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen believed that the so-called ascent to the Mountain of Truth was not just about reaching the foot of the mountain. Perhaps he had to reach the top of it.

Zhang Ruochen drove the Boat of Truth under great pressure with all his strength and finally got close to the Mountain of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen moved in a flash. He left the Boat of Truth and landed on a skerry.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen felt his Saint Qi stagnate, and its circulation speed became extremely slow. Even the Heavenly Stream seemed to have solidified. No matter how strong he was, he couldn’t perform at all.

Zhang Ruochen tried to perform the Profound Spatial Domain, but he failed. All the Paths that he had cultivated were completely suppressed at this point.

As a result, he couldn’t even move an inch, let alone reach the top of the mountain.

Was it because I haven’t condensed the Realm-frame of Truth?’ Zhang Ruochen had an epiphany.

Since it was a trial formulated by the Fane of Truth, the Path of Truth would be crucial. It was no wonder that the foundation of crossing the sea from the ninth region was to condense the Realm-frame of Truth.

Relying on an ordinary Realm-frame of Truth was impossible to resist the suppression of the Mountain of Truth.

Although Zhang Ruochen had found a way, he couldn’t condense a superior Realm-frame of Truth in a short time.

Zhang Ruochen involuntarily frowned slightly, and he had already climbed the Mountain of Truth. Should he give up here?

“I can’t believe that the first Saint King to cross the tenth region of the sea since the establishment of the Celestial Court isn’t a Divine Scion trained by the Fane of Truth.”

At this moment, a slightly emotional voice sounded.

At the same time, golden mist rose from the sea and covered the Mountain of Truth. Even the deities couldn’t peep.

Zhang Ruochen raised his head and looked up at the top of the mountain.

At some point, a tall figure appeared at the top of the mountain. The figure looked like a god or a demon as if it could illuminate the heavens, and the Precepts of heaven and earth revolved around it.

Although the tall figure didn’t emit the slightest powerful aura, Zhang Ruochen could sense he was a deity.

Zhang Ruochen bowed and said, “Greetings, senior. My name is Zhang Ruochen.”

“You’re indeed amazing for crossing ten regions of the sea,” the tall figure said. “But whether you can get the Fane of Truth’s reward depends on your ability.”

Zhang Ruochen quickly said, “Please give me some pointers, senior.”

Since Zhang Ruochen had the chance, he had to fight for it no matter what.

“The Fane of Truth’s reward is on the top of the mountain. Before ascending to the top of the mountain, you’ll need to fulfill two conditions. The first condition is to condense the ‘Shoreless Star Ocean’ form or even the ‘Boundless Universe’ form of the Realm-frame of Truth,” the tall figure said.

Zhang Ruochen was struck by its words and his eyes narrowed. It was as he had expected.

Even the Divine Scions trained by the Fane of Truth couldn’t form the ‘Shoreless Star Ocean’, and not to mention the ‘Boundless universe’ form. It was too difficult for someone like him who hadn’t been taught the secret technique to condense a superior-class Realm-frame of Truth.

It wasn’t easy to form a superior-class Realm-frame of Truth. Even with the secret technique of the Fane of Truth, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t condense successfully in a short time.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen was confident in doing it, but he needed more time.

Unfortunately, what he lacked the most now was time. The Central Imperial City was at stake, and he could not stay here forever.

“If you are willing to join the Fane of Truth, I can take you in as my disciple and teach you the secret technique of forming the Realm-frame of Truth,” the tall figure said.

If it were anyone else, they would have been extremely excited and agreed without hesitation.

After all, a deity who appeared on the Mountain of Truth was not ordinary. He must have a very high position in the Fane of Truth.

To join the Fane of Truth under such a deity, he would be able to enjoy all kinds of treatment, which was much better than ordinary Divine Scions.

However, Zhang Ruochen fell into silence. If he became a disciple of the Fane of Truth, he wouldn’t need to wait until now.

He still had many things to do. If he became a disciple of the Fane of Truth, he would be bound and wouldn’t be able to do as he pleased.

After waiting for a while, the tall figure said again, “It’s not easy to cross the ten regions of the seas. I’ll give you a chance.”

After that, ten rays of divine light fell from the top of the mountain and appeared in front of Zhang Ruochen. They turned into ten Godstones.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the ten Godstones in front of him, his heart suddenly jumped. He couldn’t help but look upwards. The tall figure on the top of the mountain had disappeared without a trace.

The other party’s intention was clear. He wanted him to cultivate here for ten years with the help of the Sundial.

During the Battle of Luoshui, Zhang Ruochen had used the Sundial to fight against Yan Wushen’s evil counterpart. The Sundial’s secret had been exposed at that time.

‘With the special environment of the Mountain of Truth and the forty-nine out of ten thousand Canons of Truth, I’ll give it a try and might be able to condense a superior Realm-frame of Truth in ten years.’ Zhang Ruochen thought and decided in an instant.

Zhang Ruochen would get great benefits if he could cultivate in the Mountain of Truth for ten years, and there was no reason for him to refuse.

Zhang Ruochen did not hesitate. He immediately took out the Sundial and inserted it into the Godstone. He could not wait to begin comprehending the Path of Truth.

The more Precepts of Truth he cultivated, the more helpful it would be for him to condense the Realm-frame of Truth.

Many cultivators on the shore of the Sea of Truth looked disappointed. The Mountain of Truth was shrouded in a golden mist, and they could no longer see Zhang Ruochen’s situation.

“Sister, do you know what the reward mentioned in the oracle is?” Feng Yan asked curiously.

Feng Xi shook her head and said, “The oracle was personally promulgated by the lord of the Fane of Truth. Very few people know the inside story. Master may know it, but he doesn’t want to reveal it.”

Feng Xi thought that the reward that could make even deities jealous was probably a large number of Canons of Truth. After all, even the deities only

had a small number of canons, not to mention the canons of the Path of Ancients.

In the past, the thirteen Supreme Saints who ascended the Mountain of Truth all obtained a large number of Canons of Truth. From there, they became Envoys of Truth. Before they became gods, they were already on par with deities.

After they became gods, they became powerful figures who could shake heaven and earth.

However, Feng Xi thought otherwise. If the rewards were the same, why would the Fane of Truth issue such an oracle?

“I wonder when our brother will return from the Mountain of Truth. I’m still waiting for him to drink with me,” Xiang Chunan muttered.

He didn’t think too much about it. It seemed that nothing was more important than drinking.

The news that Zhang Ruochen had crossed the tenth region of the Sea of Truth spread like wildfire in a short time to all directions. It caused a huge uproar.

Even the deities had paid attention to Zhang Ruochen.

In addition, the leaders of the Saint Kinghood from all realms were all feeling great pressure. They felt the gap between them and Zhang Ruochen was widening further.

First, there was Yan Wushen, and now there was Zhang Ruochen. It was hard to say whether it was lucky or sad that he was born in this era.

Most people cared about what kind of reward Zhang Ruochen could get from the Fane of Truth at this moment.

Zhang Ruochen was already invincible below the Supreme Saint realm. Would he become more powerful if he got the reward that could make the deities fear him?

In the blink of an eye, ten days had passed.

The number of cultivators gathered in the Sea of Truth had greatly decreased. No one knew what Zhang Ruochen was doing in the Mountain of Truth. Naturally, there was no need to wait here.

Moreover, it was still a question whether Zhang Ruochen would appear on the shore of the Sea of Truth in the future.

Xiang Chunan, Feng Yan, and the others did not leave. They seemed to be very patient. Anyway, no matter where Zhang Ruochen would appear, he would come to find them.

At the edge of the Mountain of Truth, Zhang Ruochen was fully immersed in his cultivation. Behind him was a hazy world. The Five-element Chaotic Qi was surging inside, and countless light spots were flashing. They were like small stars.

This world didn't seem big, but it gave people a boundless feeling. It was extending all the time.

When the Sundial stopped running, Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes. The hazy world behind him shook, and it revealed billions of different forms of words that explained the truth of the world vividly.

A faint smile appeared in Zhang Ruochen's eyes. He said softly, "It's done. Using the Five-element Chaotic Body as the foundation, I've finally condensed my Realm-frame of Truth."

Since he hadn't mastered the secret technique of the Fane of Truth, the Realm-frame of Truth that Zhang Ruochen had condensed was different from the ordinary Realm-frame of Truth. It could be said to be unique.

Under normal circumstances, even if he performed the Realm-frame of Truth, most people wouldn't be able to recognize it. They would still think it was the Five-element Chaotic Body.

It wasn't wrong to think this way. The hazy world behind Zhang Ruochen was a combination of the Realm-frame of Truth and the anomaly. There were many inexplicable mysteries.

Zhang Ruochen's Five-element Chaotic Body had changed due to the combination. It became stronger and could compact part of the Neverwither physique.

Zhang Ruochen felt much relaxed after obtaining the Realm-frame of Truth, and the suppression from the Mountain of Truth was greatly weakened.

'Although my Realm-frame of Truth is different from the ordinary ones, it should not be worse than the 'Shoreless Star Ocean' form. Now that I have

fulfilled the first condition. I wonder what the second condition is?' Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

He raised his head and looked up at the top of the mountain, but he did not see the tall figure.

After thinking for a while, he waved his hand and put away the Sundial. Then he stood up and began to climb the mountain.

The dimensions on the Mountain of Truth were completely frozen. There is no way Zhang Ruochen could fly in the sky, so he could only ascend on foot.

At first, Zhang Ruochen was climbing very fast. However, after he climbed to a certain height, his speed gradually slowed down. It felt like a primordial divine mountain was pressing down on him. His footsteps were extremely heavy.

After an unknown amount of time, Zhang Ruochen finally arrived at the mountainside. He almost collapsed to the ground and could not move a single step.

"It's impressive how you can condense the Realm-frame of Truth on your own. Now, as long as you fulfill the second condition, you can go to the top of the mountain and hope to get the reward." The ethereal voice sounded again.

Zhang Ruochen raised his head and saw the tall figure again. He couldn't help but ask, "Senior, what's the second condition?"

"The completion of the Saint Kinghood," the tall figure answered succinctly.

A strange light flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes. He knew what the completion of the Saint Kinghood meant. He had to cultivate 100 million Precepts just like Yan Wushen.

Everyone knew how difficult it was to achieve such a goal.

Even Yan Wushen had to walk on that extremely difficult and dangerous path to succeed.

Throughout the history of Celestial and Infernal Courts, a perfect Saint King might not even appear in a Yuanhui Tribulation.

In a sense, it was even more difficult to complete the cultivation of a Saint Kinghood than to become a god.

According to legends, if one could complete the cultivation of a Saint Kinghood, he would be able to compete with a Supreme Saint in the Hundred-Shackle Realm.

Zhang Ruochen's Precepts were close to 100 million and he only needed tens of thousands more. However, he couldn't predict how much time it would take to cultivate them.

"This time, I'll give you twenty years to do so. If you can't succeed, it only means you're not destined to receive the reward," the tall figure said indifferently.

Before he finished speaking, twenty rays of divine lights fell from the top of the mountain.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't in a hurry to collect the Godstones in front of him. He asked instead, "Senior, what's the situation in the Central Imperial City of Kunlun?"

"Is the matter in Kunlun more important than your great opportunity?" The tall figure asked rhetorically.

Zhang Ruochen said in a low voice, "Of course the opportunity is equally important, but there are people and things in Kunlun that I care about. I can't just cast them aside."

The figure was silent for a moment and said, "Don't worry. The Central Imperial City is safe for the time being. If something happens, I can send you back."

Zhang Ruochen felt relieved after hearing what the tall figure said. He quickly answered, "Thank you, senior."

This way, he didn't have to worry about anything, and he could focus on comprehending the Path on the Mountain of Truth.

Completing the cultivation of the Saint Kinghood in 20 years seems surreal. If he didn't try, how would he know?

Zhang Ruochen had never backed down no matter what happened.

Chapter 2181: The Completed Saint Kinghood Cultivation

Zhang Ruochen put aside his distracting thoughts and sat down cross-legged and he seized the time to comprehend the Path. He didn't want to miss the great opportunity of the Fane of Truth no matter what.

However, it wasn't easy to complete the cultivation of the Saint Kinghood as it entails great danger.

Many geniuses tried to break through the completion of the Saint Kinghood in the past. However, they all ended up in a miserable state. Some of their cultivation fell back, and some died from it.

As time went by, fewer and fewer people took this route, and the completion of the Saint Kinghood became nothing but a legend.

If not, Yin Yuanchen wouldn't be so shocked previously when he saw Yan Wushen's breakthrough.

A peerless genius like Yan Wushen who could only be born in an era would have to walk on an extremely dangerous path and spend nearly a thousand years to reach the completion of the Saint Kinghood. The difficulty of this could be seen clearly.

Under normal circumstances, when one's cultivation reached the Path's Anterior realm, the number of Precepts would reach 30 million. After that, the difficulty of cultivating the Precepts would gradually increase. Those who could reach more than 90 million were extremely rare.

The more Precepts one had, the harder it was to control them. The slightest carelessness could break the balance and hurt oneself.

Zhang Ruochen's main issue now was his cultivation and body had reached the limit. It was easy for him to break through to the Supreme Saint realm.

There were only tens of thousands of Precepts left. Zhang Ruochen chose to cultivate them selectively. He decided to focus on the three Paths of the Ancients, three Paths of Supreme Saints, and the Path of Five-Element. Of course, it includes various Paths related to them.

There was a saying that time flies when you cultivate. Especially when one was completely immersed in cultivation, one couldn't feel the passage of time.

Zhang Ruochen shook violently suddenly. His blood flow became unstable and caused him to spit out a mouthful of blood.

“I was too hasty. The further I go, the more I need to be careful,” Zhang Ruochen said in a low voice.

He wanted to break through the shackles in one go, but it was obvious he thought everything was too simple. That was how he tasted the painful consequence.

The closer he was to the completion of the Saint Kinghood, the more cautious he had to be in cultivating each Precept. It was important to know that one wrong move and things could go wrong. The details were the key to success or failure.

Zhang Ruochen was forced to stop cultivating temporarily. He circulated the Empyrean Emperor Ming’s Scripture and absorbed the essence of the Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi’s Sun Leaf to heal his injuries. At the same time, he thought about how to cultivate next.

After some time, Zhang Ruochen completely healed his injuries and returned to his peak condition.

My advantage is that with six Saint Aspects, I can control the Precepts more easily than ordinary people and Yan Wushen should be the same as me.

But at the same time, the six Saint Aspects have separated the Precepts into individuals. Each of them is in charge of their affairs. It’s much more difficult to maintain perfect harmony and absolute balance.

Fortunately, I created the Heavenly Stream and connected the six Saint Aspects. Otherwise, it would be troublesome now.’

Zhang Ruochen analyzed his situation seriously after the healing.

Only by fully understanding his situation could Zhang Ruochen find the crux of the problem and solve it in a targeted way.

Maybe I can use the Realm-frame of Truth to suppress myself,’ Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen was unsure whether this method was feasible, but it was still a method that he could try.

Zhang Ruochen immediately took action. Nearly a million Precept of Truth, along with the majestic Five-element Chaotic Qi, surged from his body. They interweaved with each other and quickly formed a hazy chaotic world.

Buzz
An invisible wave appeared as Zhang Ruochen's Realm-frame of Truth resonated with the Mountain of Truth.

A vast starry sky shone above the Mountain of Truth. There were billions of stars in it. Each star was formed from strange words and shone with boundless saint light.

At the edge of the starry sky, there was endless chaos. It was inexplicably expanding.

Although Zhang Ruochen had successfully condensed the Realm-frame of Truth at the foot of the mountain. He had finally used it and made it fully manifest now.

Chaos contained everything and had infinite possibilities. Thus, the Realm-frame of Truth that Zhang Ruochen had condensed was also the same. It could evolve and transform continuously. No one could be sure what it would eventually look like.

On the top of the mountain, the tall figure reappeared. The tall figure looked up at the stars in the sky and was surprised by what he had seen. 'It changes all the time. What a special Realm-frame of Truth. Could it transform into the 'Boundless Universe' in the future?' the tall figure thought.

Once a cultivator's Realm-frame of Truth was formed, it would take shape under normal circumstances.

Take the 'Lands Down Below' formed by Archangel Michael as an example. No matter how much his Path of Truth improved in the future and how strong his cultivation became, or even if he became a god, his Realm-frame of Truth would still be the 'Lands Down Below' form. It wouldn't become the "Shoreless Star Ocean".

From the tall figure's point of view, Zhang Ruochen's Realm-frame of Truth should be the same as the 'Shoreless Star Ocean'. However, it seemed that there was still room for growth and it was not fully formed yet.

The reason could only be that Zhang Ruochen did not use the secret method of the Fane of Truth to form the Realm-frame of Truth. He relied on his exploration instead.

However, this method of forming the Realm-frame of Truth was unperfect. Even if he taught others the method, it would be difficult for them to imitate.

“It’s a good idea to use the Realm-frame of Truth to suppress oneself. I hope this little guy can succeed. Otherwise, it might take another Yuanhui Tribulation,” the tall figure said softly.

If it were not for his talent, the tall figure wouldn’t provide Zhang Ruochen with Godstones, even though those dozens of Godstones were not very valuable in her eyes.

Zhang Ruochen had been given the opportunity. Whether he could seize it or not, it all depends on his ability.

Zhang Ruochen’s mind was completely immersed in the Divine Light Sea of Qi and he didn’t notice the abnormality in the sky. He tried his best to condense new Precepts on his own.

The Realm-frame of Truth was indeed extraordinary. It suppressed the Heavenly Stream and made it extremely stable. Dozens of Precepts were added in succession, and there was no big movement.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen was not careless. He mobilized all his spiritual power and carefully observed the situation of the Heavenly Stream. He did his best to make the structure of the Precepts perfect.

Later, Zhang Ruochen used the Profound Spatial Dimension and combined it with the Realm-frame of Truth.

He did not forget anything that could be helpful to cultivate and use treasures like the Secret Tome of Time and Space, the Zangshan Demonic Mirror, and the Golden Sun of Destruction.

Even so, Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation still didn’t go smoothly. He vomited blood many times and suffered the backlash of some kind of Precept power. There were even two times when his sea of Qi had cracked and was almost destroyed.

If the Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi’s Sun Leaf didn’t contain magical power and kept healing his injured body, he might have already suffered injuries from the Paths and ruined his future.

Boom
A powerful aura surged from Zhang Ruochen's body.

An extremely tall and mighty phantom of a divine demon appeared. Under his feet was a vast hell and Evil Aura kept emerging. Countless evil spirits were roaring inside, but they were suppressed by it and couldn't break free.

I didn't expect to take this opportunity to successfully cultivate the third level of the Incarceration of Divine Demon. I've reached the level of the Neverwither Saint Technique.' Zhang Ruochen was delighted.

Ever since Zhang Ruochen obtained the Incarceration of Divine Demon, he'd started to comprehend and cultivate it. But before that, he'd only cultivated the second level, which meant he'd reached the mid-level. It didn't mean much to him, so he'd never used it in battle.

Until now, he had finally cultivated the third level as he wished. Its power was comparable to the twelfth move of the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike and the eleventh level of the Luoshui Fist Technique.

Zhang Ruochen cultivated the divine technique at this time mainly because he felt that this technique could help him suppress the Precepts in the Heavenly Stream.

It turned out that the suppression effect was indeed very effective.

Although Zhang Ruochen didn't cultivate the demonic techniques, he could use the Five-element Chaotic Qi to perform the Incarceration of Divine Demon. It was also powerful and not weaker than the Demonic Apocalyptic Qi.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen's body trembled. Many cracks appeared on the surface of his body. He's like a broken porcelain bottle, and his saint blood kept seeping out.

Then, an extremely powerful force burst out from his body as if it was tearing his body apart.

Puff
Zhang Ruochen spat out blood and almost fell to the ground.

He took out a bottle of Spring of Life and gulped down all of it. After that, Zhang Ruochen activated the Empyrean Emperor Ming's Scripture to heal himself.

After a long time, Zhang Ruochen's breathing gradually stabilized. He finally resolved the danger of exploding his body. At the same time, the cracks on his body healed at a speed visible to the naked eye.

"It's very dangerous to break through to the completion of the Saint Kinghood. No wonder few people have dared to try it since the Middle Ages." Zhang Ruochen's eyes showed a hint of seriousness.

It was really dangerous just now and he had almost lost control of his power. His body would be destroyed, even if he could save his Saint Soul.

Fortunately, he stopped in time and drank a large amount of the Spring of Life, which saved him from danger.

"I must continue. If I don't reach the completion of the Saint Kinghood, how can I fight with Yan Wushen? How can I save Kunlun?" Zhang Ruochen's eyes showed determination.

Since Yan Wushen could succeed, how could Zhang Ruochen not?

Zhang Ruochen adjusted his state again and began to break through once more.

Zhang Ruochen kept trying and experiencing dangers again and again, but he never gave up.

He knew that if he retreated now, there would be a huge flaw in his state of mind and he would never be able to complete it.

Crack
Zhang Ruochen's body was full of cracks once again. The saint blood soaked through his clothes and turned him into a bloody man.

The situation was also in a mess in the Divine Light Sea of Qi. The Heavenly Stream seemed to be unstable. As if it could collapse at any time, and the six Saint Aspects were affected.

Even if the Heavenly Stream wasn't destroyed, many of the Precepts would be erased and the foundation of the Path would be damaged if this continued.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't stop this time. He still chose to break through.

"Success or failure depends on this. God-Defiance Stele, suppress it."

Zhang Ruochen roared in his heart.

An ancient remnant stele appeared out of thin air in the Divine Light Sea of Qi, hovering above the Heavenly Stream.

The invisible power spread and the entire Divine Light Sea of Qi seemed to fall into a state of stillness. The Heavenly Stream, which was on the verge of collapse, calmed down.

Taking this opportunity, Zhang Ruochen concentrated all his strength in the Heavenly Stream to condense new Precepts.

Rumble
A vast river surged out of Zhang Ruochen's body. It was completely composed of Precepts.

There were 100 million Precepts in this river. Each Precept was thick and solid.

As soon as it appeared, the Precepts and Saint Qi of heaven and earth gathered like stars surrounding the Moon.

Zhang Ruochen was covered in blood. He looked scary, but he was smiling. He couldn't hide his joy.

"I've succeeded. I've been injured dozens of times in nineteen years, and it's all worth it." Zhang Ruochen's eyes were filled with excitement.

The tall figure stood at the top of the mountain and looked down at Zhang Ruochen, "I didn't expect him to succeed in 20 years," she said. "He even cultivated eleven types of Path to completion. Even in ancient times, he's still amazing."

Zhang Ruochen had completed the Saint Kinghood's cultivation, and the tall figure was the only witness.

If this information was not leaked, no one would know his secret before Zhang Ruochen made his move. This was also a trump card.

Zhang Ruochen had completed many Paths' cultivation. They were the Path of Time, Path of Dimension, Path of Truth, Path of Swordsmanship, Path of Fist, Path of Palm, and Path of Five-element. Including three Path of the Ancients and eight Path of Supreme Saint. If it was spread out, no one would believe it.

Zhang Ruochen had undoubtedly surpassed Yan Wushen in the number of Paths that he had cultivated completely.

In the vast river of Precepts, two invisible vortexes rotated slowly. Even on the Mountain of Truth, it still twisted a small area of time and space, as if it was connected to the future.

Millions of Precepts of Truth condensed into a thick book that carried all the truth in the world. It contained endless knowledge and explained the mysteries of the universe.

The Precepts of Swordsmanship turned into a saint sword, the Precepts of Fist turned into a surging river, and the Precepts of Palm turned into a dragon and an elephant. All in the form of a Saint Aspect.

As for the five million Precepts of Five-Element, they interweaved with each other and created a Five-Element Heaven Plate. It rotated slowly and evolved into various mysteries of the five elements that complemented and countered each other.

“There seemed to be a very special power fluctuation just now. It feels familiar. It seems that Zhang Ruochen has many secrets,” the tall figure thought.

If Zhang Ruochen had heard this, he would have reacted immediately. The power fluctuation sensed by the tall figure was the God-Defiance Stele.

Fortunately, he only let the God-Defiance Stele appear for a moment and tried his best to hide its aura. He put it away as soon as he made the breakthrough. Otherwise, it would have been exposed by now.

The God-Defiance Stele was too special. Once it was exposed, it would bring him great trouble. Even deities would attack him without any regard for the face.

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath. He circulated his techniques and pulled all the Precepts back into him.

Now, he could be considered to be standing at the pinnacles of the Saint Kinghood. His strength had reached the limit. If he wanted to improve further, he would have to break through to the Supreme Saint realm.

…

Chapter 2182: The Heart of Truth

Zhang Ruochen spent three days healing his wound completely. His physique and Saint Soul had become stronger after some repeated tempering. Even his spiritual power had been condensed again. He had reached a new pinnacle in all aspects.

Zhang Ruochen could feel the changes in him and it seemed to be an endless power within. He felt that even if there was a Primordial Divine Mountain in front of him, he could smash it with one punch.

Yan Wushen, I'm looking forward to fighting you at the pinnacle.' A strong fighting spirit emerged from Zhang Ruochen.

A fight between two perfect Saint Kings had probably never happened before.

After all, such peerless geniuses were the absolute protagonist of an era. It was difficult for them to be born in the same era.

Zhang Ruochen collected his thoughts and stood up. He moved in a flash and climbed to the top of the mountain. He was more concerned about the Fane of Truth's reward now than ever.

In any case, he had completed two extremely harsh conditions and was qualified to receive the reward that even the deities were jealous of.

It didn't take long for Zhang Ruochen to reach the top of the mountain.

At the same time, the steady flowing Heavenly River suddenly moved. It flowed faster and huge waves were rolling.

The Weak Water surged, and a huge water pillar rushed out. It formed a tall and sturdy giant in armor. Its body emitted a majestic divine might that was as vast as the abyss.

The giant cast its gaze towards the direction of the Celestial Domain of Truth, and muttered, "Was it that little fellow who caused the abnormal flow of the Heavenly River? Interesting. He managed to climb up the Mountain of Truth."

The Weak Water giant took a step and left the Heavenly River. It crossed the vast heavenly domain and rushed towards the Celestial Domain of Truth.

Empress Chi Yao and Blackheart Demonlord were on the shore of the Sea of Truth. There were strange looks on their faces suddenly.

“Not bad. Zhang Ruochen was able to reach the top of the Mountain of Truth,” Blackheart Demonlord said coldly.

Although the Mountain of Truth was shrouded in a golden haze, it was not difficult for a deity to sense Zhang Ruochen’s location.

However, Blackheart Demonlord was not pleased with the outcome.

‘Could that kid be rewarded by the Fane of Truth?’ Blackheart Demonlord thought as he frowned slightly.

With the enmity between the Blackdemon Realm and Zhang Ruochen, Blackheart Demonlord did not want Zhang Ruochen to receive too many benefits.

On the other hand, Empress Chi Yao was very calm. She looked at the Mountain of Truth indifferently. No one knew what she was thinking.

Whoosh
Rays of divine light tore through the sky and transformed into majestic divine figures.

“Greetings, Master.”

Fairy of a Hundred Flowers greeted a divine figure enveloped by a rain of flowers and bowed respectfully.

To be addressed as master by Fairy of a Hundred Flowers, it was naturally the Mandala Goddess of the Qianrui Realm, an extremely powerful ancient god.

Fairy of a Hundred Flowers was surprised to see the arrival of her master. After all, with her master’s status, she rarely cared about these things.

The Mandala Goddess was among the flowers and no one could see her true form. As soon as she arrived, a strange fragrance of flowers filled the air and soothes everyone’s heart.

“The Fane of Truth’s oracle has been issued for more than one Yuanhui Tribulation. Now, someone has finally met the conditions to become the first-tier below the Supreme Sainthood of Celestial Court. Zhang Ruochen is indeed very capable,” Mandala Goddess praised.

Although Zhang Ruochen was still very weak, anyone could see that he had endless potential. As long as he continued to grow, he had a high chance of becoming a prominent figure that could shock the entire universe.

At this moment, a cold divine moon rose in the sky and illuminated the entire Celestial Domain of Truth. Everyone could see it.

“The Moon Goddess has arrived.”

All the deities present turned their heads.

Everyone wasn’t surprised by the Moon Goddess’s arrival. After all, it would be strange if she didn’t come when such a huge event had happened.

Under everyone’s gaze, a peerlessly beautiful figure walked over from the distant horizon. With each step she took, she could travel billions of kilometers.

In the blink of an eye, the Moon Goddess had arrived at the Sea of Truth. Her peerless beauty was breathtaking. Even the gods couldn’t help but take a few more glances at her.

“Zhang Ruochen has crossed the ten regions of the sea and reached the Mountain of Truth. From now on, the Guanghan Realm will have a spot to cultivate in the Celestial Domain of Truth every day. Congratulations, Moon Goddess.”

“Congratulations, Moon Goddess.”

A group of deities came forward and congratulated the Moon Goddess one after another.

“It’s a shame that Zhang Ruochen—who belonged to Kunlun—was forced to leave and join the Guanghan Realm. Otherwise, Kunlun would have a large number of places to cultivate in the Celestial Domain of Truth.” Blackheart Demonlord shook his head.

Blackheart Demonlord’s words were meant for Empress Chi Yao.

However, Empress Chi Yao didn’t react at all. It was as if she hadn’t heard anything. Her eyes were still calm.

Boom

The void shook violently as an extremely majestic blood-red temple building appeared in the Celestial Domain of Truth.

At the same time, the Weak Water giant in the Heavenly River also appeared out of thin air.

“The guardian of Heavenly River and Jiatianxia has come as well. The Celestial Domain of Truth hasn’t been this lively in a long time.”

Many deities had strange looks in their eyes.

The deity guarding Heavenly River had a special identity and was extremely powerful. It had authorities in the Celestial Palace, and not many people dared to provoke it.

Jiatianxia was the lord of the Fane of Bloody War. He was a powerful ancient god of the same era as the Moon Goddess. He was also very frightening.

“Moon Goddess, you do care about Zhang Ruochen and protect him no matter what. You’ve even shown your presence in the Celestial Domain of Truth with your true form.” A vast and ancient voice came from the blood-red temple building.

The Moon Goddess said calmly, “It is not your place to question my affairs.”

Then, she looked around and exclaimed, “From this day forward, Zhang Ruochen will be the fourth prominent figure of Guanghan Realm. His status is equal to Wu Zu, Emperor Ji Mie, and Supreme Saint Jiu Ling. Anyone who dares to touch him will be my enemy.”

Many gods were shocked by Moon Goddess’s exclamation. Anyone could tell that the Moon Goddess was showing her attitude. She was desperate to protect Zhang Ruochen.

Making a Saint King the fourth prominent figure of the Guanghan Realm was something that most people didn’t dare to think about. But the Moon Goddess had made such a decision.

All of a sudden, those gods who were hostile to Zhang Ruochen, such as Blackheart Demonlord, couldn’t help but frown. With the Moon Goddess’s domineering stance, it would be more difficult to lay a finger on Zhang Ruochen in the future.

‘No matter how strong the Moon Goddess is, she is only one person. If Zhang Ruochen did not receive the reward from the Fane of Truth, it would be fine. But if he succeeded, I’m afraid the Moon Goddess would not be able to protect him,’ Blackheart Demonlord thought.

A reward that could make even gods jealous, no matter how strong the Moon Goddess was, it would not be able to intimidate everyone.

At this moment, so many gods gathered in the Sea of Truth to see if Zhang Ruochen could succeed.

There was no doubt that there were very few gods who wanted Zhang Ruochen to succeed.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the top of the mountain. He knew nothing about what was happening in the outside world.

The top of the mountain was very flat. It was a Bagua-shaped square. At the edge of the square, there was a house made of black rock. It looked very rough, but it was covered with natural Path runes.

As soon as Zhang Ruochen reached the top of the mountain, the tall figure came into his sight.

It was not until now that he finally saw the appearance of the tall figure. He had a strange and shocked expression.

The reason was that this deity of the Fane of Truth was very similar to Qing Sixue in terms of body shape, appearance, and temperament. It was as if she was carved from the same mold.

No one would believe that this deity had nothing to do with Qing Sixue.

“Are you surprised? Qing Sixue is my daughter,” the tall figure said with a smile.

Zhang Ruochen came back to his senses. He quickly bowed and said, “Greetings, senior. How should I address you?”

“I am the lord of the Fane of Truth,” the tall figure said.

Zhang Ruochen was shocked and surprised upon hearing that. He did not expect the identity of the deity in front of him to be so amazing.

As the lord of the Fane of Truth, she must be extremely powerful. Her power shook the world and she had an extraordinary position.

Zhang Ruochen finally understood why Xiang Chunan and Qing Sixue could cultivate the Path of Truth without coming to the Celestial Domain of Truth and had such high attainments.

Zhang Ruochen was even more curious about Xiang Chunan's master who was also Qing Sixue's father now more than ever.

To be able to marry the lord of the Fane of Truth, this person must be extraordinary.

"I'd waited for your arrival for a very long time since I'd issued the oracle of The Fane of Truth. Although you are not a Divine Scion trained by the Fane of Truth, the reward will still be yours since you have completed the trial.

"In the past, every Saint King and Supreme Saint who ascended the Mountain of Truth could directly become an Envoy of Truth. However, it is no longer possible now." The lord of the Fane of Truth said calmly.

Zhang Ruochen looked puzzled and asked, "Why?"

Although Zhang Ruochen had not figured out what an Envoy of Truth was, surely it was not something ordinary. Otherwise, even the Moon Goddess would not pay so much attention to it.

"Do you know why you can get the Canons of Truth after crossing the Sea of Truth?" The lord of the Fane of Truth asked.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, "No."

He had indeed thought about it before. The canons were so mysterious that they were scattered throughout heaven and earth. Only the extremely powerful gods couldn't find a small part of it.

But the Canon of Truth was an exception. As long as one was good enough, even if he was only a saint, he could get it after crossing the Sea of Truth. It completely broke the rules.

"It's the Mountain of Truth under our feet that gathers all the ownerless Canons of Truth in the world. Once a cultivator passes the trial of the Sea of Truth, the cultivator of the Path of Truth will get the Canon of Truth."

“The Fane of Destiny—which is opposite to the Fane of Truth—also has similar methods. Some amazing cultivators of the Path of Destiny have a chance to get the Canon of Destiny. They can become the Envoy of Destiny after getting one percent of the Canon of Destiny.” The lord of the Fane of Truth explained.

Zhang Ruochen was not too surprised. The Fane of Destiny and the Fane of Truth had always been opposite. Their methods countered each other. Since there was the Canon of Truth, how could there not be the Canon of Destiny?

There was a big difference between condensing the same level of the Realm-frame of Truth and not having the Canon of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen estimated that the ten Divine Scions of the Fane of Truth should have a lot of Canons of Truth. After all, they were excellent. At the very least, they had passed through eight regions of the Sea of Truth.

‘Pan Ruo and Lord Xue Chen should have both gotten the Canon of Destiny,’ Zhang Ruochen thought.

Pan Ruo was the goddess candidate of the Fane of Destiny, while Lord Xue Chen could beat Nie Xiangzi by half a level. If neither of them had the Canon of Destiny, who else would have it?

Pausing for a moment, the lord continued, “After a long time, the ownerless Canons of Truth gathered by the Mountain of Truth have been given out. The ten out of ten thousand of what you have just received after crossing the tenth region of the sea were the last of them.”

Zhang Ruochen suddenly understood what the lord of Fane of Truth said. No wonder he couldn’t even get one out of ten thousand of the Canon of Truth after crossing the seventh, eighth, and ninth regions of the sea. It turned out that there wasn’t anymore.

This wasn’t very good news for him. He didn’t get the rewards he deserved, and now that he couldn’t become an Envoy of Truth, he didn’t know what to say.

“Senior, I’m curious. What exactly is an Envoy of Truth?” Zhang Ruochen asked seriously.

The lord of the Fane of Truth said, “I’m telling you too much right now, and you won’t understand. Simply put, an Envoy of Truth is a cultivator who can

use the Path of Truth as he pleases. He has great power and a Supreme Saint that can rival even a god.

“At the same time, if you become an Envoy of Truth, you’ll be protected by the Fane of Truth. You’ll have authorities in the Fane of Truth, and you’ll have a chance to become the lord of the Fane of Truth.

“Since the establishment of the Celestial Court, there have been a total of fourteen Supreme Saints who have become Envoys of Truth by ascending the Mountain of Truth. They are all candidates for the next lord of the Fane of Truth.”

A strange light flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. He said, “Shouldn’t there be thirteen Supreme Saints who have climbed up the Mountain of Truth?”

He was sure that he had heard correctly. The lord of the Fane of Truth had indeed said fourteen. This was inconsistent with the information circulating in the outside world. Was there some hidden reason behind this?

“The thirteen you know belong to the Celestial Court, but there is one who came from the Infernal Court,” the lord of the Fane of Truth said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “How can a cultivator from the Infernal Court become an Envoy of Truth?”

He knew that the Infernal Court had a powerful disguise that could hide in the Celestial Court, but an Envoy of Truth was no small matter. The Fane of Truth would go through an extremely strict screening. How could it let a cultivator from the Infernal Court get away with it?

In his opinion, the cultivators of the Infernal Court dared to plot against the Canon of Truth. They were simply courting death.

However, he did not expect that there was a cultivator of the Infernal Court who succeeded. Moreover, he became the Envoy of Truth and took away one percent of the Canon of Truth.

“Even I did not expect that Huang Tian’s guts and methods were indeed impressive. He managed to hide it from everyone in the Fane of Truth, including me. He was outstanding. After he became the Envoy of Truth, he used only a few hundred years to become a god, and he was much stronger than ordinary gods.

“It was not until he sneaked into Kunlun and cut off the Divine Sky-connecting Tree that his identity as Infernal Court’s Stone Clan cultivator was exposed.”

The lord of the Fane of Truth sighed with a complicated look in her eyes.

With the talent that Huang Tian had shown, many prominent figures of the Fane of Truth, including her, thought that he could become the next lord. However, they did not expect that he was a spy from the Infernal Court placed in the Celestial Court.

This was undoubtedly a huge stain on the Fane of Truth, which was why it was erased.

When he heard the word “Huang Tian,” a terrible killing intent flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. This person was one of the causes of Kunlun’s decline.

If Huang Tian hadn’t cut off the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, Kunlun wouldn’t have entered the 100,000 years of Godless era.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t expect that it was the Fane of Truth that made Huang Tian so strong. It hadn’t been long since he’d become a god, and he had the terrifying power to cut off the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

According to the lord of the Fane of Truth, a Supreme Saint becoming the Envoy of Truth would be comparable to a god. How powerful would a god-level Envoy of Truth be?

Zhang Ruochen would personally kill Huang Tian and make him pay for what he’d done in the past if he had the chance. At the same time, he would take back one percent of the Canon of Truth.

After adjusting his mind, Zhang Ruochen looked at the lord of the Fane of truth and asked, “Senior, since I can’t become an Envoy of Truth, what will the reward be?”

The Canon of Truth had been exhausted. Even if he couldn’t accept the fact, there was nothing he could do. It was pointless to argue with the lord of the Fane of Truth.

The only thing he could do now was to see if he could get other rewards as compensation.

“When I issued the oracle, I prepared a reward for those below the Supreme Saint. However, whether you can get it depends on your abilities. Are you ready for it?” The lord of the Fane of Truth said seriously.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “I’m ready.”

He had a strong sense of anticipation and he didn’t know what this special reward would be.

The lord of the Fane of Truth released a powerful divine force with a wave of her hand and infused it into the Mountain of Truth.

Countless complicated patterns instantly appeared on the square, each containing the truth of heaven and earth.

These patterns interweaved and formed a huge and mysterious Bagua diagram that illuminated the sky.

Fortunately, this space was completely isolated from the outside world. Otherwise, such a huge disturbance would alarm all the cultivators in the Celestial Domain of Truth.

Buzz
A brilliant divine light flew out of the Bagua diagram.

A shapeless and strange fluctuation spread out, causing the entire Mountain of Truth to tremble slightly.

“What’s going on?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed slightly. He felt that the Canon of Truth in him was showing signs of flying out.

It wasn’t easy for him to obtain forty-nine out of ten-thousand Canon of Truth. If it was taken away at this time, he would be devastated.

Zhang Ruochen immediately integrated the Canon of Truth into the Realm-frame of Truth and finally stabilized it.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the ball of divine light. Unsurprisingly, this should be the reward that could make even gods jealous.

Slowly, the divine light dimmed and revealed a strange object wrapped in it.

It was a clear diamond-shaped crystal, only the size of a fist. There were 129,600 facets in total. On each facet, there were exquisite patterns. It was natural and aligned with the Path.

“What is this?” Zhang Ruochen asked curiously.

Zhang Ruochen was experienced and knowledgeable, but he had no impression of this thing. He had never even heard of it, let alone seen it.

The lord of the Fane of Truth stared at the diamond-shaped crystal and said solemnly, “This is The Heart of Truth. It can attract and contain the Canons of Truth. If you can refine it, you can use it to sense the Canons of Truth in others and even forcibly seize it.

“More importantly, with The Heart of Truth, you can control the Canon of Truth’s power indefinitely. Even if you can control all of them, it’s not impossible. “The others, including the thirteen Envoys of Truth, can only grasp one-tenth of the Canon of Truth’s power. This is their limit.”

“Also, with The Heart of Truth, the efficiency of comprehending the Precept of Truth can be doubled. Moreover, if other people cultivate with you, they can also comprehend the Precept of Truth. The effect is no less than cultivating in the Fane of Truth.”

“In short, The Heart of Truth has many wonderful uses. When you refine it, you will find out more of it.”

As soon as the lord of the Fane of Truth finished, Zhang Ruochen immediately understood and knew the function of this item.

The Canon of Truth was something that everyone wanted to fight for, but no one knew whether it had fallen into the hands of those people.

If one could sense it, it would undoubtedly be a great advantage.

It also had an amazing cultivation effect. Whoever could refine The Heart of Truth was like a moving Fane of Truth.

Not only could it help him, but it could also make the cultivators around him, and even the cultivators of a world, stronger quickly.

Such a precious treasure could indeed make gods jealous.

It would certainly attract a group of gods to fight for it if it was revealed to the world.

“Senior, how should I refine The Heart of Truth?” Zhang Ruochen asked again.

The lord of the Fane of Truth said, “Use the Precepts to bind it, and use the Realm-frame of Truth to contain it.”

“I see.” Zhang Ruochen nodded.

Zhang Ruochen finally understood why the lord of the Fane of Truth wanted him to condense the Realm-frame of Truth first and complete the cultivation of Saint Kinghood. These two points were the basic requirements to refine The Heart of Truth.

The lord of the Fane of Truth said seriously, “I need to remind you that refining The Heart of Truth is very risky. If you are not careful, you may explode and die. Even if you have condensed The Heart of Truth and completed the cultivation of Saint Kinghood, the rate of success is still less than thirty percent. Whether you choose to refine it or not is up to you.”

Zhang Ruochen’s heart sank upon hearing that. He didn’t expect that refining The Heart of Truth would be so dangerous.

After thinking for a while, Zhang Ruochen let out a light breath and walked forward.

The opportunity was right in front of him. No matter how difficult it was, he had to try it.

Zhang Ruochen stopped when he was 30 meters away from The Heart of Truth and he stared at it intently.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen activated his techniques and released all 100 million Precepts that he had cultivated. They turned into a river of Precepts that wound around The Heart of Truth.

Bang
Before he could get close, The Heart of Truth released a strange power that shook Zhang Ruochen’s river of Precepts into pieces.

“Don’t worry. You need to slowly merge with The Heart of Truth and eliminate its rejection. Even ordinary gods can’t do anything to The Heart of Truth by force,” the lord of the Fane of Truth warned.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but readjust his state of mind. He condensed the river of Precepts again and circled The Heart of Truth.

At the same time, he unreservedly released his spiritual power and seeped into The Heart of Truth. He wanted to comprehend some mysteries.

However, the mysteries contained in The Heart of Truth were too profound. Even with the strength of Zhang Ruochen's spiritual power, he could not bear it. It was very difficult to understand.

Each pattern on it was like a sacred book of Path. It could derive endless truths. Even a Supreme Saint had to slowly comprehend it.

Although Zhang Ruochen was already standing at the pinnacle of the Saint Kinghood, he was still far from cultivating the Path.

Involuntarily, Zhang Ruochen completely relaxed. He focused all his attention on comprehending The Heart of Truth.

His cultivation had improved too fast, so it was inevitable that there would be some hidden dangers. He could take this opportunity to consolidate it and better grasp all the Precepts that he had cultivated.

…

Chapter 2183: Rise From Destruction

The Heart of Truth rotated slowly. The 129,600 facets refracted a strange light. The patterns carved on them became visible. Their forms kept changing, looking obscure and profound. It was as though they were living things.

Even with Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation rank at Saint Kinghood, he still felt these patterns were too profound to comprehend. Even when he used his spiritual power to the extreme, he could only decipher very little of them.

In his opinion, a Supreme Saint or even a deity could not easily decipher the mysteries contained in the Heart of Truth.

Fortunately, refining the Heart of Truth did not require thorough comprehension of all the mysteries it contained. Instead, it only required some enlightenment. The key was to be compatible with the Heart of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen had completely relaxed. He was not in a hurry, so he communicated with the Heart of Truth at a slow pace. The 100 million Precepts he had cultivated gradually wrapped around it.

Even so, Zhang Ruochen's stream of Precepts had been shaken by the power of the Heart of Truth many times.

If it weren't for the fact that the Precepts he had cultivated were extremely solid and

resilient, many of them would have been wiped out.

The lord of the Fane of Truth stood at the side. He spoke from time to time, helping Zhang Ruochen avoid many detours and dangers.

In this world, perhaps no one understood the Heart of Truth better than the lord of the Fane of Truth.

After an unknown amount of time, the stream of Precepts released by Zhang Ruochen finally completely enveloped the Heart of Truth. A special connection seemed to have been established between the two.

"He is teachable that he can comprehend the key so quickly. With such comprehension, no wonder he was chosen by saint monk Xumi as the successor." The lord of the Fane of Truth nodded secretly.

Although she had offered guidance, Zhang Ruochen could only rely on his own ability to comprehend the Heart of Truth.

If Zhang Ruochen's comprehension was too poor, it would be a waste of effort no matter how much guidance she offered.

Buzz
At a certain moment, the void shook. The Heart of Truth finally trembled.

Although it was only the size of a fist, it was as heavy as a huge realm. It was so steady that even a Supreme Saint could not do anything about it if they were not compatible with it.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes suddenly brightened. He put his hands together and formed a seal. Boundless Five-element Chaotic Qi surged out of his body.

At the same time, a million Precepts of Truth flew back and combined with the Five-element Chaotic Qi. They quickly formed a hazy illusory realm of Chaos that contained a vast sea of stars, as if it was about to evolve into a universe.

As soon as the Realm-frame of Truth was formed, Mountain of Truth resonated. Endless Precepts of Truth appeared, weaving a brilliant and vast starry sky. It looked real.

“Withdraw.”

Zhang Ruochen growled.

Suddenly, the other 99 million Precepts moved together and slowly dragged the Heart of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression was very serious. He did not dare to relax at all. He tried his best to mobilize the Precepts.

However, everything did not go as smoothly as he had imagined. Before it could go far, the Heart of Truth trembled slightly. The Precepts couldn’t restrain it.

‘Saint Aspects!’

With a thought, Zhang Ruochen released all six Saint Aspects.

The six Saint Aspects suppressed the sky, earth, east, south, west, and north. Their powers connected as one, locking the Heart of Truth.

At this time, the advantage of having six Saint Aspects was well demonstrated.

“Six Saint Aspects? As expected, like Yan Wushen, he is extraordinary. Since the ancient times, it has been a long time since such a being was born. Now, two of them have appeared at the same time. Does this mean something?” A glint of light flashed in the eyes of the lord of the Fane of Truth.

She could not help but fall into deep thought. With her status, the secrets she could come into contact with were unimaginable. She could usually foresee an important event that would happen.

Under the suppression by the six Saint Aspects, the Heart of Truth finally stabilized again. Hence, the Precepts could drag it a little faster.

Doing this consumed a lot of mental and spiritual power.

Even Zhang Ruochen’s mind and spirit were almost unable to bear it.

When the Heart of Truth was dragged close, a black hole emerged on the Realm-frame of Truth, releasing a powerful devouring force that sucked the Heart of Truth.

Buzz
At this moment, the Heart of Truth suddenly released a slight fluctuation.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes suddenly turned grim. His Realm-frame of Truth was trembling and showing signs of collapsing.

At the same time, a strange force entered his body. It instantly harmed his Five-element Chaotic Body. Many fine cracks appeared on the surface of his body, and Saint blood seeped out of his skin.

Fortunately, this force was not too strong. It disappeared quickly and did not cause further damage.

'What a terrifying Heart of Truth. It almost destroyed my body even before I could refine it for real.' Zhang Ruochen was shocked.

It seemed that the lord of the Fane was not lying. Refining the Heart of Truth was extremely dangerous. If he let his guard down, he would be doomed.

If he wanted to give up, he still had a chance.

But once he put the Heart of Truth into the Realm-frame of Truth, he would not be able to retreat anymore.

Looking at the Heart of Truth in a short distance, Zhang Ruochen did not hesitate at all. He was extremely determined. He would never regret what he had chosen to do.

After regaining his composure, Zhang Ruochen activated the Realm-frame of Truth with all his strength so that it would hold onto the Heart of Truth closely.

Even though the space here was extremely stable, it distorted at this moment.

Crash
In one go, the Heart of Truth was finally absorbed into the Realm-frame of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen's expression became more serious. He knew that the next moment would be the most dangerous.

There were only two outcomes he would face. He would either successfully refine the Heart of Truth or die from body explosion.

"You can only rely on yourself when refining the Heart of Truth. You cannot use external support. Do keep that in mind," the lord of the Fane reminded him seriously.

She knew that Zhang Ruochen had many items. Nevertheless, if he used them now, it would only backfire.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. "Thank you for your reminder."

Taking a deep breath, Zhang Ruochen sat down cross-legged. He was not in a hurry to refine the Heart of Truth. Instead, he circulated Empyrean Emperor Ming's Scripture over and over again to relax his body and mind completely.

It was a matter of life and death. No matter what, he could not afford to be careless.

After a long time, Zhang Ruochen's body and mind became ethereal. He put aside all distracting thoughts and completely immersed his mind in the Realm-frame of Truth. He began to refine the Heart of Truth.

What he needed to do was to merge the Heart of Truth and the Realm-frame of Truth into one.

Once he succeeded, his Realm-frame of Truth would become stronger. At the same time, it would become more profound, and he could gain fruit beyond imagination.

Under Zhang Ruochen's control, the Realm-frame of Truth began to vibrate rhythmically. Billions of stars slowly revolved around the Heart of Truth.

One of his greatest advantages was that his cultivation in the Path of Truth had reached Great Perfection, which could greatly increase the success rate of refining the Heart of Truth.

The lord of the Fane of Truth stood quietly on the side. If Zhang Ruochen failed to refine the Heart of Truth, she would make her move and try her best to save his life.

After all, it would be a pity if a peerless genius like Zhang Ruochen died here.

However, even if she took a move, she could not guarantee she could save Zhang Ruochen.

Turning her eyes, the lord of the Fane of Truth looked at the shore of Sea of Truth. Although it was clouded by golden haze, she could still see it clearly.

“Moon Goddess, Wargod Bian Zhuang, Mandala Goddess, Jiatianxia… There are quite a few deities here. They all seem to care about this reward from the Fane of Truth.”

“If Zhang Ruochen can successfully refine the Heart of Truth, he’ll probably face more troubles that even Moon Goddess might not be able to protect him, but…”

The lord of the Fane of Truth looked through the void space. As soon as she locked her gaze on the Weak Water Giant who was guarding Celestial River, there was a change in her expression.

However, it was just a moment. Immediately, she withdrew her gaze and looked back at Zhang Ruochen.

Even she could not tell how long Zhang Ruochen would take to refine the Heart of Truth.

It was something unpredictable. It could take one day or one year. The key was how compatible Zhang Ruochen was with the Heart of Truth.

BOOM!
Suddenly, the Realm-frame of Truth shook. A large number of stars near the Heart of Truth were destroyed instantly.

Ptui!
Zhang Ruochen spat out a large mouthful of blood, his body trembling.

For a moment, his breath became very chaotic. The Qi and blood in his body surged. His radiant Yang Qi, which was hundreds of thousands of times potent than that of an ordinary person, almost broke out of his body.

Zhang Ruochen did not panic. Instead, he became calmer. He immediately executed Empyrean Emperor Ming’s Scripture to comb his energy.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen confined himself with Profound Spatial Dimension. It was as if he wanted to make his surroundings fall into a state of eternal stillness.

Once he had started to refine the Heart of Truth, he could not stop halfway. He had to persist no matter how big the problem was.

A large number of stars approached the Heart of Truth again. They released unique waves of energy and carefully permeated it.

There were hundreds of millions of stars in the Realm-frame of Truth that Zhang Ruochen had formed, and the number was still increasing. They would not be annihilated easily.

Not long after, the Heart of Truth showed signs of movement again. Again, it destroyed a large number of stars, making Zhang Ruochen suffer even more serious injuries.

Just like that, Zhang Ruochen repeatedly adjusted his condition and suffered serious injuries. Even though his body had a very strong recovery ability, it gradually began to be overwhelmed, and his recovery speed became slower.

As time passed, more than half of the starry sky in the Realm-frame of Truth had been destroyed. As a result, the Realm-frame of Truth became unstable and showed signs of collapsing.

It was not easy to condense the Realm-frame of Truth. Once it was destroyed, it would be ten or a hundred times more difficult to re-condense it.

Crack
Suddenly, a crack appeared in the Realm-frame of Truth. It was the first crack. Correspondingly, a clear crack appeared on Zhang Ruochen's body too.

What's worse was that there was even a crack on Zhang Ruochen's Saint Soul.

Even if he used the essence Qi of Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi's Sun Leaf, he could not repair the crack, let alone stop the loss of his essence, Qi, and spirit.

"Every time when there's a crack appears on your Realm-frame of Truth, the same thing will happen to your body and Saint Soul. When the Realm-

frame of Truth is completely broken, you will explode and die.” The voice of the lord of the Fane of Truth rang in Zhang Ruochen’s ears.

When he heard that, his heart sank, and he felt a strong sense of urgency.

However, he understood that he must remain calm at this critical point. Instead of being anxious, he should think about countermeasures.

However, the power of the Heart of Truth was too overbearing; new cracks continued to form on the Realm-frame of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen’s injuries became heavier and heavier. His body was full of cracks, like a porcelain bottle that was about to break.

“Huh? How did Zhang Ruochen’s aura become so weak?”

Moon Goddess’s eyes narrowed.

Moon Goddess could vaguely sense Zhang Ruochen’s condition through the Staff of the Divine Envoy.

Unfortunately, her divine power and divine spirit could not reach Mountain of Truth, so she could not figure out what was going on with Zhang Ruochen.

Although Moon Goddess knew that the Fane of Truth’s reward was not easy to obtain, she did not expect the process to be life-threatening.

Apart from Moon Goddess, Empress Chi Yao’s expression also changed. She seemed to have sensed that Zhang Ruochen was in bad condition.

In the square, the lord of the Fane of Truth frowned slightly. In front of her, Zhang Ruochen had become a man covered in blood. The Saint blood in his body was almost running out.

The Realm-frame of Truth behind Zhang Ruochen was already filled with cracks, yet the number continued to increase. Large amounts of Five-element Chaotic Qi spilled out. In other words, the Realm-frame of Truth was on the verge of collapse.

“Did he fail?”

Disappointment appeared in the eyes of the lord of the Fane of Truth.

Even Zhang Ruochen could not succeed despite being so outstanding and talented. His failure implied that it was impossible to find a Saint King who could refine the Heart of Truth.

“I must not fail. If I die, who will save Kunlun? Who will protect Kongyue? Who will rebuild Shengming? I have too many things to do. I can’t afford to die here?”

A strong will emerged in Zhang Ruochen’s heart. He was unwilling to give in.

He had a lot of responsibility on his shoulders.

There was no way he would allow himself to fall like this, no way!

Driven by his strong will, his Realm-frame of Truth collapsed and contracted rapidly. It was going to return to the primordial state.

The lord of the Fane of Truth was about to make a move, wanting to remove the Heart of Truth from Zhang Ruochen’s Realm-frame of Truth. However, as soon as she sensed the change, she stopped.

“What a powerful spiritual will. He still refuses to give up?” The lord of the Fane of Truth was surprised.

Under normal circumstances, after suffering such great pain, one’s spiritual will would inevitably collapse, and it would be difficult to regain it.

But Zhang Ruochen’s spiritual will was highly condensed at this moment as if it had undergone some kind of qualitative sublimation.

The Realm-frame of Truth collapsed at an extremely fast speed. In the blink of an eye, it was not much bigger than a fist. It only wrapped around the Heart of Truth, and there were no traces of stars in it. It was in the primordial state, like a realm that had yet to be born.

As a result, the Heart of Truth fell into complete silence. The situation did not get worse.

Zhang Ruochen himself fell into silence too. Strands of the Five-element Chaotic Qi gathered together like strands of silk, wrapping around his body and turning him into a giant cocoon.

The lord of the Fane of Truth sensed that Zhang Ruochen’s signs of life had become extremely weak. They were almost non-existent.

“The most critical moment is coming. I hope he can survive,” said the lord of the Fane of Truth.

At this point, she could not interfere at all. Whether Zhang Ruochen would live or die, it depended on his luck and fate.

At this moment, Mountain of Truth had become very quiet. The strange phenomenon in the sky had completely disappeared, giving off an extremely oppressive feeling.

Here, the concepts of time and space became very vague.

BOOM!
Suddenly, a powerful force erupted like a volcano that had been silent for hundreds of millions of years.

The cocoon that wrapped Zhang Ruochen shattered. Behind him, the small Realm-frame of Truth expanded rapidly. Countless stars were born, and the Heart of Truth had disappeared without a trace.

To be precise, the Heart of Truth and the Realm-frame of Truth had finally merged into one.

The newly created Realm-frame of Truth was more vast than before. Each star was dazzling.

The vast starry sky appeared in the sky again. It was much more magnificent than before.

Thump! Thump! Thump!
Powerful heartbeats sounded, Zhang Ruochen’s body emitting vigorous vitality.

His body, which had previously dried up due to great blood loss, regained its healthy form at speed visible to the naked eye.

Hundreds of millions of Precepts of Truth appeared in between heaven and earth, revolving around Zhang Ruochen. It was as though he had become the Master of Truth.

“He managed to rise from destruction after returning to primodial state. He is indeed an extraordinary talent.”

Seeing these changes, the lord of the Fane of Truth laughed and praised him.

Of course, all the deities by the shore of the Sea of truth heard her words. Instantly, some of them smiled, and some of them looked grave.

Chapter 2184: Wargod Bian Zhuang, Heavenly Mugwort Bell

“To be able to break the shackles and receive the rewards of the Fane of Truth, just as the Lord of the Fane of Truth said, Zhang Ruochen is indeed an extraordinary person.

“He will definitely become a great figure in the future. Guanghan may prosper because of him. Congratulations to Moon Goddess.”

“Not only did he defeat Yan Wushen, but he also ascended Mountain of Truth. Having such an amazing talented cultivator is really enviable. It seems that it won’t be long before a new Deity is born in Guanghan. Congratulations!”

Immediately, many deities congratulated Moon Goddess.

The force they represented did not hold any grudges against Moon Goddess or Zhang Ruochen. No matter what the outcome was, it wouldn’t affect them. They were just watching the show.

The Mandala Goddess stepped into the air and appeared in front of Moon Goddess. “It’s been 100,000 years we last met, and you are still as graceful as ever. Your good eye for talented cultivators is extraordinary as ever. Zhang Ruochen has successfully received the reward from Fane of Truth. He will definitely rise. Guanghan will finally regain its former glory.”

Of course, Moon Goddess knew very well that if Zhang Ruochen had not turned the tide in the Saint War of Merit and made Guanghan top the ranking, Guanghan would have become a Battlefield of Merits and suffered fate far more worse than Kunlun.

Because of Zhang Ruochen’s efforts, Guanghan could enjoy some privileges, including a resourceful region in Celestial Domain and exemption from becoming a Battle of Merits for a period.

Moon Goddess glanced at Mandala Goddess and said, “You have a good eye too.”

A Lotus of Divine Reflection who had embarked on the path of cultivation had limitless potential. Her future achievements might be able to catch up to, or even surpass Mandala Goddess. With her presence, Qianrui would remain peaceful under protection for a very long time.

No matter how powerful a deity was, they would still have to face Yuanhui Tribulations. Even if they could survive ten Yuanhui Tribulations, in the end, there would still be times when they would fall. If they wanted their Macroworlds to be prosperous, they would have to constantly nurture new deities.

“He is indeed amazing. His achievement is unprecedented since ancient times. Unfortunately, I’m afraid he will die before he attains Godhood. After all, he is only a Saint King. If he fails to attain Godhood, he will just remain as small fry,” said Blackheart Demonlord.

At this moment, the ancient voice came from the blood-colored fane building. “Tall poppies likely to draw negative attention. Sometimes, it is not a good thing to be too outstanding.”

All the deities present looked surprised upon hearing these words.

“Blackheart Demonlord and Jiatianxia dare to make such comments. Aren’t they afraid that they would anger Moon Goddess?”

“Moon Goddess has already said that Zhang Ruochen is under her protection. Whoever touches him will have to bear heavy consequences.”

“Now, not only has Moon Goddess completely recovered her strength, her cultivation has improved greatly. Not long ago, the old deity of Sunshine Civilization had lost out to her.”

“Jiatianxia’s power is also unfathomable, so he doesn’t seem afraid of Moon Goddess. As for Blackheart Demonlord, he was backed by Heavenly Realm. Hence, he doesn’t need to hold back his resentment. Judging from Heavenly Realm’s way of doing things, it would be hard for Moon Goddess to protect Zhang Ruochen.”

…

For a moment, many deities were secretly communicating among themselves.

Be it the powerful Moon Goddess or the dominant Heavenly Realm. these two weren’t regular parties they could afford to offend. At this time, they could only choose to be fence-sitters.

Moon Goddess had yet to make a statement, Blackheart Demonlord said again, “It is said that although Zhang Ruochen is only a saint king, he is already the leader of Empress Chi Yao… No, no, I didn’t say it right.

Empress, please don’t think too much. After all, it’s all in the past. It doesn’t matter what it is anymore.”

Empress Chi Yao’s eyes were frosty cold. She released boundless divine light. Her cold murderous intent enveloped Blackheart Demonlord.

Blackheart Demonlord had provoked her again and again. Even a deity like her could not bear it.

But Blackheart Demonlord did not seem to feel it at all, he continued, “However, that kid used to be the Empress’ ex. Yet, You took him in and gave him such a high position. you have even made him a Divine Envoy and the fourth most prominent figure of Guanghan. Don’t you afraid of drawing controversy?

“Maybe in a few days, someone will make a remark, saying that he’s the lover you have stolen from Empress Chi Yao.”

“If things turn this way, it’ll affect your reputation greatly. What’s the point?

“Why don’t you return Zhang Ruochen to Empress Chi Yao?

“After all, Empress Chi Yao’s two children need a father. The family of four has been separated for so many years. They should reunite.”

Blackheart Demonlord spoke with confidence without the slightest scruple.

When the deities present heard him, their expressions changed. They all turned their gazes at Moon Goddess and Empress Chi Yao. The atmosphere suddenly became quite tense.

There was displeasure in the eyes of some deities. After all, Moon Goddess was the most beautiful goddess in Celestial Court. Her grace and elegance attracted countless deities. No one had ever dared to blaspheme her in this way.

Did Blackheart Demonlord try to trigger a divine war?

Moon Goddess’ expression was as cold as ice. A bright moon flew out from her body and hung in the sky, releasing an extremely cold aura. It was as if it wanted to freeze the entire Celestial Domain of Truth.

A Chaotic Space-time Lotus appeared in Empress Chi Yao’s palm, illuminating heaven and earth. An invisible, cold killing intent was released without any concealment.

Despite sensing the murderous intent from the two goddesses, Blackheart Demonlord was not afraid at all. After all, this was Celestial Domain of Truth, and there were deities from Heavenly Realm present. He bet Moon Goddess and Empress Chi Yao could not do anything to him.

“Humph!”

A heavy, cold snort resounded through this dimension.

The armored giant formed from the Weak Water who came from Celestial River shot Blackheart Demonlord with a cold glance. “Blackheart, how do you want to die?” said the giant.

“Wargod Bian Zhuang, what do you mean?”

A fearful expression appeared on Blackheart Demonlord’s calm face.

Wargod Bian Zhuang was in charge of guarding Celestial River. He had high authority and unparalleled combat strength. He was one of the most prominent figures in Celestial Court. When he said “Die”, it meant that he was furious.

As the saying goes, “words mean law, and the law must be enforced”. Since Wargod Bian Zhuang had said the word “Die”, he would put his words into action.

Although the Weak Water giant in front of Blackheart Demonlord was only an avatar of Wargod Bian Zhuang, it still put great pressure on him. He did not dare to underestimate it.

“What do I mean? I just want to kill you.”

The avatar of Wargod Bian Zhuang raised his hand. Immediately, Heavenly Mugwort Bell flew out from the sky and landed in his hand.

Heavenly Mugwort Bell was refined from an ancient primodial Macroworld. It was said that the primodial Macroworld was tens of millions of kilometers in size, and it was all made of metal.

Wargod Bian Zhuang refined the entire Macroworld into a bell and named it ‘Heavenly Mugwort’.

Buzzz

At this moment, Heavenly Mugwort Bell shook slightly, emitting an earth-shaking bell sound.

In the next moment, Weak Water stream gathered and condensed into an illusory Celestial River that was tens of thousands of kilometers long. The water flowed majestically and covered the sky above Sea of truth before it swept towards a direction.

The expression of Blackheart Demonlord changed because the illusory Celestial River was actually heading towards him.

Without the slightest hesitation, he retreated rapidly.

However, no matter how fast his speed was, he was unable to escape from the illusory Celestial River. In the blink of an eye, all his escape routes were blocked by the illusory Celestial River.

Not only was his divine power suppressed, the space was compressed, turning into a cage between heaven and earth.

Blackheart Demonlord could only quickly form a demonic mark. He summoned countless Precepts and condensed boundless divine power to form a circular demonic mark. Tens of millions of skulls floated within the demonic mark.

The demonic mark released a monstrous demonic might that seemed capable of shattering the heavens. It collided with the illusory Celestial River.

Bang!

The demon seal trembled and shattered into pieces. It reverted into countless Precepts and billowing demonic Qi. The illusory Celestial River quickly obliterated them.

The avatar of the Bian Zhuang Wargod stood on the illusory Celestial River and took a step forward. He appeared above Blackheart Demonlord and launched a fist strike that was dazzling as a star.

This punch carried an unparalleled power. When it landed in the eyes of Blackheart Demonlord, it seemed to fill the entire world. That kind of magnificent power actually made his heart tremble.

“Wargod Bian Zhuang, you…”

Blackheart Demonlord's pupils constricted as he hurriedly moved to block.

Faced with the legendary Wargod Bian Zhuang, Blackheart Demonlord did not dare to be the slightest bit careless. He immediately unleashed his own divine power without holding back and built the strongest defense.

But what made Blackheart Demonlord feel terrified was that his defense was like a piece of paper in front of Wargod Bian Zhuang's punch. It was easily broken.

Bang!

The fist strike launched by Wargod Bian Zhuang's avatar hit Blackheart Demonlord's chest.

Ptui!

Blackheart Demonlord spat out a large mouthful of divine blood. He was sent flying backward. As a result, he crashed heavily into a barrier formed by Weak Water.

Before Blackheart Demonlord could regain his senses, Wargod Bian Zhuang had already approached him. He raised Heavenly Mugwort Bell and smashed it down on Blackheart Demonlord's head.

Heavenly Mugwort Bell carried a weight of a metal primodial Macroworld, fell, and hit Blackheart Demonlord's head.

Blackheart Demonlord's strength was naturally not weak since he had survived his first Yuanhui Tribulation. However, he was completely powerless against Wargod Bian Zhuang.

Rumble.

The Blackheart Demon Lord's divine body was broken. His head was split open and divine blood splattered all over the sky.

The divine body that was emitting demonic light rapidly fell from the sky. It smashed into a huge pit that was dozens of kilometers in diameter beside Sea of truth. The entire heaven's domain of truth was shaking.

The Blackheart Demon Lord's divine bones were almost shattered. He lay in the pit and found it difficult to get up.

Holding Heavenly Mugwort Bell in his hand, Wargod Bian Zhuang descended from the sky and trampled Blackheart Demonlord under his feet. He was suppressed to the point that he could not move, he roared angrily, “D*mn it, who do you think you are? Is It so great that you survived his first Yuanhui Tribulational assembly?

“How dare you blaspheme Moon Goddess? Are you tired of living? Don’t you know the relationship between Moon Goddess and I?”

“You better not spout nonsense,” Moon Goddess said coldly.

Wargod Bian Zhuang raised his head and smiled at Moon Goddess. “Don’t be angry. Don’t be angry. This is not because of him. It’s all my fault for not keeping my mouth shut.”

Moon Goddess turned her eyes away and couldn’t be bothered to look at him.

Wargod Bian Zhuang stomped hard on the back of Blackheart Demonlord, almost penetrating his body. He said, “Blasphemy, don’t you know that it’s a capital offense? Blasphemy against Moon Goddess is a capital offense.”

“You…”

At first, Blackheart Demonlord did not believe that he could not defeat one of Wargod Bian Zhuang’s avatars. He did not think that Wargod Bian Zhuang would dare to kill him in Celestial Court.

However, he had underestimated the importance of Moon Goddess in Wargod Bian Zhuang’s heart.

He had also underestimated Wargod Bian Zhuang’s combat strength.

It was difficult to kill a deity, especially one who had survived a Yuanhui Tribulation. However, Wargod Bian Zhuang was clearly powerful enough to kill deities. Even if he was killed now, Celestial Palace might not be able to do anything to him.

For the first time, Blackheart Demonlord felt that death was not far away from him.

“Knowing that Wargod Bian Zhuang, who is guarding Celestial River, is present, yet he still dares to spout nonsense. What a fool.”

Many of the gods present could not help but have this thought.

It was well-known that Wargod Bian Zhuang adored Moon Goddess. Why didn't many people dare to provoke Moon Goddess?

It was because Moon Goddess was powerful enough, but it was also because of Wargod Bian Zhuang.

Back then, when the battle of the gods broke out on Moon Goddess Mountain, it caused a huge commotion. In the end, it was Wargod Bian Zhuang who stepped in to quell the commotion.

At that time, Wargod Bian Zhuang clearly sided with Moon Goddess. As for other deities, they did not dare to say anything.

"Wargod Bian Zhuang, don't you think you have gone too far?"

At this moment, a slightly displeased voice was heard from the blood-colored fane building.

No matter what, Blackheart Demonlord was a deity showing support to Heavenly Realm. Now that he had been beaten to pieces by Wargod Bian Zhuang, it was undoubtedly a loss of face for Heavenly Realm.

Especially now that there were many deities present and a large number of Saint realm cultivators watching, what was the status quo?

At this moment, the Saint realm cultivators gathered at the shore of Sea of truth were all dumbfounded in disbelief.

"What's going on? Why are deities fighting in Celestial Domain of Truth?"

"That seems to be Blackdemon Realm's Blackheart Demonlord. There seems to be a deity who wants to kill him. Am I seeing things?"

"Blackheart Demonlord is a powerful deity who has survived a Yuanhui Tribulation, yet he is unable to fight back. What is the background of that deity?"

"Shut up. That is Wargod Bian Zhuang who is guarding Celestial River. Blackheart Demonlord is in big trouble for provoking him. Who knows? He might really…

The words of the lord of the Fane of Truth were only heard by the deities. Therefore, the Saint realm cultivators present did not know what had happened.

However, a deity making a move in Celestial Domain of Truth was undoubtedly a major event.

What was surprising was that Blackheart Demonlord had already been beaten up so badly, yet no one from Fane of Truth intervened.

On Mountain of Truth, the lord of the Fane of Truth cast his gaze toward the shore; a faint smile appeared in his eyes. “After so many years, Bian Zhuang hasn’t changed at all. When it comes to a matter pertaining to Moon Goddess, he is ruthless.”

The lord of the Fane of Truth knew very well about the way Bian Zhuang acted. Other than guarding Celestial River, Moon Goddess’s matter was probably the only thing that he would show concern.

Back then, when Moon Goddess had disappeared in Kunlun, Wargod Bian Zhuang had single-handedly killed his way into the Infernal Court. His unparalleled killing might had dyed a starfield in the Infernal Court red.

This time, Wargod Bian Zhuang had appeared in Celestial Domain of Truth, obviously because he knew that Moon Goddess would come.

He had acted so tyrannically not because he lacked intelligence, but because he only knew how to solve problems by force.

Instead, he knew that because of Zhang Ruochen, both Guanghan and Moon Goddess had been pushed into the limelight. That was why he had to announce to the deities in a tough manner that he would kill anyone who dared to blaspheme or harm Moon Goddess.

Whether the location was Celestial Court or Celestial Domain of Truth, he wouldn’t care. He would kill them with no hesitation.

Wargod Bian Zhuang turned around and looked at the blood-red fane building. He said indifferently, “Too much? You don’t have the right to point fingers at what I want to do. Go and stay where you are. Don’t be an eyesore here.”

With that, Wargod Bian Zhuang stepped on the body of Blackheart Demonlord a few more times. Everyone could clearly hear the sound of the deity’s bones breaking.

“Get over there, kneel down, and apologize to Moon Goddess. Otherwise, I will really kill you.”

Wargod Bian Zhuang kicked out, sending Blackheart Demonlord flying.

Blackheart Demonlord's hair was disheveled, and he was in a terrible state. He mobilized his divine power to support his broken divine body. Struggling to stand up, he roared, "Bian Zhuang, you are going too far."

At that moment, Blackheart Demonlord was like a mad demon. He hated it. What happened today would become a stain on his life. Ever since he became a deity, he had never been bullied like this.

"Puny Blackheart, you still dare to shout in front of me." Bian Zhuang's eyes were cold. He pointed at Blackheart Demonlord with his finger, and his body emitted terrifying killing intent.

All the deities present had strange expressions on their faces. Perhaps only Wargod Bian Zhuang could be so overpowering and treat deities as little bugs.

Blackheart Demonlord's mind trembled. He calmed down slightly, and an extremely strong sense of danger arose in his heart.

Buzz.

An extremely powerful divine might erupted from the blood-colored fane building, giving rise to thick blood clouds that covered the sky.

"Wargod Bian Zhuang, everything should be done in moderation. Don't overdo it." A warm and angry voice came from the blood-colored fane building.

The avatar of Wargod Bian Zhuang stood on Celestial River formed by Weak Water. With his hands behind his back, he looked disdainfully at the blood-colored fane building, he said domineeringly, "Jiatianxia, do you really think you are somebody? You have been nagging in my ear. If you are not convinced, come and fight with me. If you can defeat my avatar, I will never step out of Celestial River again."

"If you don't have the guts, then hide in your blood-colored fane building. I don't want to lower myself to your level."

Hearing this, Jiatianxia was instantly enraged. "Bian Zhuang, you're too arrogant. Do you really think I'm afraid of You?"

Who was he?

He was the founder of Fane of Bloody War, a powerful ancient god who had grasped profound meanings. No one had ever dared to look down on him like this.

Using an avatar to defeat him?

It was simply wishful thinking. Even if the other party was the unrivaled Wargod guarding Celestial River, it was absolutely impossible.

The group of deities looked at each other. They did not expect things would arrive at this point. After being silent for 100,000 years, was Wargod Bian Zhuang going to show his divine might again?

One had to know that 100,000 years ago, he was the leader of the nine major Wargods in Celestial Palace.

How powerful was his cultivation now?

Was he going to use his avatar to suppress the entire world?

Chapter 2185: Abandon Celestial River for a Date With Moon Goddess

The blood-colored fane building shook, and an incomparably tall and mighty figure slowly emerged, his body exuding a vast divine might.

On his back, he had four pairs of enormous blood-coloured wings. The armor he wore was as red as blood. Despite having a youthful appearance, he had eyes as deep as black holes, like the eyes of those who had experienced vicissitudes of life.

He was Jiatianxia, the founder of Fane of Bloody War, a powerful ancient deity of the same generation as Moon Goddess.

Among deities of Heavenly Realm, Jiatianxia was a prominent figure who could call the shots.

At this moment, Jiatianxia was exuding a terrifying murderous aura. His expression was as grave as undertaker’s. Apparently, he was deeply offended by the contempt of Wargod Bian Zhuang.

He would not have reacted to Bian Zhuang’s contempt if the one present were Wargod Bian Zhuang himself. Now, the one present was merely an avatar, yet he dared to make such an audacious remark. How could an avatar be so blatantly disrespectful to him?

“Bian Zhuang, show me how powerful the leader of the nine Wargods of Celestial Palace is.”

Jiatianxia’s gaze was as sharp as a knife. His eight blood wings flapped and released a monstrous Blood Qi.

Countless Precepts were activated and combined with the Blood Qi, forming a gigantic that could cover the sky. It carried unparalleled divine might as it struck straight at Wargod Bian Zhuang.

Wargod Bian Zhuang did not seem to mind at all. He said with contempt, “How dare you use such petty tricks in front of me?”

As he spoke, Celestial River under the feet of Wargod Bian Zhuang surged violently. It turned into a giant dragon , crashing into the gigantic.

BANG!

Although the divine power contained within the gigantic hand was powerful, it still exploded in an instant when it was struck by Celestial River.

Following that, the power of Celestial River did not decrease. It continued to sweep towards Jiatianxia with an unstoppable momentum.

Jiatianxia`s expression turned grim. The eight blood-red wings on his back expanded rapidly and became ten thousand mile long. They were like clouds that hung in the sky. Every feather emiited unsual red light. They were extremely sharp, looking like divine swords.

Crash!

The Blood Wings tore through the air, cutting Celestial River apart.

However, the Weak Water that formed Celestial River took the opportunity to stick itself to the Blood Wings tightly, like shit to a shovel.

Weak Water was an extremely special type of divine water in the world. Nothing could float on it. Everything, including a feather, would sink in it.

At the same time, Weak Water had an astonishing erosive power. It was said to be able to melt everything. It could be a threat to deities.

If not for that, Celestial Court would not have used Celestial River made of Weak Water as protection.

As the guardian of Celestial River, Wargod Bian Zhuang had long been able to control the Weak Water at will. He could execute many types of unbelivable techniques.

If it was a battle in Celestial River, Wargod Bian Zhuang would almost be invincible.

Seeing the battle between Wargod Bian Zhuang and Jiatianxia, the deities gathered near Sea of Truth retreaed to make a space wide enough to be a battlefield for them.

At the same time, some deities also teleported the Saint realm cultivators away, so they would not get implicated.

With the strength of Wargod Bian Zhuang and Jiatianxia, even if they accidentally revealed a trace of divine power, it was not something that a Saint realm cultivator could withstand.

..

On the peak of Mountain of Truth, Zhang Ruochen had recovered from his injuries. He slowly opened his eyes.

He had been severely injured, and his physical body and Saint Soul had almost collapsed. However, the benefit he received was tremendous. Now that he had regained , the strength of his physical body and Saint Soul had greatly increased, emitting an aura of immortality.

If he wanted to, he could now forge the best Neverwither physique and break through to become a Supreme Saint. An ordinary Supreme Saint could not compare to him.

“the Realm-frame of Truth with the Heart of Truth has become very different. It is unpredictable. Even I can’t understand it.”

Zhang Ruochen scanned the Realm-frame of Truth with his spiritual power. He could not help but think to himself.

His Realm-frame of Truth should still be at Shoreless Star Ocean. But in essence, it was far beyond the ordinary Shoreless Star Ocean. The wonders contained in it was beyond imagination.

With a thought, Zhang Ruochen put the Realm-frame of Truth into his body. He needed to comprehend it carefully before he could use it perfectly.

With the Realm-frame of Truth, he could amplify his attack power ten times stronger at will. Even the ten divine disciples of the Fane of Truth could not do it for the time being.

Zhang Ruochen stood up and cupped his hands to the lord of the Fane of Truth. “Thank you for your guidance, senior. It allowed me to refine the Heart of Truth.”

“You earned it yourselves. It has nothing to do with me. Stay here for now. Don’t leave in a hurry,”the lord of the Fane of Truth said.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Why?”

The lord of the Fane of Truth extended his hand and pointed. A huge crystal was immediately formed in front of him, projecting the outside world.

“This is… a battle between two deities!” Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

The lord of the Fane of Truth said, “You have attracted the attention of deities when you successfully ascended Mountain of Truth. And some deities did not want you to receive the Heart of Truth.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen suddenly realized that the faction of Heavenly Realm did not want him to live.

“Amazing. He can rival the Jiatianxia.” Zhang Ruochen was shocked.

Jiatianxia was the strongest figure in Fane of Bloody War. He was one of the ancient gods of Heavenly Realm known as a Forerunner of Heaven and Earth. Who could possibly rival him?

The lord of the Fane of Truth said, “That’s Wargod Bian Zhuang , the guardian of Celestial River. And that was just his avatar.”

“An avatar?”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. “The current Jiatianxia is also an avatar?”

With Zhang Ruochen’s current cultivation, he really couldn’t size up Jiatianxia and Bian Zhuang. If the lord of the Fane of Truth had not projected their battle using a crystal made of the Precepts of Truth, Zhang Ruochen probably wouldn’t have been able to see the two deities clearly.

The difference in cultivation was too big.

The lord of the Fane of Truth smiled. “World A is the true form of the deities.”

Zhang Ruochen fell in silence. There were many hidden talented cultivators in Celestial Court.

No matter how good you are, there is always someone better. And that’s why we should be humble, reverent, and trying to improve ourselves at all times.

The title top cultivator below Supreme Sainthood might sound impressive.

However, there were as many bigshots among the Supreme Saints. After all, none among those who had ascended from Hundred-Shackle Realm were weak. Every single of them had a legend.

Just Qing Sixue alone, Zhang Ruochen didn’t have the confidence to fight against her under the cultivation realm of Saint Kinghood.

The lord of the Fane of Truth said, “Needless to be this shocked. Wargod Bian Zhuang is an ancient god, the leader of the nine Wargods of Heaven Palace. He’s even shouldered the responsibility of guarding Celestial River.

“If he didn’t have such combat strength, Heavenly Realm would have been attacked by Infernal Court deities many times.”

“Why did they fight?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

The lord of the Fane of Truth said, “Because of you.”

“Me? Milord, is that a joke? There’s nothing between Wargod Bian Zhuang and me.” Zhang Ruochen smiled bitterly.gave a bitter smile.

“Not with you, but Moon Goddess.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “That’s interesting. Is Moon Goddess really charming enough to attract Wargod Bian Zhuang?”

“You think that Moon Goddess doesn’t have that kind of charm? In fact, Moon Goddess was known as Celestial Court’s most beautiful goddess back then. Countless deities had fallen for her.”

Despite his appearance looking ferocious, the lord of the Fane of Truth was friendly to Zhang Ruochen. He treated Zhang Ruochen as his equal instead of a Saint King. The two conversed without any scruples.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised. “Isn’t a God’s state of mind supposed to be perfect? How could he be entangled in feelings?”

Zhang Ruochen had always thought that all deities were all heartless. They would give up everything in order to fulfill their great wishes or pursue the ultimate realm of cultivation.

Just like Chi Yao.

Her children did not seem to be matter to her.

The lord of the Fane of Truth shook his head, he said, “The perfection of one’s state of mind is not to sever one’s feelings and desires, but to do as one pleases. That Guy Bian Zhuang could also be considered a weirdo among the deities. When he was reliable, he could stabilize Celestial River. When he was unreliable, he would dare to abandon Celestial River and charge into Infernal Court alone. No one could stop him.”

“As for the relationship between him and Moon Goddess… Hehe, who knows? In short, he claimed that as long as Moon Goddess agreed to ride the heavenly boat with him and see the entire Heavenly River, he would be willing to join Guanghan. “In order to embrace the bright moon, he lost 80,000 miles of Celestial River. It was from his mouth.”

Zhang Ruochen sweated and sighed in his heart. That Wargod Bian Zhuang was indeed a weirdo.

In order to embrace the bright moon, he lost 80,000 miles of Celestial River. Zhang Ruochen did not know what the expressions of the deities in Celestial Palace were when they heard this. Did they have the idea of replacing a deity to guard Celestial River?

“Since Moon Goddess returned, why didn’t everyone dare to openly deal with Guanghan? Actually, it was because they were afraid of Wargod Bian Zhuang. His fame came from fighting.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but look at Wargod Bian Zhuang. Even though he was doing this for Moon Goddess, he was undoubtedly helping him this time.

Zhang Ruochen knew very well that many people would want to harm him after receiving the Fane of Truth’s reward. Even the deities might personally attack him. He was truly pushed to the cusp of the storm.

Above Mountain of Truth, the avatar of Wargod Bian Zhuang fought fiercely with Jiatianxia. Perhaps to reduce the damage, the two had entered the void space.

Jiatianxia was more and more shocked as he fought. With his strength, he couldn't gain any advantage against one of Wargod Bian Zhuang's avatars.

With a wave of his hand, Jiatianxia took out Infernal Asuran Icon.

The map unfolded and turned into a vast world. It revealed a vast crimson-yellow continent. A thick Blood Qi enveloped the continent. Countless rivers of blood, lakes of blood, and seas of blood were densely covered. It was an extremely terrifying sight.

One could see countless inscriptions flowing on the continent, emitting an unimaginable holy power.

During the battle on Moon Goddess Mountain, Moon Goddess had seized the Infernal Asuran Icon from Bloodlord Erjia. However, after the battle ended, the two sides reached an agreement and returned the treasure to Jiatianxia.

After all, the Infernal Asuran Icon was the most important treasure of Fane of Bloody War. It could not be lost.

In comparison, the power of Jiatianxia's Infernal Asuran Icon was undoubtedly much more powerful than Bloodlord Erjia's.

Thick blood pillars shot up from Asuran Continent and bombarded Wargod Bian Zhuang.

These blood pillars contained an extremely powerful divine power that could shatter large swaths of the starry sky.

"How dare you take out a broken map to be an eyesore? Watch me smash it into pieces."

Wargod Bian Zhuang did not dodge. Instead, he took the initiative to meet them.

He swung Heavenly Mugwort Bell to meet the incoming blood pillars.

Bang.

Countless inscriptions flowed on the surface of Heavenly Mugwort Bell. It released a hazy, chaotic metallic glow. It was indestructible and shattered the blood pillars one by one.

In the next moment, Heavenly Mugwort Bell grew rapidly. It was almost as big as a Macroworld.

Wargod Bian Zhuang's strength was unparalleled. He directly smashed the enlarged Heavenly Mugwort Bell.

Rumble.

Heavenly Mugwort Bell was incomparably heavy and extremely hard. It pierced through Asuran Continent in an instant, and the entire world showed signs of collapsing.

Jiatianxia hurriedly released more divine power, and even used the profound meaning he had mastered to inject it into Infernal Asuran Icon to stabilize Asuran Continent.

"Suppress it for me."

Jiatianxia growled and pushed the power of Infernal Asuran Icon to the limit.

All the blood flowing on Asuran Continent rose up and turned into an endless sea of blood, drowning Wargod Bian Zhuang.

This blood had killed countless gods and was filled with resentment and evil. Even the body of a deity would be corroded.

The body of Wargod Bian Zhuang suddenly turned into a vast and Weak Water, wrapping around Heavenly Mugwort Bell and sweeping in all directions.

Boom.

In the blink of an eye, the boundless sea of blood was shattered into pieces by the impact of the Weak Water transformed by Wargod of Heavenly Mugwort.

Even Asuran Continent was shattered into pieces, and the land turned to dust.

Bang.

Jiatianxia suffered a violent impact, and his body flew backward. Divine blood sprayed out of his mouth, and three of the blood wings on his back exploded. The remaining five blood wings were stained with divine blood and became blood wings worthy of the name.

The Infernal Asuran Icon appeared once again, and there were clearly several cracks on it. It was badly damaged.

When Jiatianxia saw the Weak Water—that Bian Zhuang had transformed into—charging at him again, he did not dare to fight it head-on. Instead, he put away the Infernal Asuran Icon and tried to flee the scene.

In an instant, Jiatianxia left the void and returned to the blood-colored fane building.

Without stopping for even a moment, Jiatianxia controlled the blood-colored fane building and prepared to break through the void space and leave the heaven's domain of truth.

"Where do you think you're going?" Wargod Bian Zhuang roared.

Even though Jiatianxia was very fast, Heavenly Mugwort Bell still smashed into the blood-colored fane building.

Crack.

The blood-colored fane building let out a shattering sound and immediately collapsed into a large piece.

In the face of Bian Zhuang, Jiatianxia did not want to stay any longer. He did not care about his reputation and immediately fled.

The Weak Water gathered and reverted to the appearance of Wargod Bian Zhuang. He retrieved Heavenly Mugwort Bell and stare at the blood-colored fane building. "Heh? You are so fast when trying to run away. How dared you stand out while being a loser? Jiatianxia, you'd better hide in the blood-colored fane building and never come out again. Otherwise, I will beat you up every time I see you." His tone was full of disdain.

Seeing this scene, all the deities present were shocked. Many of them looked at Wargod Bian Zhuang with respect.

"How could this possibly happen? As an ancient god mastering a Canon, yet he can't defeat one of Bian Zhuang's avatars. Just how powerful is Bian Zhuang is?" Blackheart Demonlord was extremely shocked.

It was only now that he knew the meaning of the leader of the nine Wargods in Celestial Palace. Bian Zhuang was truly unrivaled, standing at the top of the galaxy and universe.

Chapter 2186: Lotus of Transcendence

All the deities present understood that the reason Wargod Bian Zhuang's avatar could defeat Jiatianxia. Not only did he have his weapon—Heavenly Mugwort Bell, but he also had the advantage of location—Celestial Court.

The entire Celestial Court was surrounded by 30,000-mile wide Celestial River. Therefore, as long as Wargod Bian Zhuang was in Celestial Court, he could borrow the power of Celestial River and convert it into his own power.

It might look like just an avatar, but in fact, it also held the power of Celestial River.

Jiatianxia was not a weakling but a ruler of a Fane. If the fight had occurred in any other place in the universe, it would have been impossible for Wargod Bian Zhuang's avatar to defeat him.

His biggest mistake was underestimating the power of Celestial River and Wargod Bian Zhuang.

BOOM!

Wargod Bian Zhuang looked around with disdain. He held Heavenly Mugwort Bell and descended to the side of Blackheart Demonlord. A powerful divine might was naturally emitted.

Blackheart Demonlord's heart trembled. Jiatianxi had already escaped after being severely injured. Who else could stand up for him?

Ever since he set foot on the path of cultivation, he had always been very calculative. He had taken every step carefully. Not only had he survived a Yuanhui Tribulation, but he had also made Blackdemon Realm one of the top 1,000 strongest Macroworlds in Celestial Court. He did not need to fear that his Macroworld would become a Battlefield of Merits.

Unexpectedly, he had been one step behind this time. He had wanted to speak on behalf of Heavenly Realm, but in the end, he had brought great trouble to himself. He might even get himself killed.

"I can spare your life if you kneel and apologize to Moon Goddess," Bian Zhuang said coldly.

Blackheart Demonlord was instantly enraged. “Bian Zhuang, my strength is indeed inferior to yours, but I will not endure your insult. I am Blackdemon Realm’s ruler. Even if you are a Wargod of Celestial Palace, you have no right to kill me.”

Could any deities, who are known for their perseverance, ever kneel before others? No way!

A deity would rather choose death over humiliation.

“Ruler of Blackdemon Realm? My ass. To me, you are just a puny low-life. Since you want to die so badly, I will grant you your wish.” Bian Zhuang’s eyes were filled with contempt, and a terrifying killing intent radiated from his body.

Blackheart Demonlord made up his mind and immediately unleashed his Demonic Mark. Even though he knew that he was no match for him, he could not just sit there and wait to be slaughtered.

Most of the deities present could not help but shake their heads. No one dared to step out and stop Wargod Bian Zhuang, who displayed a domineering attitude at this moment.

Just as Wargod Bian Zhuang was about to make his move, a calm voice suddenly sounded, “Let’s stop here, Bian Zhuang. You should know the rules of Celestial Domain of Truth.”

As the voice trailed off, a streak of divine light flew out of Mountain of Truth. It transformed into a tall and burly figure, emitting a vast divine might.

The Precepts of the entire Celestial Domain of Truth became active. They all converged toward her as if the entire Celestial Domain was under her control.

The person who had appeared was none other than the lord of the Fane of Truth. At such a critical moment, she had chosen to appear and stop Wargod Bian Zhuang from killing Blackheart Demonlord.

Zhang Ruochen also left Mountain of Truth. He stood behind the lord of the Fane of Truth. However, he did not feel her divine might intimidating.

Zhang Ruochen was very calm in the face of the deities present. He did not show any signs of panic.

When he was on Mount Yueshen, he had fought the deities. Although he was in awe of the deities, he was not afraid.

In fact, Zhang Ruochen did not want the lord of the Fane of Truth to interfere. It would be great if Blackheart Demonlord died in the hands of Bian Zhuang.

Zhang Ruochen moved and appeared beside Moon Goddess. He cupped his fists to greet her. “Moon Goddess.”

“You did well this time. I have announced publicly that from now on, you will be the fourth prominent figure of Guanghan. You are second to Tree God and me,” Moon Goddess said.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised. He had not expected Moon Goddess to honor him with such a high status. This was not bad, and at least he would not have to listen to others in Guanghan.

It turned out that working with Moon Goddess was a very wise choice.

After a thought, Zhang Ruochen said, “Thank you, Moon Goddess.”

Moon Goddess nodded slightly. Then she looked at the lord of the Fane of Truth.

At this moment, all the deities present were staring at the lord of the Fane of Truth, including Bian Zhuang.

No one was surprised by the arrival of the lord of the Fane of Truth. After all, this was Celestial Domain of Truth. Bian Zhuang was about to kill Blackheart Demonlord, and it would be odd if she did not show up.

The lord of the Fane of Truth looked at Bian Zhuang and said, “You should know that fights between deities are not allowed in Celestial Domain of Truth. Yet, you are planning to kill one in my territory?”

“Well, I merely beat up two puny low lives, so it should not be counted as a fight between deities. Since the Lord of the Fane wants to interfere, I can spare his life. However, he will have to pay the price for blaspheming Moon Goddess,” said Wargod Bian Zhuang.

The lord of the Fane of Truth said, “This is between the two of you. It’s none of my business. But I will not allow another fight between deities to erupt in Celestial Domain of Truth.”

As the lord of the Fane of Truth spoke, she released an invisible aura enveloping Sea of Truth. There was a slight change in the expression among the deities.

Anyone could clearly feel the aura of the lord of the Fane of Truth. That kind of pressure was far greater than that of the avatar of Wargod Bian Zhuang.

Wargod Bian Zhuang narrowed his eyes. After pondering for a moment, he said, “Don’t worry. I know what I should do.”

Then, Wargod Bian Zhuang looked at Blackheart Demonlord and said, “Blackheart, take out a stalk of Divine Herb as compensation to Moon Goddess. Don’t tell me that you have none. You know well you can’t hide certain things from me.”

Not long ago, Blackheart Demonlord had left Celestial Court. When he returned to cross Celestial River, Wargod Bian Zhuang had sensed the presence of the Divine Herb with him.

Blackheart Demonlord’s eyes darkened. He had not expected Wargod Bian Zhuang would make such as demanding request: asking for a Divine Herb.

Divine Herb was precious. They were rarely found even in the eternal Macroworlds. They were extremely useful to deities.

Just like back then, Moon Goddess had regained most of her divine power by refining only a leaf—the Moon Leaf—from Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi.

It could be said that the value of any Divine Herbs was immeasurable.

Blackheart Demonlord indeed had a stalk of Divine Herb on him. It was something that he had obtained from a dangerous unexplored region in the universe after spending a great deal of efforts.

Tens of thousands of years ago, Blackheart Demonlord had discovered this stalk of Divine Herb. It was only recently that the Divine Herb had finally matured.

To prevent others from discovering the existence of the Divine Herb, Blackheart Demonlord had spent great effort. He had waited quietly for tens of thousands of years. When he went to collect it, he had even suffered a heavy injury and had almost died in that unexplored region in the universe.

How could Blackheart Demonlord be willing to hand it over to others?

Seeing that Blackheart Demonlord did not speak for a long time, Wargod Bian Zhuang said coldly, “What? You refuse? Then you’d better stay in Celestial Domain of Truth forever.”

When Blackheart Demonlord heard the Wargod, his heart sank to the bottom. He was aware that if he did not hand over the Divine Herb today, Wargod Bian Zhuang would not give up.

Perhaps, from the beginning, Bian Zhuang had been targetting him for that Divine Herb.

Stay in Celestial Domain of Truth forever? No.

Forcefully suppressing the anger in his heart, Blackheart Demonlord put on a sullen smile. “Moon Goddess’s return to Celestial Court is something worth celebrating. This Divine Herb is a token of my appreciation.”

As he spoke, Blackheart Demonlord took out a Saint Jade box, held it with divine power, delivering it to Moon Goddess.

Moon Goddess glanced at Blackheart Demonlord and didn’t reject him.

No one would ever reject a Divine Herb.

She took the box and opened it.

Immediately, seven-colored divine light radiated from the box, and the aura of the Divine Herb spread in all directions.

“This is… Lotus of Transcendence!”

Some deities could not help but exclaim.

Their eyes lit up; they could not contain their desire. Lotus of Transcendence was a treasure that they were eager to obtain.

It was too special. As the name implied, it could help a deity transcend a Yuanhui Tribulation. It would greatly increase the success rate.

According to the experience of the predecessors, by refining a Lotus of Transcendence, the success rate of tribulation transcendence would be raised by 30 percent .

Yuan Hui tribulations faced by deities would only get more terrifying. Some would go to great lengths for such an item even if it would only bring a 10 percent increase in success rate, not to mention 30 percent.

The heart of Blackheart Demonlord was heavy. He had wanted to use Lotus of Transcendence in his second Yuanhui Tribulation. It had great significance for him.

If it were some other type of Divine Herb, Blackheart Demonlord would not have kept it. When he had gotten his hands on those, he would have already refined them to increase his own strength.

He had waited for tens of thousands of years and risked his life to get this Divine Herb. Yet, in the end, he ended up being a cat's paw; It was truly pathetic.

"Nice. Soon, Moon Goddess will undergo her fourth Yuanhui Tribulation. This Lotus of Transcendence will be useful." Wargod Bian Zhuang smiled in satisfaction. When he looked at Moon Goddess, he even had a fawning expression.

All the deities were speechless upon seeing such an expression on the face of a big shot like him. They felt that he did not have the dignity an elite should have.

Zhang Ruochen was struck by his words. She was about to face her fourth Yuanhui Tribulation, which meant that Moon Goddess had lived for almost 500,000 years. She really was an ancient deity.

There were not many ancient deities like Moon Goddess in both the Celestial Court and Infernal Court.

After all, more than half of the deities could not survive their first Yuanhui Tribulation. The deities who had survived their second Yuanhui Tribulation were even fewer. They were usually powerful enough to shake the heavens, and almost all of them had mastered a Canon.

"With the help of the Lotus of Transcendence, Moon Goddess will definitely survive her fourth Yuanhui Tribulation. Her cultivation base will be even stronger. Congratulations!"

Many deities congratulate Moon Goddess.

With Moon Goddess's power, once she had survived her fourth Yuanhui Tribulation, not many would dare to provoke her.

In this way, Guanghan Realm would have nothing to worry about for the next 129,600 years.

A faint smile appeared on Moon Goddess' icy-cold face. This Divine Herb was indeed very useful to her. In fact, even if Bian Zhuang had not made a move, she had planned to teach Blackheart Demonlord a lesson personally.

This Lotus of Transcendence could be considered an unexpected gain.

Seeing the smile on Moon Goddess' face, Wargod Bian Zhuang could not help but feel elated. To be able to make Moon Goddess smile, no matter how much he did, it was all worth it.

Without the binding from Wargod Bian Zhuang's aura, Blackheart Demonlord did not stay. He immediately turned into a streak of Demonic Light and sped away.

He had lost his face this time. No matter what, he could not stay in Celestial Domain of Truth any longer.

However, he was not stronger than Bian Zhuang. Hence, no matter how angry he was, he could only endure it for now.

'Blackheart Demonlord, serve you right. It's a good thing that your life is spared. I will behead you one day to pay tribute to the deceased ancestors in Kunlun,' Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

He then turned his gaze to Empress Chi Yao, who was not far away. He could not help but have mixed feelings.

At this time, Empress Chi Yao also looked over. Her phoenix eyes were like two cold stars in the universe, devoid of any emotion.

"You've made great progress. Keep up the good work. I'll wait for your ascension to Godhood."

After saying this, Empress Chi Yao returned to the Fane of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to ask her why she treated Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue that way. Unfortunately, she did not give him a chance to speak.

"Chi Yao, it won't take long."

Zhang Ruochen calmed his thoughts. If he wanted to face Chi Yao directly, he needed to become stronger.

Everyone present was a deity. Even though Zhang Ruochen was not afraid, he could not help but feel uncomfortable. He got off alone after bidding Moon Goddess and the lord of the Fane of Truth goodbye.

Although many deities cared about Zhang Ruochen's reward, no one dared to do anything since Moon Goddess and Bian Zhuang were there.

"Congratulations, bro. You've crossed tenth regions of Sea of Truth and ascend Mountain of Truth."

Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and the others immediately came over to greet him.

Xiang Chunan said excitedly, "Bro, why are you here with my master's wife?"

"I'm surprised to learn that your master's wife is actually the Lord of the Fane of Truth. I could not help but be curious about your master's identity," said Zhang Ruochen.

Feng Yan was shocked. "His master's wife is the Lord of the Fane of Truth?"

Xiang Chunan and Feng Xi were also surprised.

Qing Sixue was the only one who remained calm. Apparently, she knew it.

With her cultivation base and strength, it made sense that her parents would let her know it.

"Only the Lord of the Fane can teach such a talented genius on the Path of Truth." Feng Xi looked enlightened.

To be able to become the Lord of the Fane of Truth, it was certain that her achievements on the Path of Truth had reached an unimaginable level. She must have mastered a great portion of Canon of Truth.

Xiang Chunan laughed and said, "Let's talk about it later. Let's find a place and have a few drinks to celebrate."

"Chunan is right. To celebrate your ascent of Mountain of Truth, we must drink plenty. The drinks are on me," Feng Yan said with a smile.

When Zhang Ruochen was about to speak, he suddenly saw a graceful figure. “You guys go find a place first. I have something to take care of. I’ll join you later,” he said.

As soon as he finished talking, Zhang Ruochen executed Great Dimensional Shift and disappeared into thin air.

“Where are you going, bro?” Xiang Chunan looked puzzled.

Feng Yan said, “It must be something very important. We just wait for him in a restaurant.”

Immediately, they set off to the best restaurant in Celestial Domain of Truth. Since it was a celebration for Zhang Ruochen, Feng Yan was generous.

On the other side, a figure flashed, quickly moving away from Sea of Truth, heading to the Fane of Truth.

“Fairy Lian Xi, long time no see. How have you been?”

Zhang Ruochen’s voice rang out. He appeared out of thin air and blocked her way.

It was none other than the honorable Scioness of Soul Realm, King Daxi.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen, King Daxi could not help but frown slightly. Ever since Shang Ziyan had died at Zhang Ruochen’s hands, she had left Kunlun for self-cultivation in Soul Realm. It was not until recently that she came to Celestial Domain of Truth.

She had intended to avoid him, but she did not expect to get noticed by Zhang Ruochen.

King Daxi said, “Zhang Ruochen, what are you planning to do? This is Celestial Domain of Truth. ”

“You don’t have to be so nervous. I’m not here to harm you. I just have a few questions,” Zhang Ruochen said calmly.

King Daxi said indifferently, “There’s no need for me to answer any of your questions.”

As soon as King Daxi finished her words, she wanted to leave directly. She didn’t want to be alone with Zhang Ruochen for even a moment.

“Really? I have a Projection Scroll here. It has recorded the scene of you killing a large number of cultivators in Heavenly Realm.” Zhang Ruochen took out a Projection Scroll as he spoke.

He had originally planted a terrifying flaming bug into King Daxi’s body, but he could no longer sense it now.

Obviously, King Daxi had sought help from some elite to get rid of all the flaming bugs after returning to Soul Realm.

However, this Projection Scroll was enough to make King Daxi yield.

Furthermore, Zhang Ruochen had a treasure that was extremely important to King Daxi. He was not afraid that she wouldn’t listen to him.

He needed the necessary means to deal with his enemies. He could not expect his enemies to spill the beans.

King Daxi had been Zhang Ruochen’s hidden pawn for long, and the time for her to be useful was now.

Chapter 2187: The Heavenly Realm’s Plot

King Daxi’s eyes flashed with anger after she saw the Projection Scroll in Zhang Ruochen’s hand. She wanted nothing more than to immediately attack and seize it.

Back in the Eastern Region Holy City, Zhang Ruochen had forced her to activate the Tower of Flames and killed a large number of Heavenly Realm cultivators. He had recorded it specifically, forcing her to cooperate obediently.

“The so-called Divine Envoy of Moon Goddess used such a disgraceful method,” King Daxi said coldly.

Zhang Ruochen looked indifferent and said, “How can I fight with you without using some methods? Do you want me to fight with all the cultivators of the Heavenly Realm like a boorish man? You overestimate and underestimate me.”

“Don’t think that you can threaten me just because you have a Projection Scroll. It’s not a big deal even if you announce it to the public,” King Daxi said.

She didn’t want to be coerced by Zhang Ruochen, no matter what. Otherwise, there would be no end to it.

Killing a large number of cultivators of the Heavenly Realm was indeed a big deal, but it wasn't impossible to solve it.

Zhang Ruochen did not care at all, and said, "I have one more item in my hand. Perhaps you will be interested in it?"

Zhang Ruochen flipped his hand as he spoke and took out a sparkling necklace.

King Daxi's eyes changed as soon as she saw the necklace. She immediately made a move and try to snatch it.

But no matter what she did, she could not get close to Zhang Ruochen at all. It was as if they were in different time and space.

"Give me back the Necklace of Dimension," said King Daxi.

This necklace was once King Daxi's personal belongings. It contained a large number of treasures, including several treasures that were very important to her.

In particular, the spirit of the Soul Realm had given her a special soul jade. It was related to her cultivation progress and future achievements. It was her opportunity and fortuitous encounter.

With the soul jade in her hands, she would be a legend and not mediocre. She could not afford to lose it.

The crystal scepter also was of great significance to her.

King Daxi wanted to take back these things all the time. However, the elites of the sects of Heavenly Realm could not do anything to Zhang Ruochen. Even Shang Ziyan was no match with Zhang Ruochen.

"Since you want it, just take it," Zhang Ruochen said and smiled faintly. He waved his hand and threw the Necklace of Dimension to King Daxi.

King Daxi took the Necklace of Dimension in a daze. She was very surprised.

King Daxi released her spiritual power instantly to check the items in the Necklace of Dimension.

The next moment, King Daxi's eyes showed a strange look. All her treasures were in the Necklace of Dimension. Zhang Ruochen had given them back to her. She couldn't figure out what he wanted to do.

"I can return them to you now and take them away at any time. Unless you hide in the Soul Realm forever," Zhang Ruochen said calmly. "I can only say that it's a pity. The Celestial Court will lose a beautiful scenery.".

King Daxi's eyes darkened after hearing what Zhang Ruochen said. She truly felt the strong confidence in Zhang Ruochen's words.

Was it possible for her to not come to the Celestial Court?

Although the Soul Realm was a strong world, how could the cultivation environment compare to Celestial Court?

"King Daxi, it's rare for us to meet in the Celestial Domain of Truth. How about a drink together?" Zhang Ruochen suddenly invited her.

His tone sounded gentle, but there was an irresistible meaning in it.

King Daxi was silent for a moment. In the end, she nodded and didn't refuse.

It wasn't that she didn't want to refuse, but that she couldn't refuse at all.

Facing Zhang Ruochen, she felt an invisible pressure.

Immediately, Zhang Ruochen brought along King Daxi and used the Great Dimensional Shift to rush to the restaurant where Feng Yan and the others were.

WineBreeze was the most famous restaurant in the Celestial Domain of Truth. It had existed as long as the Celestial Domain of Truth.

Not long after, Zhang Ruochen and King Daxi entered a private room of WineBreeze.

Feng Yan and the others were surprised to see King Daxi.

They all knew the identity of King Daxi, so they were curious and thought, 'Why did Zhang Ruochen bring her here?'

"Brother, what are you doing with this ugly monster from Soul Realm?" Xiang Chunan asked directly.

Xiang Chunan had always been straightforward. He would say whatever he had to say. He wouldn't be polite to those who had a grudge against Zhang Ruochen.

King Daxi felt that Xiang Chunan was deliberately humiliating her by calling her an "ugly monster" as her eyes beamed cold gaze. She was a beauty in the Portrait of the Nine Beauties. King Daxi's reputation had spread all over the heavens and all realms, and she couldn't be associated with the word "ugly".

"Chunan, don't be rude to Lian Xi. I invited her here."

Zhang Ruochen patted King Daxi's shoulder. He seemed to think of her as one of his close friends. "Don't mind him. Please take a seat, Lian Xi."

King Daxi couldn't breathe under Zhang Ruochen's oppression. She suppressed the irritation in her heart and sat down without worrying Xiang Chunan.

Zhang Ruochen also sat down and poured a glass of wine for King Daxi with his own hands. He looked very elegant and said, "Lian Xi, I have a question. I hope you have an answer for it."

"What is it about?" King Daxi asked.

Zhang Ruochen stared into her beautiful eyes and said, "I want to know what Heavenly Realm is plotting. You know what I meant."

Through Zhou Zhen, Zhang Ruochen had understood part of the Heavenly Realm's plan, but it was not specific enough. He needed a clearer picture of it.

Only in this way could he think of a countermeasure in advance.

"I can only say that you asked the wrong person. I have long left Kunlun. Even if Heavenly Realm does have a plan, I don't know anything about it," King Daxi said.

Zhang Ruochen said, "You are the future lord of Soul Realm. With the relationship between Soul Realm and Heavenly Realm, how can you not know anything? This is unbelievable."

"It's up to you whether you believe it or not. I don't know anything anyway. However, you have fought against the Heavenly Realm all the time. It's

best to stay vigilant since you've been rewarded by the Fane of Truth recently," King Daxi said coldly.

She wasn't concerned about Zhang Ruochen. She just wanted to put some pressure on him.

These things were obvious, and she was deliberately highlighting them now.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment and said, "It does not matter if you do not know anything. With your ability, It should be easy for you to get the information. I hope you can help me."

"Why should I help you?" King Daxi asked.

She was the Divine Scion of Soul Realm. With such high status, who would dare to order her around?

Moreover, Zhang Ruochen had asked her to find out about the Heavenly Realm's plan. It was equivalent to betraying them. Lian Xi and the whole Soul Realm would be in grave danger if she was discovered.

Zhang Ruochen picked up the wine cup in front of him and took a sip. He smiled faintly and said, "Since I joined the Celestial Court, I have killed so many Divine Scions, but the gods of the Heavenly Realm's sect can't do anything to me. The numbers do not concern me. If I kill you now, do you think I will be executed? Si Xue, the lord of the Fane of Truth will protect me, right?"

"If Brother Ruochen climbs the Mountain of Truth, the Fane of Truth will protect you at all cost. Besides, you're Chunan's sworn brother. Naturally, my mother would support you," Qing Sixue said.

Xiang Chunan also said, "Si Xue's right, we're all on the same side. The lord of the Fane of Truth will protect us. Even if we kill her now, we can say that she mistakenly entered a dangerous place in the Celestial Domain of Truth and died in vain."

"Such an evil thought!" Zhang Ruochen sighed.

King Daxi's heart sank to the bottom as they harmonized by exchanging words.

How could King Daxi not understand what Zhang Ruochen meant? With his special status, there wouldn't be any trouble even if he killed her. As long

as he left no traces behind. The Heaven Palace probably wouldn't investigate further.

The lord of the Fane of Truth would probably help cover up the secret so that even the gods of Soul Realm couldn't sense what was happening.

Just as Zhang Ruochen had said, it was too evil!

In the past, only the four world overlords dared to do this.

Their strength and origin could cover the sky.

"I'm afraid you are still clueless. Not long ago, Blackheart Demonlord almost met his maker. He compensated Moon Goddess with a Lotus of Transcendence, and only then the Wargod Bian Zhuang spared his life," Zhang Ruochen said again.

Hearing the name "Wargod Bian Zhuang" King Dawi's heart sank again. No one in the Soul Realm could afford to provoke this prominent figure.

Originally, Zhang Ruochen only had the Moon Goddess as his backer. Now, he had the even more terrifying Wargod Bian Zhuang and the lord of the Fane of Truth. How many people would dare to blatantly oppose him?

King Daxi stared at Zhang Ruochen. She had a myriad of thoughts, but she didn't know what to do.

Zhang Ruochen didn't dodge it. Instead, he smiled and raised his wine glass and said, "A toast to you, Lian Xi. You won't let me down, right?"

King Daxi was silent for a moment and finally held up the wine glass in front of her. She was oppressed by the situation and she cannot resist.

So this was how the weak felt,' King Daxi thought.

"Then I'll wait for your good news." Zhang Ruochen said and then he drank the wine in his glass.

King Daxi didn't say anything and she drank the wine silently. However, she felt very depressed. With her status, she had never thought that she would be bullied like this one day.

King Daxi did not stay for long. She quickly got up and left. She had nothing to say to Zhang Ruochen and the others.

As soon as King Daxi left, Zhang Ruochen also quietly left the WineBreeze.

This was an extremely important matter. Naturally, he could not be careless. He could not let King Daxi out of his sight no matter what.

As for Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan, he would let them go to the Central Imperial City on their own. It would be the same if they met again.

Zhang Ruochen was quite satisfied that King Daxi had left the Celestial Domain of Truth after she got out of WineBreeze. She went straight to the Grand Terminal of Merits.

'It seems that she guessed that I was nearby, holding her life at any time,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

King Daxi was very efficient. When she arrived at the Central Imperial City of Kunlun, she quickly found an elite from the Heavenly Realm.

Speaking of which, Zhang Ruochen was familiar with this elite. It was Gaunt and he is the one who had helped Zhou Zhen in the past. He was a Colossi, a supreme clan in the Heavenly Realm.

The two of them met in a manor in a bustling area.

Zhang Ruochen used the dimensional technique and walked around the manor. Then, he walked into a tea house opposite. He was sitting by the window in front of a table, but no one could notice him.

As soon as he sat down, he heard a lot of discussions.

"Zhang Ruochen is heaven-defying. He can cross the tenth region of the Sea of Truth as a Saint King. I wonder what reward he got."

"He's already invincible below the Supreme Saint. Now that he's received the reward from the Fane of Truth, I wonder how powerful he will be."

"After 100,000 years, Wargod Bian Zhuang has made his move again. He'd crushed the Blackheart Demonlord and Gauntatianxia with just a clone of his. He is still the leader of the nine Wargods in the Heaven Palace."

"He is angry at his beauty. Wargod Bian Zhuang is truly a peerless hero. No one can compare to him."

…

Originally, Zhang Ruochen should have been the center of attention when he ascended the Mountain of Truth. But because of Wargod Bian Zhuang, his popularity has been greatly reduced.

This was a good thing for Zhang Ruochen and it can save him a lot of trouble.

After Zhang Ruochen had left Kunlun for about a month and a half. Although the imperial city was temporarily unharmed, the situation had become tense.

More than 50 million Saint Realm Warriors had been mobilized from the Infernal Court. More and more top-notch powerhouses had gathered.

The Infernal Court had even sent more High-Saint Array Master to disintegrate the array of divine patterns in the imperial city as quickly as possible.

Fortunately, the Celestial Court also sent a large number of saint realm cultivators, ready to fight with the Infernal Court at any time.

The elites of Kunlun, needless to say, all gathered in the imperial city.

“The news spread fast. It seems that my every move has been noticed by someone,” Zhang Ruochen said in a low voice.

After obtaining The Heart of Truth, Zhang Ruochen’s hearing and vision were far better than before. Even if there was an array in the opposite manor, it could not be hidden from his eyes and ears.

In the manor, King Daxi sat down with Gaunt and had a secret conversation.

Gaunt shrunk his body and became no different from an ordinary person and he was very attentive to King Daxi.

After all, it was very rare to be alone with a peerless beauty like King Daxi.

This was the reason why King Daxi came to find Gaunt. In comparison, it was easier to get information from Gaunt.

After some small talk, King Daxi asked, “I met with Archangel Michael in the Celestial Domain of Truth. At that time, he seemed to be in a hurry and rushed to Kunlun. Did he have any important plans recently?”

King Daxi had always thought that Zhang Ruochen was suspicious because he found out that Archangel Michael had rushed to Kunlun. Therefore, she naturally talks about it.

Zhang Ruochen was struck by the news and fell into deep thought in the teahouse across the manor.

Gaunt was slightly surprised and whispered, “You are one of the leading figures in Soul Realm. You should be qualified to know about this. How could you…”

King Daxi interrupted him and said, “I have been busy with cultivation recently, so I pay less attention to the Battlefield of Merits in Kunlun. But I am afraid that I will miss something important, so I asked you for your advice.”

Gaunt didn’t think too much about it, but he hesitated.

‘This matter was of great importance. Should I tell her or not?’ Gaunt thought.

He didn’t have many opportunities to communicate with Lian Xi. Would she be unhappy if he deliberately hid it from her?

King Daxi said, “It seems that something big is going on. Don’t worry. I’ve set up a spiritual barrier, so no one can hear our conversation.”

“There’s an important plan in progress, which is to find the exact spatial coordinates of the Saturn Peach Tree,” Gaunt said.

King Daxi was surprised and asked, “Why do we need to find the spatial coordinates of the Saturn Peach Tree? The Saturn Peach Tree is a spiritual root of the world, just like a god. Even if we find it, we can’t do anything about it.”

“Of course, we don’t need to do anything. As long as we find the spatial coordinates of the Saturn Peach Tree, the deities will come out and force a passage through. They’ll attack with lightning speed and destroy the Saturn Peach Tree. In the past, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was cut off just like that. The gods of Kunlun were caught off guard,” Gaunt smiled.

Zhang Ruochen listened to every word Gaunt said in the pavilion. He suddenly understood.

Gu Xin’ao had injured Xue Wuye to obtain the Realm Bearer’s blood so that he could extract the aura of the Saturn Peach Tree and lock it onto its location. It turned out that he had such a plan.

Without the spiritual root of the world, Kunlun would fall into silence again. Facing the attack of the Infernal Court, how could they resist?

It had to be said that the Heavenly Realm’s intentions were extremely vicious. This would destroy Kunlun’s hope.

However, it was normal to think about it. The catastrophe of the Middle Ages had done so many disgraceful things in the Heavenly Realm. How could they wait for Kunlun to settle their scores?

King Daxi knew that Zhang Ruochen was nearby. She didn’t think of stopping him from listening.

After a slight pause, King Daxi said, “The space where the Saturn Peach Tree is must be very secretive. I’m afraid it won’t be easy to find it.”

“Empress Chi Yao once let them eat the Saturn Peach to cultivate a few Realm Bearers. Through the saint blood of these Realm Bearers, we can find the Saturn Peach Tree. Originally, Gu Xin’ao had already succeeded in obtaining Xue Wuye’s Saint Blood, but he lost it for some reason.”

“However, it’s not a big problem. Apart from the Realm Bearers who have eaten the Saturn Peach, some people knew the exact location of the Saturn Peach Tree. As long as we capture them, we’ll naturally be able to find the Saturn Peach Tree.”

Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat after hearing the news. He had captured the most crucial information.

As far as he knew, before the Saturn Peach Tree had grown into the spiritual root of the world, it was Emperor Wen who had been silently guarding it and disappeared for 800 years.

To come into contact with the Saturn Peach Tree, one must be very close to Emperor Wen and must have a very high position in the imperial court.

Zhang Ruochen thought of two people instantly. One was Emperor Wen’s granddaughter, Nalan Danqing and the other was Emperor Wen’s disciple, Grand Chamberlain Wang Shiqi.

They had the closest relationship with Emperor Wen and held high positions in the imperial court. They were most trusted by Empress Chi Yao and had a high probability of getting in touch with the Saturn Peach Tree.

In other words, it was very likely that the sect of Heavenly Realm would attack them next.

Or rather…

They had already attacked.

Thinking of Archangel Michael rushing to Kunlun, Zhang Ruochen realized that the situation had reached a critical point. He could no longer sit still.

“Dan Qing is in Ziwei Palace, where the Blood Dripper is guarding. Moreover, the Nine-heavens Maiden is one. There won’t be any problems. Wang Shiqi is in Syzygy Mansion. Although there’s an array guarding there, the sect of Heavenly Realm has High-Saint Array Masters. It’s enough to break the array.”

“Wang Shiqi is the only target of Heavenly Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen thought quickly. Then he suddenly looked up in the direction of the Syzygy Mansion.

Chapter 2188: The Storm Was Coming

Zhang Ruochen forced his way through the array using the Great Dimensional Shift and entered the manor. He appeared in the pavilion where King Daxi and Gaunt were sitting.

King Daxi and Gaunt were both very cautious. They both sensed Zhang Ruochen’s arrival in an instant.

Before they could do anything, they found that the space they were in was completely frozen, and they couldn’t move at all.

King Daxi was very calm. After all, she knew that Zhang Ruochen was watching from the side and it wasn’t surprising for him to show up at this time.

But she knew that since Zhang Ruochen had shown up, she would probably not be able to get out and was going to be a prisoner again.

“Zh-Zhang Ruochen.”

Gaunt’s eyes changed dramatically and hints of fear appeared in his eyes.

There was nothing Gaunt could do. Zhang Ruochen’s current reputation was too great. Among those with cultivation rank below the Supreme Sainthood, who wouldn’t be afraid of him?

Gaunt wasn’t weak. His strength had reached the third-tier below the Supreme Sainthood, but he couldn’t resist Zhang Ruochen at all. The Profound Spatial Dimension had him confined.

But he quickly calmed down and asked in a deep voice, “Zhang Ruochen, what are you trying to do by breaking into my residence? The celestial law enforcers are in the imperial city. You’d better not act rashly.”

“Tell me then, where is Michael now?” Zhang Ruochen asked indifferently.

Gaunt’s expression suddenly changed slightly. He had thought that Zhang Ruochen had not heard the conversation between him and King Daxi, but now it seemed that he was too naive.

The point was that it was too much of a coincidence. Why would Zhang Ruochen target him at this time?

Unless… There was something wrong with King Daxi!

Zhang Ruochen knew what was going on without Gaunt to answer.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes darkened. He couldn’t be bothered to ask any more questions. He stretched out his hand and released a ray of Dimensional Power that enveloped King Daxi and Gaunt.

Then, Zhang Ruochen put the two of them into the Microworld of the jungle and temporarily suppressed them.

He had already used a technique to cover up everything. In addition, the manor was shrouded by an array formation. What happened there was unknown to the outside world.

‘I hope it’s not too late,’ Zhang Ruochen thought.

Without a moment’s delay, Zhang Ruochen set off immediately and rushed to the Syzygy Mansion.

Before long, Zhang Ruochen arrived outside Syzygy Mansion. He found that it was very quiet and everything was as usual as if nothing had happened.

But the more it was like this, the more he felt that something was wrong.

He looked around and suddenly found something.

There were some patterns on the floor in front of the mansion. They were very complicated and almost overlapped with the patterns on the floor. They looked very inconspicuous.

“These are… the Illusory Talisman and the Obfuscatory Talisman. Seems like the work of a High-Saint Talisman Master.”

Zhang Ruochen’s face suddenly changed.

The Illusory Talisman was used to create illusions and confuse the real with the fake. On the other hand, the Obfuscatory Talisman can seal heaven’s secrets and isolate all senses.

Since these two talismans appeared outside the mansion, many things could not be clearer.

Zhang Ruochen immediately attacked. He released a powerful dimensional power and shattered the two talismans on the ground and directly charged in.

The Illusory Talisman shattered, and it revealed something that had been hidden.

A very strong bloody aura filled the air. The originally majestic manors were now in ruins.

Many dead bodies appeared before Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. There were corpses everywhere. The blood had dyed the whole mansion red, and it felt like he had entered purgatory.

Syzygy Mansion had a special status. When Empress Chi Yao wasn’t around, it would become the center of the imperial court.

Many great Confucians and Saint Confucians of the Path of Confucianism gathered in Syzygy Mansion to handle various government affairs and rule the world.

The Path of Confucianism contributed greatly to the long-term stability of the imperial court.

But now, those great Confucians and Saint Confucians had all fallen in pools of blood. There wasn't a single breath of life in the mansion.

Even with Zhang Ruochen's state of mind, he couldn't help but feel great ups and downs when he saw this scene. He stood there in a daze.

Most of the great Confucians and Saint Confucians had their eyes wide open. Their eyes were filled with anger, grief, and unwillingness.

Zhang Ruochen walked into the dilapidated Syzygy Mansion. His gaze became very cold when he looked at the corpses on the ground.

In the end, he was too late. Syzygy Mansion had been reduced to hell, and his resentment was soaring to the sky.

Of course, even if he rushed back to Kunlun and came directly to Syzygy Mansion, it was still too late. No one could stop what was about to happen.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen reached out his hand and pinched a wisp of grayish-black gas.

"Huh? The aura of the Infernal Court. Is it not the Heavenly Realm that purged Syzygy Mansion with blood, but the elites of the Infernal Court?" Zhang Ruochen's eyes showed a hint of surprise.

Zhang Ruochen had heard about the Heavenly Realm's plan from Gaunt. He had intuitively believed that it was all done by the Heavenly Realm.

But now, he had caught the aura of the Infernal Court. It seeped out from the wounds of the great Confucianists and Saint Confucians. The aura of the Infernal Court remained everywhere in the dilapidated Syzygy Mansion.

Zhang Ruochen involuntarily releases his spiritual power and carefully explores every corner of Syzygy Mansion.

With his current spiritual strength, no trace could escape his detection.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen moved in a flash and appeared in the ninth mansion of Syzygy Mansion.

This mansion was the core of Syzygy Mansion. The Chessboard of the World used to monitor the world was also placed in it.

Unfortunately, the mansion was empty and the Chessboard of the World was nowhere to be found.

There were fewer corpses in this mansion. There were only about 20 of them, but their identities were extraordinary. They were all Grandmasters of the Path of Confucianism. Each of them was highly respected and worshipped by countless Confucianists.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't very familiar with the elites of the Path of Confucianism, but he recognized both the old leader of the Qin Sect and the old leader of the Chess Sect. These two were both Grandmasters of the Path of Confucianism, who was as famous as The Art Saint Chu Siyuan.

It was worth mentioning that the new leader of the Qin Sect was the Realm Bearer, Sui Han.

The two old sect masters were also lying in a pool of blood. They had long lost their breath of life.

They died miserably. There was a bloody hole between their eyebrows and white brain matter mixed with blood flowed out.

Most of the cultivators of the Path of Confucianism only cultivated spiritual power. They cultivated noble morality, but their physiques were very weak. They could not be compared with the cultivators of the Martial Arts.

Zhang Ruochen walked up to the old leader of the Qin Sect and looked at the ground in front of him.

There were letters written in blood—heaven. The words weren't completed and the last stroke was still missing. The old leader of the Qin Sect didn't have the strength to write it.

The word explained everything.

A cold light flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes, and he said, "The Heavenly Realm does things flawlessly. They washed Syzygy Mansion with blood, but they made it look like the Infernal Court did it."

With such a skilled technique, it was obvious that the Heavenly Realm often did this sort of thing.

If the old leader of the Qin Sect hadn't left a clue before he died, even Zhang Ruochen might have been fooled.

‘Wang Shiqi isn’t among them and it looks like he’s been captured. Through him, the Heavenly Realm might have locked onto the Saturn Peach Tree’s spatial coordinates. I have to stop them,’ Zhang Ruochen thought.

Besides Wang Shiqi, there was another person who should know where the Saturn Peach Tree was. It was the Divine Scripture Maiden.

If they wanted to stop the Heavenly Realm’s plot, they had to find the Divine Scripture Maiden and go to the place where the Saturn Peach Tree grew as soon as possible.

It had been a while since the Heavenly Realm had massacred Syzygy Mansion. Perhaps they had learned a lot about the Saturn peach tree from Wang Shiqi.

This was a drastic move. If the Heavenly Realm succeeded, Kunlun would never be able to rise again.

Without thinking too much, Zhang Ruochen rushed out of Syzygy Mansion and went straight to Ziwei Palace.

‘How dare the Heavenly Realm Act so recklessly against the Saturn Peach Tree? No, they might not do it themselves after finding the spatial coordinates. Was the Infernal Court involved?’ The more he thought about it, the more his heart sank. Zhang Ruochen quickened his pace.

Thinking back to the aura of the Infernal Court realm he had sensed in Syzygy Mansion, he couldn’t rule out the possibility that the Heavenly Realm was in cahoots with the Infernal Court Realm.

Just like when the Heavenly Realm plotted against Kunlun, but it was Huang Tian of the Infernal Court’s Stone Clan who cut off the Divine Sky-connecting Tree in the end.

However, once such a heinous thing was exposed, the consequences would be extremely serious. Therefore, the Heavenly Realm had been trying to cover up the past and erase all traces of the past 100,000 years ago.

“Is it about time to summon the Re-Awakeners?”Zhang Ruochen muttered to himself.

It did not take long for Zhang Ruochen to approach Ziwei Palace.

Ziwei Palace was located in the center of the imperial city. It gathered thousands of spiritual veins from Kunlun. It was beautiful and stretched for 250 kilometers. It was extremely majestic.

From the ground up, layers of layers were stacked and reached into the clouds. It was like a Nine-heavens Immortal Palace with many divine patterns protecting it. Ordinary cultivators could only stand on the ground and look up from afar. They could not approach it at all.

The most eye-catching was the statue of Empress Chi Yao. It was 9,000 meters tall, and it was constantly emitting seven-colored divine light. It was lifelike and could be seen no matter where one was in the imperial city.

Before Kunlun was conquered by the Infernal Court, many people came to the imperial city every day to worship the statue.

Kong Lanyou had destroyed the statue once, but the imperial court quickly rebuilt it. It was even more awe-inspiring. It contained Empress Chi Yao's divine power and protected Ziwei Palace.

In the entire Central Imperial City, Ziwei Palace was the safest place. It was protected by divine patterns and the Blood Dripper. Even a Supreme Saint would find it hard to break in.

Compared to the hustle and bustle in other parts of the imperial city, Ziwei Palace was relatively quiet. Cultivators from all realms didn't come to occupy the surrounding mansions. It was a show of respect for Empress Chi Yao.

On a street not far from Ziwei Palace, a figure suddenly appeared and blocked Zhang Ruochen's way.

"Zhang Ruochen."

When he saw the figure clearly, Zhang Ruochen was slightly surprised. He asked, "Le, Why are you here?"

He had not expected to meet Le here. In particular, he felt that Le seemed to be waiting for him here.

Le said, "Yesterday, I killed an important figure of the Heavenly Realm. Before he died, he wanted to trade a piece of news for a chance to live. He told me a secret. There are too few cultivators in the imperial city that I can trust. I don't know who to tell.

“Fortunately, I heard that you passed the tenth region of the Sea of Truth. I guess you will return to Kunlun today. So, I waited for you there in the morning. You arrived an hour later than I expected.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “What secret?”

“The Heavenly Realm is looking for the spatial coordinates of the Saturn Peach Tree. They intend to attack Wang Shiqi and the Divine Scripture Maiden.”

“I already know about this. That’s why I came to Ziwei Palace. The Heavenly Realm has already massacred Syzygy Mansion, captured Wang Shiqi, and seized the Chessboard of the World. The imperial court can no longer capture any traces of anyone,” Zhang Ruochen said.

With the Chessboard of the World, most of the powerful figures in the Heavenly Realm and the Infernal Court Realm would be under surveillance. If there were any unusual movements, they would be able to react in time.

It would be difficult to know the movements of the powerful figures without the Chessboard of the World. The situation would undoubtedly become more chaotic.

Le pondered slightly. A cold killing intent flashed in his eyes. He said, “Since Wang Shiqi has been captured, the Saturn Peach Tree will be in danger. We can only stop it if we know where the Saturn Peach Tree is.”

“We need to ask the Nine-heavens Maiden about this,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhang Ruochen and Le set off together immediately. In the blink of an eye, they appeared in front of the palace gate of Ziwei Palace.

Everything in Ziwei Palace was as usual with divine patterns looming from time to time. The statue of Empress Chi Yao was also shining with divine light, making Ziwei Palace appear sacred and dignified.

“Greetings, Prince of the Eastern Region.”

The guards of the palace gate bowed to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was now awe-inspiring. The cultivators of Kunlun all recognized him as the Prince of the Eastern Region and regarded him as the invincible wargod. Most people respected him from the bottom of their hearts.

Zhang Ruochen was no stranger to these guards. After all, he had stayed in Ziwei Palace for some time.

When he glanced at these guards, a strange light flashed in his eyes.

‘They were still the same guards,’ Zhang Ruochen thought.

But deep in their eyes, Zhang Ruochen found something unnatural.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t be able to notice it in the past. Now, he had refined The Heart of Truth and seen through the truth, his insight was even better than many Supreme Saints.

These guards gave him the feeling that they were a bunch of marionettes without spirituality for some reason.

As he was thinking, a figure walked out of the palace gate and greeted him.

It was none other than Yin Yuanchen.

“Brother Zhang, you crossed the tenth region of the Sea of Truth, ascended the Mountain of Truth, and received the Fane of Truth’s reward. Congratulations.” Yin Yuanchen smiled.

Zhang Ruochen was still thinking in his mind. He looked at Yin Yuanchen and said, “Brother Yin, you are well-informed.”

“This matter has been spread all over the world. How could I not know? Now that you are back, you must have a few drinks to celebrate,” Yin Yuanchen said.

Yin Yuanchen looked at Le and asked, “Who is this?”

“His name is Le. He’s my friend,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Yin Yuanchen sized him up and said, “Brother Zhang’s friend must be extraordinary. I’m Yin Yuanchen.”

Le’s expression was cold and he didn’t say anything. He just nodded slightly in response.

As they spoke, the three of them walked into Ziwei Palace. It was as if they had walked into another world. The Heaven and Earth Saint Qi became extremely dense, almost turning into liquid.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Where is the Nine-heavens Maiden? I have something important to find her.”

“I wanted to talk to you about this. Not long ago, the Nine-heavens Maiden left Ziwei Palace. Before she left, a letter from her was addressed to you. That’s why I’ve been waiting for you in Ziwei Palace. Now, I can finally complete my task.” Yin Yuanchen smiled.

As he spoke, Yin Yuanchen took out a letter and handed it to Zhang Ruochen.

From the moment he saw Yin Yuanchen, Zhang Ruochen’s mood had been very low. Until now, he was deeply in control of the letter. Dense Precepts of Truth appeared in his eyes.

After a long while, Zhang Ruochen sighed. His eyes were filled with disappointment. “Yuanchen, I thought that you and I were the same and we could be friends.”

He had always liked Yin Yuanchen because he felt that they were very similar. They were both ostracized and did many things that were not understood by others.

After spending some time together, Zhang Ruochen truly regarded Yin Yuanchen as a friend. This was also the first time he had accepted someone from the Heavenly Realm.

But the reality was often cruel and painful.

When Zhang Ruochen said this, Yin Yuanchen’s gentle and smiling eyes became sharp and full of sharpness. He struck with lightning speed and pushed the envelope toward Zhang Ruochen. He was decisive and did not delay at all.

Swoosh
Yin Yuanchen’s speed was as fast as lightning.

Swoosh
In the process, the envelope burned and turned into ashes.

A talisman appeared in the ashes.

At such a close distance and with Yin Yuanchen’s terrifying speed, no one could avoid it.

The envelope was made by a Supreme Saint of Paramount Realm. There shouldn't have been any flaws. However, Yin Yuanchen didn't expect Zhang Ruochen to have The Heart of Truth. This trick couldn't be hidden from his eyes.

In Yin Yuanchen's expectation, Zhang Ruochen only needed to reach out and take the envelope. The talisman hidden in the envelope would be able to suppress him. No matter how strong your cultivation was, you could only kneel on the ground and become a powerless prisoner. You would also have to endure the charms and spells that were worse than death. The Precepts in you would melt one by one, turning you into a crippled person whose Path had been cut off.

Since he had been exposed in advance, Yin Yuanchen had to change his strategy and make the first move.

"Zhang Ruochen, you have to take this talisman even if you don't want to."

…

Chapter 2189: Everyone Has Their Own Wills

Zhang Ruochen felt pain as he grasped on Yin Yuanchen's real intentions. At the end of the day, they were not the same kind of people after all.

Zhang Ruochen believed that most of Yin Yuanchen's words were his true feelings. However, Yin Yuanchen ultimately chose another path.

Just as the talisman was about to touch Zhang Ruochen's body, time and space suddenly halted in an instant.

Five-colored Chaotic light shined brightly as he grabbed the back of Yin Yuanchen's arm. With his strength as strong as the Divine iron, he practically froze Yin Yuanchen at that instant.

Just then, Zhang Ruochen pushed the talisman back.

"Huh? Something's wrong…"

His expression changed as he sensed something.

He couldn't help but let go of the arm. Yin Yuanchen took the opportunity to retreat quickly and pulled away from him.

With a wounded expression, Yin Yuanchen used a secret technique to remove the talisman from his body as fast as he could.

Fortunately, he had prepared for this. In case anything happened, he had a way to counter the effects of the talisman.

However, at this moment, a certain amount of the talisman's power had already seeped into his body. It couldn't be completely removed, so he would inevitably suffer at the moment.

Yet Yin Yuanchen still had a smile on his face. No matter how powerful Zhang Ruochen was, he was still ambushed by him.

Zhang Ruochen stood still. His focus at his once clean and smooth palm, which had now turned green and black. Strange patterns were faintly noticeable, eroding his vitality crazily.

Le said, "You've been poisoned. It's the 'Decree of Death' from the Tiansha Organization."

Tiansha organization had been one of the top three killer organizations people fear in the Celestial Court, originated from Heavenly Realm.

The 'Decree of Death' was a unique poison created by the Tiansha Organization. It literally meant 'a decree from Grim Reaper'. If one were poisoned, they would die. It was strong enough to poison a Supreme Saint.

If the 'Decree of Death poisoned the cultivators with rank below the Supreme Sainthood', they would die without a doubt as it was impossible to heal.

Since the establishment of the Tiansha Organization, countless powerful figures had been poisoned by the 'Decree of Death'.

The reason Tiansha organization was able to make people so afraid — the 'Decree of Death' — was a great contribution.

Zhang Ruochen didn't expect Yin Yuanchen to refine the 'Decree of Death' on the surface of his body. So that no matter what came into his contact, it would sure be poisoned.

It had to be said that Yin Yuanchen's was very shrewd, and his schemes were well laid and calculated.

When Yin Yuanchen suppressed the power of the talisman. All of his true colors was exposed, and he no longer had a gentle and refined feeling. He stared at Zhang Ruochen with a sharp gaze and said, "We are indeed very similar. I really don't want to kill you, but unfortunately, you are always

against the Heavenly Realm. Therefore, your ending has long been destined."

"Do you know that Heavenly Realm actually sent me to counter you from the very beginning? I've been waiting for this day."

As he spoke, Yin Yuanchen's body released an extremely dense aura. His aura was as majestic as a chaotic world, and it was much stronger compared to the time when he'd attacked Yan Wushen.

Zhang Ruochen could even sense that his aura was stronger than Archangel Michael's.

"I underestimated the attention that the Heavenly Realm concentrated on me!" Zhang Ruochen sighed.

The Heavenly Realm had really gone to great lengths to deal with him. They actually let Yin Yuanchen to hide his true cultivation and strength. Just to get close to him and gain his trust.

It could only be said that the Heavenly Realm felt threatened by Zhang Ruochen.

Yin Yuanchen was indeed a good knife.

"It must be very tiring to make up so many lies, right?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Yin Yuanchen laughed in a self-deprecating manner. "Do you think that they are all lies? No, they are all true. However, that person is not me, but my father. He is a terrible good man who has been longing for Kunlun."

"After the catastrophe of the Middle Ages, my grandmother was imprisoned by my grandfather in the Sea of Wondering Souls. She had been isolated from the world for 100,000 years. Since no one could get close to her, she was gradually forgotten. Only my father had kept thinking about her."

"He always wanted to save my grandmother and return to Kunlun with her. For this reason, he endured patiently. Even after he became a deity, he did not act rashly. He simply had spent all his time and energy into cultivation to make himself stronger. At the same time, he was waiting for an opportunity. It was not until hundreds of years ago; he married my mother and gave birth to me."

“But even so, he didn’t give up on the idea of saving grandmother. He was too ignorant, holding onto the so-called filial piety and blood relationship. He didn’t hesitate to be the enemy of the entire Heavenly Realm. But he had failed and was killed by grandfather.”

“At that time, I was only seven years old. Do you know how scared I was when I saw my father being killed right in front of my own eyes? Do you know how much pain I was in? I was terrified and had to suffer every day, thinking that what If I was next? What should I do?”

Yin Yuanchen was too agitated that he shouted out the last sentence. He couldn’t even suppress his emotion.

Upon hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but feel a little emotional. He did not expect that Yin Yuanchen would have such an experience.

Without a doubt, Yin Yuanchen’s father was probably a mighty deity. Yet, in the end, he had been killed by Yin Yuanchen’s grandfather because he had wanted to save his mother.

One had to admit that Yin Yuanchen’s grandfather was really ruthless and had a really strong capability.

“After my father died, everyone in the family ostracized and bullied me. No one has ever approved me.”

Yin Yuanchen laughed sardonically, revealing his snow-white teeth. However, tears were flowing out from his eyes. “Why are they treating me like this? What did I do wrong? All because I have the Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations monarch flowing in my body?” he growled like a wild beast.

“No, I didn’t do anything wrong. I just want to live. I just want to live with dignity. All this while, I have always been the best. I am the first genius in Heavenly Realm. The glory that Micheal has enjoyed should’ve all belonged to me.”

“I don’t want to become like my father who constantly endured in silence and pain but ended up in such a horrible state. I want to change everything.”

Yin Yuanchen fell into a state of madness. Today he could finally speak the words he had been keeping to himself.

In the next moment, Yin Yuanchen's eyes turned red, and his body trembled vigorously. He laughed wildly and said, "Now the opportunity has finally come. As long as I kill you, I can get grandfather's approval and become a true cultivator of Heavenly Realm. On that account, you must die."

The opportunity to change everything was right in front of him. He will not let any obstacle take him down. He'd had enough living a life of being ostracized and bullied everywhere.

He too once wanted to become a person like his father, but the real world was so harsh that he had to choose another path.

"Since your grandmother was imprisoned, how did you get your body transformed with *Heaven's Pass Scripture's* secret technique? " Zhang Ruochen asked curiously.
Heaven's Pass Scripture was a peerless technique practiced by Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations. It would be bad if it fell into the hands of Heavenly Realm.

Yin Yuanchen sneered, "Do you know what happens when a person is imprisoned for one hundred thousand years and doesn't come in contact with anyone? Under those conditions, she met me — her own grandson— and naturally, she believed everything I said."

"She always looks forward to my company and has put all of her hopes on me. She even wants me to find Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations to revive Kunlun. Don't you think it's funny? "

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but frown while hearing this. This kind of loneliness—being imprisoned for 100,000 years—could drive a person mad.

It's hard to imagine that the Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations's daughter would end up in such a horrible state.

"It is funny, but the funny person is you. In my eyes, you're just a pathetic coward who only knows how to escape reality," Zhang Ruochen said indifferently.

Yin Yuanchen looked ferocious. He pointed at Zhang Ruochen and shouted, "You don't have the right to say that to me. You don't know what I've been through.

“You’re the one who is pathetic. What have you gained after doing so much for Kunlun?

“In the end, you’re just a person abandoned by Kunlun.”

“You have no idea how powerful Heavenly Realm is now. In just 100,000 years, numerous deities were born in Heavenly Realm. They are even stronger than those before the catastrophe of the Middle Ages. They have long stood at the peak while Kunlun is getting weaker. The difference between the two Macroworlds is like Heaven and Earth.”

“The gods of Kunlun have indeed left some backup plans, but that won’t change anything. I have already killed a dozen Re-Awakeners. This time, Kunlun must meet its doom.

“Zhang Ruochen, this will be the inevitable outcome, and you can’t stop it. Death will be the result if you try to stop it.”

Yin Yuanchen was undoubtedly trying to break Zhang Ruochen’s faith. He wanted to see Zhang Ruochen’s despair.

In fact, he really hoped that Zhang Ruochen could join Heavenly Realm. Maybe in that case, they could become true confidants and create legends together.

Unfortunately, they chose different paths and became enemies. This was a battle between two where only one would live to tell the story.

However, what disappointed Yin Yuanchen was that Zhang Ruochen appeared calm in the entire process as if he did not realize how dangerous his situation was.

“Since you are Kunlun’s enemy, I don’t need to show you any mercy,” Zhang Ruochen said in a deep voice.

Yin Yuanchen’s eyes turned cold, and he was emitting terrifying killing intent. He said, “I’ll end your life to ease your pain.”

As he spoke, Yin Yuanchen attacked immediately to avoid any unforeseen circumstances.

Zhang Ruochen was hit by the ‘ Decree of Death’ and theoretically doomed to die. However he was not an ordinary person so no one could assume that he didn’t have the antidote of it,

Yin Yuanchen opened his palm, which was full of water.

A terrifying power surrounded Zhang Ruochen and Le and they could not resist it.

In an instant, they were pulled into a boundless sea. Surrounding them was a billowy sea with endless waves, like a chaotic sea area.

While Yin Yuanchen stood on the horizon, his body was as big as the universe. He looked down at the two of them like he were a god.

This entire Sea of Chaos was in Yin Yuanchen's palm.

To be more precise, it's located in the glove that Yin Yuanchen was wearing.

This glove was made from a sea world that contained immense power. It could not be compared to the Heavenly Mugwort Bell of Wargod Bian Zhuang, but it was still extraordinary.

The glove looked ordinary, but on the inside, it contained a universe. As long as one was powerful enough, they could even use the glove to trap a Supreme Saint.

If it weren't for the glove, Yin Yuanchen wouldn't have dared to take the talisman with his hand.

Two huge moons suddenly rose above the sea. Both released the terrifying Moon Power and filled the entire world.

In an instant, within ten thousand miles of the sea was completely frozen. The temperature was extremely low.

The Moon power turned into a tide and attacked Zhang Ruochen and Le from all directions.

Not only that, a powerful spiritual power very close to the 60th level swept over. Its quality was very high, and it turned into a spiritual power storm; it was unstoppable and could sweep all obstacles on the way easily.

The astute in Zhang Ruochen's eyes were quickly flashed though. He instantly recognized the two moons. It was actually a huge creature.

"It's Kun."

Kun was a huge fish that lived in the vast ocean. It was a creature on the same level as the divine dragon, and it could grow into a powerful Divine Beast.

Yin Yuanchen had been a fish lover and liked to raise fish, but Zhang Ruochen did not expect that Yin Yuanchen would raise a real big fish.

Kun had been born with the Moon Power. When it could produce the Sun power, it could transform into a Peng flying high and soaring through the clouds.

Furthermore, Kun had a terrifying innate ability, which was to devour. It could have stored the universe in his stomach and devoured everything. When it grew to its greatest shape, it could even swallow a Macroworld in one gulp.

The Kun in front of him gave off a powerful aura. It could easily swallow a Nine-Step Saint King.

Zhang Ruochen decided to make a move, so he immediately released his spiritual power to block it.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen activated his Precepts of the Palm and struck out.

Roar!
Along with an earth-shaking Dragon's roar, a golden dragon that was thousands of miles long flew out of Zhang Ruochen's palm. It was extremely solid and lifelike. It also gave off vast dragon power and soared into the sky.

When the dragon came out of the sea, its unparalleled power shattered all the ice on the sea.

Boom
The dragon and the two moons collided, directly shattering the two moons.

Bang
The huge Kun[1] appeared, falling right from the sky into the sea.

It was hundreds of miles long and looked like a whale.

There was pain in the Kun's eyes. It was obviously injured, but it survived.

Zhang Ruochen had not used Path of Truth or any other booster in that palm attack. He had simply executed palm techniques.

But with his current abilities, he could kill a Nine-Step Saint King with a casual palm strike.

The fact that Kun could survive a palm strike showed how powerful it was. It was probably comparable to the Azure Dragon.

Without waiting for Zhang Ruochen to attack again, Le moved. He drew his sword out in an instant. The speed of the sword was beyond imagination.

A peerless sword Qi slashed out, cutting through the sky and earth.

Crash
The surface of the sea cracked, and a deep ravine appeared. Under the effect of the Sword Qi, it became a vacuum zone. The seawater could not fuse with each other.

Kun reacted quickly. As it released boundless Moon power and condensed a solid ice wall, it wanted to block Le's sword.

Crack
The ice wall shattered. It couldn't block Le's Ultimate Sword Qi at all.

Kun's eyes opened wide as its body split into two. Its blood spewed out and dyed the sea red. It died in a horrible way.

It wasn't that Kun wasn't strong enough, but Le's sword was too sharp.

Le's swordsmanship was different from Zhang Ruochen's; there was only one word to describe it: strange. His swordsmanship was unconventional. It could only be used for slaughter. Hence, whenever he launched his sword strike, there would be bloodshed. And eventually, someone would die.

Because of this, Le could even win against people who were stronger than him.

Buzz
Countless small black particles flew out of Kun's body, covering the sky and earth.

"Venomous insects."

Zhang Ruochen's pupils constricted.

He could see that these venomous insects were not simple. The key was that there were hundreds of millions of them.

The Witchcraft of venomous insects was popular in the Hadean Time. After a long time, it had not been passed down. He did not expect Yin Yuanchen to be able to control and cultivate so many terrifying venomous insects.

It had to be said that Yin Yuanchen hid it very well. He had never shown it to anyone before.

From talismans, unique poisons, world gloves, Kun, and venomous insects, endless tricks were skilfully laid. Yin Yuanchen's schemes were terrifying, and he had everything planned.

Facing Yin Yuanchen's schemes, no one could escape.

"These Soul Gobblers were originally nurtured by my father. After he died, I continued to feed them with his divine blood. No one knows that they were hidden in the Kun's body. Zhang Ruochen, Enjoy!"

Yin Yuanchen's sinister laughter suddenly sounded.

Zhang Ruochen was aware as he had heard of the Soul Gobblers before. It was one of the most terrifying venomous insects cultivated in the Hadean Time. When it reached its peak, it was enough to threaten gods.

Hadean Time was full of mystery and glory. Many powers born at that time could rival the power of Paths of the Ancients, such as the power of Anima, the power of Vajra, the power of the World Creation, and so on.

It was hard to imagine under what kind of circumstances had led to the birth of these powerful powers.

Yin Yuanchen's father's methods were undoubtedly extraordinary as he could cultivate such a large number of Soul Gobblers. He must have obtained a top-tier inheritance from the Hadean Time.

However, Yin Yuanchen had actually used his father's divine blood to feed the insects. It was truly treacherous. He had gone completely mad.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at his hand that had been infected with the strange poison. At this moment, there was a pure white Divine Purification Flames burning fiercely and quickly refining the poison of the "Decree of Death".

The “Decree of Death” was indeed terrifying. Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen had prepared for this. In addition, he had the Divine Mark carved by the Moon Goddess. Besides that, repulsion from the essences of the Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi’s Sun Leaf greatly prevented the poison from eroding him.

That was how Zhang Ruochen was able to refine the Divine Purification Flames in time.

He had practiced the Path of Fire to Great Perfection. The Emperor-level of Divine Purification Flames was enough to refine everything.

Even so, refining the “Decree of Death” still took a lot of effort from Zhang Ruochen. He had lost part of his vitality.

Finally, the poison of the “Decree of Death” was completely refined. Zhang Ruochen’s palm returned as white as jade again.

With a thought, Zhang Ruochen summoned the Armor of the Fire God and put it on.

If he had the Fire God armor before, Yin Yuanchen’s “Decree of Death” poison wouldn’t have been able to ambush him.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen took out the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, which was 2,000 times the speed of sound, and gave it to Le.

Le didn’t refuse and put it on without hesitation.

They might have to face many powerful enemies, and their defense was essential.

Chapter 2190: The Sword of Judgment

In Ziwei Palace, Yin Yuanchen stood quietly and looked down at Zhang Ruochen and Le, who were in the sea realm. A trace of spiteful smile faintly appeared in his eyes.

Zhang Ruochen still fell into Yin Yuanchen’s trap despite being so vigilant. He was caught inside Yin Yuanchen’s weapon and would be completely devoured by hundreds of millions of Soul Gobblers soon.

“Where is Zhang Ruochen? Did you let him escape?”

At this moment, a cold voice suddenly sounded.

Swoosh!
Hundreds of figures flashed out from the depths of Ziwei Palace and appeared around Yin Yuanchen.

All of them emitted very powerful aurae. Their cultivation was above Nine-Step Saint Kinghood. Some of them even gave off an unfathomable feeling.

They all had impressive backgrounds. Most of them came from the various Fanes and prominent families in Heavenly Realm and other Macroworlds.

There were many Fanes in Heavenly Realm. Each Fane was built by a deity, and there was more than one deity overseeing it. In other words, Heavenly Realm had many deities.

Zhang Ruochen was most familiar with Fane of Bloody War, which was founded by Jiatianxia. However, it was only ranked 16th among the many Fanes in Heavenly Realm. In other words, it was not considered powerful.

Undoubtedly, the most powerful Fane was Fane of Light, which passed on the teachings of one of the Paths of the Ancients. Cultivators including Archangel Michael and Zhou Yu were actually elites nurtured by Fane of Light.

The man who spoke just now was an angel with eight Blood Wings. He had a cold face and a slender body. He was wearing blood-colored armor. The murderous aura emitted from him was powerful as if he had just come from a mountain of corpses or a sea of blood.

Under normal circumstances, only those elites among angels who were Supreme Saints would have eight wings.

However, this angel was only a Saint King in terms of cultivation base. Yet, he exuded a faint intimidating aura that of a Supreme Saint elite.

His name was Teryn. He came from Fane of Bloody War. He used to be a Neverwither Supreme Saint with a profound cultivation base. Due to some reason, his Neverwither physique was shattered, and his cultivation base dropped. Thus he became a Descender.

Although Teryn was only a Saint King now, his strength was mighty. Among cultivation with ranks below Supreme Sainthood, no one could be his match.

Almost every Descender was invincible at the realm of Saint Kinghood.

However, the fate of a Descender was often forlorn. They could never rebuild their Neverwither physique unless they found a great fortuitous encounter.

Fane of Bloody War was the most active in tackling Kunlun and Zhang Ruochen, but the loss they suffered was the most. Not only were their Scarlet Angels and young-gen leaders killed, but their deities had also almost died too. They were deeply humiliated.

Therefore, Fane of Bloody War had put in a lot of effort this time. They had deployed all their elites. They wanted to save face so they would not become a laughing stock among other Fanes.

Yin Yuanchen glanced at Teryn and said coldly, “Since I’m the one who personally carried out the mission, it’s impossible that Zhang Ruochen can escape. He is not far from death now.”

As he spoke, Yin Yuanchen showed the sea realm hidden in his glove to Teryn and the others.

As an insider, he had broken into Ziwei Palace and suppressed Zhang Ruochen. These two great contributions were enough for Yin Yuanchen to stand up straight. No one dared to belittle him anymore.

When Yin Yuanchen returned to Heavenly Realm, his status would have a major change. He could finally be honored with the glory and treatment that he deserved. He did not need to envy others anymore. He could live with dignity.

“Yin Yuanchen’s attack is indeed extraordinary. Even someone as strong as Zhang Ruochen could be easily captured. He has contributed a lot to this operation,” a gorgeous woman said with a smile.

She wore a long dark green dress. Her waist was slim, her neck slender, her skin fair as a lily, her eyes bright and lively. She gave off a very captivating charm. Anyone would fall head over heels for her when their eyes met hers.

Bing Tong was her name, a cultivator from Soul Realm. She was the true leader of cultivators with rank below Supreme Sainthood in Soul Realm. Her cultivation far surpassed that of King Daxi

Bing Tong had controlled the Saint Souls among the guards outside the palace with some techniques.

She was skilled. If Zhang Ruochen had not refined the Heart of Truth, he probably wouldn't have been able to find out.

Hearing Bing Tong's words, Yin Yuanchen could not help but smile. This was exactly what he wanted to see.

Yin Yuanchen glanced at Teryn, Bing Tong, and the others. "Have you captured the Nine-heavens Maiden? What's the situation at Rainbow Pavilion?"

Saturn Peach Tree was the main target in Heavenly Realm's operation this time. Zhang Ruochen was only their secondary target.

"The Nine-heavens Maiden has inherited our ancestor's Navagraha's Tears. Naturally, it's not easy to counter her. Although I had interfered with the power of the Navagraha's Tears with a secret technique, she still managed to retreat into a palace building where Empress Chi Yao once lived. That palace building is protected by Empress Chi Yao's divine power. It's engraved with a large number of Divine Runes. It's still difficult to break into it."

"However, the great amount of blood left behind by the wounded Nine-heavens Maiden is enough to activate the Dimensional Array in Rainbow Pavilion. As long as we can penetrate Rainbow Pavilion's defense, it'll be a piece of cake to locate the dimension where Saturn Peach Tree is."

Akash walked out from the crowd with a smile on his handsome face, as if everything was under his control.

No one would have thought that Akash, who represented Megrez, would join Heavenly Realm's faction in an operation against Kunlun.

If Zhang Ruochen heard what Akash said, he would be surprised about the link between Rainbow Pavilion and Saturn Peach Tree. After all, he had never noticed anything unusual when during his visit at Rainbow Pavilion.

"The array inside and outside Rainbow Pavilion was set up by the eldest disciple of Saint Monk Xumi. It is very profound. It will not be easy to break it," an elite frowned as he spoke.

It was obvious that Saturn Peach Tree was heavily guarded, which made the mission hard.

If there were no such set-ups, the top elites from Celestial Court and Infernal Court would have long identified the exact location of Saturn Peach Tree and wouldn't have gone through so many troubles.

Teryn looked at the sea realm in Yin Yuanchen's palm and said, "The most important thing now is to get rid of Zhang Ruochen as soon as possible to avoid unnecessary trouble."

Zhang Ruochen's existence was an unstable variable that could turn the tide. He had destroyed Heavenly Realm's plots one after another. He was indeed a great threat.

"Don't worry. The Soul Gobblers will soon devour Zhang Ruochen," said Yin Yuanchen.

The Soul Gobblers bred by a deity was terrifying that even a Supreme Saint might not be able to counter them.

Besides, Yin Yuanchen had been feeding the Soul Gobblers with his father's divine blood. The Soul Gobblers had become even more eerie and terrifying.

Yin Yuanchen knew that Zhang Ruochen had plenty of tricks up his sleeves. If Yin Yuanchen had released the Soul Gobblers outside the sea realm, Zhang Ruochen might have escaped by using some means. As long as Yin Yuanchen kept him inside the sea realm, there would be no way out and he would be dead for sure.

No matter how powerful Zhang Ruochen's cultivation in the Path of Dimension was, he could not escape from the sea realm.

…

In the sea realm, Zhang Ruochen and Le were attacked by hundreds of millions of Soul Gobblers. They blocked off all their escape routes.

The swarm of Soul Gobblers formed a Soul-Devouring Enchantment, enveloping Zhang Ruochen and Le, producing a tremendous destructive and corrosive force when their power combined.

BUZZZ
All the Soul Gobblers flapped their wings simultaneously and released strange and terrifying sonic waves. The waves shook the void, reaching into Zhang Ruochen and Le's Saint Souls.

At the same time, the Soul Gobblers secreted terrifying venom. It filled the air, silently seeping into Zhang Ruochen and Le.

Le, who remained expressionless, calmly struck out his sword.

He moved his iron sword in a strange trajectory. As the sword shook slightly, a rather unusual wave was released. It broke the sound waves from the Soul Gobblers.

The wave that Le released was very terrifying that his opponents would fall for it easily. Their Saint Souls would disintegrate even without them knowing it.

When Le attacked, Zhang Ruochen launched his strike as well. He activated Armor of the Fire God with Canon of Truth. A sky-burning flame rose and combined with the Divine Purification Flame, spreading in all directions.

Now, he had a total of 0.0049 percent of the Canon of Truth. With Heart of Truth, he could undoubtedly activate the stronger power of Armor of the Fire God.

Moreover, Zhang Ruochen had practiced Path of Fire to Great Perfection. Hence, there was a qualitative change in any flames in his hands. They could unleash terrifying power beyond imagination.

Sizzz
The eerie venom in the air was refined by the divine fire successively, making a slight sound.

BOOM!
Driven by Zhang Ruochen, the divine flame soared into the sky like an ancient volcano erupting.

With the support of Path of Truth, the divine flame became extremely terrifying that it seemed to be able to burn the sky and boil the sea, refining all things, turning heaven and earth into nothingness.

Suddenly, the Soul-Devouring Enchantment formed by the Soul Gobblers was penetrated forcefully. A large number of Soul Gobblers turned into ashes and fell into the sea.

“He has attained Great Perfection in Path of Fire, Emperor-level Divine Purification Flame, and that unusual Armor of the Fire God,” said Teryn in surprise.

According to the intel they had received, Zhang Ruochen should have only practiced Swordsmanship to its Great Perfection. Although his attainments in other Paths is high, they were still lacking.

Yin Yuanchen's eyes narrowed. He had witnessed the duel between Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen. He had thought that he had known Zhang Ruochen's techniques and strength well.

But now, it seemed that the information he had was obviously very different from reality.

For some reason, Yin Yuanchen felt that he could not see through Zhang Ruochen at all. It was as if there was a layer of fog covering Zhang Ruochen. No one knew what powerful techniques he would use next.

"Who is the person with Zhang Ruochen? His swordsmanship is eerie," said Bing Tong, her eyes flashed with surprise.

"His name is Le. He is known as the Deadly Swordsman. Fane of Death has invested great resources to nurture him. Over the years, he has been fighting against us—Tiansha Organization—and killed many of us." A ghost-like figure emerged from the darkness.

He wore a black robe and a ghost mask. His aura was almost completely concealed. Even if he approached closer, one could barely detect his presence.

He was a Master Assassin of Tiansha Organization. His name was Helian Wusheng. His ranking on the Duelist Heavenly King List was very high. His name was fearsome as countless Saint Kings had died at his hands.

Helian Wusheng was very mysterious. Almost no one had seen his real face. He had never failed to kill a target.

Tiansha Organization hated Le to his core that they had always wanted to get rid of him. They had sent many Master Assassins to kill him. Not only had they failed the mission, but they also had all died at Le's hands.

Now, Le's ranking on Duelist Heavenly King List was very high. He was regarded as a major threat by Tiansha Organization.

Yin Yuanchen said, "No matter who he is, he can only die with Zhang Ruochen this time."

As he spoke, Yin Yuanchen injected a majestic power of Death into the sea realm.

Very few people knew that he specialized in Path of Death. It was not any ordinary kind of power of Death he was cultivating. It was the eeriest one: the power of Hadean Doom.

In ancient times, some powerful cultivators practiced the power of Hadean Doom to its advanced level. If they released it, they could kill all the creatures in a Macroworld in an instant.

Yin Yuanchen had used his father's divine corpse to cultivate and absorb the aura of Death. He had cultivated the power of Hadean Doom to a shocking level.

In the sea realm, Kun's body that had been split into two, quickly fused.

Under the effect of Hadean Doom's force, Kun's body became pitch-black. The seawater around it became as thick as ink.

RAWRRRR!
Kun opened its bloody mouth and let out a roar, releasing a terrifying devouring force.

All the Soul Gobblers, including Zhang Ruochen and Le, were swallowed by Kun in an instant.

The universe in Kun's stomach was huge. No matter how it used to be, it was dismal. Countless dead spirits emerged from the ink-like seawater and pounced on Zhang Ruochen and Le.

"To be able to practice the Hadean Doom to such an extent, Yuanchen, I really underestimated you," Zhang Ruochen said in a low voice.

The sea realm had already exerted a strong suppressive force on them. Now that they had entered the Kun's body, the suppressive force was undoubtedly stronger. Even the circulation of Saint Qi was affected.

Le's eyes were cold. A surge of murderous aura burst out from him, forming a vague image of a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood.

The killing intent and the power of Life and Death merged. Two strange eyes formed behind Le. One was black, and the other was white. They were like black holes and white holes in a galaxy.

Le held the hilt of the iron sword with both hands and raised it high.

The two eyes behind him suddenly changed:one released black Sword Qi, and the other released white Sword Qi.

The two Sword Qi merged and become a terrifying torrent of Sword Qi that swept in all directions.

BANG!
Wherever the Sword Qi torrent passed, all the dead spirits exploded, their bodies and souls destroyed.

Originally, the dead spirits were very difficult to destroy, but the Life and Death Sword Qi Le had cultivated happened to be their nemesis. They were destroyed for good.

Silently, a Soul Gobbler appeared behind Le's neck.

However, a strand of Le's hair flew up. In a flash, it cut the Soul Gobblers in half.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen was also attacked by Soul Gobblers. In this unusual environment, they were extremely good at hiding. They were elusive and hard to guard against.

It would be a great trouble if any of these Soul Gobblers entered their bodies. They might lose their lives in an instant.

"How annoying."

A cold light flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

Immediately, he mobilized endless Saint Qi to his left leg and activated the millions of Divine Precepts in it. At the same time, he mobilized his Precepts of Fire and the Precepts of Truth.

BOOM!
The boundless flaming divine force was released from Zhang Ruochen's left leg. It swept in all directions and turned everything into ashes.

Although the universe in Kun's stomach was sturdy, it could not withstand this flaming divine force. The next moment, it collapsed.

Kun's huge body exploded above the sea.

A 10,000-mile radius of sea surface indented as a high volume of seawater evaporated. The seawater was still boiling.

The dead spirits and Soul Gobblers were all annihilated; nothing was left.

The entire sea area started to shake violently as the space became extremely unstable. Many Dimensional Rifts appeared.

BANG!
Yin Yuan Chen could not withstand this force; it was as if an ancient divine mountain was suppressing him. He bent down, and his gloved hand was pressed to the ground, causing the hard floor to be filled with cracks.

“How is this possible?”

Yin Yuanchen’s eyes were filled with disbelief.

He had never expected that Zhang Ruochen would be able to release such terrifying power while trapped in the sea realm. It was almost beyond what he could withstand.

Zhang Ruochen could crush an entire realm with just a foot stomp!

The expressions of the powerhouses from Heavenly Realm’s factions changed.

“Give Zhang Ruochen a fatal blow with Sword of Judgment,” an angel with three pairs of platinum wings said in a deep voice.

Immediately, eleven mighty angels behind him walked out.

All twelve powerful angels, including him, were cultivators from Fane of Light practicing Path of Light. Although they were not as powerful as Archangel Michael and Zhou Yu, they were all top-notch elites who had attained Path’s Anterior.

The most important thing was that they were skilled in joint attacks. With twelve Swords of Judgement in their hands, even Archangel Michael was also no match for them when they launched an attack with all their strength.

Hence, they were known as the twelve Angels of Vengeance in charge of executing punishment.

Swoosh!

Twelve Saint Swords emitting bright holy light flew out from the twelve Angels of Vengeance. Hundreds of thousands of Regal-level inscriptions emerged on the surface of each sword. Their powers could be combined into one.

The twelve Swords of Judgment were a set. When they were combined, they became a powerful Supreme Artifact. In ancient times, they had once fused with divine blood.

“Die.”

The twelve Swords of Judgment flew into the sea realm under the control of the twelve Angels of Vengeance.

Swoosh– Swoosh–
In an instant, the Saint Swords split into 120 swords; 120 split into 1,200 swords; 1,200 split into 12,000 swords.

Eventually, 120,000 swords were formed.

Myriad swords forming in the sky was truly a sight to behold.

Zhang Ruochen looked up. At this moment, in addition to Yin Yuanchen, there were also twelve deity-like figures on the horizon, looking down at the world

Seeing the torrent of Saint Swords descending from the sky, Zhang Ruochen’s eyes narrowed into slits. He raised his arm and waved.

Rumble–
Suddenly, the surface of the sea shook. Millions of water droplets floated in the air. Under the effect of Swordwill, each droplet condensed into a sharp Saint Sword and soared into the sky.

With Zhang Ruochen’s attainment in swordsmanship, he could turn everything into a sword.

Moreover, he had also practiced Path of Water to its Great Perfection. When the force of Water combined with his swordsmanship, the power of his sword strike was unpredictable.

The Saint Swords made of water droplets shot into the sky like a meteor shower.

Boom! Boom!

The Saint Swords in the sky clashed with Zhang Ruochen's swords, continuously shattering.

In the next moment, the true form of the twelve Swords of Judgment reappeared.

After being attacked by Saint Swords made of water droplets, the glow of the twelve Swords of Judgment dimmed, and the Regal-level inscription disappeared.

CRASH!
The terrifying Swordwill penetrated the dome of the sea realm, stabbing into the twelve Angels of Vengeance.

There was a drastic change in the expressions of the twelve Angels of Vengeance. They involuntarily stepped back and spat out large mouthfuls of blood.

"How can he be so powerful?"

The twelve Angels of Vengeance were all shocked.

They had thought that with the suppression of the sea realm, they could kill Zhang Ruochen if they worked together. Never had they expected such an outcome.

Zhang Ruochen's strength had far exceeded their expectations.

Chapter 2191: Let's Kill This Generation
The entire sea world was boiling under the strong impact. Dimensional Rifts appeared everywhere. It was a terrifying scene as if everything was about to collapse.

"Let's join forces. We must not let Zhang Ruochen escape," Teryn shouted.

He reached out one hand as he spoke. Monstrous blood Qi surged and condensed into an extremely unusual red light. Dozens of precepts were contained within it, and their destructive power was shocking.

As a powerhouse of Fane of Bloody War, Teryn cultivated the famous Blood Valiant War Portrait under the Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank. In addition, he had once cultivated to the level of a Supreme Saint. All kinds of mysterious and powerful Saint Techniques were at his fingertips.

Behind Teryn, there were 17 figures. They were the Nine-Step Saint King powerhouses of Fane of Bloody War. The aura they emitted was like 17 saint mountains.

Zhang Ruochen had fought against Fane of Bloody War many times. He had even been humiliated in the Celestial Domain of Truth.

In order to deal with him, Fane of Bloody War had sent out all the top powerhouses this time. They wanted to destroy Zhang Ruochen completely.

At this moment, the 17 cultivators of the Nine-Step Saint King joined forces with Teryn. Some of them cast powerful Saint Techniques which turned into light beams and lightning. Some of them took out ancient Supreme Saint artifacts that possessed a powerful Supreme Saint aura.

Each of them did their best and did not hold back at all.

Saint Qi circulated the air. Precepts filled the sky. The entire Ziwei Palace shook violently. This dimension looked like it was about to collapse under the pressure of the power that erupted from their bodies.

..

On the other hand, ten angelic powerhouses who were wearing Saint Robes each held a staff tightly with their eyes closed.

Blood-red strands of light shot out from the staffs and interweaved together. Their powers combined to form a mysterious battle array.

Hundreds of millions of precepts intertwined together to form a ten-thousand-foot-tall divine shadow.

The divine shadow grabbed a dark-red spear and waved his hand. An unparalleled power that could tear an immortal Supreme Saint apart charged into the world in Yin Yuanchen’s palm.

These ten angelic powerhouses came from Fane of Bloody Sea. They were robed angels carefully nurtured by Fane of Bloody Sea.

Fane of Bloody Sea was an extremely ancient fane, ranked top five in Heavenly Realm.

It was rumored that Jiatianxia had cultivated in Fane of Bloody Sea. After becoming a god, he broke away and created Fane of Bloody War.

Because of this, the relationship between Fane of Bloody War and Fane of Bloody Sea was very close.

In fact, the Blood Valiant War Portrait originated from Fane of Bloody Sea. It was rumored that it was created by the earliest ancestor of Fane of Bloody Sea—Zang Tian. He was extremely profound and overbearing.

At the same time, other powerhouses also joined in. Fane of Light, Fane of Titans, Fane of Elves… None of them were left behind.

Rumble
Each power was extremely violent.

These powers would be enough to destroy a realm if they ever entered one.

A fierce light flashed in Akash's eyes. He waved his hand and sent a black and white array into the sea world.

The majestic Moon power and Sun power gushed out of Akash's body and poured into the array.

Immediately, the array released a black and white saint light and turned into a huge Taiji array seal. Bagua lined up around it and sealed the heaven and earth.

Akash had amazing talent. Not only did he cultivate Moon power and Sun power, but he was also a genius in arrays. He had long become a High Saint Array Master.

Akash actually wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen more compared to the others so that there would be no obstacles for him to get the Nine-heavens Maiden.

Zhang Ruochen and Le stood side by side and looked up at the sky.

The two stood on the surface of the sea. Calmly, they looked at the Saint Techniques, sacred artifacts, talismans, and arrays falling from the sky, like glaring suns falling and crashing into them.

The whole world became more and more oppressive.

It was like the end of the world was coming.

"Profound Spatial Dimension."

“Realm-frame of Truth.”

The waters under Zhang Ruochen’s feet began to surge.

He stood on the top of a huge wave and spread out his hands. The Five-element Chaotic Light shone out to the heavens and earth as the Five-element Chaotic Qi filled the sea. Bright stars appeared in the Five-element Chaotic Qi, turning the sea into a starry sky— a vast and limitless starry sky.

Rumble
When the two forces collided, a terrifying impact was created, and the entire ocean seemed as if it would turn upside down.

Yin Yuanchen’s arm shook violently, and cracks appeared as large amounts of Saint blood flowed out.

The joined forces of so many powerhouses were too powerful.

Even with his cultivation base, it was difficult for him to withstand it.

Fortunately, he was strong enough to hold on. If he were a Saint King, he would have been crushed into dust.

Yin Yuanchen’s eyes were red. He tried his best to endure the pain. As long as he could kill Zhang Ruochen, the pain was nothing.

There were too many powerful figures in Heavenly Realm. Even though Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation had reached completion, the Profound Spatial Domain and the Realm-frame of Truth were still brought down. Thus, Zhang Ruochen and Le got attacked by the powerful forces.

After they had blocked the first wave of attack, Zhang Ruochen took advantage of the short gap and brought out the Secret Tome of Time and Space. Like a scholar, he flipped it page by page as he sat with his legs crossed.

Every time he flipped a page, the entire space of the sea world would tremble.

At the same time, bloody scars would appear on Yin Yuanchen’s arm. Even the sound of bones breaking could be heard.

“Le, get ready.”

After saying this lightly, Zhang Ruochen opened the page that recorded the Dimensional Tide with two fingers and flapped the page.

Boom
It was originally Zhang Ruochen who had activated the Power of Dimensions. However, the Dimensional Tide became extremely terrifying after being enhanced by the Secret Tome of Time and Space. It turned the sea world upside down, and dense Dimensional Rifts and Dimensional Collapses appeared. At the same time, it all rushed in one direction.

Le stood beside Zhang Ruochen. He held a sword with both hands and closed his eyes to capture the various fluctuations of the world.

At a certain moment, he suddenly opened his eyes. His aura became extremely fierce. He flew into the sky and slashed the iron sword in his hand as fast as lightning.

Swoosh—
This sword was like a flash of lightning. There was no return. It was like a shooting star that broke through the sky.

A hole tore open in the walls of the sea world.

‘Oh no.’

Yin Yuanchen’s expression changed drastically.

The wall of the sea world was extremely strong. Even a Supreme Saint would find it difficult to break it. However, due to the impact of the Dimensional Tide, there were some weaker areas.

The moment the weaker areas appeared, Le seized the opportunity and pierced through them with his sword.

Swoosh
Zhang Ruochen and Le cooperated with each other very well. They rushed out of that tear in an instant.

The powerhouses of the Heavenly Realm faction reacted quickly. They spread out in all directions and surrounded Zhang Ruochen and Le.

Even though they had seen how powerful Zhang Ruochen was, they were not afraid. The Heavenly Realm faction was well prepared. They were not afraid of Zhang Ruochen at all.

The only concern was the price they would have to pay.

No one could be a match for Zhang Ruochen in a one-on-one fight.

But what about a one-to-ten? What about one-to-hundreds or thousands?

When it came to a challenge with Heavenly Realm, even ten Zhang Ruochens would die.

“Where is the Nine-heavens Maiden? Where is Chi Kongyue?”

Zhang Ruochen looked around with a murderous aura that resembled the God of Death.

No one dared to look him in the eye.

Many powerhouses from the Heavenly Realm faction appeared in Ziwei Palace. Zhang Ruochen had a bad premonition. His mind was in turmoil.

At this time, he would kill anyone who dared to stop him.

“Obviously, they have been suppressed. If you surrender obediently, I will let you see them immediately,” said Bing Tong, the leader of the Soul Realm, with a smile.

Upon hearing that, Zhang Ruochen was surprisingly relieved.

If the Nine-heavens Maiden and Chi Kongyue had actually been captured, they would have already used it to threaten him.

Akash said in a low voice, “Zhang Ruochen, you really are a fool. You are just a Saint King, and you dare to offend so many macroworlds? You are digging your own grave. No one can protect you.”

Zhang Ruochen locked his view onto Akash. A cold light flashed in his eyes, “Seeing that you are the descendant of Immortal Navagraha, I have been giving you chances after chances. I wanted to let you go, but you chose to side with Heavenly Realm. Do you know that this is a dead-end?”

“Zhang Ruochen, you are too self-righteous. Do you really think you are invincible? I did not want to interfere, but you shouldn’t have interfered with my affairs. The Nine-Heavens Maiden is destined to marry me. Unfortunately, you won’t be able to live to see that day.” Akash laughed.

If Zhang Ruochen hadn't become an obstruction for him to get the Nine-Heavens Maiden, Akash wouldn't have wanted to interfere in this matter.

After all, Megrez had always been relatively neutral and didn't have much connection with Heavenly Realm.

Akash's attack this time was already against the main will of Megrez.

Le looked around and said. "What do we do?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "Since they're here, then no one leaves. Kill all the Saint King-level powerhouses from Heavenly Realm faction. Let's kill this generation."

"Let's kill them all."

Le's body emitted a monstrous killing intent that was almost tangible.

Behind him, the pair of eyes became more and more focused. Anyone who was stared at by him felt a chill run down their spine as if death was staring at them.

Pshhh
Before the cultivators from Heavenly Realm faction could react, a Nine-Step Saint King had been pierced through the center of his brows by Le. His head exploded and his Saint Soul was destroyed.

By the time they reacted, the second Nine-Step Saint King had already been beheaded by Le.

The killing intent contained within the sword had cut off all the Qi in his body, turning him into an empty shell. Even if the life force of a Nine-Step Saint King was strong, he wouldn't be able to regenerate his head.

Helian Wusheng felt a chill in his heart. They were both killers, and he had become famous much earlier than Le. However, the speed that Le was on, the killing intent that he released, and the sword technique that he displayed made Helian Wusheng feel apprehensive.

He finally understood why Tiansha Organization had made Le their target.

This kid was indeed terrifying. His growth speed was beyond imagination. If he wasn't stopped, he might become a terrifying reaper in the near future.

At that time, Le would undoubtedly be a great threat to Tiansha Organization.

“Only the two of you will die in Ziwei Palace today.”

Teryn’s eyes were cold as he attacked decisively.

He had received news that the founder of Fane of Bloody War had suffered a great loss because of Zhang Ruochen. Thus, many old and new grudges should be settled.

Teryn had cultivated to the peak of a Neverwither, and he was not a weak Neverwither Supreme Saint. Therefore, even though he had become a Descender, he was still very powerful. He was not afraid of Zhang Ruochen at all.

The wound on Yin Yuanchen’s arm healed quickly. His long hair fluttered in the wind. His aura rose steadily. A large amount of Hadean Doom power emanated from his body as he said, “Zhang Ruochen, besides Yan Wushen, there’s me below Supreme Saint.”

He had waited for too long. Finally, he had the chance to completely change his fate. No matter what, Zhang Ruochen had to die and it would be best if he could kill him himself.

An extremely tall figure walked out from behind Yin Yuanchen. His skin was grayish-white, and his eyes were empty. He exuded a strong aura of death. He was clearly a divine corpse.

Anyone could see that this figure looked very similar to Yin Yuanchen. They were practically identical.

Zhang Ruochen instantly guessed the identity of this figure after seeing it. If he wasn’t wrong, this should be Yin Yuanchen’s father.

He hadn’t expected that not only did Yin Yuanchen use his father’s divine blood to feed the venomous insects, but he also used strange methods to control his divine corpse. It was simply insane.

No matter how calm Zhang Ruochen was, he couldn’t help but feel angry when he saw this. He couldn’t imagine how twisted Yin Yuanchen’s mind had become.

“What are you waiting for? Kill them both,” Teryn shouted.

The eight blood wings behind him spread out like eight blood clouds that could blot out the sun.

It could be seen that the precepts flowed in the eight blood wings. All the precepts and Saint Qi in the world began to shift.

A huge amount of Saint Aura radiated from Teryn's body. It could shake the heavens and the netherworld. It was as if Teryn was the only existence in this world.

Boom
Zhang Ruochen flipped his hand and an ancient Divine Dragon phantom appeared. The Saint Qi in Teryn's body dispersed and he was slammed into the ground.

With only one strike, he was heavily injured. He spat out blood and his physique was almost shattered.

"How is this possible… I was once a Supreme Saint…" Teryn's face was filled with shock.

"Even if you didn't descend, I would still kill you."

Zhang Ruochen stomped down, and Teryn's head exploded which turned into a bloody mess.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen looked into the depths of Ziwei Palace. He released his spiritual power and sensed the fluctuations of the battle. He was about to rush over immediately until—

"Zhang Ruochen, you can't leave. You should stay!"

In front of him, six figures suddenly enlarged. Each of them was 300 meters tall. Six giant hands reached out and attacked Zhang Ruochen at the same time.

The Titans was a powerful clan in Heavenly Realm that could rank in the top 10. The Fane of Titans they had built also had a shocking heritage.

The six people who attacked Zhang Ruochen were the six Titan Celestial Generals that Fane of Titans had nurtured. Each of them was very powerful. They were unrivaled when joined forces.

On the other side, nine human-like cultivators joined forces and drew a complicated talisman with their divine blood.

Once the talisman was formed, the world changed color, and a destructive aura spread out.

They came from Fane of Heavenly Rune, a terrifying fane famous for talismans. It held the most profound and unfathomable inheritance of talismans and could use them to suppress the world.

The twelve Angels of Vengeance from Fane of Light also gathered their strength and released boundless Light Saint Power. They did their best to activate the twelve Swords of Judgement. Over a million Supreme Inscriptions appeared and Supreme Power surged unceasingly.

Heavenly Realm was the ruler of Western Universe. During these 100,000 years, it had seized a large number of cultivation resources from Heavenly Realm. Many powerhouses came forth from it.

Many fanes and clans had trained many powerhouses. Many had the potential to become gods. The other macroworlds couldn't compare at all.

"Those who stop me will die."

Zhang Ruochen raised his right hand above his head as he faced the attacks. The precepts of Swordsmanship and the Five-element precepts emerged. They combined with the Swordwill and the Five-element Chaotic Qi to form five Saint Swords of different colors. Each Saint Sword was 300 meters long, emitted a peerless sharpness, and connected with each other's power as one.

Crash
The five Saint Swords slashed out at the same time. The Sword Qi reached the sky as if it wanted to cut down the stars above.

At the same time, Le performed a ghost-like bodily movement and rushed to the side to pin down Helian Wusheng of Tiansha Organization. He saw that Helian Wusheng had been restless and moving around the side of the battlefield as if he wanted to use some kind of killing power to secretly ambush Zhang Ruochen.

"I did not come up to you but you came to me."

Helian Wusheng snorted. He performed the Dark Path and his figure appeared and disappeared mysteriously.

At the same time, he released four Death Emissaries. Each of them had reached the Nine-Step Saint King level and they joined forces to attack Le.

If he could kill Le with his own hands, he would undoubtedly make a great contribution. The Tiansha Organization would definitely reward him greatly.

Bang
The divine power of the divine corpse controlled by Yin Yuanchen was defeated. It retreated quickly and crashed into a pavilion.

Fortunately, Ziwei Palace had many layouts and was soaked in divine power. All the buildings inside were extremely sturdy and wouldn't be easily damaged.

The sword array formed by the twelve Swords of Judgment collapsed instantly. Sword Qi flew in all directions and injured the powerhouses of Heavenly Realm faction.

The six Titan Celestial Generals were all cut in half. Blood spurted out of their bodies. Even if they had powerful Divine Marks carved on them, they still couldn't stop Zhang Ruochen's sword.

A downpour of blood rained down on Ziwei Palace.

The talisman drawn by the nine powerhouses of Fane of Heavenly Rune couldn't block the attack of the Saint Sword either. It was destroyed instantly.

Boom! Boom! Boom!
Three other powerhouses were directly hit by the Sword Qi and their bodies exploded.

..

In the blink of an eye, more than ten powerhouses of Heavenly Realm faction were killed and even more were injured.

"He's really a Saint King. How can he be so powerful? He's undefeatable."

The powerhouses of Heavenly Realm faction all felt their hearts tremble.

"*AHH…"*
All of a sudden, a mournful scream was heard.

The powerhouses of the Heavenly Realm faction couldn't help but cast a sidelong glance. Immediately, they saw an extremely terrifying scene.

Le was holding an iron sword in his hands as he chopped off Helian Wusheng's arms. He even stabbed the sword into Helian Wusheng's glabella.

The mask that Helian Wusheng wore had long been shattered, revealing a slightly pale face. His eyes were filled with unwillingness and despair.

On the other side, Helian Wusheng's four Death Emissaries had all been killed. Divine blood flowed all over the ground.

Many people could not help but breathe in the cold air. They all knew about how powerful Helian Wusheng was. They had never thought that he would be killed so easily.

Assassins not only had astonishing attack power, but they were also extremely good at life preservation. Only after assassinating their target could they successfully retreat.

Chapter 2192: The End of Kunlun's Imperial Court

"Zhang Ruochen, take another hit from me."

Yin Yuanchen's narrowed his eyes and used a secret technique to control the divine corpse to attack.

In order to make the divine corpse even more powerful, Yin Yuanchen did not hesitate to consume his own blood essence, and he used his bloodline connection with the divine corpse to make the corpse fully recover.

Yin Yuanchen was not a weakling. According to Zhang Ruochen's evaluation after several battles with him, he had at least 70 percent of evil Yan Wushen's combat strength. In all of the Celestial Court and Infernal Court, no one below the rank of Supreme Saint could match him.

His bloodline and the talents he displayed were rare.

A streak of divine light flew out of Yin Yuanchen's body and landed on the divine corpse's hand. The light transformed into a dark sword with numerous Divine Precepts within, and it gave off a thick aura of death.

This sword was left behind by Yin Yuanchen's father. Refined with a strange secret technique from ancient times, it was a powerful special artifact belonging to gods.

As the divine corpse held the divine sword in its hand, boundless divine power poured in continuously, pushing its power to the limits.

The divine sword trembled, and a burst of sky-reaching light erupted from it, with an endless miasma of death surging out as if it was about to bring on a terrifying kingdom of death that devoured all souls.

Just this strange vision alone made the people's hearts tremble.

At the same time, the Six Celestial Titan Generals, who had been cut in half, were moving. Bloody mist surged out of the twelve halves of their bodies and reformed into twelve Celestial Titan Generals that were as big as they were before but with weaker aurae.

As top Saint Kings, they possessed a tenacious lifeforce and could not be killed easily.

A Titan's lifeforce was incredibly tenacious.

The twelve Celestial Titan Generals jointly took out a giant axe, and displayed surging divine power, as if they possess the power to split heaven and earth.

Even if a realm stood in front of them, it would probably be cut in half by the axe.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were indifferent. With a thought, the Zangshan Demonic Mirror flew out of his body and recovered at an alarming speed. Millions of Supreme Inscriptions appeared clearly and interweaved with each other. A faint huge illusory world seemed to materialized.

BANG!
Zangshan Demonic Mirror released out overwhelming demonic power which crushed the kingdom of death that came from the divine Sword.

As for the giant axe, it was suppressed by the illusory world, immobilized in place.

In the next moment, Zangshan Demonic Mirror released endless Demonic Qi, condensing a myriad of demonic mountains. An invisible "power" began to spread out.

BANG
The divine corpse was sent flying by the demonic mountain, falling into a Saint Lake hundreds of miles away. Yin Yuanchen was also affected by the blow. As if he was struck by a star, he was sent flying far away while gushing blood.

The giant axe also moved in reverse direction. It slashed many Celestial Titan Generals, splitting their bodies. As a result, blood splattered everywhere.

Then, Zangshan Demonic Mirror Demonic Mirror flew above the twelve Celestial Titan Generals. Water-like ripples began to appeared on the surface of the mirror, which released a powerful devouring power.

“No.”

The twelve Celestial Titan Generals fought back with all their strength. But their eyes couldn’t help but show fear.

As Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation and strength increased, Zangshan Demonic Mirror’s condition had improved. Hence, its power had grown stronger.

The fact that Zhang Ruochen had ascended the Mountain of Truth had benefited Zangshan Demonic Mirror greatly. It absorbed the power of Truth and underwent some indescribable changes.

Now, Zhang Ruochen could now move Zangshan Demonic Mirror more easily. The attacks he displayed were more powerful, and their forms varied widely.

In an instant, the ten Celestial Titan Generals were absorbed into Zangshan Demonic Mirror.

Only two Celestial Titan Generals managed to survive the attack from Zangshan Demonic Mirror by using the giant axe as a shield.

In the next moment, the two Celestial Titan Generals merged into one, but they couldn’t help but retreat a little further with eyes were full of fear.

With a single strike, Zhang Ruochen had heavily injured Yin Yuanchen and suppressed the five Divine Titan Generals who had merged into two bodies. The end result was remarkable, but Zhang Ruochen did not want to drag the fight further. Instead, he wanted to break out of the encirclement.

He had to hurry to meet up with the Nine-heavens Maiden and Chi Kongyue.

“Where do you think you are going!”

A roar sounded, and a huge creature suddenly appeared in the air.

It was a ferocious beast not of flesh and blood. Instead, it was constructed with countless exquisite runes. However it was very lifelike and gave off monstrous power.

“The Rune Beast of Runeterra.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at it.

Runeterra was one of the top twenty Macroworlds in the Western Universe. It was known for its powerful Rune Beasts.

The so-called “Rune Beast” was a beast that was constructed with talismans. It was also imbued with spiritual power by secret techniques. Each of them were in different shapes and sizes with unique power.

For Natal Rune Beasts, it could even become stronger as a cultivator’s cultivation increased.

Zhang Ruochen could sensed a strong Supreme Saint aura from this Rune Beast. He was sure that it had been made by a top-tier Supreme Saint.

This Rune Beast appeared similar to a fierce tiger with blood-red eyes. As soon as it appeared, all the precepts and Saint Qi in the space gathered towards it.

At the same time, the twelve Angels of Vengeance from the Fane of Light also attacked. They brought out the twelve Swords of Judgment. By combining their powers, they unleashed an unparalleled sword strike.

Zhang Ruochen’s mind spun, and he threw out the Zangshan Demonic Mirror to face the twelve Swords of Judgment.

His hands quickly formed seals, and mobilized the numerous precepts within his body. Combining with the boundless Saint Qi, he formed a majestic figure that resembled a divine demon.

“Incarceration of Divine Demon.”

The majestic figure descended from the sky, and pressed the fierce tiger-like Rune Beast onto the ground with its feet.

Roar!

The Rune Beast let out an earth-shattering roar. Billions of talismans extended out from its body as it struggled desperately.

However, the divine demon figure possessed boundless power. It was like a macroworld had crushed the Rune Beast.

In the next moment, the divine demon figure stretched out a hand and grabbed at the Runeterra elite who was controlling the Rune Beast.

This person was extremely powerful and could be considered a top-notch elite below the rank of Supreme Saint. His body emitted a powerful encompassing aura and his essence, energy, spirit were extremely powerful as well.

But at this moment, his eyes showed fear.

The top elites of Runeterra usually practiced both martial arts and spiritual power. They would attain the near highest standard, as only by this way could they cultivate the most powerful Rune Beast.

“What Saint Technique is this? Why haven’t I seen Zhang Ruochen use it before?”

The Runeterra elite was shocked.

He immediately took out another Rune beast shaped like a dragon turtle with countless runes interweaved on its shell.

In order to resist the divine demon figure, the Runeterra elite forced out a mouthful of blood essence and fused the body of the Rune Beast with it.

Pow!
However, the Rune Beast still could not block the divine demon figure. It was pierced through like a piece of paper immediately.

“How can it b-b-be so powerful?”

This last thought flashed through the mind of the top elite of Runeterra before his body exploded apart.

After the elite of Runeterra died, the Rune Beast in the form of a fierce tiger immediately quieted down, reverting to its original state: a beast-shaped talisman. Zhang Ruochen then kept it in his sack.

The Rune Beast refined by a top tier Supreme Saint was very valuable. If he could refine it, it would undoubtedly be of great use.

On the other end, Zangshan Demonic Mirror displayed terrifying strength. Not only had it blocked an attack from the twelve Swords of Judgement, it even heavily injured the twelve Angels of Vengeance.

If the twelve Angels of Vengeance had not reacted fast enough, they could even lose their twelve Swords of Judgment to Zangshan Demonic Mirror.

Taking this opportunity, Zhang Ruochen did not hesitate. He charged out of the encirclement as fast as he could.

“Stop!”

An elite tried to stop Zhang Ruochen.

Shink!
Unfortunately, before he could make a move, an iron sword pierced through his head.

“13.”

Le pulled the iron sword out of the elite’s head expressionlessly, leaving scarlet Saint blood splattering on the ground like paint on canvas.

In a flash, Le appeared beside another elite and chopped his head off with a swing of his sword.

With Le’s restraining the enemy, Zhang Ruochen was able to escape successfully and rushed to Ziwei Palace as fast as he could.

“Stop him!”

Yin Yuanchen shouted with his eyes bulging with anger.

As he spoke, he controlled the divine corpse and soared into the sky, following closely behind Zhang Ruochen.

The other elites from Heavenly Realm also followed.

Zhang Ruochen slowed slightly and glanced at them. Then he tore opened the Doors of Dimensions and released a huge creature, forming a huge shadow.

Hiss
The huge creature opened its terrifying bloody mouth and swallowed three elites from Heavenly Realm in one gulp.

It was none other than Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit that had taken over the Divine Python's corpse.

After devouring a large number of cultivators' Saint Souls and blood, Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit had become stronger and could mobilize the boundless divine power contained within the Divine Python's corpse.

More importantly, after undergoing the effect of the Spring of Life, the corpse smell contained in the Divine Python's corpse was gradually decreasing, and replaced with vitality.

Bang!
Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit shook its huge body and sent more than a dozen Nine-Step Saint Kings from the Heavenly Realm flying.

After Le killed another elite, he reappeared above Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit head in a flash.

Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit immediately shrank down and retreated quickly with Le.

"D*mn it."

The cultivators of Heavenly Realm were furious.

They had so many top Saint Kings attacking together. However, not only had they failed to defeat Zhang Ruochen, but they had also suffered heavy losses. If word got out, they would definitely become laughingstock.

Akash frowned as he worried. If Zhang Ruochen could not be killed this time, he would undoubtedly be a big threat to him.

In fact, he was not the only one. Everyone present had this concern.

Judging from Zhang Ruochen's style of doing things, one could predict that Zhang Ruochen would not let this matter rest.

No matter how huge the price he had to pay, he must kill Zhang Ruochen this time.

At this moment, Ziwei Palace had already resembled hell. Corpses were strewn all over the place, and blood flowed like a river.

The murderous intent within soared to the sky, and resentment filled the air.

Under Empress Chi Yao's efforts, the Imperial Court had nurtured many Saints and Saint Kings in recent years. However, the number were still far lesser compared to Heavenly Realm.

Faced with the sudden attack from the Heavenly Realm, the Imperial Court had suffered heavy casualties in a very short period of time.

It was a one-sided battle.

Luckily, the Blood Dripper was available to hold off the elites from Heavenly Realm briefly. Only then could the Imperial Court's troops successfully retreat into Yuanchu Palace where Empress Chi Yao stayed.

Yuanchu Palace was located at the highest point of Ziwei Palace. In the oasis at the center of the Heaven Lake, there were many divine marks personally carved by Empress Chi Yao. There the defense was powerful and when its fully activated, even a Supreme Saint with cultivation rank at Hundred-Shackle Realm or a Thousand-Koan Realm would not be able to force their way in.

However, since Empress Chi Yao was not in Yuanchu Palace and there were no Supreme Saint elites overseeing it, the divine marks' power would be greatly reduced no matter how exquisite they were.

Those in charge of controlling the divine marks was Empress Chi Yao's personal guard, the 72 Court Saintesses, who were also the guards of the deities.

They were divided into six teams, each guarding one location.

Before Kunlun recovered, the 72 Court Saintesses were already Saints.

Under Empress Chi Yao's efforts, they had already become Supreme Saints, cooperating well together.

However, activating the divine marks consumed a lot of Saint Qi and spiritual power. Although the 72 Court Saintesses were not weak, they could not last for too long.

At this moment, all their faces were as white as paper, and their breaths faltering. They had to rely on their strong willpower to hold on.

There were a large number of corpses outside Yuanchu Palace. Almost all of them were elites from the Imperial Court.

When the elites from Heavenly Realm attacked, they did not manage to retreat in time.

Many elites from the Imperial Court were originally in Ziwei Palace. However, only a few hundreds managed to successfully retreat into Yuanchu Palace.

They could be said to be the best elites of the Imperial Court and the last bastion of defense.

Once they all died, the Imperial Court would most likely fall apart.

As a result, Kunlun would fall into an even more chaotic state, which would led to destruction sooner.

Of the the Four Schools of Confucianism only the Master of the Calligraphy Sect survived. He was among the crowd. When the Heavenly Realm attacked, he was not in Syzygy Mansion so he was spared.

One of the seven Realm Bearers was missing. It was Sui Han, who represented the Path of Confucianism.

Sui Han had done the opposite of what the Master of the Calligraphy Sect did. He went to Syzygy Mansion before the Heavenly Realm launched an attack.

In the Saint hall, the Kunlun cultivators were worried, and the atmosphere was extremely depressing.

Since the War of Merit broke out, cultivators from all Microworlds had said that the end of Kunlun was near. At this rate, Kunlun cultivators would not be able to live to see the end of Kunlun. They would be dead even before Kunlun’s destruction.

Heavenly Realm had come prepared this time. They had brought along treasures to crack the divine marks. Even though the divine patterns were activated, they were still being destroyed gradually.

Outside Yuanchu Palace, a large number of elites from the Heavenly Realm were gathered. Archangel Michael was also among them.

“Give up and surrender. I can give you a way out. Otherwise, do not think of walking out of Yuanchu Palace alive,” Archangel Michael voice echoed throughout the temple.

The Nine-heavens Maiden was covered in blood. Supporting herself with her slender body, she stood straight in front of the door. She said, “Aren’t you afraid of the punishment from the Celestial Palace for acting so brazenly? Don’t forget that Heavenly Realm is no longer able to control the battlefield in Kunlun’s War of Merit.”

“The Celestial Palace laws have always been set by the elites. Even before the fall of Kunlun, it has long lost its influence. When Saturn Peach Tree breaks and Kunlun has completely dried up, even lesser people will care about what happens here,” said Archangel Michael.

“The weak are prey to the strong” was a law that had never changed since ancient times.

Among all the ten thousand Macroworlds of the Celestial Court, the weak ones could only survive on the edge.

“There’s no need to talk to them much. When the Divine Marks break, I will have my own ways to make these people listen to me.” A malicious laugh was heard.

Beside Archangel Michael, a skinny man appeared. His head was very big but with only a few strands of hair, and the scalp was covered with arcane runes. His eyes protruded creepily, as if they would pop out any moment.

This man gave off an extremely evil aura, and held a skull staff in his hand. His mouth was partially open, showing shreds of meat clinging on his teeth.

He was a leader in Cha Realm, Saint Lord Wu Xin. He came from the most ancient dark cult in Cha Realm and practiced a terrifying evil technique.

Anyone who fell into Saint Lord Wu Xin’s hands would wish they were dead.

“I have sensed the aura of Ancient Abyssal Blade. Zhang Ruochen has arrived at Ziwei Palace. He is… on his way to Yuanchu Palace.”

Blood Dripper’s vessel spirit suddenly spoke.

As soon as they heard her, the faces of those gathered in the palace could not help but change.

Some of the people were ecstatic, as if they had seen a glimmer of hope.

Some people were calm and unperturbed. They knew that although Zhang Ruochen was strong, he was only one person and could not overturn the big tide.

The Nine-heavens Maiden frowned slightly and sighed. “Almost all the top Supreme Saints elites of Heavenly Realm have been dispatched. They have already set up an giant net in Ziwei Palace, and this place has become very dangerous. He shouldn’t have come!”

Of course, the Nine-heavens Maiden knew that with Chi Kongyue in Ziwei Palace, Zhang Ruochen would definitely come no matter how dangerous it was.

He was that kind of person.

The reason why Heavenly Realm insisted on attacking Yuanchu Palace after taking her blood was obvious.

They wanted to capture Chi Kongyue and use her to deal with Zhang Ruochen.

Or perhaps, they also wanted to capture her.

The operation by Heavenly Realm this time were mainly targeting Saturn Peach Tree, and they also wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen.

Chi Kongyue quietly walked to the Nine-heavens Maiden’s side. She held a green pagoda miniature in her blood-stained hand, and her eyes was full of worry.

This pagoda miniature was very similar to the Azuresky Pagoda. It was a replica made by Chi Yao and considered as a regal weapon.

Inside it was a brand that belonged to Azuresky Pagoda’s vessel spirit. Using this as a foundation, another powerful vessel spirit can be quickly cultivated.

The real Azuresky Pagoda was no longer in Kunlun. It was in Empress Chi Yao’s hands.

“Aunt, could you send father a message? Tell him to leave as soon as possible and not to save us.” Chi Kongyue looked at Blood Dripper’s vessel spirit resoluteness in her eyes.

Blood Dripper vessel spirit shook her head and said, “Heavenly Realm has sealed off Yuanchu Palace. I can only sense the aura of Ancient Abyssal Blade and could not send a message.”

“Then what should we do? Heavenly Realm has deployed so many elites here. Father will be in danger. It doesn’t matter if we die, but he can’t. He’s the future and hope for Kunlun!” said Chi Kongyue.

Chi Kongyue would rather Zhang Ruochen ignore her than risking his life for her.

“Don’t worry,” Nine-heavens Maiden comforted Kongyue. “With your father’s strength, it won’t be easy for Heavenly Realm to subdue him. Even if he can’t defeat them, he can certainly retreat unscathed.”

Even though she said that, she knew that with Zhang Ruochen’s personality that if he knew they were in danger, he would not fall back easily.

The Nine-heavens Maiden sighed deeply to herself.

The six Realm Bearers looked at each other. Their eyes were filled with bitterness and anger simultaneously.

As Realm Bearers of Kunlun, they had enjoyed best resources for cultivation training. Yet, they couldn’t do anything at this critical moment.

Looking at Zhang Ruochen’s numerous achievements, the six Realm Bearers felt even more ashamed.

Things that should have been done by them had fallen on Zhang Ruochen’s shoulders.

The Divine Marks located in the southeast of the palace were controlled by the Twelve Saintesses of White Feather. At this moment, they all looked worried.

When the Twelve Saintesses of White Feather had followed Warrior Saint Canglan to Xianji Mountain, they had been attacked by the Immortal Vampires. Among them, six of Saintesses survived after being saved by Zhang Ruochen.

The Twelve Saintesses of White Feather were like sisters. Zhang Ruochen had saved six of them, so the others were grateful to him.

Now that they heard that Zhang Ruochen had arrived at Ziwei Palace, they were worried that he would fall into the trap set by Heavenly Realm.

“It is a pity that our cultivation is too weak. Otherwise, we would really like to fight side by side with Zhang Ruochen, just like when we were at Xianji Mountain back then,” Saintess Yuan Su sighed.

Saintess Liu Li frowned. There was a surge of emotion within her. She hoped that Zhang Ruochen could turn the tide and defeat Heavenly Realm fraction effortlessly like before.

That hero in her fantasy could do what others could not.

He would break through numerous obstacles and make his way.

However, the reality was that there were countless elites from Heavenly Realm, and Ziwei Palace was already under their control. Although Zhang Ruochen was very powerful, it was impossible for him to reach here without help from others.

Now, the entire Ziwei Palace had became hunting grounds for Heavenly Realm to kill Zhang Ruochen. They were just waiting for him to fall into the trap.

What Liu Li wanted most now was for Zhang Ruochen to leave Ziwei Palace and ignore them.

At this time, Archangel Michael also noticed the movement below. He gave an order, “Do whatever it takes to invade Yuanchu Palace.”

Many deities of Heavenly Realm had personally demanded for Zhang Ruochen’s death. To achieve this goal, they needed to utilize all means.

Both Chi Kongyue or the Nine-heavens Maiden were people that Zhang Ruochen cared. As long as they captured both, everything would be within their control.

Chapter 2193: Fight to Our Death

Archangel Michael held a small black jar filled with goo in his hand. Previously, he had used the substance sparingly. He would pour it slowly because he did not want to waste it.

But now, Archangel Michael directly flipped the small jar and poured all the black goo.

Flush!

Although the jar was small, it contained the universe within. The black goo instantly submerged a large area of Divine Marks.

The black goo was a mixture of divine blood and many strange substances. It was specially used to break Divine Marks and was very precious.

In order to break through Yuanchu Palace as soon as possible, they had to invest more efforts.

Pssssssss

The corrosiveness of the black goo was extremely strong. The moment a Divine Mark came into contact with it, it would quickly melt away.

At the same time, the elites from the various factions of Heavenly Realm all made their moves. They used all sorts of means, from powerful Saint Techniques, weapons, to talismans to accelerate the destruction of the Divine Marks.

Sensing the weakening of the power of the Divine Marks, the 72 Court Saintesses were worried and anxious. They no longer cared about anything else. All of them fused the Divine Marks with their Saint Blood.

They had been transformed by Empress Chi Yao's divine blood. Although amount of divine blood was not that high, they were fused with some divine aura from the Empress.

At this moment, the 72 Court Saintesses was trying to make use to maximize the power of the Divine Marks with Empress Chi Yao's divine aura. Nevertheless, even so, they could only delay the time for the destruction of Divine Marks. They could not stop it.

Under such circumstances, all the elites in the Divine Hall gathered. Their eyes were firm and resolute. They were ready to face death.

Even if they knew that they were no match for their enemies, they would never give up resisting.

The cultivators of Kunlun could be killed but not humiliated.

"Kongyue, Are You Afraid?" the Nine-heavens Maiden asked. Her voice was soft.

Chi Kongyue replied with determination in her eyes, “I’m not afraid. I will die for Kunlun with no regret.”

“You are indeed very similar to your father. Once you have decided on something, you won’t regret even if you face death,” the Nine-heavens Maiden sighed.

She no longer cared about life and death. However, no matter what, she had to do her best to protect Chi Kongyue and leave a seed of hope for Kunlun.

CRASH!

The Divine Marks were showing signs of collapse, and they could no longer protect Yuanchu Palace

With a cold expression on his face, Archangel Michael ordered, “Capture Chi Kongyue and the Nine-heavens Maiden, and kill the others without mercy.”

All the Saint Kings of Heavenly Realm and its allies made their move, storming into Yuanchu Palace through the opening.

“Fight for Kunlun until the last drop of blood is shed!”

“Fight to the death!”

…

The elites of Kunlun’s Central Imperial Court did not retreat. Their fighting spirit was high.

They had no way out. They would die anyway. It was better to risk everything and fight against Heavenly Realm and its allies to their death so that they could show their opponents their courage and unyielding spirit.

Blood Dripper’s vessel spirit and the Nine-heavens Maiden stood at the front line. At this moment, only the two of them had the strength to fight.

Blood Dripper was Empress Chi Yao’s weapon. Although it was a young Supreme Artifact, the power it contained was very strong. After it had absorbed a large amount of divine blood, it could even slay a deity when it was in Empress Chi Yao’s hands.

Blood Dripper’s vessel spirit remained powerful even when there was no wielder. There were very few cultivators with ranks below Supreme Sainthood could rival it.

As for the Nine-heavens Maiden, she held many powerful weapons and items, such as Sacred Confucian Tome, Divine Kitchen Knife, and so on. Every single one of them was extraordinary, and could become a world-class treasure for inferior Macroworlds.

As for the other elites of Imperial Court, there were not many Nine-Step Saint Kings. The gap in strength between both sides was too great, so how could they fight against cultivators from Heavenly Realm and its allies?

The vessel spirit of Blood Dripper stood upright, her gaze cold. She held Blood Dripper in her hand of her slender arm while emiting traces of powerful divine aura. It was as if she were Empress Chi Yao.

“You can’t hold the tide with a broom!”

Led by Archangel Michael, about a dozen leaders from other Macroworlds charged at them together. Each of them threw out a palm strike.

Each palm was like a layer of cloud stacking over another. Large amounts of Precepts were moving through the clouds of palm, trying to suppress Blood Dripper’s vessel spirit.

Boom!

Blood Dripper’s vessel spirit waved her sword and released a dense aura of Death as it tried to resist them with all her might.

Although she was powerful, she was outnumbered by the leaders from different Macroworlds. She got restrained and could not protect others.

Seeing that Blood Dripper was restrained, many elites from Heavenly Realm and its allies stormed Yuanchu Palace.

Without the greatest threat, the others from Imperial Court were nothing to worry about.

“What a peerless beauty. In terms of looks and temperament, she is not inferior to the nine beauties in the Portrait of the Nine Beauties. No wonder Akash has fallen head over heels for you.

“You’d better surrender so that I won’t have to hurt you.” While Saint Lord Wu Xin made those remarks, he was staring at the Nine-heavens Maiden’s delicate body with a wickied smile on his face.

As he spoke, he exuded a strange power. It was trying to penetrate into the Nine-heavens Maiden’s body.

However, it did not succeed. Sacred Confucian Tome flew out from the Nine-heavens Maiden and hovered above her, emiting a gentle Saint Light that completely blocked against that strange power.

At the same time, the Nine-heavens Maiden’s temperament had undergone an earth-shaking change. The graceful and quiet version of the Maiden was replaced by the valiant and domineering version. Her eyes became sharp and cold. A pair of phoenix wings emerged from his back. She unleased Divine Purification Flame in green and white.

Apparently, Warrior Saint Canglan—inside the Nine-heavens Maiden—was the one who called the shots now.

“Breaking into Empress’ palace a capital offence! ”

Cold muderous aura radiated from the Nine-heavens Maiden`s eyes.

Her phoenix wings spread out like two sabers. They gathered countless Precepts and slashed towards Saint Lord Wu Xin.

This pair of phoenix wings contained half of the power left by the late Frostfire Phoenix. It was like a powerful ancient Supreme Saint artifact that possessed incredible power.

“You’re quite a character. I shall play with you.”

Saint Lord Wu Xin raised the skull staff in his hands and instantly released two violent wind gusts of malicious energy. It collided with the phoenix wings.

BANG!

The phoenix wings were blocked, and even the divine fire on them was destroyed.

A serious expression appeared in the eyes of the Nine-heavens Maiden. She truly felt how terrifying Saint Lord Wu Xin was.

The Nine-heavens Maiden mobilized her spiritual power. With a slight wave of her hand, she sent out Sacred Confucian Tome.

“Form a formation! Seal the heavens and suppress the Earth.”

The 72 Court Saintesses moved at the same time and instantly formed a battle formation. They transferred all their energies to the Nine-heavens Maiden and activated Sacred Confucian Tome together.

Their individual strengths weren’t considered top-notch, but they worked together seamlessly. On top of that, their battle formation specially designed by Empress Chi Yao could multiply their strength.

Huala

Sacred Confucian Tome was flipping. Myriad of bright light spots flew out. Each light spot was a written character.

The light spots became as huge as stars. They contained immense power and could crush everything.

A trace of mischievous smile flashed in the eyes of Saint Lord Wu Xin. The skull staff in his hand released a boundless evil aura. The next moment, animated corpses appeared one after another, charging at them without any scruples.

On the other side, Xue Wuye, Friar Lidi, Beigong Lan, Gai Tianjiao, Chi Wansui, and Mi Yingzi stood in a line in front of the other elites of Imperial Court. They had all taken out their Realm Seals.

The power of the six Realm Seals stacked together and released a dazzling divine light. An illusory image of Empress Chi Yao appeared, and her divine might was unparalleled.

Perhaps it was because they were in Yuanchu Palace, the power of the Realm Seals had increased. Waves of divine power gathered from all directions.

KABOOM!

A large number of strong Saint Kings from Heavenly Realm and its allies rushed into the palace building like an unstoppable torrent. In an instant, they destroyed Empress Chi Yao’s illusory image.

The six Realm Bearers all trembled and spat out blood. They could not help but retreat. They were considered strong to be able to attain their current level in such a short time. However, they had barely reached Nine-Step Saint King realm because their cultvation period was not long enough.

In Kunlun, they were deemed as top elites. Unfortunately, compared to the cultivators of powerful Macroworlds, they were nothing.

They were aware that they were not strong enough. Hence, from the beginning, they chose to form the battle formation designed by Empress Chi Yao to fight the enemies together.

Empress Chi Yao had once designed a battle formation for the nine Realm Bearers. As long as there were two people, they could use it. Of course, the more people there were, the more powerful the battle formation would be.

Even so, facing the attacks of many elites from Heavenly Realm and its allies, they did not have the strength to retaliate.

The situation faced by other elites of Central Imperial Court was even worse.

The Divine Marks in the palace were constantly disintegrating. Hence, these elites were left with no way to retreat.

These Central Imperial Court elites were all indignant, their eyes filled with despair. At this point, they were meeting their death; there was no hope left.

“Kunlun will live forever. One day, you all shall pay for this! ”

A Heavenly King of the Military growled unyieldingly. His hair was disheveled, his body covered in blood.

He rushed into Xing Yuan, the elite from the Fane of Merit. His body lit up with flame, cracks forming in his Saint Source, releasing a violent force.

Xing Yuan put his palms together and used dense Saint Qi to wrap around the Heavenly King. No matter how hard the Heavenly King struggled, he could not break through the restraint from the two big hands.

BOOM!

The Heavenly King exploded and turned into a cloud of blood mist.

The violent explosion shook Xing Yuan's hands slightly.

"We shall pay for this? You are too naive. Kunlun is doomed for sure this time, and no one can stop it.

"So what if you self-destruct your Saint Source? Your cultivation base is so puny that you can't harm me by self-destructing. The weak are really pathetic," Xing Yuan said disdainfully as he shook his sleeves.

Previously, outside Peacock Manor, he had witnessed Shang Ziyan get killed and could not stop it. He received a heavy punishment after returning to Fane of Merit. This time, he had come to redeem himself.

Xing Yuan was angry. He was not Zhang Ruochen's match, but killing the other cultivators of Kunlun was not difficult.

Seeing this, the hearts of Central Imperial Court elites sank to the bottom.

The gap in strength between Central Imperial Court elites and Heavenly Realm faction was too wide. How could Central Imperial Court elites resist their attack?

Despair was the only thing left within them even when they did not ask for it.

On the other side, many powerful enemies pounced at Chi Kongyue. After all, capturing Chi Kongyue alive was the most important mission.

An elven Saint King waved the jade staff in her hand and released powerful spiritual power in an attempt to forcefully control Chi Kongyue.

Her spiritual power had reached level 59, so she could easily control Chi Kongyue, who had just become a Four-Step Saint King not long ago.

"How dare you attack our little princess Kongyue? You will have to get past me."

Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit roared and rushed out of Chi Kongyue's arms.

Powerful Demonic Qi surged out of Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit's body. In the blink of an eye, it turned into a Heaven-devourer Dragon that was a thousand feet long.

If not for the Dimensional restriction imposed on the palace, it wouldn't have been a problem for Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit to turn into a dozen miles long Heaven-devourer Dragon with its current strength.

The elven Saint King immediately changed her target and attacked Guoguo with her powerful spiritual power.

"How come it's useless?"

The elven Saint King was shocked.

Her spiritual power was totally useless against Guoguo . It did not have any effect on Guoguo. Just as she was in a daze, Guoguo pounced forward and clawed out with its sharp dragon claws.

Although she quickly reacted by releaseing her spiritual power with all her might, it was still ineffective against Guoguo.

Thud!

The dragon claws descended and smashed the elven Saint King's body into pieces.

"Use spiritual power against me? Huh? You have no idea that I've eaten Divine Herbs so I'm immune to spiritual power attack. Hehe." Guoguo revealed two of its rabbit teeth and snickered.

Every leaf of Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi had a special effect. The green dragon leaf could increase spiritual power, but more importantly, it could make living beings immune to spiritual power attacks.

Although Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit's martial cultivation had just reached Precept Domain, its spiritual power had already reached the peak of level 59.

In terms of spiritual power, not many cultivators below Supreme Sainthood could be a threat to it.

At this moment, it launched an attack by releasing its spiritual power to envelop the elites from Heavenly Realm Faction.

Instantly, many elites were affected. Some of them even fell into a state of shock.

"You all shall be my food."

Guoguo shouted loudly. It opened its huge dragon mouth, charging at the elites from Heavenly Realm faction.

At the same time, Demon Ape's body became thirty feet tall. It hugged Chi Kongyue in its arms and ran throughin the palace in an astonishing speed.

If not for the fact that there were about dozen of leaders from the Heavenly Realm faction guarding the entrance of the palace, it would have already escaped with Chi Kongyue.

On the back of Demon Ape, there was a gigantic black turtle shell. In fact, it was covered with natural patterns, containing all sorts of unfathomable mysteries.

The speed of Demon Ape was too fast, to the extent that not many elites from the Heavenly Realm faction were able to catch up to it.

"Where do you think you're going?"

An elite cultivating Path of Flowing Light caught up to Demon Ape and slashed out with his Saint Sword.

CLANG!

The Sword Light struck the turtle shell on Demon Ape's back, making metallic clanging sounds. However, it didn't cause any damage. In fact, there was not even a trace of damage.

That elite was shocked. He slashed out a few more strikes.

The other powerful Saint Kings attacked together. Some used Saint Techniques, and some used Saint Artifacts. They were trying to drown Demon Ape with all attacks.

All of the attacks landed on Demon Ape's body. However, Demon Ape was completely fine. Not even a strand of hair fell off.

"What kind of monster is this? Its cultivation is only at Precept Domain, but why is its body so strong? Has its physical condition reached Neverwither state?"

The cultivators who had just attacked were all shocked.

They didn't know that Demon Ape had eaten Xuanwu Leaf of Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi. It had a very strong physique and unparalleled power.

The tortoise shell on its back was obtained by refining the Xuanwu leaf.

Because of this, Demon Ape had a body comparable to the Neverwither physique. Ordinary attacks were like tickles to it. They could not harm it a bit.

Zhang Ruochen knew the abilities of Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit and Demon Ape so that he had specifically ordered them to protect Chi Kongyue.

Even if they encountered a powerful enemy that they couldn't defeat, it shouldn't be a problem for them to escape with Chi Kongyue.

..

"Realm Bearers? I shall kill all of you. I'll end the hope of Kunlun." A man in black with two swords on his back rushed forward with a fierce look in his eyes.

He was the second most powerful swordsman in Saber Empyrean, Xu Tianjing. After the Young Sword Master died, he became the new leader of Saber Empyrean.

The previous leader of Saber Empyrean had died in Kunlun, which was a great shame to Saber Empyrean.

Therefore, Saber Empyrean was very active in targeting Saturn Peach Tree and Zhang Ruochen. They had sent a large number of powerful cultivators.

Xu Tianjing glanced at Xue Wuye. His eyes were cold. "You're really lucky. I'd like to see who can save you this time."

As he spoke, Xu Tianjing pulled out a sword. It was thin and soft, like a willow leaf. It shook endlessly, forming countless afterimages.

Xue Wuye's pupils constricted. He quickly activated the Mark of Time in his hand to maximize his speed. He displayed the eighth sword technique of Flying Fairy Sword Technique.

At the same time, Friar Lidi pounced over and slashed at Xu Tianjing with his blade, Buddhist Butcher.

Gai Tianjiao released an intense Yang aura. It was like a blazing sun, causing the temperature in the entire palace to rise.

Beigong Lan entered a wondrous state of becoming one with his sword. She activated the power of the Saint Sword and merged everything she had learned into one sword attack.

Mi Yingzi activated her powerful spiritual power. While casting illusions, she created many profound formation seals and tried her best to summon the power of heaven and earth.

Chi Wansui's aura was also rising. He waved his Kylin Spear, displaying a force that could counter an army.

The six Realm Bearers did not hold back. They used their strongest techniques together to block Xu Tianjing's sword.

BANG!

Xu Tianjing's sword was unstoppable. It easily broke through the six Ream Bearers' techniques.

The six Realm Bearers flew backward at the same time. There were bloody holes on their bodies, and Saint blood kept flowing. Their eyes were full of shock. The six of them were not Xu Tianjing's match.

If it were not for the protection of Realm Seals, they might have died under Xu Tianjing's sword.

…

"A bunch of trash. They can't even deal with two beasts!"

Accompanied by a cold berating voice, a beautiful woman with a graceful figure entered the palace.

She was the leader of Ruiya Realm, Saint King Fang Ze. Although she was beautiful, she was ruthless.

Ruiya Realm also suffered heavy losses in Kunlun. The two outstanding disciples of two Fanes were killed, which made the higher-ups of Ruiya Realm extremely dissatisfied.

If not for that, they would not have sent Saint King Fang Ze here.

"Witch, who are you calling an animal? Come here, I can't kill you,"Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit shouted.

A cold light flashed in Saint King Fang Ze's eyes. She raised her hand, and hundreds of thousands of palm Precepts appeared. They combined with the majestic Saint Qi and formed a huge flame holy furnace, which crashed toward Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit.

Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit glared and immediately shouted, "Stupid demonic ape, hurry up and block it."

It was rare that Demon Ape did not bicker with Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit. It used its fastest speed to flash over and block in front of the pot.

RAWRRRR!

Demon Ape let out an earth-shaking roar and punched out with majestic demonic qi.

BANG

The sacred flame furnace exploded, and flames flew in all directions.

The demon ape retreated more than ten steps, stabilizing itself and shaking its arm.

Fang ze was too strong. Even with his immortal body, he couldn't handle it.

"Huh? It's really hard, but it can't stop me."

Saint King Fang Ze displayed an exquisite movement technique, as if he was dancing, catching up to the demon ape in an instant.

With a wave of his hand, Saint King Fang Ze took out a stele, and suppressed the demon ape.

At the same time, he turned his hand into a claw, and grabbed towards Chi Kongyue in the Demon Ape's embrace.

"Kongyue."

The expression of the Nine-heavens Maiden changed, and she wanted to rush over to save him.

"You dare to be distracted while fighting against me?"

Saint Lord Wu Xin laughed savagely, and raised the skull staff in his hand.

The skull staff emitted a dim light, and it released a boundless evil aura. There was also a strange and terrifying ghost king hidden within, and it was faintly discernible.

Chi

The Ghost Lord broke through the defenses of Sacred Confucian Tome and unleashed a powerful spiritual attack.

Mystic Maiden of the nine heavens revealed a pained expression. She felt as if her sacred soul was about to be torn apart.

Just as the Saint King Fang Ze was about to touch Chi Kongyue, a figure appeared in front of Chi Kongyue and used his body to block the Saint King Fang Ze's sharp claws.

It was none other than Xue Wuye who appeared.

"You're courting death."

King Fangze's eyes were filled with killing intent. His sharp claws directly pierced Xue Wuye's body.

Xue Wuye's injuries worsened. He spat out blood and fell straight down. Zhang Ruochen had saved his life. Now, it was time to pay back his life.

"Uncle Wuye."

Chi Kongyue shouted and quickly threw out a talisman.

The Talisman released a Blinding Silver Lightning and released seven terrifying bolts of lightning that struck towards the Saint King Fang Ze.

"Little girl, are you still unwilling to accept your fate?"

The Saint King Fang Ze did not care and lifted his hand to destroy all the lightning.

As the leader of Ruiya Realm, her strength was already very close to the first level of the Supreme Saint realm. How could she be easily blocked?

However, just as the Saint King Fang Ze was about to grab Chi Kongyue again, she suddenly sensed something.

She could not help but switch from offense to defense. She even took back the sacred tablet.

“You’re courting death.”

A cold voice spread throughout the palace.

A peerless sword radiance appeared and sliced open the space behind the Saint King Fang Ze. Following that, the peerless sword radiance slashed the sacred tablet away and broke through all of the Saint King Fang Ze’s defenses.

Crack!

King Fangze’s Saint Body was cut in half at the waist. Even her Saint Soul was cut in half.

When the two halves of her body were thrown back, her eyes were wide open and full of fear.

“What a powerful sword Qi.”

“Who is it?”

..

Everyone looked outside the palace. They saw a tall figure holding a saint sword reflected in their eyes.

“Zhang Ruochen.”

Many powerful figures of Heavenly Realm faction gasped.

They had never thought that so many top saint king realm powerful figures who had shocked the world would surround and kill Zhang Ruochen. They had set up an inescapable net, but they still let him break into the primordial beginning palace.

Had the outside world been defeated?

Chapter 2194: Blood All Over Ziwei Palace

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Chi Kongyue bit her white teeth and stared at Zhang Ruochen's figure in the distance.

When Chi Kongyue saw the great changes in Ziwei Palace with her own eyes and the death of many elites of Imperial Court, her heart was struck with heavy blows.

She was afraid, but she did not dare to show it. She was the daughter of Zhang Ruochen and Empress Chi Yao. How could she show her weak side in front of enemies?

Nine-heavens Maiden's gaze imbued with mixed feelings. She sighed in her heart. In the end, Zhang Ruochen still came to Yuanchu Palace.

Everything seemed to be predestined!

…

Zhang Ruochen's long hair fluttered in the wind. He stood proudly and looked down at the powerful figures from Heavenly Realm faction who were emitting saint light.

His eyes were full of killing intent.

Chi Kongyue would have fallen into Saint King Fang Ze's hands if he had come a little later.

"As the ruler of the Western Universe, is this how Heavenly Realm behaves? Do you still know the true responsibility of a ruling Macroworld?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Archangel Michael narrowed his eyes and said in a deep voice, "Zhang Ruochen, you're not qualified to judge Heavenly Realm."

"Even a god would not dare to judge Heavenly Realm, let alone a mere Saint King," a cultivator beside him said proudly.

Zhang Ruochen looked around at the Heavenly Realm powerhouses, "There are nearly 500 Saint Kings here," he said. "You are all talented cultivators. I think at least half of you will reach Supreme Sainthood in the future! If all of you died here, the Macroworlds behind you will surely suffer great loss.

“I’ll give you a chance now. All of you should kneel and give up. I’ll report everything here to Moon Goddess and let Celestial Palace handle the rest. Is that fair enough?” he said.

This did not sound like persuasion at all.

It was an insult!

Anger appeared in the eyes of elites from Heavenly Realm faction.

Asking them to kneel?

How arrogant!

“Zhang Ruochen, I don’t know if you’re really stupid or pretending to be stupid. You’re the one who should kneel and beg for mercy. But it’s useless even if you beg. You must die here today,” Xu Tianjing, the new leader of the Saber Empyrean, sneered.

The leader of Cha Realm, Saint Lord Wu Xin, walked out of the palace. “Zhang Ruochen, when you die, I’ll refine you into a perfect evil corpse. I’m looking forward to it,” he said with an evil smile on his face.

Other elites from Heavenly Realm faction also had killing intent in their eyes. They could not wait to kill Zhang Ruochen with their own hands. It would be a great achievement if they succeeded.

“I’ve given you the chance to surrender. Since you lot don’t want to kneel, don’t blame me for the slaughter,” Zhang Ruochen said with his eyebrows raised. His intent to manslaughter grew stronger.

“Believe it or not, half of you will die before even touching a bit of me.”

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen flipped his hand and took out Sundial. He immediately mobilized millions of Precepts of Time and transfused them all into Sundial.

At the same time, he operated Empyrean Emperor Ming’s Scripture. He extracted a large amount of divine essence from the divine sun formed by Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi’s Sun Leaf.

These divine essences were enough to support him for a short while to stimulate the power of Sundial.

Crash

In an instant, Sundial emitted an indescribable Taoist rhyme. A layer of cyan brilliance emerged, and countless light spots flew out from it. They turned into a beam targetting the elites from Heavenly Realm faction.

Each light spot was a Mark of Time.

A magnificent illusory image of the River of Time appeared out of thin air and resonated with Sundial.

Time became extremely chaotic wherever the cyan streak passed. Space-time was distorted because of it.

“God-eater Bug.”

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen opened the gate of Qiankun Realm. A large amount of blue flames flew out from it. They were extremely fast and pounced toward the elites from Heavenly Realm faction.

Each blue flame was a god-devouring bug. Their number was massive. Some were the size of a fingernail; some were the size of a fist; some were the size of a washbasin or even a millstone. They could devour everything.

God-eater Bugs were extremely difficult to tame.

That was why Zhang Ruochen hadn’t used them since he’d taken them from Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

His cultivation had greatly increased now. He’d reached the Great Perfection of the Saint Kinghood. Besides that, the sprout of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was also growing rapidly. Therefore, he could finally control large numbers of God-eater Bugs.

In this kind of group battle, the God-eater bugs’ skill could be greatly useful.

“Arghhhh!”

“Save me. The Divine mark on my body has been burned through!”

“Why is my hair turning gray? There are wrinkles on my hands! ”

…

The cultivators from Heavenly Realm and its allies all let out miserable cries.

Some were either young and beautiful or heroic and handsome. However, after being attacked by Mark of Time, they instantly aged by over a thousand years. Their vitality was draining away, and died in despair.

Some powerful figures attacked by the swarm of God-eater Bugs could not dodge. They were burned to ashes.

Swoosh

Zhang Ruochen held his Ancient Abyssal Blade and walked straight ahead.

At this moment, he was like a peerless god of death. There would be bloodshed for each sword he strike. He was mercilessly reaping the lives of the powerful elites from Heavenly Realm faction.

Shink!

With one sword strike, the new leader of the Saber Empyrean, Xu Tianjing, was beheaded.

Xu Tianjing's eyes were wide open, full of fear and resentment.

A Saint King's vitality was very strong, but Zhang Ruochen's strike had wiped out all of his vitality. It had destroyed the Saint Soul on the spot.

"You can't even block one strike of mine, yet dare to challenge me,"

Zhang Ruochen didn't stop for a moment. He flashed and appeared in front of the leader of Cha Realm, Saint Lord Wu Xin.

Saint Lord Wu Xin was shocked. He immediately raised his skull staff in hand and released a huge amount of evil Qi. He summoned more than ten evil corpses to block him in the front.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were indifferent. He used his sword soul to control the sword and displayed thousands of fierce Sword Qi. He had chopped more than ten evil corpses into pieces and also wiped out all the evil Qi.

"How could it be…"

Saint Lord Wu Xin stared at Zhang Ruochen. His glabella had been pierced by Ancient Abyssal Blade as it left a bloody hole the size of a wine cup.

The powerful Swordwill entered his body and instantly destroyed his Saint Soul.

At the moment of his death, Saint Lord Wuxin was filled with regret. He wouldn't have attacked Divine Scripture Maiden if he had known this would happen. Let alone provoke Zhang Ruochen.

In other words, he shouldn't have come to Kunlun, the battlefield.

Zhang Ruochen was not just a Saint King. He was far more terrifying than many Supreme Saints.

Roar

Letting out an earth-shaking roar, Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit carried Le up to the sky and joined the battle.

Shink!

Cut-off heads and splatters of Saint Blood could be seen everywhere.

"Fifteen."

"Sixteen."

"Seventeen."

…

Le was expressionless. He stabbed them one after another. Each stab took one's life.

He did not pity the elites from Heavenly Realm faction.

"It's your turn!"

Zhang Ruochen appeared in front of Archangel Michael in a flash.

Precepts of heaven and earth along with Saint Qi gathered crazily. Together they condensed into a cross-shaped beam of sword energy and slashed towards Archangel Michael.

Archangel Michael's pupils constricted. He quickly took out a Saint Shield to block Zhang Ruochen. He didn't dare to fight against Zhang Ruochen head-on.

His ability was very strong. He was only slightly weaker than Yin Yuanchen. Furthermore, his cultivation base was about 60 percent of evil Yan Wushen's strength.

With such powerful cultivation, other than Supreme Saints he could almost do whatever he wanted to anyone else. He didn't even need to spend much effort to kill the weakest Neverwither Supreme Saint.

However, Archangel Michael didn't have any confidence to face Zhang Ruochen.

When he saw Zhang Ruochen crossing Sea of Truth, he already saw the gap between them. The confidence in him was almost crushed.

The Saint Shield released brilliant Saint Light. Countless Precepts of Light interweaved on its surface. It had an amazing defense.

Bang

After Saint Shield was attacked by the cross-shaped beam of sword energy, the saint light on its surface dimmed.

A powerful force passed through Saint Shield and hit the body of Archangel Michael. It came crashing into him and sent him flying.

Archangel Michael hit onto Yuanchu Palace heavily. A cross-shaped appeared on his chest, and holy blood gushed out.

Ptui!

Archangel Michael spat out a mouthful of blood, and there was a look of fear in his eyes.

He knew that Zhang Ruochen was very strong, but he didn't expect him to be this strong. It was hard to imagine that a Saint King could have such terrifying strength.

Zhang Ruochen shifted his gaze at Yuanchu Palace. There was a flicker of some surprise in his eyes

In the palace, someone had been restraining Blood Dripper.

That person released dozens of strange chains with his palm wide open. They surrounded and wrapped around Blood Dripper. It was obvious that he wanted to take it by force.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

Blood Dripper kept shaking, but it couldn't break free.

Zhang Ruochen knew very well how powerful Blood Dripper was. Its strength was about 80 percent of evil Yan Wushen's strength, and it was stronger than Yin Yuanchen.

With the special nature of Blood Dripper, even evil Yan Wushen's strength was unlikely to suppress it. Let alone take it.

'Another Descender, and… he fell out of Hundred-Shackle Realm,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

Compared to Neverwilt Realm Descender, Teryn, who was killed by him. This person was undoubtedly much stronger. After all, he was fallen from Hundred-Shackle Realm, so he must have mastered various techniques at Hundred-Shackle Realm.

There was a huge difference between a Supreme Saint from Neverwilt Realm and a Supreme saint from Hundred-Shackle Realm. They were different and not comparable in any way.

There seemed to be a layer of mist around this person. Even Zhang Ruochen's Eye of Truth couldn't see through it.

Naturally, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't just watch as Blood Dripper was being taken away. So he grabbed the hilt with both hands and swung Ancient Abyssal Blade.

Crack

All the chains fettering Blood Dripper were cut in an instant.

Taking this opportunity, Blood Dripper broke free and flew to Zhang Ruochen's side as a streak of blood light.

"Zhang Ruochen, you're courting death."

The Descender from Hundred-Shackle Realm was furious. Terrifying killing intent radiated from him.

If Zhang Ruochen hadn't stuck out and destroyed the chains, he would have been able to take Blood Dripper soon.

Being able to subdue the battle sword of Empress Chi Yao was enough to make him famous throughout myriad of Macroworlds. Furthermore, he could also take it to the gods in exchange for a supreme sacred pill. He could easily recover back as a Supreme Saint with it.

Buzz

At this moment, the clouds in the sky dispersed and two Fane buildings appeared.

These two Fane buildings were extremely tall. They hovered in the sky like two stars; each one suppressing a certain location.

A dominant Power of Time and Dimension was released from the Fane buildings. It was so powerful that it covered the oasis below.

Suddenly, the power of Sundial was suppressed. All the light spots disappeared and returned to calmness.

The God-eater Bugs were also confined by Power of Dimensions. It seemed like they'd been stuck in a muddy swamp, unable to move.

Zhang Ruochen raised his head and looked at the two Fane buildings. He could vaguely see dozens of powerful figures sitting legged crossed there. They had released countless Precepts of Time and Dimensions, activating the powerful force contained in the Fane buildings that could suppress heaven and earth.

"Fane of Time and Dimensions had finally interfered. It seems that Heavenly Realm and its allies had long thought of ways to deal with me." Zhang Ruochen's eyes flashed with terrifying coldness.

He did have some feuds with Fane of Dimensions, but Fane of Dimensions had never deployed their elites to counter him before.

As for Fane of Time, he had never come into contact with them. Much less to having feud with them.

However, Zhang Ruochen knew that the two Fanes were targeting him because of Saint Monk Xumi and his identity as Master of Time.

In the Middle Age, Saint Monk Xumi's achievement was too great. His attainment in Path of Time and Path of Dimension was very high that no one from two Fanes could reach his success. As a result, two Fanes become laughing stocks.

After Saint Monk Xumi died, the two Fanes had been searching for his burial ground. They wanted to obtain his legacy for their own use.

Unfortunately, they could not find anything.

Now, they were targeting Zhang Ruochen.

The two Fanes were determined to get Secret Tome of Time and Space.

He was able to sense that Heaven Lake had been completely sealed. Time was also cut off. This meant that he could not use the power of Time and Dimension in this space.

Zhang Ruochen took Blood Dripper and temporarily retreated to the head of Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit. He'd put away God-eater Bugs and Sundial.

Apparently, the two Fanes were the trump cards of Heavenly Realm faction to deal with him.

However, they did not expect Zhang Ruochen to attack suddenly. Therefore, the powerful figures could not react in time to activate the two Fanes.

In this short period, nearly 100 elites from Heavenly Realm faction had lost their lives. Many of them were top Nine-Step Saint Kings, including leaders such as Saint Lord Wu Xin and Xu Tianjing. They had suffered heavy casualties.

Saint Blood was all over Ziwei Palace.

The smell of blood was thick in the air.

Saint King's blood contained a huge amount of energy. When it spilled to the ground, it would turn into blazing flames.

The remaining cultivators of Heavenly Realm and its allies all looked gloomy.

They had never expected such an outcome.

The Descender who fell out of Hundred-Shackle Realm walked out of Yuanchu Palace. He stared at Zhang Ruochen with eyes filled with murderous intent.

Archangel Micheal dragged his wounded body and walked forward with his eyes cold.

Swoosh

A large group of powerful figures soared into the clouds. They were not hindered and went straight into Heaven Lake Oasis.

After a short delay, Yin Yuanchen and the others finally caught up and blocked all the escape routes.

In this case, elites from Heavenly Realm faction formed a pincer attack on Zhang Ruochen, Le, and Blood Dripper.

Inside the palace, elites of the Imperial Court were stunned. Most people were very excited as if they had seen a ray of sunlight in the abyss.

Of course, some others frowned.

Even if Zhang Ruochen went on a killing spree and killed many elites from Heavenly Realm faction, they could not be optimistic. They knew that Heavenly Realm faction had tricks up to their sleeves.

Especially now that the powerful figures from Fane of Time and Dimension had taken action to seal Time and Space. Zhang Ruochen's strength would be greatly reduced. How could he continue to fight with Heavenly Realm faction now?

"Master Zhang all mighty! Kill all the scums of Heavenly Realm! Don't let any of them go!" Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit shouted excitedly.

While shouting, it opened its huge dragon mouth and swallowed two halves of Saint King Fang Ze's body.

Flesh and blood of an elite whose cultivation base was close to the first-tier below Supreme Sainthood contained a great amount of essence Qi. Such great tonic should not be wasted.

At the same time, Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit also took Saint King Fangze's stele. It suppressed the stele with its spiritual power and took it as a spoil of war. It was straightforward and did not even bother to ask for Zhang Ruochen's permission.

In such a gloomy atmosphere, no one would be as heartless as Guoguo was.. It was as if it did not realize how dangerous the situation had become.

Chapter 2195: Unbreakable Backbone of Kunlun

“All cultivators retreat to the periphery. With your cultivation, fighting Zhang Ruochen alone is no different from suicide. Immediately form a combined attack formation with the two High-Saint Array Masters and use group defense and ladder formation attack.”

Archangel Michael was very intelligent. Even though Zhang Ruochen had killed the cultivators of Heavenly Realm faction, he could still remain calm.

“Where are the twelve Angels of Vengeance? Turn into the Light of Judgment immediately and help me slash Zhang Ruochen.”

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The sound of wind breaking could be heard.

The twelve Angels of Vengeance of Fane of Light turned into twelve rays of bright Saint Light and appeared beside Archangel Michael.

The battle formation was formed. They turned into twelve halos and hung above Archangel Michael’s head, sprinkling holy light.

“Close!”

The aura of Archangel Michael kept on rising. The cross shaped wound on his chest was healing at a speed visible to the naked eye.

Originally, his cultivation base was about 60 percent strength of evil Yan Wushen. But now, with the support of the twelve Angels of Vengeance, his strength had increased exponentially.

It was not as simple as one plus one equals two.

In fact, the energy waves that erupted from Archangel Michael’s body had already surpassed good Yan Wushen. In his current state, he would not lose much even if he fought against the Four Heavenly Kings of the Celestial Palace.

Fane of Light was one of Fanes that passed on the teachings of the Paths of the Ancients. Hence, its methods were not something imaginable for an ordinary cultivator with rank of Sainthood.

In a sense, Fane of Light had nurtured the twelve Angels of Vengeance for Archangel Michael's sake. They wanted to make him to the top elite across myriad of Macroworlds in this generation.

Yin Yuanchen was naturally envious and jealous of Archangel Michael. In the end, he looked at Zhang Ruochen and snorted in his heart. 'Zhang Ruochen, only by killing you can I surpass Michael. Everything he has should belong to me.'

Myriad threads of light emerged from Yin Yuanchen's body. They turned into power of Hadean Doom and fused into the divine corpse.

The next moment, something shocking happened. Yin Yuanchen's Blood Qi resonated with the divine corpse, merging into one.

Yin Yuanchen was using a forbidden secret technique that his grandfather had created for him: Divine Corpse Blood Technique.

This was because he and his father's divine corpse had the closest bloodline.

Using this secret technique, he could nurture the divine corpse with his Saint Blood. In a short amount of time, he could merge with the divine corpse and display explosive and unparalleled combat power.

KABOOM!

The extremely violent aura was released from the divine corpse and enveloped the entire Heaven Lake.

At this moment, the divine corpse was Yin Yuanchen. His power was rising steadily, and he was no less than the current Michael Archangel King.

"Zhang Ruochen, how dare you ruin my great plan? How do you want to die?" shouted the Descender who fall out of Hundred-Shackle Realm. His voice was cold.

As he spoke, he released monstrous Demonic Qi, causing the space where the Heaven Lake was seethe endlessly.

His name was Saint Lord Pravus. He was the most talented cultivator in Blackdemon Realm a thousand years ago. Back then, he had had the potential to become a top Supreme Saint.

Unfortunately, his Sainthood Source had been shattered by Smriti, a Supreme Saint from Infernal Court's Rakshasa, during a battle.

Almost everything of his cultivation base—his Precepts, his insights on the Paths, knowledge and wisdom—was mostly wiped out by Smriti's Pyreflame Bell.

A cultivator's Sainthood Source was formed from the cultivator's Saint Aspect, Saint Qi, enlightenment, and knowledge.

Hence, when a culltivator's Sainthood Source was destroyed, the cultivator would fall out of the cultivation rank of Supreme Sainthood. When this happened, they could no longer be called a Supreme Saint.

At that time, Saint Lord Pravus had already broken through 42 Shackles within his body. His future had been bright. Hence, one could imagine severity of the blow he had taken in that battle.

The reason that he had joined Heavenly Realm faction was to obtain a fortuitous encounter to restore his cultivation rank to Supreme Sainthood.

Taking Blood Dripper was undoubtedly a great opportunity, but Zhang Ruochen had ruined it. How could he not be angry?

Judging from the aura emanating from his body, one could tell that Saint Lord Pravus was mroe powerful than Archangel Michael and Yin Yuanchen.

This was normal. A Supreme Saint who fell out of Hundred-Shackle Realm fell, no Saint King could compare.

Archangel Michael, Yin Yuanchen, and demon lord blood spirit surrounded Zhang Ruochen and the other two.

"Heavenly Realm is indeed one of dominant Marcoworlds. Its foundation is strong and its methods are deep. No other Macroworlds can compare to you."

Zhang Ruochen sighed. His gaze swept across the two Fanes in the sky. Their presence had restrained his power of Space and Time.

The current situation was very disadvantageous to him.

"Zhang Ruochen, without the forces of Time and Space, how much combat power you are left with? Take my sword."

Archangel Michael was the first to attack.

Under his control, the twelve Swords of Judgment combined into one and slashed toward Zhang Ruochen.

He had been severely injured by Zhang Ruochen's sword previously, so now he's trying to settle the score.

Swoosh–

The Sword of Judgment released a holy light illuminating the world, as if it wanted to purify all the evil in the world.

Both Archangel Michael and the twelve Angels of Vengeance had not practiced Path of Light to the Great Perfection. But now, when combined, they could exert power comparable to the Great Perfection.

"Even if I don't use the forces of Time and Space, you are still no match for me."

Zhang Ruochen's fighting spirit was boilin, his gaze burning like lightning. He soared into the sky and wielded Ancient Abyssal Blade in his hand, slashing out heaven-reaching sword rays.

Boom!

The two streaks of Sword Light shattered in midair at the same time, shooting out countless sharp Sword Qi.

Fortunately, this space had been completely suppressed. Even such a terrifying collision of power couldn't tear it apart.

Archangel Michael retreated more than 200 meters in a row. He stabbed his sword into the ground to stabilize his posture.

Although the collision had landed on the ground, he was not injured. He could not help but feel more confident. He thought to himself, "Zhang Ruochen is not undefeatable after all."

RAWRRRR!

Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit roared, wanting to charge at the enemies with Le to help Zhang Ruochen.

"You are not qualified to join this fight. Die!"

Although Saint Lord Pravus was a Descender, he still had the aura of a Supreme Saint and Emperor-level power. He mobilized the Demonic Blood Qi and condensed a gigantic hand that covered the sky. Suddenly, the giant hand struck out.

Feeling the earth-shattering pressure, Le showed no fear. He released extreme murderous aura from his body. He gathered all his power into one point and stabbed out with his sword.

Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit also unleashed a large amount of divine power. Its thick python tail lashed out ruthlessly.

BANG!

The gigantic hand that covered the sky was unrivaled. Le and Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit were sent flying and fell into Heaven Lake.

After this attack, Le and Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit were heavily injured. Their Saint Blood dyed a large area of Heaven Lake red, causing its icy water to boil.

It was not that they were too weak, but that Saint Lord Pravus was too strong.

After all, he had been a Supreme Saint that broke through 42 Shackles. He was no ordinary person.

For every Shackle a Supreme Saint at Hundred-Shackle Realm broke, there would be a 10 percent increase in the power of their Neverwither physique.

In other words, they could double their power after breaking ten Shackles.

If they could break all hundred Shackles, they would be able to unleash strength ten times the power of their Neverwither physiques.

On top of much stronger physique, Supreme Saints at Hundred-Shackle Realm would have greater insights on their Paths, they had greater proficiency in controlling the Precepts and Saint Qi of heaven and earth.

Although Saint Lord Pravus was a Descender, he had broken 42 Shackles before. Hence, the power of his Neverwither physique was four times stronger than that of a Supreme Saint at the peak of Neverwilt Realm.

Even if he was not supported by Supreme Saint power, one should not underestimate him.

When a cultivator's cultivation rank was not high enough, his physicial strength could support him.

'The gap in strength between a Hundred-Shackle Realm Descender and Neverwilt Realm Descender is huge,' Zhang Ruochen thought.

He hadn't used much strength to kill Teryn, who had been a Supreme Saint at the peak of Neverwilt Realm. But now, Saint Lord Pravus had brought him quite some pressure.

"Zhang Ruochen, how dare you be distracted? You really don't know how to spell the word death," Yin Yuanchen, who had merged with the divine corpse, said.

At the same time, he pounced forward, brandished his divine sword, and slashed out.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Yin Yuanchen lightly, waved his hand, and shot out Blood Dripper.

At the same time, majestic Five-element Chaotic Qi surged out of his body. It combined with the Precepts of Truth and evolved into a vast starry sky.

The Fane of Time and the Fane of Dimension could only impose a lockdown onTime and Space. They could not seal his Path of Truth.

"Seal."

Suddenly, a loud voice sounded.

24 divine bones appeared above Zhang Ruochen. There were many secret patterns interwoven on them. They released a very special energy wave that enveloped Zhang Ruochen.

Suddenly, the Realm-frame of Truth that Zhang Ruochen had condensed trembled slightly.

"Someone from Fane of Truth interfered?"

Zhang Ruochen's heart sank slightly.

It was normal. The Heavenly Realm faction were powerful, so they naturally had some forces within Fane of Truth. Otherwise, how could they have gotten the secret technique to condense the Realm-frame of Truth for Archangel Michael?

Above the clouds, a person stood with a cold smile in his eyes. He looked down at Zhang Ruochen.

It was none other than Dongfang Qingyu, one of the ten Divine Scion from Fane of Truth.

'It seems that master's guess is correct. Our lord has indeed taught Zhang Ruochen the secret method of condensing the Realm-frame of Truth. The 24 divine bones prepared for this have come in handy,' Dongfang Qingyu said to himself.

With the 24 divine bones personally refined by his master, even if Zhang Ruochen condensed the Realm-frame of Truth, "Boundless Universe", it would still be sealed and could not play a role in the battle.

Not only the Realm-frame of Truth, the same went to Path of Truth.

In this way, Zhang Ruochen would be vulnerable. He could no longer resist.

However, the next moment, Dongfang Qingyu was shocked. "What's going on? Why isn't Zhang Ruochen's Realm-frame of Truth shape sealed?"

The Realm-frame of Truth that Zhang Ruochen condensed was different from that of cultivators from the Fane of Truth. On top of that, he had refined the Heart of Truth, how could his Realm-frame of Truth be sealed so easily?

"Yin and Yang, seize the fate!"

Zhang Ruochen growled. He mobilized the rules of his Tao of the sword. At the same time, he controlled Ancient Abyssal Blade and Blood Dripper to evolve the Yin and Yang Sect's most powerful sword formation.

A huge yin-yang Taiji pattern appeared above Zhang Ruochen. It rotated slowly and produced endless changes.

Whoosh

Sword rays condensed to the extreme flew out of the yin-yang Taiji pattern. They attacked Yin Yuanchen and Archangel Michael at the same time.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen took out the ancient hilt of the sword tomb. He activated it with Saint Qi and quickly formed a slender sword body. He took the initiative to slash at Demon Lord Soul.

In his eyes, demon lord soul was the most important opponent.

He could resist the suppression of the disciples of the three divine halls and the attacks of the three powerful figures by himself. He could even take the initiative to attack. Zhang Ruochen, who was in the Saint King realm, had achieved something unprecedented.

Saint Lord Pravus could not help but sneer. “Since you’re so eager to die, I’ll Grant You Your Wish.”

As he spoke, Saint Lord Pravus’s body expanded and transformed into a 300-meter-tall giant. His demonic power grew stronger and stronger. Dazzling demonic light bloomed on his four limbs, swimming like dragons and snakes. It was the power of the 42 shackles he had broken in the 100-shackled realm.

100 shackles covered his entire body.

Like an immortal turning into a body, breaking the shackles was easy to difficult.

Human cultivators had 10 shackles on each limb. It was relatively easy to break them. Saint Lord Pravus had broken all the shackles on his four limbs. He had brought the power of the four extremes to the extreme.

“Sky Demon Sky Ripping Hand.”

Crack

Saint Lord Pravus’s big hand grabbed Zhang Ruochen’s sword radiance and crushed it.

Then his hand slapped toward Zhang Ruochen.

Bang

Even with the divine sword in front of him, Zhang Ruochen still retreated more than a dozen steps. His breath became slightly chaotic.

“Such strong power,”Zhang Ruochen thought.

Seeing Saint Lord Pravus attack again, Zhang Ruochen quickly struck out with his palm. He mobilized millions of rules and activated the power of Armor of the Fire God at the same time.

Faced with such a powerful opponent, he obviously had to be careful and give it his all.

A Blue Dragon flew out of his palm. It grew with the wind. Its body burned with flames, causing the temperature of the entire Heaven Lake to rise sharply.

Boom

Saint Lord Pravus’s attack was fierce, but it was blocked.

“Take another palm from me.”

Zhang Ruochen shouted. He released vast Saint Qi and condensed a tyrannical palm print that could destroy the sky and earth.

Boom! Boom

Zhang Ruochen and Saint Lord Pravus fought fiercely. They did nothold back and attacked with all their might.

..

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was not at a disadvantage in the fierce battle with the three powerful figures, the cultivators of Heavenly Realm all whispered to each other. They felt their hearts pounding.

Zhang Ruochen was only in the Saint King Realm. It was already so difficult to kill him.

What would happen when he broke through to the Supreme Saint realm?

Akash looked into the primordial beginning temple. A cold light flashed in his eyes. “We must capture Chi Kongyue as soon as possible.”

In order to prevent any accidents, it was undoubtedly necessary to have Chi Kongyue as a trump card.

Many leaders, including Akash, entered Yuanchu Palace immediately.

Sensing the intention of Heavenly Realm faction, the Nine-heavens Maiden and the seventy-two palace saintesses quickly protected Chi Kongyue.

Xue Wuye joined the other five heirs and walked to the front. No matter if he was strong enough or not, he would not back down.

They would not back down.

Because he had refined the heart of the sacred wood, Xue Wuye's vitality and recovery were much stronger than the other Saint Kings.

He had been severely injured by King Fangze, but he was better now.

Akash looked at the fairy of the nine heavens, he sighed. "Why?"? The destruction of Kunlun was inevitable. No matter how much he resisted, it was useless. He had died in vain. You All saw how powerful Heavenly Realm faction was. Even if Zhang Ruochen could fight, could he break through the suppression of the disciples of the three divine halls? Could he break the siege of two Earth Masters and hundreds of top Saint King Realm Masters? He is also a human. He will be tired, exhausted, and exhausted

"Giving up resistance and returning to Megrez with me is the wisest choice."

Swoosh

the Nine-heavens Maiden raised her Saint Sword and pointed it at Akash, she said, "Akash, if you want to be a dog, don't think that others want to be as well. On one hand, you say that you want to help the Kunlun, but on the other hand, you collude with the heaven's field and intend to destroy the Kunlun. Divine Lord Jiuyao is aboveboard and unrivalled. How could he have such a despicable descendant like you?"

Warrior Saint Canglan had always been hot-tempered. She was not as graceful as Divine Scripture Maiden. She would show any emotions directly.

From the very beginning, she hated Akash. Now, she hated him even more. She wished she could tear him into pieces.

Akash did not get angry. Instead, he said with a faint smile, "A wise man trims his sail to the wind. History has always been written by the winners. As long as you can achieve your goal, who cares about what method did you use?"

“Alright, stop resisting. I don’t want to hurt you. As long as these people from Imperial Court choose to surrender, I can come forward and save their lives.”

“Sissy, what Bullsh * t are you talking about? It stinks, it stinks! Our Master Zhang is the unbreakable backbone of Kunlun. He was powerful. Once we destroy all of them, it will be your turn to die,” said Guoguo.

A terrifying murderous aura rose in Akash’s eyes as he said, “What a sharp-tongued beast. You will never have a good ending for insulting me. Do It. Except for Chi Kongyue and the Nine-heavens Maiden, leave no one alive.”

Chapter 2196: Altar of Saints vs. Fanes

In Yuanchu Palace, all the elites of Imperial Court gathered. Even though they faced those top leaders from Heavenly Realm faction, they did not show any fear.

The Nine-heavens Maiden’s robe was stained with blood as she stood upright. Previously, when she fought with Saint Lord Wu Xin, she was already severely injured and had expended a lot of energy. Her strong willpower was what was left to hold herself up.

“Finally, this day has come. It is the time to sacrifice our lives and blood for Kunlun,” said the Nine-heavens Maiden with a determined look in her eyes.

She raised her Saint Sword high. “Let’s burn our lifeforce and our Saint blood. We shall fight our final battle to protect Kunlun. Show the Heavenly Realm faction our willpower and courage!” Her voice was loud and clear.

Her words struck every one present. The Saint blood within them was boiling, their fighting spirit as high as ever.

“You want to destroy Kunlun? Over our dead bodies!”

“As a man of Kunlun, we shed blood but not tears.”

“We can die, but Kunlun will live forever. One day, Kunlun will stand at the top of the universe again. When the time comes, your Macroworlds will pay the price.”

“Fight for Kunlun, and die with no regret.”

…

Many Kunlun elites shouted one after another in soaring emotions, and they were all ready to sacrifice themselves for their homeland.

Almost at the same time, led by Nine-heavens Maiden and the six Realm Bearers, all the elites of Kunlun's Central Imperial Court began to burn their lifeforce and Saint Blood to sublimate their own power.

Whoosh!
All of a sudden, everyone's power gathered and turned into an incomparably bright ray that pierced through Time and Space, like an eternal light illuminating the past and the present.

"Kill them all."

Several leaders of the Heavenly Realm faction, including Akash, all attacked. They all used advanced Saint techniques, each of which could destroy the stars in outer space and pierce through a Ruins Realm.

Boom!
The brutal attacks collided, causing Yuanchu Palace to shake violently.

If not for the fact that Yuanchu Palace had become extraordinary after being nourished by Empress Chi Yao's divine power, it would have been shattered into pieces.

As all the elites in Imperial Court were burning their lifeforce and Saint Blood, their dark hair quickly turned gray. Their skin also dimmed and lost its luster. It was as if they had aged a thousand years in an instant.

However, even so, they only managed to hold on for a moment before they were exhausted.

Bang!
The Central Imperial Court elites were sent flying.

No one spat out blood because they had no more blood left.

All of their faces turned as pale as ashes as they collapsed on the ground. They did not even have the strength to move and had completely lost the ability to resist.

The difference in strength was too great. Even if they tried their best, they could not change anything.

Akash sighed and said, “Why do you have to do this? You could have survived by making the right choice, yet you chose a dead end. You are foolish. What you have done is pointless.”

“We are different from you. You want to be a dog of Heavenly Realm, but we shall stay as the men of upright conduct. It is a pity that there are leaders like you in Megrez,” the Nine-heavens Maiden said.

At this moment, she was the only one among the Imperial Court elites who had the strength to stand up and face the leaders of Heavenly Realm faction.

A cold glint appeared in Akash’s eyes as he said, “It’s useless to say anything now. You will end up o be mine after all.”

Just as the Nine-heavens Maiden was about to say something, a miraculous change occurred in her body. Nine beams of Saint Light shot out from her body and turned into nine faint figures surrounding her. Their appearances were the same as the Nine-heavens Maiden.

There was a drop of tear within each of the nine faint figures. Each was emitting a different colored Saint Light.

“Navagraha’s Tears!”

Akash’s eyes suddenly lit up.

After all, this was the reason he had entered Kunlun.

At this moment, the Saint Light emitted by the nine drops of divine tears became brighter and brighter. They resonated with each other and released a ball of light that entered the Nine-heavens Maiden’body.

Instantly, the dim skin of the Nine-heavens Maiden regained its luster. Every inch of her skin was glowing with divine light.

“Never did I see this coming at this time. I have finally attained the cultivation realm that Her Highness mentioned,” the Nine-heavens Maiden could not help but sigh.

All the entities of the Nine-heavens Maiden—Divine Scripture Maiden Nalan Danqing, Magical Hand Maiden Qing Mo, Warrior Saint Wan Canglan, and Destiny Maiden Xian Feizi—were extraordinary maidens. Every single of them had incredible talents.

However, back then, when the nine of them had merged into a single entity, the Nine-heavens Maiden, they had failed to reach the realm they had expected.

The Nine-heavens Maiden had asked Empress Chi Yao the reason.

Empress Chi Yao had explained detailly to them. According to her, the nine of them were nine separate individuals, each with their own will. Hence, it was difficult for them to connect with each other truly. Moreover, since there were differences in their strength, they would repel each other. Hence, it was difficult for them to merge fully.

To overcome this, the nine maidens needed time to get used to each other. They needed to go through countless trials and tribulations before they could completely fuse with each other. When they succeed, they could perfectly display the powers they possessed and even achieve a significant improvement on their individual cultivation base.

Only then could they become the real Nine-heavens Maiden, and their future accomplishments would be even higher than the empress.

It was precise because of this that the nine of them had been trying their best to stay as a single entity—the Nine-heavens Maiden—for a long period. By doing so, they could speed up the process of fusing with each other. Now, under immense pressure, their minds and wills were finally completely integrated.

Whoosh!
The nine faint figures merged into the Nine-heavens Maiden once again.

With no hesitation, the Nine-heavens Maiden immediately mobilized her remaining strength and injected it into *Sacred Confucian Tome*. With all her might, she shot out the tome.
“At this point, you still want to continue your struggle? Restrain!”

Akash shook his head. With a wave of his hand, he sent out a Taiji Disposition Diagram.

The Taiji Disposition Diagram slowly revolved, releasing Yin and Yang Qi, enveloping *Sacred Confucian Tome*.
Rumble
Sacred Confucian Tome flipped. An illusory shadow of an ancient Saint walked out from the book. The white beard on his chin slashed out like a heavenly blade.

The force it carried was destructive. It slashed through the Taiji Disposition Diagram and landed on Akash's body.

Shink!
Half of Akash's body was sliced off. The Divine Mark on his skin was broken, and Saint Blood splattered everywhere. His Saint Bones were shattered, and his internal organs were exposed. He was in a miserable state as he screamed in pain.

"Impossible! You should not have any strength left. How did you injure me so easily?" Akash swallowed a healing pill as he retreated.

The current Nine-heavens Maiden was too terrifying. Akash did not seem to be able to retaliate in front of her.

'Could it be that she has fully mastered the power of Navagraha's Tears?'

Ptui!
The Nine-heavens Maiden spat out a large mouthful of blood as she swayed. After all, she was at the end of her tether.

"The situation isn't good. Let's restrain the Nine-heavens Maiden together. Kill her if necessary."

The five leaders from the major Macroworlds supporting Heavenly Realm attacked at the same time. Each of them took out a Regal Artifact and crushed the illusory shadow of the ancient Saint above *Sacred Confucian Tome.*
If the Nine-heavens Maiden were in her best state, she would not have been afraid of them.

However, she was too weak. As a result, she was restrained by the five Regal Artifacts. She could not even open *Sacred Confucian Tome*. Nevertheless, she did not fall. She supported her posture with her Saint Sword.
"Since Zhang Ruochen is the unbreakable backbone of Kunlun, I shall be the last breath of Kunlun! I will never submit. I will never give up. I will die with no regrets." Divine Scripture Maiden held her sword with one hand and *Sacred Confucian Tome* with the other. The Saint light on her got dimmer and dimmer. Her skin cracked inch by inch.
When the Imperial Court elites saw this, their eyes were filled with sadness and despair.

In the end, they could not escape the fate of being annihilated. From now on, Central Imperial Court would no longer exist.

They were resentful and sad for such an outcome. Without powers, they could only be slaughtered by others.

Mastodon-Devouring Rabbit had returned to its original form. Its body was full of cracks. It struggled and shouted, “Master Zhang, we can’t hold on anymore. If you can’t reach us, we will die for sure.

“I don’t want to die yet… There are still many things I haven’t tasted. Before I die, at least let me taste those wings of a Supreme-Saint-level Angel…”

Rumble
The battle outside Yuanchu Palace became even more intense.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Yuanchu Palace.

As soon as he saw Chi Kongyue, Nine Heavens Fairy, and the others who were heavily injured and weak, an even more terrifying murderous aura burst out from him.

He activated Yinyang Sword Formation and launched an unparalleled sword strike.

Boom!
The Sword Light hit Archangel Michael and sent him flying, leaving a bone-deep bloody scar on his body.

“Where do you think you are going!”

Before Zhang Ruochen could rush to Yuanchu Palace, the High-Saint Array Masters launched an attack, sending a wave of Saint-level force to block his way.

The next moment, Archangel Michael flew back and laughed. “Zhang Ruochen, your state of mind is finally disrupted. You shall meet your doom here.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were cold. The lockdown imposed on the forces of Time and Dimension had greatly affected his strength.

Whoosh!
He sent another sword strike. For the 74th time, Archangel Michael was sent flying. The severely injured Archangel was drenched in blood, covered in sword wounds.

However, Archangel Michael suppressed his injuries with his strong will. He flew back again, his mouth filled with a fresh bloodstain. “Let’s fight. My willpower isn’t weaker than yours. Let’s see who will die first.”

Yin Yuanchen, Saint Lord Pravus, and the two High-Saint Array Masters also attacked Zhang Ruochen continuously. They struck him head-on, risking their lives to restrain him.

There was a madness on Yin Yuanchen’s face. “Having to watch your loved ones lying in the pool of blood yet unable to save them, you must be in despair now. Serve you right for being the enemy of Heavenly Realm!

“But you don’t have to worry. They will die, and you won’t live either. You will meet them soon.”

As he spoke, Yin Yuanchen waved the divine sword in his hand again. He condensed a large amount of divine force of Death, trying to slash Zhang Ruochen.

After fusing with the divine corpse, his defense was powerful. He was not afraid of Zhang Ruochen at all.

Heavenly Realm faction had the absolute advantage. Although they could not trounce Zhang Ruochen, they could slowly drain his energy.

A man’s energy was limited. Zhang Ruochen could not maintain his best state forever.

When he became weak, they could finally kill him.

Zhang Ruochen’s state of mind would become unsteady, especially when he was worried about Chi Kongyue, Nine-heavens Maiden, and the others. And eventually, he would expose his weaknesses.

Things were headed in the direction as Heavenly Realm faction had planned.

Zhang Ruochen’s state of mind was indeed unstable. He couldn’t keep calm.

He had used all kinds of methods, including all Artifacts, but he could not break free. His movement was restrained.

“Do you know what is a ‘cornered beast fight’? You’re the cornered beast now.” Saint Lord Pravus smiled.

“Fane of Time and Fane of Dimension, if I survive this battle, I’ll definitely make you pay for this!” Zhang Ruochen’s murderous aura soared.

What he wanted to do the most now was to destroy the two Fanes restraining his strength.

No. Not just that.

He wanted to slaughter all the cultivators of the Heavenly Realm faction.

All the Heavenly World faction elites smiled. Zhang Ruochen’s fate was sealed. There was no way he could turn the tide.

Rumble
At this moment, a terrifying aura suddenly appeared above everyone’s heads.

“What energy is this? What a powerful aura.”

The elites from Heavenly Realm faction all looked up.

The sky turned dark and became pitch-black.

A majestic altar appeared in the sky, emitting a Saint light that dispersed the darkness. It was like a blazing sun that descended along with monstrous power at high speed.

On the altar stood dozens of Saints. They looked down and said in unison, “Your Highness, Guardian Dragon Pavilion is here to help you slaughter your enemies! ”

“Your Highness, Guardian Dragon Pavilion is here to help you slaughter your enemies! ”

…

The altar was 990 feet tall. It emitted Saint light as bright as white jade. Complicated patterns were carved on the altar’s surface, and Saint Blood flowed on the patterns.

All the members of Guardian Dragon Pavilion, including Han Qiu and Shangguan Que, stood in various positions on the altar in some order or sequence,

Han Qiu said, “Heavenly Realm faction cultivators, you have committed a grave sin for trying to kill His Highness! Today, all of you will die!”

Le was also a member of Guardian Dragon Pavilion. When he learned of the Heavenly Realm faction’s actions, he immediately notified Guardian Dragon Pavilion. Because of this, Guardian Dragon Pavilion was able to gather in time and rush to Ziwei Palace.

The Altar of Saints was made from the entire Central Shengming Empire’s treasure. It collected the Saint Souls of countless Saints who had died in Kunlun.

At this time, all of the Saint Souls flew out. These souls were not faint at all; they were solid. They looked no different from real living Saints.

Their forms were very similar to Ghost Lords.

They were in an unusual state. They were not humans, nor were they ghosts.

Guardian Dragon Pavilion called them “Rogue Saints”.

Rogue Saints practiced a Saint Path left behind by Emperor Ming. Although it was a different Saint Path, they could become Supreme Saints or even divine-level elites in the future.

This path was known as the “Path of Azure”. It was created by Bi Luozi, one of the greatest elites of Kunlun in the middle ancient time.

To be exact, Bi Luozi had taken this Path and eventually become a powerful deity as famous as Saint Monk Xumi and Lord Wentian. His fame had spread across myriad of Macroworlds.

As for how the “Path of Azure” fell into the hands of Emperor Ming, it was unknown.

The number of Rogue Saints was huge, and they filled the Altar of Saints.

The Altar of Saints crushed down, and a thunder-like sound erupted.

Boom!
Fane of Time and Fane of Dimension hovering in the sky were the first to be crushed by the altar.

The disciples sitting cross-legged in the two Fanes were crushed into meat paste before they could react. Their death was brutal.

“Arghhhh…”

Dongfang Qingyu let out a miserable cry before his body exploded, turning into a cloud of blood mist.

“You guys are just in time. Kill all the cultivators of Heavenly Realm faction. Spare no one!”

Without the restraints imposed by the two Fanes, Zhang Ruochen’s morale rose. Finally, he could use the power of Time and Dimension again.

He activated the Precepts of Time and Dimension at the same time. They merged with the mysterious sword hilt from the sword tomb. Then, with a swung, he launched a strike.

“Not good.”

Archangel Michael’s pupils constricted.

It was already too late to dodge.

Archangel Michael blocked Zhang Ruochen’s way with Sword of Judgment. At the same time, he released his own majestic Saint Qi, trying his best to build up layers of defense.

CLANG!
Sword of Judgment was hit away. All the defenses were broken through in an instant as if they were as fragile as a paper.

At the critical moment, Archangel Michael blocked most of the attack by using the twelve halos of the twelve Angels of Vengeance.

The twelve halos shattered and turned into corpses on the ground. Blood rained down from the sky, and the air was burning with sizzling sounds.

The twelve Angels of Vengeance were all dead.

Archangel Michael survived, but he was severely injured. He was almost split in half, and the platinum wings on his back were all twisted into bloody mud by the Sword Qi.

Zhang Ruochen ignored Archangel Michael. He roared and rushed to Yuanchu Palace.

Everything happened in a flash. The cultivators of the Heavenly Realm faction in Yuanchu Palace did not even have time to react.

‘What happened?’

As soon as they saw Zhang Ruochen coming, their blood froze. They wanted to fly away immediately.

“Spare my life!”

Akash begged for mercy.

“Die!”

Before he could finish, Zhang Ruochen’s divine sword had already cut off Akash’s head.

Zhang Ruochen’s extreme murderous aura entered Akash’s body and quickly destroyed his lifeforce and Saint Soul.

“I’m the descendant of Navagraha. How can—”

Akash’s consciousness died away. He was filled with resentment.

“Navagraha doesn’t have a descendant like you.”

Zhang Ruochen smashed Akash’s head into pieces with his palm. He was annoyed by just looking at Akash’s face.

The five leaders of Heavenly Realm faction were scared out of their wits. They quickly took back the five Regal Artifact that they were using to restrain *Sacred Confucian Tome* and shifted their target to Zhang Ruochen instead.
Zhang Ruochen held two swords with both hands. Ancient Abyssal Blade and Blood Dripper revolved endlessly. The five Regal Artifacts were all broken into pieces of scrap metal.

He walked step by step.

He launched a sword strike every time he took a step.

By the time Zhang Ruochen arrived in front of the Nine-heavens Maiden after taking five steps forward, all the five leaders of the Heavenly Realm faction were cut in half. Their bodies were still flying in the air.

THUD! THUD!
It was not until Zhang Ruochen helped the Nine-heavens Maiden to her feet that the five corpses fell to the ground one after another. The five bloody bodies scattering on the patterned floor in the palace was a terrible sight to see.

“Heal well. Leave the rest to me. Don’t worry. I’ll kill them all.” Zhang Ruochen patted the Nine-heavens Maiden’s hands filled with cracks and injected the Spring of Life into her.

Chapter 2197: Moon Goddess Sensing Something
In Yuanchu Palace, all the powerful figures of Imperial Court looked at Zhang Ruochen with excitement and even reverence.

In their eyes, Zhang Ruochen was like a wargod who had descended, standing tall and imposing.

After injecting a large amount of the Spring of Life into Divine Scripture Maiden’s body, Zhang Ruochen came to Chi Kongyue’s side.

When Zhang Ruochen saw Chi Kongyue in a miserably weak state, his heart ached. The murderous aura within him grew stronger and stronger. The faction of Heavenly Realm had to pay the price.

“Father.”

Chi Kongyue cried, her eyes teary.

As Zhang Ruochen injected the Spring of Life into Chi Kongyue’s body, he said, “Don’t worry. Don’t be afraid. Father won’t let go of anyone who wants to hurt you.”

“I’m not afraid.”Chi Kongyue shook her head.

With the nourishment of the Spring of Life, Chi Kongyue’s life essence was quickly replenished. Her gray hair turned back to dark.

With the protection of Demon Ape, Chi Kongyue did not suffer any severe injuries. She had become miserably weak because she had burned her lifeforce and Saint blood.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes swept over the other cultivators present.

Although he did not have a good relationship with Kunlun`s Central Imperial Court, he admired the courage and integrity these people had displayed. They were willing to fight against the elites of Heavenly Realm faction to death.

As long as such cultivators existed, there would be hope for Kunlun.

Whoosh —

With a wave of his hand, Zhang Ruochen took out a high amount of Spring of Life. It showered the gray-haired cultivators and entered their bodies.

The eyes of some of the powerful figures of Imperial Court were filled with mixed feelings; there was shame, bitterness, and grief.

Like Wang Shiqi, they had once seen Zhang Ruochen as a great threat, a rebel, and a renegade. They had recommended to Empress Chi Yao to get rid of Zhang Ruochen.

Later, when Zhang Ruochen left Kunlun, many people had regarded him as a traitor.

But now, Zhang Ruochen had returned to save them, regardless of their past feuds. Such magnanimity he had shown made them feel ashamed.

When Zhang Ruochen saved the elites of Imperial Court, those powerful figures of Heavenly Realm faction were already in a mess.

The Altar of Saints hovered above the Heaven Lake like a blazing sun, releasing released mighty Saint aura, imposing lockdown on the heaven and earth. There was no way out for Heavenly Realm faction elites.

Dragging his injured body, Archangel Michael quickly regrouped with the other elites. His expression became solemn and unsightly.

Who would have thought that Kunlun cultivators would have such a powerful trick up their sleeves?

“Break the altar,” Archangel Michael said in a deep voice.

Only by breaking the Altar of Saints that was restraining them, the lockdown on this place would disappear, and they could regain control of the situation.

All the powerful figures of Heavenly Realm faction understood this. Therefore, they attacked without hesitation. Beams of Saint light shot into the sky and attacked the altar.

All attacks launched through various methods—including sacred artifacts, Saint Techniques, and talismans—converged into a torrent.

“It’s a wishful thinking to break the restraint from the altar.” Han Qiu smiled coldly. There was cruelty in her beautiful eyes.

Guardian Dragon Pavilion elites and the Rogue Saints launched attacks at the same time and channeled their power into the Altar of Saints.

Whoosh–

The altar shone brightly and the Saint Aura it emitted became more and more vast. The patterns on its surface appeared clearly and interweaved into a net that covered the heaven and earth.

Many terrifying lightning bolts shot out from the altar. Each bolt was powerful enough to destroy a world.

BOOM!

The attacks of the Saints from Heavenly Realm were blocked by the lightning bolts and vanished. Many sacred artifacts were reduced into pieces.

The destructive force continued to crash down.

The entire realm was shaking.

The expression of Archangel Michael changed drastically as he roared, “Defend!”

A top Saint King started to execute defensive techniques. Some activated the Divine Marks on their skin, some used their Regal Artifacts to protect theimselves, and some stuck talismans on themselves.

KABOOM!

Crack!

The defensive talismans on some cultivators' bodies shattered as they screamed in pain. Their bodies cracked like porcelain and then shattered into shards of red crystal.

Although the elites of the Heavenly Realm faction tried their best to resist, some of them still got hit and died.

The power of the Altar of Saints was too magnificent!

The cultivators of the Heavenly Realm faction who were still alive were all scared out of their wits. The situation was even worse than they had expected.

They could not destroy the altar. This meant not only did they lose the advantage, they were also in danger. They could not even flee the Heaven Lake easily.

The situation was getting worse. Without the restraints imposed by the two Fanes, Zhang Ruochen could use his Time and Space techniques as he pleased. His strength would surge upward. Who could counter him?

If things went wrong, they could get wiped out.

Without them knowing, their state of mind began to undergo changes.

Thud, thud, thud

Footsteps sounded.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of Yuanchu Palace. Ancient Abyssal Blade and Blood Dripper was revolving around him as he stepped on the stairway covered in bloodstains. Both swords were glowing with terrifying sword rays, cutting the space, leaving pitch-black Dimensional Rifts.

Zhang Ruochen's posture was straight as he was standing tall like a mountain. He spoke in a cold tone, "Back then, when you were trying to harm me, I never hated you because we are serving different sides, following orders from our respective superiors. It was a conflict passed down by our predecessors. Neither I nor you have a choice. The feuds between us have long been destined.

"However, you've crossed the line by hurting my family and friends. Blood for blood, I shall spare none of you. There's only one word for you all: Die!"

Every single word he uttered sounded like a thunder blast.

Each was loud and clear.

“Die!”

“Die!”

…

On the Altar of Saints, Guardian Dragon Pavilion’s members also shouted the same word, their morale soaring.

Most of the members of Empyrean Pavilion and Terrestrial Pavilion had gathered once they were summoned.

Empyrean Pavilion was made up of human cultivators.

Terrestrial Pavilion, on the other hand, was made up of Savage Beasts.

Many years ago, most of the members of the two pavilions were Saints. Now, all of them had attained Saint Kinghood.

The person who controlled the altar was the master of Empyrean Pavilion, Yan Liren.

Of course, this Yan Liren was only a Cocoon Body.

Yan Liren’s true body was in Endless Abyss. He had become a Supreme Saint. In other words, He could no show himself at Kunlun’s Battlefield of Merits which was monitored by Emissaries Vigilant.

Even though it was just a Cocoon Body, the strength that Yan Liren possessed was still powerful enough to be ranked at first-tier below Supreme Sainthood.

One must admit that Blood Empress indeed had some amazing skill. She could turn water into wine.

“Work together with His Highness. Kill all the cultivators from the Heavenly Realm faction. Spare none of them,” said Yan Liren.

The Altar of Saints started to rotate, and soon after, a series of attack launched.

Every attack, including fire blast, thunder strike, and windstorm attack, was powerful. Each was strong enough to kill a Nine-Step Saint King.

The fire took a human form, and the thunder was in the form of a palace building. The windstorm were like a dragon or python.

RAWWWRRR!

Emperor Yi's Evil Spirit rushed out of Heaven Lake and opened its bloody mouth, swallowing the nearest Heavenly Realm cultivator in one gulp.

It had drunk a large amount of the Spring of Life, and its recovery ability was greatest than ever.

Le appeared on the surface of the water with an iron sword in his hand, water dripping from his long hair. His eyes were icy cold as he charged into the cultivators of the heavenly Realm.

He was indeed severely injured just now, but Life-Death Seal had already formed in his body. His life was tenacious. The forces of Life and Death within him were mutually convertible.

The Qi of Life could be converted into the Qi of Death.

The Qi of Death could also be converted into the Qi of Life.

It was an endless circle of life.

It was more difficult to kill him than to kill a Supreme Saint who reached Hundred-Shackle Realm.

"Come here."

Zhang Ruochen reached out a hand and grabbed in the air.

A very weak Saint Soul flew out of the Heaven Lake and fell into his hand.

This Saint Soul belonged to Dongfang Qingyu. Although his body had been shattered by the impact from the Altar of Saints, his Saint Soul had escaped. He had wanted to hide in the Heaven Lake. Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen had discovered him.

Dongfang Qingyu's Saint Soul was terrified. His mind was shrouded in the shadow of death.

"I'm one of the Ten Divine Scions of the Fane of Truth. You can't—"Dongfang Qingyu's voice trembled.

“Well, there’s nothing I can’t do to you.”

Before Dongfang Qingyu could finish his words, Zhang Ruochen squeezed his Saint Soul into pieces.

After killing Dongfang Qingyu, Zhang Ruochen suddenly felt there was a portion of Canon of Truth entered his body.

As one of the Ten Divine Scions of the Fane of Truth, Dongfang Qingyu was indeed very talented in Path of truth. Otherwise, he would not have been able to cross the ninth region of the Sea of Truth.

He had a total of 0.09 percent of Canon of Truth, which was not a small number.

After all, the total of Canon of Truth was a constant “One”. Even if he could get 0.01 percent of it, it was very rare.

Although there were a large number of elites from Heavenly Realm faction and leaders from different Macroworlds present, very few of them held the Canon of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen’s Canon of Truth had reached 58-thousandth. He was one step closer to becoming the Envoy of Truth.

Swoosh

Blood Dripper and Ancient Abyssal Blade spun rapidly. Countless streaks of Sword Qi flew out and pierced through the cultivators of Heavenly Realm faction. None of their defenses could withstand it.

Perhaps they could block the first streak of Sword Qi, but when the second and third hit the same spot, there was no way they could block it even if they had Divine Marks with them.

This time, Heavenly Realm Faction had got on Zhang Ruochen’s nerve; they had overstepped his bounds. They could pay with their blood.

Did they really think that Zhang Ruochen would not dare to destroy their generation?

They were both Saint Kings of the ninth step, but their strengths were worlds apart.

Faced with Zhang Ruochen's attack, all the cultivators of the Heavenly World sect panicked. They could not form an effective counterattack. Gradually, they lost the will to fight. They just wanted to run away.

"Saint Lord Pravus, take my kick."

Zhang Ruochen's legs burned. He released a cloud of fire. It exploded with divine might. He descended from the sky and stomped on Saint Lord Pravus.

Saint Lord Pravus looked up and saw a foot-shaped cloud of fire pressing down.

He mobilized all his strength and pressed his hands into the sky. He unleashed a high-level Saint Technique. It was a palm strike.

Realm Palm!

Boom

The power of Yanshen's Leg collided with Realm Palm.

Saint Lord Pravus's Supreme-Saint bones creaked as if they were about to be crushed. He roared in his heart, 'Impossible, impossible. I was a Supreme Saint, a Supreme Saint at Hundred-Shackle Realm. How can I lose to a Saint King?'

BOOM!

Zhang Ruochen stomped his foot for the second time. Countless Divine Marks interweaved on his leg.

When the third stomp landed, Saint Lord Pravus's Realm Palm was broken. The pressure exerted by the divine force above him was immense, forcing him to kneel on one knee. He could only try his best to hold out against it.

"A Descender who had broken his Shackles really can take beating."

Zhang Ruochen took out Secret Tome of Time and Space and flipped to a page. His fingers moved on the page like playing a zither. Every time he moved, a stream of Time force flew out and cut Saint Lord Pravus.

Each stream of Time force would cut off 500 years of life.

After three streams of Time force, Saint Lord Pravus aged rapidly. He quickly burned his Saint blood, break through the restraint from Yanshen's Leg, and escape.

"You managed to escapre even after losing 1,500 years of life. You got some skill." Zhang Ruochen was slightly surprised.

At this time, Heavenly Realm faction had suffered heavy casualties. Saint King's bones scattered everywhere; Saint blood flowed and dyed the Heaven Lake and oasis red.

"Demon… great demon… Zhang Ruochen… you're not a human, you're a demon…"

A beautiful female Angel's voice trembled as she stumbled backward.

Her blue eyes were filled with fear.

Zhang Ruochen walked over step by step. He did not show any mercy at all. He said indifferently, "Demon? Isn't what you did in Kunlun also a demon's act? Yet you call me a demon? Fine, as you wish, I'll be a demon, a great one!"

Ancient Abyssal Blade slashed the female angel. A bloody line appeared on her pure and beautiful face. Her graceful body split into two, and she died.

"Why can't I kill Zhang Ruochen?" Yin Yuanchen's eyes were popping out in anger.

He had finally gotten the chance to prove himself. Never did he expect this outcome.

Zhang Ruochen was too powerful. Even if he doubled his strength, he would not be able harm Zhang Ruochen abit.

"I can't wait any longer. I have to do this even if I get punished later."

Seeing that there was no way out, Archangel Michael gritted his teeth and took out a palm-sized yellow gourd. It looked very inconspicuous.

Driven by Saint Qi, the yellow gourd flew into the air and gave off a terrifying destructive aura.

Zhang Ruochen's expression turned grim. He quickly threw out a Regal Artifact he had taken from the battlefield to block the incoming force. Then he dodged it by executing Great Dimensional Shift.

Boom!

The yellow gourd exploded, releasing destructive power.

The Regal Artifact instantly turned to dust.

At the same time, a large area of space shattered, revealing a 30-foot-wide Dimensional Hole. It was pitch-black. On the other side of the hole was the void.

"That was close. Never did I expect Michael would have such trump card. No, something is not right. he did not target me." Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes and turned his gaze at the survivors of the Heavenly Realm faction.

Michael glared at Zhang Ruochen with hatred. He shouted at his comrades, "Quick, run into the void."

Without a moment's hesitation, the remaining hundred or so powerful figures of the Heavenly Realm faction rushed toward the Dimensional Hole as fast as they could.

"Have the Saint Kings of the Heavenly Realm faction gone mad? Don't they know the void is a dead end?" Han Qiu chuckled on the Altar of Saints.

Inside the void was extremely dangerous. It could swallow everything. Even deities could not stay there for long.

Zhang Ruochen frowned and thought for a moment. Then he used Secret Tome of Time and Space to protect himself and chased after them.

"You won't be able to run from me."

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his Precepts of Dimension and Swordsmanship to Ancient Abyssal Blade and launched out a sword strike.

Crystal Flower Buds appeared one after another and surrounded the saint kings of the sects in heaven who were running away.

With a thought, all the flower buds bloomed in an instant. It was magnificent.

Countless sword Qi that combined the power of space burst out and covered the void.

BOOM!

Their bodies exploded and were cut into pieces by the sword Qi.

“No!”

Saint Lord Pravus looked back and saw Zhang Ruochen rushing toward him. He let out a desperate roar.

He had already suffered serious injuries. With bad luck, he had been eroded by the power of nothingness when he entered the void. At this moment, Zhang Ruochen caught up with him and pierced his back with his sword.

His extremely powerful physical body disintegrated in an instant and turned into nothingness.

This fallen state cultivator in the hundred-flail realm was not invincible on the Battlefield of Meritss after all. He was not even left with a corpse.

After entering the void, Zhang Ruochen’s advantage was even greater. In the blink of an eye, more than half of the Saint King cultivators from Heavenly Realm faction were killed.

Archangel Michael was miserable. His body was no longer there. Only his head was still flying.

Although Yin Yuanchen had been eroded by the power of nothingness, he could still resist for the time being with the protection of the God’s corpse. However, when he saw Zhang Ruochen falling in his direction, his face turned extremely ugly.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to kill him, he suddenly felt a chill run down his spine.

He looked up..

A streak of divine light cut through the dark and deep void and flew straight toward him like a meteor.

“It’s… It’s the power of a deity. There’s a deity hiding in this void where Kunlun is. He wants to kill me. How could this happen? Which God is it?”

The power of a deity was invincible.

Zhang Ruochen's expression changed again and again. He quickly took out the divine messenger staff given by Moon Goddess and blocked it.

Whoosh

The Divine Messenger staff was activated by the impact of the divine light. It passed through space and the Precepts of Heaven and earth. It connected to Mount Yueshen in Celestial Court and borrowed the power of Moon Goddess.

A powerful divine power was released from the Divine Messenger staff and shattered the divine light.

"This is bad! It's impossible for the God to enter the void at this time. In other words, the God has been in the void for a long time."

"Such a risk must mean something big."

Zhang Ruochen did not dare to stay for a moment. After all, the divine messenger staff could only borrow a small part of the power of Moon Goddess. Who knew how powerful the god hidden in the void was?

If the divine messenger staff could not resist it, he would die here.

Zhang Ruochen immediately left the void as fast as he could.

He looked back and saw that the survivors of the Heavenly Realm faction had disappeared without a trace. In his field of vision, he found an ancient stone bridge that stretched across the void.

"Is that the Void Chaos Bridge?"Zhang Ruochen was even more shocked.

The so-called "Void Chaos Bridge"was a bridge that could exist in the void. It could connect two different spatial coordinates. It was even more secretive than a spatial transmission array, and even gods could not detect it.

However, it was extremely difficult to set up the Void Chaos Bridge. It required a lot of precious materials. The longer the span of the bridge, the more materials needed.

Even if it was only a mile long, the resources needed were enough to make a deity's heart ache.

Why is there a bridge of nothingness? Where are the two spatial coordinates? Is It related to the peach tree? Zhang Ruochen thought.

..

The void.

An extremely tall deity opened his palm and looked down at Yin Yuanchen and the others. His eyes were filled with anger.

“A bunch of trash. You’ve done more than you can do. Now, Moon Goddess must have sensed my aura. All of my plans will be exposed. What’s the point of having you?”

Hearing the god’s rebuke, Yin Yuanchen and the others were all trembling, but they did not dare to retort.

If they could speak, they would say that Zhang Ruochen’s strength could not be described as a saint king. He was more terrifying than many Supreme Saints. How could they fight?

..

Celestial Court, Ziluo Heaven region.

Mount Yueshen.

Moon Goddess stood in the Guanghan Palace. She looked down at the mountains and rivers beneath her feet, comprehending the mysteries of Heaven and earth. Her quiet appearance was like a beautiful painting.

Suddenly, she sensed something. Her eyebrows furrowed slightly. “Why would a deity attack Zhang Ruochen? It seems to be the aura of TrueGod Xuanyi of Heavenly Realm.”

“Why does this old fox show up in the void near Kunlun?”

Zhang Ruochen would not enter the void for no reason. The probability of encountering a deity was very low.

But now, not only had he encountered a deity, that deity had even tried to harm him. Something was off about this. Something big must have happened.

Chapter 2198: Assembly of Gods

Beside the Heaven Lake, the Staff of the Divine Envoy in Zhang Ruochen's hand suddenly shone with cold divine light. The next moment, Moon Goddess's beautiful figure appeared out of thin air.

"Greetings, Moon Goddess."

Zhang Ruochen bowed.

When he had noticed something unusual in the void, he was about to report it to Moon Goddess. He did not expect Moon Goddess would cast a projection of herself.

Moon Goddess looked at the Dimensional Hole that was under restoration. Even though she was looking at it through her projection that did not carry any divine power, she was still far discerning than Zhang Ruochen's.

"There's more than one deity hiding in the void near Kunlun. Their aurae are all very strong. What a big formation. Are they trying to repeat what happened 100,000 years ago?" Moon Goddess said softly.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen was struck by her words. The situation was obviously more serious than he had imagined.

Looking around, Moon Goddess glanced at the blood-filled Heaven Lake and oasis and asked, "What happened?"

"Heavenly Realm faction attacked Ziwei Palace. They tried to kill me and snatch Saturn Peach Tree," Zhang Ruochen replied.

Moon Goddess stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, "From what I see, they seems to have suffer greater casualties. How many cultivators of Heavenly Realm faction have you killed?"

"There are at least hundreds of them. All of them are top Saint King elites. It's a pity that Michael and Yin Yuanchen escaped. They fled into the void, and a deity saved them." There was a hint of regret flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

Among all the powerful figures from Heavenly Realm faction, the ones he wanted to kill the most were Archangel Michael and Yin Yuanchen. They were the real culprits. If he did not kill them, he would not be able to let go of his hatred.

Moon Goddess could figure that the cultivators who had attacked Ziwei Palace must be the top elites of Heavenly Realm faction. Most of them had great potential to attain Supreme Sainthood or even godhood.

Heavenly Realm and its allies must be heartbroken over such heavy losses.

Moon Goddess said, “The one who tried to attack you was TrueGod Xuanyi of Heavenly Realm. He’s the ancestor of the Yin family. You’re lucky to escape from him.”

A cold light flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. He remembered the name ‘TrueGod Xuanyi’.

Come to think of it, TrueGod Xuanyi was likely linked to Heavenly Realm’s plot against Kunlun 100,000 years. Was his marriage with the daughter of Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations also part of the plan?’

Moon Goddess turned her gaze to the Altar of Saints. Seeing the Rogue Saints, she said, “The ‘Path of Azure’ that Bi Luozi created had been lost for 100,000 years. Now, it has returned. Could it be Kunlun’s environment is suitable for cultivation of Rogue Saints?”

Moon Goddess had preached in Kunlun before. Hence, she was familiar with the deities of Kunlun, including the Bi Luozi, who was rather different from others.

She also knew that practicing the ‘Path of Azure’ would require some special conditions. Therefore, after the Middle Ages, Rogue Saints were no longer visible in Kunlun. No one even knew about their existence.

Then, Moon Goddess looked at Zhang Ruochen and said, “The two dimensional coordinates that the Voidbridge of Chaos are connecting are located outside and inside Central Imperial City. It’s likely a means to transport Infernal Court’s army.”

“I can’t interfere with the affairs of Kunlun. You have to handle them. As for the deities outside Kunlun, you don’t have to worry about them.”

With that, Moon Goddess disappeared.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes narrowed. The dimensional coordinates of the Voidbridge of Chaos in the Imperial City should be related to Saturn Peach Tree

Just as he had expected, Infernal Court had a role in this. The situation at the place where Saturn Peach Tree was must be worse than the situation at Ziwei Palace.

“The space where Saturn Peach Tree is is very special. We can only reach it through the dimensional teleportation array of Rainbow Pavilion. The Army of Infernal Court must have rushed to Rainbow Pavilion. We must stop them, ” the Nine-heavens Maiden’s anxious voice rang behind Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was no stranger to Rainbow Pavilion. Many years ago, Divine Scripture Maiden had asked him to meet there. It was a library with countless books.

“Go to Rainbow Pavilion immediately,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Nine-heavens Maiden looked straight at Zhang Ruochen and said, “I’ll go with you.”

“Father, I want to go too. I also want to fight for Kunlun.”Chi Kongyue walked forward with a determined look.

“We also want to go with you. Even if we die in battle, we won’t complain. Please help us, Prince of the Eastern Region.”

The cultivators of Kunlun’s Central Imperial Court spoke one after another with a firm attitude.

This battle was related to the fate of Kunlun. If they could not protect Saturn Peach Tree, it would be meaningless for them to live.

Seeing the determined looks in everyone’s eyes, Zhang Ruochen knew that it would be useless even if he tried to stop them.

Yan Liren stood at the top of the Altar of Saints and said in a clear voice, “Guardian Dragon Pavilion is at the command of Your Highness.”

The members of Guardian Dragon Pavilion shouted in unison, “We are at the command of Your Highness.”

Le had also returned to his position and occupied an important position on the altar.

“Junior, I will fight side by side you.”

“Bro, I’ll fight side by side you.”

“Bro, me too, I will fight side by side you with you.”

Three figures flew down from the altar and appeared beside Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were fixed on the three people. He looked surprised and then excited and eager.

He had never thought that the three people who had died would have a chance to meet again.

The trio was Hong Ya, the eldest disciple of Emperor Ming; Chen Daogu, the second disciple; and Lu Yuanzhi, the sixth disciple. They had all died a long time ago, but now they had reappeared in Kunlun.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen could see that Hong Ya, Chen Daogu, and Lu Yuanzhi were no longer mortals.

According to Moon Goddess, they must have practiced the “Path of Azure” founded by the legendary Bi Luozi, but he could not understand it at the moment.

“I am willing to fight with Your Highness.”

Hundreds of figures jumped down from the Altar of Saints and knelt down on one knee to Zhang Ruochen.

“Elder Liu, Elder Yuan, Bloodyrobe Heavenly Lord, …” No matter how steady his state of mind was, Zhang Ruochen could not help but feel a stir of emotions upon seeing the familiar faces.

The people kneeling in front of him were all former officials of Shengming Central Empire. Almost all of them had died in the battle against Chiqing Central Empire.

Seeing them was like seeing the once-prosperous Shengming Central Empire.

No matter the reason, as long as they could survive, it was undoubtedly something to be happy about.

“Isn’t that the famous Sword Saint Sevenkill from the Black Market 500 years ago? Rumor has it that he was killed by a headmaster of the Eastern Region Saint Academy. How could he appear here?”

“Didn’t Saint DarkWind die of old age 100 years ago?”

“That’s… Master Witherheart of Myriad Buddha Sect. He passed away 600 years ago and everyone knew about it. How is this possible…”

..

Looking at the figures on the Altar of Saints, the cultivators of Kunlun’s Central Imperial Court could no longer remain calm.

Before Kunlun recovered, the cultivation conditions were extremely poor. It was extremely difficult to advance to Sainthood.

Because of this, almost every Saint in Kunlun came with great fame. Once they died, it was enough to cause a commotion at the entire Kunlun.

But now, the Saints and Saint Kings who had died a long time ago reappeared. It was like a dream. It was really hard to understand.

The Nine-heavens Maiden’s beautiful eyes also showed a strange look. However, the next moment, she had an epiphany. Apparently, she managed to put two and two together and figured out something.

Zhang Ruochen had too many things to say to his old comrades—Hong Ya, Chen Daogu, and the others—but now was obviously not a good time. The situation at Rainbow Pavilion was critical, and there was no time to delay.

“Senior, let’s go fight against some cultivators of Infernal Court first and destroy their plots. I hope we can win and drink to our heart’s content when we celebrate,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Hong Ya, who had a head full of bloody red hair, laughed and said, “Well, I’ve been staying low for many years. Let’s have a big fight today. My knife is still sharp.”

Without delay, Zhang Ruochen waved his hand and put away the most precious treasures scattered in Ziwei Palace. Then, he ascended to the Altar of Saints.

The cultivators of Kunlun’s Central Imperial Court followed closely behind.

With the nourishment of the Spring of Life, the cultivators of Kunlun's Central Imperial Court recovered quickly and regained their combat strength.

When they were onboard, they immediately took out healing pills, trying to heal themselves without wasting time.

"Break the seal of Ziwei Palace."

Zhang Ruochen ordered.

Immediately, the members of Guardian Dragon Pavilion responded by fusing Saint Qi into the Altar of Saints.

The altar shook and blood flowed on the patterns quickly. Like a surging river, the altar was loud and deafening.

The Saint Qi in heaven and earth surged and gathered toward the altar.

Boom!

The altar unleashed an extremely violent Saint force.

Instantly, the seal set up by Heavenly Realm faction was destroyed.

Ziwei Palace's real condition was revealed. It was in ruins, and many buildings had been turned into debris.

Fwoosh!

An intense murderous aura soared into the sky. The heaven and earth's colors changed,

The entire area where Ziwei Palace was located had completely turned blood-red as if it was Infernal Court.

"What happened?"

Many Saints in the Imperial City immediately sensed something and inadvertently turned their gazes toward Ziwei Palace.

The Altar of Saints was hovering in midair, releasing a vast and mighty Saint aura as it flew toward Rainbow Pavilion at lightning speed.

In a luxurious saint mansion, the eyes of Zhou Yu were fixed on the saint mansion.

“Zh-Zh-Zhang Ruochen, he’s still alive. Could it be…”

Zhou Yu had a terrible guess.

He knew very well what had happened in Ziwei Palace.

Now that Zhang Ruochen had come out of Ziwei Palace, no one from Heavenly Realm faction had shown up. The result was very clear.

“How is it possible? So many leaders have attacked together, and there are even fallen people. How could they fail?” Zhou Yu was shocked and could not accept this reality.

As the leader of Heavenly Realm, he did not participate in the operation this time to numb everyone and avoid suspicion.

From the beginning to the end, he had never thought that he would fail, so he had even prepared a celebratory feast.

In another Saint Mansion, Jin Hong, the commander of Celestial Palace law enforcement team, stood on a three-hundred-foot-tall pavilion and looked at the flying Altar of Saints from afar.

“What a strong murderous aura. With Ziwei Palace in such a state, it seems that something big has happened. Is it another faction of Heavenly Realm stirring up the storm?”Jin Hong frowned slightly.

As the commander of Celestial Palace law enforcement team, he was disgraced by the continuous infighting after he entered Kunlun.

However, as the commander of the law enforcement team, would he really dare to intervene in the internal strife caused by dominant Macroworld?

It was too easy for a dominant Macroworld to make him disappear without a trace.

Swoosh

Figures flew out from various parts of the imperial city and approached the altar.

The people who came were all familiar faces. Murong Yefeng, Bao Lie, Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, Zheng Yuan, Fairy Ci Hang, Luo Xu, Princess Bai Li, and so on.

There were also a group of awakened ones, including not only Thousandblade and Vermilion Aurum of the yin-yang Sea, but also Jiang Yunchong, Spirit-Devouring King, and Hong Xuanji.

Naturally, Zhang Ruochen had summoned the awakened ones in advance in case of emergency.

Now was undoubtedly the time for them to play their role.

“Junior, what happened?”Zhenyuan asked.

Zhang Ruochen said, “There are probably a large number of powerful figures in Infernal Court who have entered the imperial city to plot against the spiritual roots of the Kunlun.”

“I can’t believe this. Let me call Brother Lu and we’ll go together.”Zhenyuan’s eyes narrowed.

Xiang Chunan said, “Bro, I’ll go with you to kill all the powerful figures in Infernal Court.”

The situation was urgent. Zhang Ruochen did not have time to explain in detail. He immediately led them to the Altar of Saints and rushed to Rainbow Pavilion.

“Why are you so anxious? Where is Zhang Ruochen going?”

“Even Zhenyuan and Fairy Ci Hang have joined in. They represent the Five-Element Temple and Western Buddha Realm. I’m afraid something big has happened.”

“Ao Xukong and Nie Xiangzi have also rushed over. What are they doing? What’s the situation in Ziwei Palace?”

..

cultivators from all walks of life were puzzled. They all focused on the Altar of Saints and paid attention to Zhang Ruochen’s whereabouts. No one acted rashly for now.

There were also cultivators who entered the dilapidated Ziwei Palace to investigate.

When they saw the Heaven Lake and oasis filled with corpses and rivers of blood, especially the familiar faces, everyone could not help but gasp.

“Something big has happened!”

It was hard to imagine how big a wave would be caused by the fall of so many top masters from Heavenly Realm faction. CelestialPalace would probably be shaken by it.

In fact, Celestial Palace was already shaking.

The reason was that Moon Goddess had sent the news to Celestial Palace that the deities of Infernal Court were hiding in the void near Kunlun.

Almost at the same time, TrueGod Xuanyi of Heavenly Realm also sent the same news to Celestial Palace.

His purpose was very obvious. He wanted to get rid of all ties.

After all, if he did not do so, he might be charged with colluding with Infernal Court.

This was a big taboo, and no one could bear it.

Within a short period of time, Celestial Palace sent out many gods, led by Wargod Bian Zhuang.

Of course, this was the request of Wargod Bian Zhuang. According to him, the matters of Moon Goddess were his matters. He was not at ease with other gods leading the team.

At the same time, Fane of Truth sent out some deities, led by its lord.

That was because Moon Goddess had sensed the aura of Huang Tian of Stone Clan in the void near Kunlun. Huang Tian was the disgrace of the Fane of Truth. They had to kill him and take back Canon of Truth.

On the other side, Western Buddha Realm, the Five Elements Temple, and other forces also had gods.

The starry sky where Kunlun was located was soon filled with divine power. The stars trembled and beams of divine light illuminated heaven and earth.

When the deities of Celestial Court rushed to the outside of Kunlun, Empress Chi Yao had already arrived ahead of them.

How could she not sense the great changes that had happened in Ziwei Palace?

“It’s been a long time since I’ve killed a deity from Infernal Court. It’s time for Heavenly Mugwort Bell to be stained with some more divine blood.”Wargod Bian Zhuang stood on the top of a star and looked at the Kunlun in the distance.

Buzzz!

Heavenly Mugwort Bell flew out of Wargod Bian Zhuang’s hand and entered the pitch-black universe, piercing through a vast space.

Instantly, the deities of Celestial Court moved together and entered the void.

After the Middle Ages, large-scale battles between Celestial Court and Infernal Court rarely broke out. But today, with the deities gathered, a battle was inevitable.

Chapter 2199: Bookworm and Moha

The bamboo valley was a quiet and peaceful place in the imperial city. It was surrounded by mountains and rivers and was overgrown with bamboo. From Afar, it looked like a beautiful painting.

The Rainbow Pavilion was located in the bamboo valley. It was far away from the hustle and bustle of the mortal world, and very few people came.

The Rainbow Pavilion had existed for 100,000 years, and it has always stood upright despite the changes in the world.

In the past, Master Fangcun, Saint Monk Xumi’s eldest disciple, had left behind all sorts of techniques in the Rainbow Pavilion. The dimensional teleportation array that he had set up to the location of the Saturn Peach Tree was guarded by the Nalan family for generations.

Only the blood from the direct descendants of the Nalan family could activate the dimensional teleportation array.

Emperor Wen had been doing this before Kunlun became a Battlefield of Merits.

Emperor Wen had no choice but to leave Kunlun because he was a Supreme Saint. Thus, Divine Scripture Maiden should have inherited the guardianship of the Saturn Peach Tree.

However, the imperial court had many matters to attend to, and Divine Scripture Maiden couldn't leave. Hence, she invited two Re-Awakeners of the Path of Confucianism to take on this important task.

These two were known as Bookworm and Twit.

As for their real names, no one knew them.

Bookworm and Twit had extremely shocking identities. They were the remaining two disciples of the last Confucius forefathers of the Path of Confucianism and had received the true inheritance of the Confucius forefathers.

The two of them had to be addressed as Grandmasters by the later generations of disciples of the Path of Confucianism.

The Path of Confucianism had a long history, and its foundations were unfathomable. Many of the Path of Confucianism's deities were born in the past. There were even four Confucius forefathers who stood at the pinnacles.

It was rumored that Lord Wentian of the Ten Tribulations was the third disciple of the Confucius forefathers, and had learned Confucianism's structure, cultivating both Martial Arts and spiritual power to the extreme.

The Rainbow Pavilion wasn't just an ordinary pavilion. It contained a universe and was incomparably vast. It had an extremely large Microworld that was isolated from the outside world. The Saint Qi of heaven and earth was extremely dense and the Precepts of heaven and earth were extremely active. It was a rare cultivation spot.

In a wide-open space, countless books piled up into two tall mountains of books. Two figures sat cross-legged on top of the mountains of books and were very engrossed in flipping through the books.

They were Bookworm and Twit, the Re-Awakerners of the Path of Confucianism.

Bookworm wore traditional robes and looked very young. He combed his hair into a bun, and he looked exactly like a scholar. He held a book in his hand and shook his head while he enjoyed his reading.

“Studying the time between heaven and man, connecting with the changes of the past and the present. Not too shabby. This essay was well written and such a wondrous piece of literature!”

…

On the other hand, Twit looked like a middle-aged man. He was slightly chubby, his hair was messy, and his face was full of stubble. He looked very unkempt.

Twit buried his head and read the book word by word as if he was more focused than Bookworm.

Bookworm and Twit were competing to see who could finish the last 100,000 years of Kunlun’s history books first.

As the Saint King of Confucianism, they could just use their spiritual power and scan the contents of all the books very quickly. However, the two of them were very patient and wanted to read slowly like ordinary folks.

Suddenly, Bookworm raised his head and sensed an intense spatial fluctuation within the Rainbow Pavilion.

The space shattered and a deep hole appeared. It was connected to the void.

An ancient bridge appeared and stretched across the void. It was unknown where it had come from, but it had been stretched to the Rainbow Pavilion.

On the bridge stood figures of various shapes and sizes. Some were only 150 meters tall, while others were a thousand meters tall.

“Isn’t it great to have friends come from afar?” Bookworm said with a smile.

As soon as he finished speaking, a dense evil aura emerged from the hole.

Bookworm’s expression froze as he pointed in that direction and said, “Not good. It’s not a friend, but the aura of the Infernal Court. I shall take a closer look. How did the creatures of the Infernal Court appear in the Rainbow Pavilion?”

“It’s the Voidbridge of Chaos. The creatures of the Infernal Court are forcing their way in. Twit, bad news, bad news!”

Twit ignored him. He continued to twirl his beard and immerse himself in the book.

“Myriad Words Soldiers.” Bookworm was forced to make his move and chanted.

He shook his hand, and all the words on the book fell off and flew out. They turned into the image of a thousand soldiers and horses as they charged toward the spatial hole.

The Myriad Words Soldiers was an extraordinary method of Confucianism.

BOOM!
All the evil aura vanished in an instant.

Then, the shadows of thousands of soldiers and horses rushed into the spatial hole and forcefully suppressed a figure who had just walked down from the ancient bridge.

“Haha, even a scholar from Kunlun can beat you back. It seems that your strength is far from enough to challenge Zhang Ruochen, Jadesky Bone Emperor.” Another burly figure laughed and crossed the Voidbridge of Chaos and came over.

A deep snort came from the void. “Yan Wushen, you’d better not underestimate that scholar. His power is extraordinary.”

“Just because you were incapable doesn’t mean others were the same. Watch how I broke his Myriad Words Soldiers,” said Yan Wushen

Yan Wushen strode forward to meet the illusory army formed by the words. The five fingers of his right hand turned into a huge golden palm. His three meters long golden body was activated and easily wiped out the illusory army.

Then, he took a step forward. He ignored all obstacles and forcefully descended into the Rainbow Pavilion.

Boom
When his feet landed on the ground, the entire Rainbow Pavilion trembled.

Yan Wushen had completely fused both his good and evil sides after refining the Yin-Yang Equinox Flower. He had reached his pinnacle state and attained supremacy.

Bookworm was stunned for a moment. He did not expect that there would be a living being below the Supreme Saint that could break his technique.

Dozens of creatures from the Infernal Court walked down from the Voidbridge of Chaos and followed closely behind Yan Wushen. They stepped through the spatial hole and landed in the Rainbow Pavilion.

They all emitted a powerful aura that suppressed the world. Any one of them could shake the heavens and all realms. They were the elites of the ten clans of the Infernal Court.

However, the moment they landed, they triggered the spatial formation left behind by Master Fangcun in the Rainbow Pavilion.

Whoosh
Yan Wushen let out a soft exclamation of surprise. The surrounding space rapidly contracted and transformed into a spatial cage.

The spatial cage was like a bubble with a diameter of 300 meters. However, at the edge of it were interwoven chains formed by the Power of Dimension.

Besides Yan Wushen, other Infernal Court cultivators were trapped by the spatial cage as well.

Dozens of space cages appeared at the same time, locking up the cultivators of the Infernal Court in different places.

“Interesting. It turns out that the predecessor of Kunlun had already made arrangements to guard against us,” said Yan Wushen.

Yan Wushen didn’t panic at all. He stretched out a finger and gently pointed at the chains at the edge of the space cages.

The chains trembled and made a “Crash” sound.

The space cage rapidly contracted, and the space inside became twice as small.

“It’s best if everyone doesn’t touch those chains. Be careful not to be crushed into dust by the power of the space cage,” Yan Wushen said.

“The Confucius forefathers once said that peace and harmony is a priority in all matters. Reckless fighting and killing only bring forth harm,” Bookworm said.

A Six-Tribulation Ghost Lord stood in the space cage and said coldly, “Are you mocking us now?”

“No! No! What I meant was, it is best not to fight at all. Return from whence you came. This is not a place for you,” Bookworm said patiently.

The elites of the Infernal Court felt that Bookworm was humiliating them even more.

They had all used the space cage to trap them, but they were talking sarcastically from their side. What would it be if it was not humiliation?

Besides, was there any room for reconciliation between the Infernal Court and Kunlun?

“I will be the first to devour your Saint Soul when I broke out from this stupid cage,” said Six-Tribulation Ghost Lord.

His body became bigger and bigger. In the end, he reached a height of 300 meters and pressed his hands out, causing the space cage to shake violently.

“I think you’d better stay in!” said Bookworm.

Bookworm moved and flew to the top of the space cage.

“With the energy from heaven and earth, all shapes and sizes shall take form. Rivers and mountains shall form below, as the sun and stars were formed above.”

Booked began to chant the lines from Righteous Morality Scripture.

Immediately, a bright white light emitted from Bookworm and turned into a majestic righteous Qi.

The righteous Qi surged into the space bubble in front of him and formed mountains and rivers below. The Sun, moon, and stars filled the sky above.

The attack was aimed at Six-Tribulation Ghost Lord inside the spatial bubble.

As the disciple of the Confucius forefathers, Bookworm’s enlightenment of the Path of Confucianism had reached an unimaginable level.

With regards to the use of the righteous Qi, even many Supreme Saints of the Path of Confucianism might not be able to compare to him.

Six-Tribulation Ghost Lord, who was trapped inside the spatial bubble, was called Lan Xuezi. He had cultivated a very powerful Malefico Astral Form and was no weaker than a perfected physical being.

However, Six-Tribulation Ghost Lord was in big trouble at this moment.

The great righteous energy was extremely hot as if it wanted to incinerate all of his Ghost Qi.

Lan Xuezi's astral form was forced to return to its original size. He took out an Astral Saber, a powerful Immaterial Artifact. Hundreds of thousands of strange Regal-level inscriptions appeared on the saber.

Immaterial Artifacts were battle weapons refined with the special techniques of the Ghost. They were the most compatible with the Ghost and could greatly increase the battle strength of the Ghost cultivator.

Each Immaterial Artifact needed to be sent to the Fane of Ghost. After a special purification, it could finally be made into a weapon. Therefore, it was very precious.

The Fane of Ghost was the supreme fane of the Ghost. It has existed since ancient times. All the Ghost were proud of being able to enter the Fane of Ghost to cultivate.

Lan Xuezi was a genius that the Fane of Ghost had carefully nurtured. He cultivated the Path of Heaven that was unique to the Ghost.

The ten clans of Infernal Court had their fanes. They inherited the Path of Heaven that was different from the Celestial Court's Path of Heaven. It was comparable to the Path of Supreme Saint or even the Path of the Ancients.

However, cultivating these Paths of Heaven was not an easy task and not everyone could do it. Only a few people could pass the selection and enter the ten fanes to cultivate.

Lan Xuezi cultivated the Malefico Path of Heaven, one of the three Paths of Heaven of the Ghost. He used it to cultivate the Malefico Astral Form and make it extremely difficult to destroy.

Lan Xuezi waved the Astral Saber in his hand and continuously poured Malefico Ghost Qi into it. He slashed out a sharp and powerful blade ray.

Swoosh
This slash cut off the river formed from the great righteous Qi and shattered the mountains.

Bookworm was neither too fast nor too slow. He formed a hand seal and said, “When it reaches the sun and moon, life and death are at peace.”

A blazing sun and a bright moon appeared at the same time. They lit up the entire world and ignited all of the Malefico Ghost Qi.

Bang
Lan Xuezi was struck by the sun and moon and was sent flying instantly.

Many cracks appeared on his incomparably tough astral body, and it almost shattered.

He was severely injured after the attack. The Malefico Ghost Qi scattered, and he was unable to gather it again for a moment.

It was not that Lan Xuezi was not strong enough, but that he just happened to be restrained by the Power of Confucianism.

Rumble
Just as Bookworm was about to attack again, one of the spatial cages suddenly shattered. The tall and sturdy Yan Wushen broke free.

“What a good scholar. You have real talent. Take this palm of mine.”

Yan Wushen turned into a ray of golden light and arrived in an instant.

A golden palm that carried unparalleled power directly slapped towards the Bookworm.

Bookworm was shocked and he did not expect Yan Wushen to be able to break free so quickly.

After all, the dimensional technique here was set up by Master Fangcun. It was extremely exquisite. Even if it had been 100,000 years, it was not something that a Saint King realm cultivator could easily breakthrough.

There was no time to think. Bookworm quickly turned around and used all his strength to create a massive fist print that shattered the vacuum.

Ever since Yan Wushen was able to break through his Myriad Words Soldiers and forcefully arrive at the Rainbow Pavilion, he had already

realized how terrifying Yan Wushen was. Naturally, he did not dare to be careless.

Although Bookworm was a Confucianism cultivator, he cultivated both Martial Arts and spiritual power. Furthermore, they had both reached the pinnacle of the Saint King realm and were about to form the Neverwither physique.

Bang
The fist that Bookworm punched out was shattered by Yan Wushen's golden hand instantly.

Then, a powerful force bombarded Bookworm and sent him flying.

Puff
Bookworm spat out a large mouthful of Saint Blood. His breath became very unstable.

'How can he be so powerful? And he's a Saint King?' Bookworm was shocked.

After sleeping for ten myriads, he felt that he couldn't understand this world.

Even in the Middle Ages, there wasn't a monstrous genius as terrifying as Yan Wushen.

Yan Wushen smiled and said, "To be able to take my palm and not die, you are quite of something. I didn't expect there to be another master like you in Kunlun besides Zhang Ruochen."

With his current strength, even an ordinary Supreme Saint could not take his palm. Anyone below the Supreme Saint could almost be invincible.

"The Confucius forefathers once said, there is always someone better than you. There is truth within his words. I thought I couldn't find an opponent below the Supreme Saint, but I didn't expect someone to be so much stronger than me." Bookworm said with a stiff face.

Yan Wushen said, "I'll give you a chance. If you join the Infernal Court, I can spare your life."

Unexpectedly, Bookworm shook his head hard and said with a serious face, "The Confucius forefathers once said that there are dos and don'ts for every man. Kunlun is the most important place. One's life and death are the

least important. If one is born to defend the path, he will die without regrets.’”

“I’m not here to listen to your reasoning. Since you don’t want to cherish the opportunity, don’t blame me for being ruthless.” Yan Wushen raised his eyebrows and emitted an extremely powerful aura.

Bookworm said, “A gentleman’s work is the foundation of his path. Filial piety is the foundation of benevolence.”

“What a bookworm. He’s chattering non-stop and mumbling something. I don’t understand at all.” Yan Wushen said impatiently.

He immediately attacked again, pouring power into the gauntlet. The gauntlet emitted a resplendent golden light, and a large number of supreme inscriptions appeared. Vigorous Supreme Power surged out.

In the blink of an eye, Yan Wushen had also thrown over a hundred punches. The sky was filled with majestic fist seals. They were like numerous ancient divine mountains, completely enveloping Bookworm.

Bookworm hurriedly released his powerful spiritual power, activating the dense array patterns within the Rainbow Pavilion. He wanted to rely on the power of the array formation to block Yan Wushen’s attack.

With his condensed spiritual power, a large number of array patterns were activated in the blink of an eye. They appeared and interwoven into a net, wanting to seal this space.

Bang
Yan Wushen’s fist was too overbearing. The formation patterns were unable to seal it and shattered instantly.

Bookworm tried his best to block, but his defense failed. He was sent flying like a cannonball.

Even though his saint physique was extremely powerful, many cracks began to surface at this moment. He was almost smashed into pieces by Yan Wushen’s attack.

“Twit, aren’t you going to make a move?”

Bookworm was anxious and shouted at Twit.

Twit did not even raise his head. He stretched out a hand and said impatiently, “Don’t be noisy. Don’t disturb me when I’m reading.”

His attention had not shifted away from the book since the beginning of the fight. It was as if he did not notice that someone had broken in.

He felt that even if Bookworm was beaten to death, he would not ask about it.

“Why is there another bookworm? Take a palm from me too.”

Yan wushen frowned. His gaze shifted and he glanced at Twit before he raised his hand and struck out.

BOOM!
Hundreds of millions of words appeared on Twit’s body. They converged into a huge cauldron and protected his entire body. However, the mountain of books beneath him exploded and turned into ashes.

Only at this moment did Twit withdraw from the world in the book. His eyes were filled with anger.

“I told you not to disturb me.” Twit roared.

As he roared, the great spirit around him surged violently and quickly condensed into a huge cauldron that was ten thousand feet tall. It spun and crashed towards Yan Wushen.

Yan Wushen let out a soft cry and struck out another golden palm print.

Bang
The golden palm print and the huge cauldron exploded at the same time, forming a terrifying impact force.

Yan Wushen did not move an inch, while Twit took a few steps back. He was not injured.

It was only at this moment that Twit seemed to have woken up. He carefully sized up Yan Wushen and said, “So powerful and he has already perfected his skills. Such a peerless foe exists in this world.”

At this moment, Bookworm rushed over and stood side by side with Twit.

“Twit, looks like we have a more urgent matter on hand. Let’s put the competition aside for now. We have to defend the Rainbow Pavilion and

not let them go to the location of the Saturn Peach Tree," Bookworm said seriously.

Twit's gaze swept over the dozens of spatial cages and said, "Why are there so many cultivators from the Infernal Court suddenly breaking into the Rainbow Pavilion? How do they know the specific spatial coordinates of the Rainbow Pavilion?"

He had already seen the Voidbridge of Chaos and knew how Yan Wushen and the others had arrived, but he was still very confused.

After all, ever since Kunlun became the Battlefield of Merits, the Rainbow Pavilion had hidden and covered up the spatial coordinates.

Swoosh
Swoosh
The space distorted slightly and the sound of rushing wind could be heard.

Two figures barged into the Rainbow Pavilion from the direction of the Central Imperial City.

These two people were dressed in loose black robes that completely covered their bodies. Their faces could not be seen, nor could their figures be seen. It was impossible to tell if they were male or female, and they did not even emit a single aura.

Furthermore, although they were standing there, it was as if they were in another dimension. It was extremely mysterious.

One of the black-robed figures said in a slightly hoarse voice, "The Voidbridge of Chaos is indeed powerful. It only provided spatial coordinates, yet it enabled us to arrive at the Rainbow Pavilion directly."

"Who are you people? How did you lock onto the Rainbow Pavilion's spatial coordinates?" Twit asked.

The black-robed man who spoke just now chuckled. "As long as you want to know, there will naturally be a method. There were clues found on the Grand Chamberlain, Wang Shiqi, and the seven Realm Bearers."

Both Bookworm and Twit immediately came to a realization. Those two must be the spies of the Infernal Court in the Celestial Court.

Who could it be?

The cultivators of the Heavenly Realm?

“Have you brought the thing?” Yan Wushen asked.

One of the black-robed men said in a low voice, “Of course, we always keep our promises.”

As he spoke, the black-robed man took out a piece of saint jade and threw it at Yan Wushen.

Inside of it was a ball of bright red Saint Blood that was emitting nine-colored saint light. It was a rare sight.

Yan Wushen stretched out a hand and caught the saint jade. A satisfied look appeared in his eyes.

The Saint Blood that was sealed in the jade was the key to opening the dimensional teleportation array. Only by obtaining it could they finally lock onto the exact coordinates of the Saturn Peach Tree.

“Our mission has been completed. The next step will be handed over to you. It’s best if nothing goes wrong,” another black-robed man said in a low voice.

Yan wushen glanced at him and said, “Your worries are completely unnecessary.”

The two black-robed men didn’t say anything else. They immediately used spatial techniques and left the Rainbow Pavilion, returning to the Central Imperial City without a moment’s delay.

“They left quickly. Are they afraid that I’ll kill them?” Yan wushen muttered.

Bang
One spatial cage after another shattered. The dozens of elites from the Infernal Court broke free one after another.

They were the elites carefully selected from the ten clans of the Infernal Court.

A spatial cage that had been around for a long time naturally couldn’t trap them.

Xueluo Ghost Lord, who was severely injured, was the last to break free. His eyes were extremely gloomy. He had suffered a great loss the moment

he arrived at the Rainbow Pavilion. If Yan Wushen hadn't acted in time, he might have already been killed by Bookworm, it was a great humiliation.

Sensing the terrifying aura emitted by the elites of the Infernal Court, the eyes of the Bookworm and Twit could not help but become solemn. The situation was dire now.

It was already difficult to deal with Yan Wushen alone. With the addition of dozens of top Saint Kings of the Infernal Court, how could the two of them stop him?

Chapter 2200: The Clash of An Era

In the depths of the bamboo forest surrounding Rainbow Pavilion, there was a large peach forest. It was currently the season for the peach blossoms to bloom. Each tree was full of pink and white peach blossoms. It was a beautiful sight like in a dream.

BOOM!
BOOM!
…

Bookworm and Twit were covered in blood as they stood outside the peach forest. They did their best to resist the attacks of the Infernal Court's elites and prevent them from entering the forest.

Both of them were very tough. They were the powerhouses of the Saint Kinghood across all realms. Twit, in particular, was almost comparable to Yan Wushen when he had first fused with both his good and evil side.

If it weren't for Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen, Twit would have been the most prominent figure of this era.

However, it was hard for two fists to fight against four hands. Facing the combined attacks of dozens of the top-notch elites of the Infernal Court, they couldn't resist no matter how strong they were.

Fortunately, Master Fangcun had laid many array formations in the Rainbow Pavilion. Bookworm and Twit were retreating as they fought and that was how they were able to hold on until now.

Otherwise, they would have been beaten to death long ago.

During this process, Bookworm and Twit heavily injured three elites of the Infernal Court. They almost frustrated Lan Xuezi of the Ghost.

The Sacred Confucian Tome released a bright saint light. Tens of thousands of characters flew out and turned into stars. It surrounded Bookworm and Twit and blocked most of the attacks.

This Sacred Confucian Tome wasn't the one that Divine Scripture Maiden had in her hand. It was a different tome written by the teacher of Bookworm and Twit.

The four Confucius forefathers of the Path of Confucianism had left behind a Sacred Confucian Tome. It was a most valuable treasure and contained the utmost inheritance of the Path of Confucianism.

The four Sacred Confucian Tomes were the brainchild of the four Confucius forefathers. Infinite wisdom was condensed within the tomes and could be said to be the foundation of the Path of Confucianism's legacy.

As long as the Sacred Confucian Tomes existed, the Path of Confucianism would not be severed.

As the immediate disciples of the Confucius forefathers, both Bookworm and the Twit were more familiar with the Sacred Confucian Tome written by their teachers than anyone else. The power they could unleash was naturally much stronger.

"You two scholars are tenacious. The destruction of Kunlun is a foregone conclusion. No matter how you struggle, you can't change anything. You both have the potential to become gods. It would be a waste for you two to die here. The Infernal Court would be the best place for you," Yan Wushen said.

Ahem
Bookworm coughed violently. His body staggered and he almost fell to the ground.

Bookworm was severely injured. His body was full of cracks and almost drained of Saint Blood. He had to rely on his strong willpower to survive until now.

Bookworm steadied himself and said, "Our forefathers once said, when the heavens bestow a great task to a man, he must first suffer from his will. He will have to strain his muscles and bones. He also has to starve and empty himself. Any actions will be a distraction. Therefore, he has to be patient and perfect what can be perfected."

“If I lose the firm belief in my heart, I would not want to stay alive and be a walking dead.”

Many elites of the Infernal Court were struck by his words and they frowned. Ever since they entered the Rainbow Pavilion, Bookworm had been talking about all kinds of nonsense. It was annoying.

Only Yan Wushen would have the heart to keep him around. As for the others, they all wanted to slap him to death.

Lan Xuezi’s eyes became cold and said, “Scholar, I shall end you here and now since you wished for death. After that, I will devour your Saint Soul alive.”

“His Saint Soul must be filled with magnificent righteous energy. Lan Xuezi, I’m afraid you won’t be able to endure it. It’s better to leave it to me.” An elite of the Nether Clan with ash gray wings laughed.

Lan Xuezi’s eyes were gloomy. He looked at the Nether Clan’s elite who just spoke and said, “Nether Fiend, don’t make such sarcastic remarks. If you were to be attacked like that, your situation wouldn’t be any better than mine.”

“Don’t make me sound as useless as you. The righteous Qi would not be able to leave a scratch on my Vile Nether Physique.” Nether Fiend arrogantly spoke.

Nether Fiend was born of the Nether Clan and was a genius nurtured by the Fane of Nether which was known as Nether Hall. He cultivated one of the Nether Clan’s five Paths of Heaven, the Vile Nether Deva Path. His strength was tyrannical to the extreme.

In terms of strength, Nether Fiend was slightly stronger than Nether Demon and Nether Buddha. Hence, when he participated in this operation, he was the leading character of the Nether Clan.

Seeing that Lan Xuezi wanted to say something, an elite from the Asura interjected, “Don’t quarrel for now. After we get rid of the two of them, you can do whatever you want. That Fangcun’s dimensional teleportation array is in the depths of the peach forest. We must breakthrough as soon as possible and complete the mission entrusted to us by the gods.”

The person who spoke had four eyes and four arms. There were countless Marks of Time dancing around him, causing the flow of time in the area he was in to be different.

He was none other than Wan Xin, who had sent Yan Wushen the Yin-Yang Equinox Flower. He was the immediate disciple of Asurendra Samay and he was also a Master of Time. He cultivated the Path of Time and was nurtured by the Fane of Asura. Although he was very low-key and didn't have a great reputation, no one dared to underestimate him as he was still a disciple of Asurendra Samay.

If it weren't for Zhang Ruochen's body, Wan Xin wouldn't have come to Kunlun, much less participate in this operation.

Yan Wushen glanced at Wan Xin and said, "Attack with all your strength. The situation could be different if you delay."

As he spoke, Yan Wushen condensed the power of his Golden Giant Mode onto the Supreme Artifact-level gauntlet and displayed an extremely domineering fist technique.

Seeing this, the other powerful figures of the Infernal Court didn't hesitate and attacked one after another. They didn't dare to be careless in such a big matter.

Bookworm and Twit's face turned solemn. They raise their spirits and release their spiritual power and Saint Qi without holding back. They pushed the array formation in the Rainbow Pavilion to the extreme.

The two put their palms together and combined their spiritual power with the peach forest behind them.

Whoosh
All the peach trees shook slightly, and wisps of spiritual energy dispersed and gathered toward Bookworm and Twit.

This peach forest was originally derived from the Saturn Peach Tree, so it was naturally imbued with a small amount of divine force. Now, it was all gathered by Bookworm and Twit.

That was the power of the Saturn Peach Tree.

It may be weak, but it was still a divine force.

A portion of the divine force merged into Bookworm and Twit, and their injuries recovered.

A large portion of the divine force merged into the array formation, causing the array patterns to become more solid.

No matter how bad the situation was, Bookworm and Twit had no intention of giving up.

…

On the other end, Zhang Ruochen led the group to drive the Altar of Saints to the Rainbow Pavilion at high speed.

When they arrived outside the bamboo valley, the Altar of Saints stopped.

They could not continue forward due to an invisible barrier in front of them that blocked the Altar of Saints.

“So this is a Realm-sealing Talisman. No wonder no one noticed it,” said Lu Baiming as he realized it.

Realm-sealing Talismans could only be refined by the top-notch High-Saint Talisman Master and Archsaint Talisman Master. They were said to be able to seal a realm and isolate it from the rest of the realms. They could cover up all the secrets of Heaven and even the gods would find it hard to discover.

At the same time, the Realm-sealing Talisman’s barrier was extremely sturdy. It will be difficult to break through from the outside.

There was no doubt that the Infernal Court had sent out High-Saint Talisman Master to control the Realm-sealing Talisman. Even a Hundred-Shackle Realm Supreme Saint might not be able to break in.

Zhang Ruochen looked around and said in a low voice, “What a powerful seal. It is even better than what the Heavenly Realm has set up in Ziwei Palace.”

With this seal, even if someone noticed something strange in the bamboo valley, they would not be able to do anything.

“The Heavenly Realm has my Saint Blood in their hands. As long as we break the array formation of the Rainbow Pavilion, we can use this to open the dimensional teleportation array and lock onto the spatial coordinates of the Saturn Peach Tree. We can not delay any longer,” said the Nine-heavens Maiden solemnly.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “Use all your forces to activate the Altar of Saints and forcefully tear down the barrier.”

At this stage, the best choice was to gather the Army of the Celestial Court and launch an attack together. By doing so, breaking the Realm-sealing Talisman shouldn't be too difficult.

But now, the situation was critical and Zhang Ruochen didn't have time to do this.

More importantly, the Army of the Celestial Court was divided into many sects. Thus, It wasn't easy to mobilize.

At this point, it was better to handle it himself than to ask for support.

The power of the Altar of Saints was activated, the blood patterns were revived, and dazzling saint light burst out, bombarding the bamboo valley.

Bang
The barrier that enveloped the bamboo valley appeared faintly. It rippled like water, but it wasn't broken.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed slightly. The Realm-sealing Talisman was stronger than he'd expected.

"I'll borrow a treasure that can break the talisman," said the Nine-heavens Maiden.

The Nine-heavens Maiden was anxious. She turned into a beam of saint light and left quickly.

Seeing the direction where the Nine-heavens Maiden left, Zhang Ruochen could not help but think. He vaguely guessed what treasure she wanted to borrow.

He collected his thoughts and said, "Continue to attack."

The sooner they were able to breach into Rainbow Pavilion, the greater the hope of preserving the Saturn Peach Tree.

Once the spatial coordinates of the Saturn Peach Tree were locked, the Infernal Court would probably have a way to cut the Saturn Peach Tree in an instant even with the intervention of the gods of the Celestial Court.

At that point, no matter how much they did, it would be meaningless.

Two figures stood on a mountain not far from the bamboo valley. At this moment, they were both looking at the Altar of Saints.

They were the black-robed men who had sent the Saint Blood to the elites of the Infernal Court.

“Why is Zhang Ruochen Here? Did something happen in Ziwei Palace?” One of the black-robed men asked in a trembling voice.

Almost all the elites of the Heavenly Realm had gathered in Ziwei Palace. If something happened, the consequences would be unimaginable.

The other black-robed man said, “Let’s get out of here.”

They didn’t want to stay any longer where Zhang Ruochen was.

However, just as they were about to leave, they found that the space around them had solidified.

“Not good,” said the black-robed man.

Both of them were shocked. They realized that something was wrong.

Swoosh
A silver book appeared out of thin air. As it flipped, dozens of multi-dimensional spaces appeared, enveloping the two of them.

One of the black-robed men made a prompt decision. He took out a talisman that glowed with silver light and struck out.

Countless spatial inscriptions appeared from the talisman. They released extremely terrifying spatial power and wanted to tear apart the multi-dimensional space forcefully.

The other black-robed man took out an incomplete array diagram and struck out hundreds of array seals in a row, using all his strength.

Boom
The multivariate space shook and a large number of cracks appeared, but it did not collapse.

The silver book was closed after that, and the two black-robed men disappeared with the multivariate space.

On the Altar of Saints, Zhang Ruochen reached out and grabbed the Secret Tome of Time and Space.

His perception was very sharp. Even though the two black-robed men had deliberately restrained their aura, he still sensed it instantly and knew their identities at the first moment.

He flipped open the Secret Tome of Time and Space. On one page, two figures appeared. They struggled desperately, but couldn't move at all.

Zhang Ruochen used a technique with minimal effort and the two black-robed men revealed their true faces instantly.

He was familiar with one of them. It was the leader of the Formation Sect, Zhou Zhen.

The other person looked very young, in his early twenties, handsome with long silver hair. His eyes were very unique. They were pitch-black, and there were no whites in them.

"The leader of the Fane of Dimension, Shentu Yunkong."

Zhang Ruochen was shocked by the sight of Shentu Yunkong.

He was the most outstanding genius that the Fane of Dimension had nurtured in the past 10,000 years. He was extremely talented in dimensional techniques. Rumour has it that he could have completed his cultivation of the Path of Dimension.

Zhang Ruochen had not expected Shentu Yunkong to come to Kunlun.

What surprised Zhang Ruochen was that Shentu Yunkong was not in the Fane of Dimension. Instead, he was observing something outside the bamboo valley.

At this special point in time, Shentu Yunkong and Zhou Zhen appeared together outside the bamboo valley. No matter how one looked at it, there was something fishy going on.

Zhang Ruochen could not help but reach out and grab it. The items that Shentu Yunkong and Zhou Zhen had immediately flown out of the Secret Tome of Time and Space.

"Hmmm?"

Zhang Ruochen's gaze was locked onto one of the Exquisite Dimensional Orb.

There were two people imprisoned in it. They were both bleeding and tortured beyond recognition.

“It’s Wang Shiqi and Sui Han,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen used the dimensional technique to release the two of them.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Spring of Life with a wave of his hand and infused it into their bodies.

Compared to the Confucian cultivators who died in Syzygy Mansion, Wang Shiqi and Sui Han were undoubtedly very lucky to be alive.

Zhang Ruochen searched carefully for Shentu Yunkong and Zhou Zhen’s items, but could not find the Nine-heavens Maiden’s Saint Blood. This made his heart sink slightly.

Unsurprisingly, the Saint Blood of the Nine-heavens Maiden should have fallen into the hands of the powerful figures in the Infernal Court. The Saturn Peach Tree was in imminent danger.

“Break the Realm-sealing Talisman at all costs,” Zhang Ruochen ordered in a low voice.

He had no time to interrogate Shentu Yunkong and Zhou Zhen. The most important thing was to enter the Rainbow Pavilion.

“Someone is attacking from outside.”

All of a sudden, an Infernal Court’s elite sensed it.

The next moment, Great Prince Bloodwing of Asura said in a low voice, “It’s Zhang Ruochen. He broke through the siege of the Heavenly Realm.”

Boom
At this moment, an even louder noise sounded.

A crack was forcefully torn open in the barrier constructed by the Realm-sealing Talisman.

Zhang Ruochen used the dimensional technique and rushed in with the Altar of Saints as fast as he could.

The barrier had amazing repairability. In the blink of an eye, the crack disappeared without a trace.

Zhang Ruochen did not care about this. He drove the Altar of Saints and rushed straight into the bamboo valley.

Soon, the space in front of him became clear. The Precepts of Heaven and Earth became much more active.

This was a beautiful world and it was now in ruins. Its vitality was almost gone and had turned into barren land.

Zhang Ruochen had come to the Rainbow Pavilion in the past. Unfortunately, his cultivation was weak at that time. He had not discovered the secret of this place. He had not expected there to be such a vast world.

The Altar of Saints moved forward and finally came to the front of the peach forest.

“Finally, help has arrived. Kunlun is safe now.” Bookworm showed a hint of joy on his face.

Twit’s eyes locked on Zhang Ruochen. He said, “Another genius who has completed his cultivation. What a terrible era.”

Yan Wushen had already surprised him. He did not expect Zhang Ruochen to appear now.

He had been asleep for too long. The world had become incomprehensible to him.

Yan Wushen walked out of the crowd and stepped on the air. He looked straight at Zhang Ruochen and said in a clear voice, “Zhang Ruochen, I’m very happy that you didn’t die at the hands of the Heavenly Realm. Now, we can continue the battle that we last fought.”

Yan Wushen’s battle intent began to rise as he spoke. The Saint Qi and Precepts in this world surged toward him crazily.

Zhang Ruochen could sense that Yan Wushen had changed greatly. It was obvious that he had merged his good and evil sides completely, and he was now at his peak.

Compared to when Yan Wushen had first merged his good and evil sides, his strength had increased greatly.

Seeing the powerful Yan Wushen, Zhang Ruochen's battle intent also rose.

With Zhang Ruochen's current strength, only Yan Wushen, who was below the Supreme Saint, could be his opponent. In this era, perhaps only the two of them had cultivated to the completion of the Saint Kinghood.

Gazing at Zhang Ruochen for a moment, Yan Wushen said, "So you have also completed the cultivation of the Saint Kinghood. Good, very good. Only then can we have a good fight."

He was not worried at all about Zhang Ruochen becoming stronger. On the contrary, he was afraid that Zhang Ruochen was too weak for him.

If he could defeat Zhang Ruochen too easily, then there will be no fun in it.

Being invincible for too long can be a bit boring. Yan Wushen had been roaming the Battlefield of Merits for hundreds of years without a true opponent. Until the day when Zhang Ruochen appeared.

He had been looking forward to this battle for a long time.

All the cultivators of Infernal Court were shocked by Yan Wushen's words.

It was very rare for a peerless genius like Yan Wushen to be born in an era. One will have to spend hundreds of years and embark on an extremely dangerous road to succeed. How long had Zhang Ruochen been practicing? How could he have succeeded?

Such a speed of growth was too incredible.

Apart from Yan Wushen, almost no one present could see through Zhang Ruochen's depth. They only felt that it was unfathomable.

In their eyes, even a Supreme Saint who had just entered the Hundred-Shackle realm might not be able to defeat Zhang Ruochen and Yan Wushen.

Only Wan Xin's eyes shined and thought to himself, 'The ultimate Five-element Chaotic Body and the completion of the Saint Kinghood. Rumor has it that he cultivated many Saints Aspects just like the creatures that are not among the five elements. What a perfect body.'

His master would like such a rare body.

After all, even Asurendra Samay hadn’t reached Zhang Ruochen’s current attainment when he was in the Saint Kinghood.

If he could possess Zhang Ruochen, Asurendra Samay’s strength would become stronger in a short time.

At that time, his status as a disciple of Asurendra Samay would rise among the Asura.